

Cambria Will Not Yield

Volume 2: July 27, 2019 – May 27, 2017

TABLE OF CONTENTS

The Humanity of God and the Inhumanity of the Liberals - July 27, 2019	2
Unstudied from the Heart - July 20, 2019.....	5
The Image of the Beast Shall Die - July 13, 2019	7
Surviving the Tempest of Liberalism - July 6, 2019.....	9
The Great Liberal Tribunal - June 29, 2019	12
The Bowstrings of the Spirit - June 22, 2019	14
No More Night – June 15, 2019	16
Keep Thy Heart - June 8, 2019.....	19
Breaking Satan’s Rules - June 1, 2019	22
The Narrow White Gate - May 25, 2019	24
That Other Realm - May 18, 2019	26
The Wheel of Fire - May 10, 2019	29
The Parable of Europe - May 4, 2019.....	31
The Outcast Europeans - April 27, 2019.....	33
The Darkness Deepens - April 21, 2019 [with addendum on being deplatformed]	36
An Alternative Vision to Liberalism and Neo-Paganism - March 23, 2019.....	40
The Discarded God of a Condemned People - March 16, 2019	42
A Mystery - March 9, 2019	44
The Return to Damascus - March 2, 2019	47
The Mysterious Stranger - February 23, 2019.....	49
Thus Is Mercy Crucified - February 16, 2019	52
The Miracle of Christian Europe - February 9, 2019	54
Depth Speaks to Depth - February 2, 2019.....	56
Our Kindred Faith - January 26, 2019.....	58
Purely Sentimental - January 19, 2019	61
The Red Death of Liberalism - January 12, 2019	64
The Mystic Toyland - January 5, 2019.....	66
Remembrances VIII: The Shepherds of Europe - December 22, 2018.....	68
The Light of the World - December 15, 2018.....	94
The Sign of Our Redemption - December 8, 2018	95
Lo! He Abhors Not the Virgin’s Womb - December 1, 2018.....	97
Still Our Ancient Foe - November 24, 2018	99
From Darkness to Light - November 17, 2018.....	101
No Longer Under Their Dominion - November 10, 2018.....	104
The Reptiles - November 3, 2018	106
With Better Knowledge - October 27, 2018	108
The Sign of Our Salvation - October 20, 2018.....	111
The Heart and the Hearth Fire - October 13, 2018	113
Liberalism is Hell - October 6, 2018.....	116
His Europe Shall Not Pass Away - September 29, 2018	118
The Beautiful Gate - September 22, 2018.....	120
The Forgotten and Condemned Europeans - September 15, 2018	122
Our Hope and Our Faith September 8, 2018	124
For God So Loved the World - September 1, 2018	126
The Gift of Sight - August 25, 2018.....	129
Who Follows in Their Train? - August 18, 2018.....	131
Democracy – The White Man’s Covenant with Death - August 11, 2018.....	134
As You Would Oppose the Devil - August 4, 2018	136
In His Name - July 28, 2018.....	138
Most Barbarous, Most Degenerate Liberalism! - July 21, 2018	141
The Young Drummer and the Good Samaritan - July 14, 2018	143
The Great Mystery - July 7, 2018	145
Where Two or Three Are Gathered Together - June 30, 2018	147
He Hath Borne Our Grievs - June 23, 2018	150
Even Unto the End of the World - June 16, 2018.....	153

One Particular God - June 9, 2018.....	155
The Liberals' Metamorphosis - June 2, 2018.....	158
The One Great Mystery - May 26, 2018.....	160
In the Lion's Den - May 19, 2018	163
The Precious Cornerstone - May 12, 2018	165
The Demons of Europe - May 5, 2018.....	167
The Stone Which the Builders Rejected - April 28, 2018	170
In the Land of the Stranger - April 21, 2018.....	172
The Vision of His Europe and His People - April 14, 2018.....	174
Be Not Afraid - April 7, 2018	177
And the Trumpet Shall Sound - March 31, 2018	178
Like Unto That of a Little Child - March 24, 2018	179
Our Faith is Our Destiny - March 17, 2018.....	181
The Tragedy of Scientized Superficiality - March 10, 2018	183
Reclaiming the Lost Children of Europe - March 3, 2018	185
The Folly of God - February 24, 2018	187
Christian Leaven- February 17, 2018	189
This Will Ever Be Our Story - February 10, 2018.....	191
Protecting All That We Hold Dear - February 3, 2018.....	193
They Do But Sleep - January 27, 2018	195
The Horror - January 20, 2018	197
The Inner Vision - January 13, 2018.....	200
The Extremism of European Christianity - January 6, 2018.....	202
Remembrances VII: The Return to Bethlehem - December 23, 2017.....	204
Merry Christmas! - December 16, 2017	226
The Vacant Hearth - December 9, 2017.....	227
Of Europe, the Seven Thousand, and Elijah - December 2, 2017.....	230
When We Remember Europe - November 25, 2017	232
The Moral Vision - November 18, 2017	234
In the Heart Dwelleth the Soul - November 11, 2017	236
The Institutionalized Tragedy of Liberalism - November 4, 2017	238
This Will Ever Be the European Story - October 28, 2017.....	240
The Day Is Far Spent - October 21, 2017	243
The Bitter Fruits of Diversity - October 14, 2017	245
Armed with Cruel Hate - October 7, 2017.....	247
Mere Virtue Is Not Enough - September 30, 2017	249
The Liberals' Holy Ghost - September 23, 2017.....	252
The Word of Their Testimony - September 16, 2017	253
In the Beginning - September 9, 2017	255
For Hearth, for Faith, for the Light of the World - September 2, 2017.....	257
The Devils of Liberalism - August 26, 2017	259
The End of Classical Liberalism - August 19, 2017	261
The European Heart Renewed - August 12, 2017.....	264
The Horror and Blasphemy of Liberalism - August 5, 2017	265
The Hatred of the World - July 29, 2017	267
While Memory Holds a Seat - July 22, 2017.....	270
Hell on Earth - July 15, 2017	273
The Prodigal Europeans - July 8, 2017	276
The Return to His Europe - July 1, 2017.....	278
The Europe That Shall Not Be Destroyed - June 24, 2017	279
The Eyes of the Heart - June 17, 2017.....	282
We Are Born of Thee - June 10, 2017.....	284
Our World Is Not Their World - June 3, 2017.....	286
What Is't to Leave Betimes? - May 27, 2017.....	288

The Humanity of God and the Inhumanity of the Liberals - July 27, 2019

Can I then be so cold-hearted,
think that under this same roof

heartless men should play the master,
daily give of evil proof,
and baptize in worldly oceans
human clay to devil's wiles,
off'ring wine at Jesus' table
to the god of murderous lies,
who will bless the loss of souls?

-N. F. S. Grundtvig

The devil has chosen to attack Christ through liberalism. "If I can liberalize the European people, I can remove Christ from their hearts, and then I will have triumphed over Christ." Satan has triumphed over Christ in the cultural wars. His people, not Christ's people, rule Europe and the world. It is our task, the remnant band, to restore Christ the King to His rightful place. And failing that, it is our task to die faithful, fighting to the last man. Surely we can fight for Christ just as nobly and as fiercely as our ancestors fought for Odin.

It is the noble savage, championed by such 'lights' as Rousseau and Addison, that has given liberalism the anti-Savior that was and is necessary to keep Christ away from the European people. Christ is now a king in exile, forsaken by His people, who have tossed Him aside for new kings and new gods.

The ideologies of humanity which always necessitate the destruction of the greater part of white humanity need a Savior diametrically opposed to the Savior once championed by white Europeans. Christianity is the one and only faith that holds to the belief that the living God entered human history. The European people, when they accepted Christ, became a people with a Christian past. The story of Christ's presence in history became the history of the European people. The new ideologies, the Jacobin and communist ideologies, the ideologies of liberalism, must oppose the white race because the ideologues of liberalism believe in a future kingdom on earth purged of the evil ones, the people who championed an evil religion which poisoned the hearts and minds of the European people and impeded the liberals' march to the new enlightened world of humanity unchained.

If you demonize the European Christians in the name of a liberal future, be it a Christless future or a future with a purer, more radiant Christ cleansed of His European trappings, you have killed the image of the living God in His people and created a new God, made in the image of Satan. It is now a given amongst the liberals who rule the European nations that whites must be replaced by the people of color, because the people of color are noble and pure while the whites are evil and impure. And it is now a given in Christian circles that Christianity and white pietas, which the 'Christians' call racism, are incompatible. So the people who constituted the heart of the Christian church, the antique Europeans, are shoved aside as bad Christians. But who then are the 'good' Christians? Francis the Blasphemer? The new age advocates of Christian Judaism? Or is it the theological Christians who bid us look to their systems, which rent asunder our heart to heart connection to the living God so that we could know Him better through their enlightened minds?

In modern Europe, even in conservative circles, it is forbidden to link Christianity to Europe. That is racist. It is racist because... Why is it racist to state the truth? The liberals never tell us why. They don't have to give a reason for their liberalism because they are in power. Jefferson Davis wanted, after the war, to have his day in court, because he thought he would win in court. But the liberals were not about to give up a victory won on the battlefield in a court of justice. So it is with the modern liberals. They have won the cultural war, they don't have to explain why every white man who opposes any aspect of liberalism is damned as a racist. It is simply a given, a sacred given more mathematically certain, in the liberals' minds, than the givens in geometry.

What are we to make of the Christians who inhabit the buildings called churches? Why do they foam at the mouth like vicious attack dogs every time Europe and Christ are linked together? Is it because they have reached a higher, more purified state of being, have they ascended to heaven while still on earth? That is what they believe. But the truth of the matter is not what the purified Christians tell us it is. The modern purified Christians want all the benefits of a Christian culture without the sacrifices that are necessary to maintain a Christian culture. You cannot have liberalism and Christ. The modern anti-European Christians claim they reject European Christianity because the antique Europeans were racist. Were they racist because they loved their own people? Yes, the modern European Christians tell us, it is racist to love your own people — that is the meaning of the parable of the Good Samaritan. But is that the meaning of the parable? No, of course not. The post-Christian liberals, such as Francis the Blasphemer, interpret the Good Samaritan parable in the light of liberal ideology because they want the liberals to love them. The Good Samaritan does not invite the stranger on the road into his own house, he takes care of him on the road and leaves him at an inn. Nor does he seek out the muggers in order to invite them into his home so that he can worship them as they rob, rape, and murder his family members. But of course the professed Christians are not interested in Christ's truth. They want the love of the world, and the powers that be

in the liberal world hate Christ and his people. The anti-Christian churchmen are the Amen chorus for the liberals. The liberals scream, 'racist' at the antique Europeans, and the churchmen scream, 'Amen.'

If the members of the liberals' Amen chorus were really Christian they would support the people who made the Incarnate Word part of their culture. Did the people of color ever know mercy or love before they were exposed to European culture? No, they did not. Yet in the name of their alleged love for the colored heathen, the Amen chorus wants to join with the liberals in order to eradicate the culture of the antique Europeans and destroy any and all whites who are still determined to stand by that cultural heritage. The Amen-ers and the liberals are constantly attacking the 'haters', which translates to people who hate the rule of Satan, who was, is, and ever shall be, the great hater. Liberalism is a religion of hate dedicated to the destruction of all things 'great and beautiful' that came from the antique Europeans' covenant with the God of love. There is no love in Liberalism, there is only hatred for Christ and His people. Feminism, gay pride, negro worship, and so many other perversions have become sacred rights in Liberalism, so again, I ask, do the rulers of such a world and their Amen chorus of 'Christians' have a right to condemn the antique Europeans for their alleged 'racism'? No, they do not have that right. Their heaven on earth is hell, and they are the hounds of hell, because they have denied their humanity and that denial makes them worse than beasts, it makes them devils.

Devils both then and also now,
when face to face with Jesus,
say, 'Yes, we know you are God's Son,
O, please do not destroy us!'
But what they know they cannot trust,
and with the Prince of Darkness must
dwell, for he is their Father!

Human comes first and Christian next;
on this truth they, misguided,
both beasts and devils long baptized,
themselves on Moors they prided,
they called them 'wise,' though lost to Christ,
and, while they mere right answers prized,
left heathens to damnation!

N. F. S. Grundtvig

The antique Europeans did not leave heathens to damnation because they loved their own people at their racial hearth fire, and the warmth of that European hearth fire extended to the hearth fires of the colored races. Without white pietas, there is only damnation for the whites and the people of color. Walt Disney's granddaughter recently condemned her grandfather as a racist. It is precisely that type of cowardly impiety, the hatred for white pietas, that has made white people and their new colored gods into the slaves of Satan. Those who truly love will endure to the end. We must counter the liberals' hatred of the white race with our love of our people in and through the Savior. If we cling to our humanity, the humanity revealed to us by the God who took on human flesh and dwelt among us, we will not go over the cliff with the demon-possessed liberals, nor will we be overwhelmed by the barbarians of color.

It is not possible to prove to the liberals or their Amen chorus of purified Christians that you are not racist, because they are not concerned with the truth. They use the term 'racist' as an enemy pilot uses a bomb. The bomb is dropped because war has commenced after all diplomatic options have been exhausted. Trotsky coined the term 'racist' to deal with his enemies, the white Christians, he did not coin the term as a means of aiding colored heathens or making peace with whites. When whites stop condemning white pietas, when they stop desecrating their white progenitors, then, and only then, will they be on the road to recovery. Recovery from what? Recovery from the sickness unto death, the denial of their humanity and the denial of His divine humanity.

Samuel Johnson's dictum that a man who is not a liberal when he is young has no heart, and a man who is not a conservative when he is old has no head, is false. The mark of a Burkean conservative, who is the only true conservative, is that he has a heart. He does not permit the murder of his people for the sake of an abstract concept of humanity. It was Burke the conservative who cared about the victims of Robespierre's purges to cleanse the French Republic by killing everyone connected to Christian Europe. It is always the heartless creatures of liberalism, who love their mind-forged systems and hate humanity, who murder millions in the name of humanity.

The followers of Odin bent their knees to Christ because they saw, with the eyes of the heart, that the humanity of Odin was their link to the God who was greater than Odin, not because He was smarter than Odin, but because His heart was greater than even Odin's great heart. We are the people who love Christ because of His divinely human heart. We will fight to the last man for our racial hearth fire because He dwells there with our people. We must be what the liberals call racist,

because we must love the human first, before we can know and love the living God, whose divine humanity sustains us in this world and the next. +

Unstudied from the Heart - July 20, 2019

Now as he was speaking with me, I was in a deep sleep on my face toward the ground: but he touched me, and set me upright. And he said, Behold, I will make thee know what shall be in the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end shall be. – Daniel 8: 18-19

Some dwell in deserts; seek and inhabit of their own accord homes in dark places; they wait for the heavenly home. Often he who grudges them life brings hateful fear upon them, shows them terror, at times empty splendor; he, the crafty slayer, has power over both; he persecutes lone-dwellers. Angels stand before them ready with the weapons of the spirit; they forget not to give aid; they protect the lives of holy men; they know their gladness is with God. These are the tried warriors who serve the King who never withholds the reward from them who are faithful in love. –Guthlac

In his short story “Earth’s Holocaust,” Nathaniel Hawthorne depicts a community of Europeans – “but whether in the time past or time to come is a matter of little or no moment” – who decide that they want to rid themselves of all the “worn-out trumpery” of the past in order to build a more perfect world. In order to accomplish their “noble” end, they build a huge bonfire and start heaping the family crests, the military decorations, the great literary works, and everything else connected to old Europe into the bonfire. And finally they cast the Bible into the fire:

In the general destruction of books already described, a holy volume, that stood apart from the catalogue of human literature, and yet, in one sense, was at its head, had been spared. But the Titan of innovation,—angel or fiend, double in his nature, and capable of deeds befitting both characters,—at first shaking down only the old and rotten shapes of things, had now, as it appeared, laid his terrible hand upon the main pillars which supported the whole edifice of our moral and spiritual state. The inhabitants of the earth had grown too enlightened to define their faith within a form of words, or to limit the spiritual by any analogy to our material existence. Truths which the heavens trembled at were now but a fable of the world’s infancy. Therefore, as the final sacrifice of human error, what else remained to be thrown upon the embers of that awful pile, except the book which, though a celestial revelation to past ages, was but a voice from a lower sphere as regarded the present race of man? It was done! Upon the blazing heap of falsehood and worn-out truth—things that the earth had never needed, or had ceased to need, or had grown childishly weary of—fell the ponderous church Bible, the great old volume that had lain so long on the cushion of the pulpit, and whence the pastor’s solemn voice had given holy utterance on so many a Sabbath day. There, likewise, fell the family Bible, which the long-buried patriarch had read to his children,—in prosperity or sorrow, by the fireside and in the summer shade of trees,—and had bequeathed downward as the heirloom of generations. There fell the bosom Bible, the little volume that had been the soul’s friend of some sorely tried child of dust, who thence took courage, whether his trial were for life or death, steadfastly confronting both in the strong assurance of immortality.

All these were flung into the fierce and riotous blaze; and then a mighty wind came roaring across the plain with a desolate howl, as if it were the angry lamentation of the earth for the loss of heaven’s sunshine; and it shook the gigantic pyramid of flame and scattered the cinders of half-consumed abominations around upon the spectators. – “Earth’s Holocaust”

The modern, scientized Europeans, clerical and lay, will respond to Hawthorne’s parable with ridicule: “We still have Bibles, we still have our faith — we have just progressed to a purer Christianity.” But we few who still see life as a parable can see that Hawthorne was describing liberalism. He saw the end result of the liberals’ progression to a ‘higher’ stage of existence: it leads to the dethronement of Christ the King and the enthronement of Satan. Our present anti-civilization is the embodiment of a “desolate howl.”

The fundamentalists, if there are any left, were and are right to oppose the liberals’ assertion that, “Man is a monkey, therefore we must all love one another.” But the liberals’ doctrine of progress entails so much more than Darwinian evolution. The same evangelicals who oppose evolution have accepted the liberals’ progressive view of democracy as part of mankind’s march to the light. And they have grafted the nation state of Israel onto their new and improved version of Christianity. So even the avowed “Biblical” Christians have decided to be very unbiblical in the face of liberal progress. And I need not mention the Catholic churchmen who wallow in the slough of liberalism like pigs in slop.

The modern European must be a repentant Samson in terms of his spiritual strength. He has the accumulated weight of over a century of liberal progress on his shoulders, which he must throw off and stand before the liberal world ready to do battle with the Philistines of liberalism. He must leave behind the cult of, “I am not a racist, please love me.” No matter how obsequious, no matter how subservient the white cultist is, the liberals and the colored barbarians will not love him. They haven’t the heart for love, because they have forsaken the God of love. If you join the liberals in their ‘progression’ toward the light of science, democracy, and the new and purer Christianity, you will join them in the darkness of the kingdom of eternal night where Satan dwells, prowling about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

If we don't consciously reject the liberals' progressive view of history, we will be swept along with the liberals into hell. The liberal is neither Greek nor Christian; he rejects the cyclic history of the pagan Greeks as well as the Christian eschatology. The liberals' doctrine of progress is, like every aspect of liberalism, a perversion of Christianity. The antique Christian believed that God entered human history at one particular date in history, and he believed that God would once again enter human history at the end of time. He did not believe, as the liberal believes, that mankind was evolving toward moral perfection, a moral perfection that would lead to the kingdom of God on earth. The hatred of all things white is connected with the two conflicting views of history, the Christian view and the liberal view. You cannot, as the 20th century and 21st century 'Christians' tried to do, and are still trying to do, blend the Christian view of history with the liberals' view; you cannot progress toward Babylon and still hold on to your Christian faith. In order to live and thrive in our modern Babylon you must either completely renounce Christ, as the liberals have done, or you must reject the Christ of old Europe, claiming He was a false Aslan, and graft Christ onto the nation state of Israel, Islam, and the sacred Negro. If 'racism' becomes the unpardonable sin, which it has become in all Christian circles, then the modern Christian who wants to move with the liberal times can feel justified in rejecting the racist antique Europeans and their antiquated Christ, in order to embrace the new blended Christianity that our Lord condemns in the book of Revelation.

C. S. Lewis was groping toward the light when he wrote *Pilgrim's Regress*. He realized that any man or woman born in the 20th century had to return to the faith of the European people prior to the 20th century, the century in which science triumphed over Christ. We can all, if we look at our racial history, see Satan's myth of man's progression toward moral perfection on this earth. Let me tell a tale of two grandmothers, my grandmothers. My paternal grandmother was a first generation American of Welsh descent. Her father started working in the mines at age 8 as a breaker boy and worked as a coal miner until his death at age 60. Her mother died before her father, and she, at age 14, became the woman of the house until she married at age 18. Her formative years were between 1900 and 1914, the years before World War I, which were culturally part of the 19th century. She never left that cultural milieu. When her church started preaching something different from what she had heard in her childhood, she stopped going to church. And she never — and this is essential — respected academia. Was her distrust of academia blind ignorance or was it a deeply ingrained prejudice against an alien ideology that attacked the hearth fire from which she derived her spiritual sustenance? I would say it was the latter. My grandmother had wise blood; she clung to her little Welsh hearth fire her entire life. I loved her then and now.

All that we know of faith and His divine charity we know because of the faith and love of men and women like my grandmother, who stood by the faith bequeathed to them at their racial and familial hearth fire, which was and is the faith of old Europe. My father went to college on the G.I. Bill, and the education he received separated him from his mother's faith, but there was something vital he retained from his mother who refused to progress: "Whenever you pray, always pray in Jesus's name." That, more than anything else he ever learned in academic or in the modern churches, sustained my father in the hour of his death. One thinks of the words penned by Charles Mackay:

A nameless man, amid the crowd
That thronged the daily mart,
Let fall a word of hope and love,
Unstudied from the heart,
A whisper on the tumult thrown,
A transitory breath,
It raised a brother from the dust,
It saved a soul from death.
O germ! O fount! O word of love!
O thought at random cast!
Ye were but little at the first,
But mighty at the last.

The love that was "unstudied from the heart," which came from our born of woman Savior, was the love bequeathed to our people in the days before the European people became too intelligent for the unstudied love from the heart. Everything must now be studied or it is not real. But that is contrary to reality. Traditionalist movements based on an intellectual adherence to abstract systems are not the type of tradition we need. We need a heartfelt faith, we need our Jesus, who lived in the hearts of the antique Europeans and will come to the hearts of the men and women who 'regress' to old Europe.

I won't dwell on my other grandmother. She went the way of church and state, the way of the intelligent people. As the church shifted, so did her faith. She lacked something in her soul, the spiritual backbone to resist the intelligence gambit of the liberals. The way of the third dumb brother, who embraced the foolishness of God, not the modern way, was not the intelligent way, and my maternal grandmother, like so many de-souled Europeans, succumbed to the fear of being insufficiently progressive.

We of the second, third, and fourth generations removed from the turn of the 19th century cannot simply remain faithful to the faith we received. We must regress; we must place ourselves firmly in old Europe and remain rooted at the hearth fires of our honored dead, the Europeans who loved Christ, “unstudied from the heart.” A love that can be put under a microscope and examined is not love. The modern propensity to study God’s love until it has become a non-love, and the modern propensity to study human love until it becomes mere biology, is a spiritual sickness. The scientizing of God and man always results in the disappearance of God from human hearts and the dissolution of the human personality.

The liberals know Jesus Christ as the demons knew Christ: “Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God.” What is lacking in the demons’ knowledge of Jesus Christ is what is lacking in the liberals’ knowledge of Jesus Christ. Both sets of demons lack hearts of flesh, because they desire, then and now, the power of the illuminated knowledge of the natural world, rather than intimacy with the living God who imparts, through His connection to hearts of flesh, a knowledge greater than intellectual knowledge. Having rejected that greater knowledge, the liberals must cast everything white and Christian into Hawthorne’s bonfire. And the intellectual Christians must join the liberals, they too must scream, “Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth?” If they don’t side with the liberals, they, who are like unto Caiaphas and Dostoyevsky’s Grand Inquisitor, will be forced to give up their power, the power that comes with being the ‘God dispensers,’ the intelligent Illuminati who keep God enclosed in their golden box of knowledge. Hence the liberals and the Christian Illuminati are bound in wedlock, through the power of the abstract intellect, to science and the noble savage, and against the people that were connected to God, not through their enlightened intellects, but through their heartfelt love for the Savior who did not despise the Virgin’s womb.

The bonfire of liberalism is still burning. The liberals have thrown everything directly connected to Christian Europe into the bonfire. Now they are proceeding to throw everything even tangentially connected to Christian Europe into the fire. The more conservative, democracy-loving liberals, whose hearts belong to the new order, men such as Geert Wilders and Donald Trump, are being thrown on the bonfire as well, because the liberals must destroy every semblance of a link between modern Europe and Christian Europe.

We must regress. The maxim, “You can’t go back in time,” is a maxim of liberalism. It refers to the material realm: it means that our scientific progress is the same as our moral progress. That is a lie. Morally we have ‘progressed’ beyond the morally depraved anti-civilizations of Babylon, Sodom, and Gomorrah. We must go back to incarnate Europe, the Europe that honored the Word made flesh.

I see no signs of any moral awakening of the European people. The love that once was there is gone. Is it really possible that the European people prefer the Babylonian night over the light of Christian Europe? Is the fear of that word ‘racist’ so great that it can separate us from the love of our own people and the love of our divine Savior? We need the strength of the repentant Samson and the faith of Daniel. Let us pray for that strength and that faith. +

The Image of the Beast Shall Die - July 13, 2019

His body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in colour to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude. And I Daniel alone saw the vision: for the men that were with me saw not the vision; but a great quaking fell upon them, so that they fled to hide themselves. – Daniel 10: 6-7

And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters. And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength. And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last: I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; – Revelation 1: 15-18

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. – Revelation 20: 12

The 4th of July celebrations in America always resemble a macabre dance of death, but they appeared particularly ghastly this year in lieu of the fact that the whites in America are facing a mass invasion of Africans (who are being flown in), Mexicans, and Moslems at our southern border that makes the Moslem invasion of the European countries seem small in comparison. Every time a new influx of barbarians violates the British nation, there is a segment of American ‘tough guys’ who gloat over the Brit’s failure to protect their nation. “That can’t happen here,” the tough guys jeer, “because we have our guns.” Well, it seems something greater than guns is necessary to stop the invasion of the barbarian hordes. Without

the will to fight, mere guns are worthless. And without pietas – ‘I will defend my own’ – white people will be and are defenseless against an invading army that is aided and abetted by the liberal rulers of our nation.

I am glad I still can purchase a gun without going on the black market. If a white burglar tries to violate my home, I might be allowed to shoot him in self-defense, but all the guns in the world, owned by white grazers who do not believe that whites have a racial hearth fire or a God of their ascending race, will be useless against an invading army that will not be deterred by abstractions such as ‘democracy’ and ‘peaceful co-existence.’ Broomsticks and garden hoes in the hands of a people with pietas are more effective weapons of self-defense than guns in the hands of people who believe in democracy and the rights of man. We are facing a crisis of biblical proportions that can only be dealt with by a people who believe God still speaks to them through His word.

There is no dichotomy between the Old Testament and the New Testament. Christ speaks to us through His prophets in the Old Testament, and He speaks to us directly in the New Testament. The divine charity is always there for those who seek God in their heart. Throughout the Old Testament we see the same depressing pattern: the people fall away from God, and they are brought down by the barbarian hordes – the Egyptians, the Assyrians, the Babylonians, the Persians, etc. There are brief restorations under good kings who listen to the prophets, kings such as Hezekiah, and his great grandson, Josiah, but the bad kings outnumber the good kings and eventually the people of Judah become a captive people. I am not suggesting that the captivity of the European people is exactly the same as the captivity of the Jews during the Babylonian captivity, but I do think there are spiritual parallels between the two captivities that we should not ignore.

The prophets brought the word of God to the people. They enjoined God’s people to take His word into their hearts. When the people’s hearts were hardened against His word, when they returned to Baal, they became the slaves of the heathens. The European people took Christ into their hearts and championed Him against heathendom. They fell away from Christ every time the churchmen managed to convince them that the minds of the theologians were greater than the heart of God. The constant battle between the intellects of men and the heart of God finally ended with the victory of the men of intellect. The 20th century marked the beginning of the Babylonian captivity of the European people. But that is where the spiritual parallel ends. The European people, unlike the Jews of the diaspora, did not and do not acknowledge their captivity. They continue to worship Baal through science, democracy, and the ‘noble savage.’ And the liberal rulers of the European people were not, and are not, as humane as tyrants such as Nebuchadnezzar and Darius. There is no foe deadlier than the post-Christian liberal, because the post-Christian liberal has all the zeal of a Christian European, but it is now a zeal for everything satanic, everything opposed to Christ’s reign of charity.

Tommy Robinson is going back to jail for opposing Islamic rapists, Jared Taylor was banned from Poland and the rest of the European nations for speaking of white solidarity, and whites throughout the European world are being denied the right to even speak of white people as a distinct race of people worthy of surviving as a people. All this has come about because white people have returned, through science and democracy, to the worship of Baal. The Jared Taylors of neo-paganism offer us no solution to white genocide, because they enjoin us, from within the cult of science and democracy, which is the worship of Baal, to oppose white genocide with the same democratic and scientific anti-vision of existence that has brought on white genocide. The Jared Taylors of Europe want to avoid Jesus Christ without going over the cliff with the swine. But that is not possible – you must stand with Christ or go over the cliff with the swine.

Trump cannot do what is necessary to stop the barbarian invasion of his nation, because he lacks an integral faith. He has built one altar to Jesus Christ and another altar to science and democracy. That is not sufficient. The devil will not share his throne with Jesus Christ. Trump was elected under the mantle of Satan – he cannot move against Satan and his people from within the bowels of Satandom. We need leaders who are not bound by the rules of science and democracy, we need leaders who seek the living God in their hearts and then act on the faith that is in their hearts. Would Alfred permit the barbarian hordes to invade his nation? No, he would not. But Alfred did not believe in the worship of Baal. He believed, as the prophets believed, in the living God.

God did not grant eternal life on this earth nor did He grant success in every battle to the kings who followed His will. But He did, and He will, sustain His people when they follow His will. They will not be overwhelmed by the heathens as a people, nor will they die alone and in despair as individuals. That is God’s promise to His people, and He has kept that promise. Instead of trying to organize democratic pep rallies for whites, white leaders should be enjoining their people to return to God. But of course our “leaders” do not believe that Christ is the living God. They believe in two-thirds of the liberals’ trinity – they believe in the abstract intellect of man, which is the father, and they believe in science, which is the Holy Ghost. They do not believe in the liberals’ savior, which is the noble black savage. Their unbelief infuriates the liberals, but it can’t really hurt them because two-thirds of a faith is not a fighting faith. When the Jared Taylors of Satandom are rebuked by their fellow liberals for their unbelief in the noble savage, they take their case to the first person of the Trinity, the abstract intellect. And much to their surprise, they always lose in that court. Why are they surprised?

Don't they see the image of the noble savage emblazoned on the courtroom door when they enter that tribunal? The verdict of the liberal court has been predetermined: the white man is always guilty as charged.

Neo-pagans, such as Arthur Kemp, tell us that the whites in South Africa and the British in India were overwhelmed by demographics. The Europeans came to those nations and through the practice of Christian charity they decreased the death rates and increased the birth rates of the indigenous colored populations. As a consequence the whites in those hostile lands were outnumbered and defeated. But wait a minute! Does it make that much difference whether whites are outnumbered 100,000 to 1 or 200,000 to 1? I would suggest that the whites in India and in South Africa were not defeated by demographics, they were defeated by their own liberalism. They lost the will to fight because they lost their faith in the God who defends His people against the heathens' arrows that fly by day and the liberals' pestilence that walketh in darkness. The only demographics that matter are the demographics of faith. When whites cease to believe in the living God, when the vast majority of whites worship Baal, they will be defeated by the colored heathens even if they outnumber the colored heathens. Nationalist leaders who bid us look to democracy, science, and improved breeding through animal husbandry in order to combat white genocide are not white leaders. They want liberalism without the plunge over the cliff with the swine. But that is always where those who reject Christ end up – they go off the cliff with the swine.

The 20th century was a century of transition for the European people. They progressed from an 'image of God' culture to an 'image of the beast in man' culture. The liberals held the reins of power and they used that power to attack God through His people.

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him "with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength." He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. – *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Look at our art in the 20th century. Does it make us feel connected to a God above nature? Do we see the image of God in man? No, we see the image of the beast in man. And that new image, the image of the beast in man, became codified and written into law in the 21st century. Feminism, negro worship, gay pride and every other perversion have become virtues in the 'beast in man' culture of the 21st century. How can men and women who accept the 'beast in man' culture of modernity resist the arrows of the colored barbarians and the pestilence of liberalism? They can't and they won't, because mere beasts who worship the man-gods of nature, the noble colored savages, do not have any love for their own people. They only live through the man-gods of nature.

God and God alone will judge the intentions of the European missionaries who tried to convert the colored heathens, but whatever their intentions were the end result was that the European missionaries turned away from their own culture, the 'image of God in man' culture, in order to embrace the 'beast in man' culture of the colored heathens. And with a missionary zeal the churchmen preached their new gospel, which is an anti-gospel, the gospel of Satan, to the European people. Every 'charitable' outreach in church and state is now directed toward the aid of the colored heathen. But is that aid given as alms to the needy should be given, in the spirit of Christian charity? No, it is not. The 'aid' to the colored heathen is given as tribute to the man-gods of the new gospel of the anti-Christ, the gospel of the 'beast in man.'

There are always a few intellectuals who can live with two-thirds of the new trinity, the abstracted intellect and science. But the bulk of mankind, particularly European mankind, need a Savior. If they cannot believe in Jesus Christ as their Savior, they will turn to the noble savages of color. How then can the European grazers oppose the barbarian invasion? They can't kill their gods, so they must plead with their gods to be merciful. But there is only mercy in the living God, the God of the prophets, the God of Daniel, the God of St. Paul, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, who is the beginning and the end. The European who does not forsake his people, the European who refuses to worship the 'beast in man,' is the only force on earth that can resist the barbarian invasion of his nation, whether that nation is in Europe or North America. Such a European has that within, the grace of God, which enables him to stand against a multitude of colored heathens and liberals. If God's image in man perishes there will be no mercy on the face of the earth, but the liberals' victory need not be the final victory. If we search our hearts for the living God, we can prevail over the liberals and the colored barbarians. It has been done before. It only seems like the liberals have won because the Europeans have lost their vision of the God-Man and replaced that vision with the man-gods of color. "I know not seems." +

Surviving the Tempest of Liberalism - July 6, 2019

The day goes by like a shadow o'er the heart. – Stephen Collins Foster

In France they have their Bastille Day, and in America we have our 4th of July. In both cases the celebrations are grounded in the satanic principles of “liberty, equality, fraternity.” Liberty from what? From all restraints placed upon us by the living God. Equality? Yes, an equality for the people, but “the people” as defined by the Illuminati. And who is our fraternal brother? It is Satan.

America was the first breakaway nation, the first nation of Europeans who broke away from the European commonwealth of Christian nations in order to “form a more perfect union.” France and the rest of the European nations soon followed in America’s unholy train. The Southern people’s revolt in the 1860s was the revolt of a Christian people trying to hold onto their filial relationship to God and their familial relationship to their kith and kin against the dictates of a governing body that demanded a universality based on the worship of Baal. The weakness of the Southern revolt was that it was grounded in the assumption that “the Constitution has been sabotaged,” rather than, “the Constitution was penned in hell.” Let us now proceed, in this the 21st century, the century that should use the phrase “In the year of Satan”, under the correct assumption that the document penned in hell and the principles emitting from that document must be opposed by Christian Europeans.

We must see that the destruction of the white race has been codified into law in the European nations. All the utopian nations of Europe are conceived in liberty from God and dedicated to the proposition that the white race and the Christ of old Europe are evil. And conversely, all non-whites and all non-Christian religions are good and pure. The liberals fight to make sure that their satanic republic “shall long endure.”

You can’t stop the great liberal purge of the Christ-bearing race by begging the liberals to go back to a less virulent form of the democratic cancer. Once the cancer has spread, you can only fight it and kill it; you can’t go back to its first stage. The Trump presidency is a perfect example of the futility of trying to go back to a higher position on the slippery slope that leads to hell. Under Trump’s presidency, the Mexican invasion of the United States has not been stopped, but that is not Trump’s fault. He has done more than any other president tried to do or ever will do to stop the Mexican invasion of the United States. His efforts have failed miserably because you can’t stop an invasion sanctioned by a liberal elite that hates all things white and Christian by invoking the principles of that same white-hating, Christ-hating elite. Flesh and blood people are invading the United States, just as flesh and blood people are invading the European nations. The invasions cannot be stopped by an appeal to an abstract belief in the democratic way. The democratic way is a tool of the devil, a tool the liberal elite uses to destroy whiteness. Could Ganelon have been expected to save the Christians whom he plotted to destroy? Trump cannot fire upon the invaders because his own party and the Democratic Party would have him removed from office. And the harpies of the so-called conservative right, such as Ann Coulter, who have been screaming at Trump to do something about the invasion, would join in the chorus of people demanding his removal from office if he actually used violence to stop the invasion. Only a people who believe they are a people with a homeland will defend their people and their homeland.

White people do not believe they are a people, nor do they believe that they have a racial home. Africa for blacks, Europe for blacks and Moslems, and the United States for blacks, Moslems, and Mexicans. But Europe for whites? Or the United States for whites? That is racist. The Pope’s heart bleeds for the Mexican “refugees” who drowned, but does his heart bleed for whites in South Africa and the European nations who have been murdered and dispossessed by the black Africans, the Mexicans, and the Moslems? No, his heart does not bleed for those white victims, because the Pope’s heart belongs to the great hater of the white race, his fraternal brother, Lucifer.

Nothing good in America came from our Constitution, which was written by Enlightenment agnostics who held Christ in contempt. What was good in America stemmed from the customs and manners that were born and nurtured in Christian Europe. Those customs and manners could not stand up against the liberal Illuminati once the foundation of those customs and manners, which was and is faith in Christ as true God and true Man, was rent asunder. The much vaunted light of American liberty and justice was not a light, it was the beginning of a new European era, the era of the European people’s descent into the darkness of liberalism, which constitutes, then and now, the enthronement of Satan in the nations that once recognized Christ as their King.

Our home must be more than the place where we live. It must be sacred ground because those whom we love most and those who love us dwell there in communion with the living God. “What God has joined together let no man rent asunder.” We have allowed the liberals and their confederates in organized Christian Jewry to rent asunder the sacred bonds that bind us to our kith and kin and our God. The day of Christian Europe has become the night of Liberalism.

Stephen Foster, the great Northern apologist for the Southern people, put it quite well: “The day goes by like a shadow o’er the heart...” We can’t ever be a people again, we can’t return home, unless we love our people in and through Christ. Like “God’s spies” we can make that observation, but we can’t will “the love that once was there.” We can’t become Christians for the pragmatic purpose of restoring our people. We must actually believe, as our people once believed, in the suffering Servant. Then we will feel as they felt about their people and their homeland. When I was a schoolboy, I memorized the

poem, “Marco Bozzaris” by Fitz-Green Halleck (1790-1867). The poem tells the story of Bozzaris’s heroic resistance to the Turkish invaders of his homeland.

An hour passed on—the Turk awoke;
That bright dream was his last;
He woke—to hear his sentries shriek,
“To arms! they come! the Greek! the Greek!”
He woke—to die midst flame, and smoke,
And shout, and groan, and sabre-stroke,
And death-shots falling thick and fast
As lightnings from the mountain-cloud;
And heard, with voice as trumpet loud,
Bozzaris cheer his band:
“Strike—till the last armed foe expires;
Strike—for your altars and your fires;
Strike—for the green graves of your sires;
God—and your native land!”

They fought—like brave men, long and well;
They piled that ground with Moslem slain,
They conquered—but Bozzaris fell,
Bleeding at every vein.
His few surviving comrades saw
His smile when rang their proud hurrah,
And the red field was won;
Then saw in death his eyelids close
Calmly, as to a night’s repose,
Like flowers at set of sun.

Such story poems used to be the birthright of every European. I still remember how my heart stirred within me when I recited the lines, “Strike—till the last armed foe expires; Strike—for your altars and your fires; Strike—for the green graves of your sires; God—and your native land!” All that schoolboy stuff is now considered racist and unchristian. But we must assert, against the liberals and the churchmen, that pietas is not racist. Why did our sovereign Lord take flesh and dwell among us if He thought that our human ties of affection and love were not our connections to the living God? The attack on those human ties is an attack on our God. Who shall separate us from the love of Jesus Christ? The liberals and the churchmen tell us they shall separate us from the love of Jesus Christ by separating us from our people. As for me and my house, we shall serve the Lord, by loving our people in and through the incarnate Lord.

A friend recently told me of a television show on the History Channel called *Ancient Aliens*, which claims to tell ‘true’ stories of aliens from other planets who have visited earth and founded civilizations here. Only a scientific minded people, who are the most credulous of all people, could believe such rot. The Christ story, which begins with the creation of the world in seven days and proceeds through the temptation in the Garden of Eden, the Great Flood, the Incarnation and then the Crucifixion and Resurrection of our Savior is deemed too fantastical to believe, yet scientific ‘histories’ of aliens are presented as fact to the credulous, superstitious moderns. The foolishness of God is difficult to believe in, but His foolishness strikes a chord in our heart that helps us surmount our unbelief. Do the gods of the science-minded liberals – the negroes, the aliens from other planets, or the bushmen from the Amazon jungle – strike a chord in our heart? When will the European people return home? They will return home when they use the visionary organ of sight, the human heart, instead of their logical, credulous brains, which see only what appears on the surface of life but fail to see what dwells below the surface in the depths of the human heart.

Faith binds us to God and our people; it is the reason we fight in defense of hearth and nation. A people devoid of faith will not fight. The European people no longer believe in the same God their ancestors believed in, and as a consequence they are being overrun by barbarian hordes who do have faith; they believe in their heathen gods while the Europeans do not believe in Christ. I do not see any future for the European people except a future of slavery and extinction. Unless? There is only one ‘unless,’ the same ‘unless’ that has always been our only hope. Christ promised us He would be with us always. I do not see how we can progress beyond our faith in His promise. Why is the worship of Baal, under the mantle of science and the noble savage, a progression from darkness to light? If we ignore the experts who tell us there never was a Christian Europe, we will discover, in our past, a people who loved much. Through those people and their God we will come to see life “feelingly,” again, and we will prevail against the wickedness and snares of the devil and his liberal minions.

Human beings, despite what the Christian Gnostics and the liberals tell us, are the only medium for God’s revelation. He comes to human hearts, not to Platonic minds. His word planted in human hearts is the true light of the world. The liberals’ attack on our racial hearth fire is Satan’s attack on the Word made flesh. If we resist that assault, if we strike for

our altars and our hearth fires, we will stand with the Lord God who did not disdain to take on human flesh. “Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? saith the Lord: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut the womb? saith thy God. Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all ye that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all ye that mourn for her: That ye may suck, and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations; that ye may milk out, and be delighted with the abundance of her glory. For thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon her sides, and be dandled upon her knees. As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem. And when ye see this, your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like an herb: and the hand of the Lord shall be known toward his servants, and his indignation toward his enemies.” – Isaiah 66: 9-14 +

The Great Liberal Tribunal - June 29, 2019

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. – John 1:1

The liberals demonize Christian Europe, and the intellectual Christians say there never was a Christian Europe. But despite the liberals’ demonization and the intellectual Christians’ denial, I maintain that the antique Europeans, those men and women who predated the 20th century, were the “good ground” that “did yield fruit that sprang up and increased; and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.” The colored barbarians, the liberals, and the intellectual Christians constitute the three different kinds of ground upon which the “good seed” could not grow. First there are the people who, having heard the word, allowed Satan to “taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.” Then there are the people who were the stony ground; they at first received the word “with gladness,” but they “have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word’s sake, immediately they are offended.” And the third group are those who receive the word “sown among thorns; such as hear the word, And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.”

What all three groups of people have in common is that they lack the “good ground” – they lack hearts of flesh receptive to the Word made flesh. Is it possible for a people whose ancestors were once the “good ground” to become once again the “good ground” upon which our Lord built His church? That is the question for the Hamlets of Europe.

Let me refer to a piece of folklore. A cosmopolitan was lost in the backwoods of Maine (it could be any backwoods you choose). He pulls up to an old farmhouse, knocks at the door, and asks the farmer who opens it, “How do I get to Bangor from here?” The farmer replies, “If I was going to Bangor I wouldn’t start from here.” If you intended to build a Christian culture, you wouldn’t start to build within the confines of Liberalism, but like the lost cosmopolitan we are here, so we must start from here.

Liberalism was built by Europeans who came to hate, like the followers of Caiaphas, the Word made flesh. The intellectual Christians refused to oppose the liberals because the Word of God had not taken root in their hearts; when the persecution came, in the form of “you are stupid” and/or “you are racist,” the intellectual Christians caved in to liberalism. There is no way we, as a people, can return to Christ unless we circumcise our hearts and ask Him to make us the “good ground.” Then, in the midst of Liberalism, we will see the quicksand of Satan become the “good ground” of Christian Europe once again.

Satan has become the ruler of the European world (the non-European world always belonged to Satan) by destroying, through the theologians, the heart to heart connection between God and man. Both the Roman Catholic theologians and the Protestant theologians decided that God could not enter human hearts, because human hearts were sinful. God was only able to enter special human minds – their minds – and those special minds could tell the sin-laden people all about God. But God’s word is meant for human hearts. Words from the heart are the substance of all our sacred bonds in life. If we cannot speak the language of love from the heart, how can we love?

If a heathen language – let us say, Chinese, though I know not with how much or little right – did not have the words and expressions for the invisible yet living God as the Lord of all things visible, then the Spirit of Christ could not possibly reveal either itself or the Word of God’s mercy in that language. To reveal oneself and divine truth to someone can only happen through words that are known and can be appropriated, making that person aware of God and the divine, the invisible, and the eternal—which is what these things are in truth. – N.F.S. Grundtvig, *Human Comes First*

The Bible is not the living word of God if it comes to us from the minds of theologians, nor are the church documents the living word of God if they come to us as the gospel according to the Illuminati. The scientizing of man started with the scientizing of God. There is a direct line between the Christian scholastics and the modern day psychologists, anthropologists, and sociologists who want to scientize our language so that there is no poetic content left in our culture.

Once the poetic heart of our language is eliminated, there will be no spiritual contact between man and man and there will be no spiritual contact between God and man. All will be “cheerless, dark and deadly.” That is not quite accurate; it is more accurate to say that all is “cheerless, dark and deadly.” Western man has entered the anesthetized stage of European history in which the European people must be anesthetized by the superficialities of materialism and/or the opiates of drugs and alcohol. The spiritual realm of life is not even a shadow on the wall, it has disappeared in the mists of our forgotten history. Never to return again? We shall see; what once existed can exist again.

The bards who came from the “good ground” of Christian Europe and did not reject their people, bards such as Shakespeare, Scott, and Dickens, tell us stories about the interaction between Christ and His people. But I am only speaking of those bards who wrote from a heart connected to their people. I am not speaking of poets such as Shelley and Byron who made a conscious decision to stand, like Satan and the theologians, apart from their people. There are many works from the heart of Christian Europe that speak to us still if we would open our hearts to the Word made flesh. Let us look at Dickens’ masterpiece *Great Expectations* as a for-instance, not with the mind of a post-Christian literary critic, but with the heart of an antique European. Pip’s journey from light to darkness and back to the light can be our journey. He has a home, a Christian home, because of Joe Gargery who helps offset the cruelty of Pip’s older sister who is “bringing him up by hand.” But once he has contact with the ‘higher’ intellectual culture of Miss Havisham and Estella, he can no longer be content with his home:

It is a most miserable thing to feel ashamed of home. There may be black ingratitude in the thing, and the punishment may be retributive and well deserved; but that it is a miserable thing, I can testify.

Home had never been a very pleasant place to me, because of my sister’s temper. But, Joe had sanctified it, and I had believed in it. I had believed in the best parlor as a most elegant saloon; I had believed in the front door, as a mysterious portal of the Temple of State whose solemn opening was attended with a sacrifice of roast fowls; I had believed in the kitchen as a chaste though not magnificent apartment; I had believed in the forge as the glowing road to manhood and independence. Within a single year all this was changed. Now it was all coarse and common, and I would not have had Miss Havisham and Estella see it on any account.

When we became ashamed of our racial home, in which we knew our Lord through his people who believed in the Word made flesh, we became the unpeople without souls to call our own. The way a man speaks about God reveals how he feels about God and his people. Do the theologians speak of Christ as St. Paul spoke about Christ? Do the theologians speak of Christ as Christ spoke of Himself? If our faith is in the theologians and the theologians’ church, our faith is not rooted in the “good ground,” which is the European people when they had hearts of flesh, it is rooted in the thorns and stony ground, which allows the devil to enter into a man’s heart.

The liberals are currently putting the finishing touches on the de-Christianization of the European people. The BBC News notes that Facebook “has agreed to give the names of French users who are suspected of using hate speech on its platform to the courts when requested.” And what, according to the great liberal tribunal, is hate speech? “Illegal hate speech is defined by the European Commission as public conduct that incites violence or hatred to groups of people defined by characteristics such as race, religion, and ethnic origin.” Let us translate that doublespeak: It is forbidden to say anything against the forces of evil who are intent on destroying every last vestige of the people who once believed in the Word made flesh. Every blasphemy against the God of the antique Europeans shall be permitted, and every atrocity, no matter how cruel and merciless, committed against white people shall be permitted, but there shall be no criticism or resistance, in word or deed, to the liberals’ purge of the white Christ-bearing race. Our theologians, the church men, gave up their defense of Christ and His people many years ago. Who will speak a word in His and their behalf now?

“In the beginning was the Word.” The devil knows that. That is why the liberals, who are under the influence of Satan, attack any manifestation of the Word made flesh. We must not abandon that word. We must love our people and our God with hearts of flesh, and we must express that love with words that come from the heart, not with the words of the theologians and the psychologists, which are devil words used to destroy our heart-to-heart connection to the living God. Let me return to Pip, of *Great Expectations*. He returns to the God of his ascending race and to the love of his racial and familial hearth fire through the love of a repentant sinner. At the deathbed of that repentant sinner, Pip unites his love for his benefactor, the repentant sinner, with our Lord’s love for all repentant sinners. And he uses the language of love:

With a last faint effort, which would have been powerless but for my yielding to it and assisting it, he raised my hand to his lips. Then, he gently let it sink upon his breast again, with his own hands lying on it. The placid look at the white ceiling came back, and passed away, and his head dropped quietly on his breast.

Mindful, then, of what we had read together, I thought of the two men who went up into the Temple to pray, and I knew there were no better words that I could say beside his bed, than “O Lord, be merciful to him a sinner!”

If we unite our love for our people to His love, the love that passeth the knowledge of the theologians, the philosophers, and the psychologists, we will not perish as a people nor will He leave us bereft of comfort in our battle against the pestilence of liberalism, which commands us to walk in darkness and die at the hands of Satan.

St. Paul enjoins us to, “Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.” And what is the whole armor of God? Is it the knowledge of the theologians? No, it is the Word made flesh. It is the knowledge of a heart connected to Him. We face an enemy in the liberals, much crueler than the cruel tyrants of the Old Testament, such as Darius and Nebuchadnezzar. We face a post-Christian enemy that hates Christ and His people with a fury that can only come from one source. Our ancient foe doth indeed seek to work us woe. The triumph of liberalism is his triumph. There is only one defense against the merciless, satanic assault of the liberals. We must unequivocally commit our hearts to the Word made flesh, while forsaking the scientized culture of death, championed by the liberals and the theological purveyors of Christless Christianity. We stand with Daniel in the lion’s den and with all the Europeans, our honored dead, who saw the living God with hearts of flesh. +

The Bowstrings of the Spirit - June 22, 2019

It was a dry cold night, and the wind blew keenly, and the frost was white and hard. A man would die to-night of lying out on the marshes, I thought. And then I looked at the stars, and considered how awful it would be for a man to turn his face up to them as he froze to death, and see no help or pity in all the glittering multitude. – *Great Expectations*

When Walt Disney died, the entire technical crew, the cartoonists, the directors, the writers, who had been with Walt, remained. But Disney Studios never, after Walt’s death, put out anything even remotely as good as the type of movies and cartoons that came out of Disney Studios when Walt was alive. The heart of the studio was dead. In a similar vein there was the Inklings, a club of writers that C. S. Lewis started, to form a counter-culture within Academia that was opposed to the anti-Christian bias of Academia. When C. S. Lewis died, the Inklings died. In both cases, Disney Studios and the Inklings, the old forms survived, but the substance was gone, because the substance of Disney Studios and the substance of the Inklings depended on the heart and soul of one man. “But O for the touch of a vanished hand, and the sound of a voice that is still.”

We currently live in an anti-civilization, a world completely opposed to the civilization of old Europe, because we have lost contact with the God-Man who was and is the heart and soul of our civilization. Many of the outer forms of the old Europe still remain, but it is crystal clear that the substance of modern Europe is not the substance of old Europe. New Europe and old Europe are two diametrically opposed worlds. That fact seems too obvious to have to be stated, but it needs to be stated over and over again, because it is not obvious to the conservatives and the grazers, the people who constitute the great majority of the European people. Only the liberals realize that a new world, their world, has been built over the ruins of old Europe. The conservatives still cling to their Augustinian reading of history: “There can never be a Christian culture. Everything outside the organizational structure called the Church is the realm of the barbarians. Let us take refuge behind the hollowed walls of Christian academia.” Such logic leaves out the great miracle, the conversion of the European tribesmen that Thomas Nelson Page writes about:

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

How can we forget those Europeans who saw that Odin was the forerunner of Christ and who carved out a place for Christ in the midst of a heathen world? All that was good, all that elevated the European people to another realm, a better realm of existence than mere paganism, stemmed from the European tribesmen’s leap across the pagan divide from Odin to Christ. If that conversion never occurred, if those Europeans were not really Christian, and the real Christian men and women are still in the future, a future purged of the false Christ of the European people, then we are of all men most to be pitied, for we have believed a lie.

“That is no tragedy,” the liberals tell us, “You can become like us and cavort around the throne of the sacred negro, which is true happiness and eternal bliss.” If barbarism is happiness and the extinction of the human personality is bliss, then the liberals are right: we should join them in their long day’s journey into the beautiful night of Liberalism. The white grazers have no problem with the darkness of liberalism, because the conservatives tell them that “darkness is right,” that there never was a Narnian upper world, there is only the liberals’ world of eternal night. In that world there are the four freedoms, freedom to worship the sacred negro, freedom to speak the praises of the sacred negro, freedom from fear, namely the fear of the living God, and freedom from want, which is the freedom to give up the bread of life, which is Christ the Lord, in order to obtain the things of this world only. The white grazers have been bound hand and foot by their

‘conservative’ leaders and turned over to the liberal torturers. In the name of a pure Christian future that is always on the horizon, but never actually materializes, the conservative intellectuals have betrayed the only civilization that was genuinely Christian in order to join with the liberals in the building of a civilization that is a new Babel, a hell on earth.

The reason why the conservatives work within the perimeters of liberalism in order to effect change rather than attack liberalism itself is because the modern conservatives are not Burkean conservatives. It was Burke’s contention that prior to the French Revolution, “The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in the fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines.” Because the nations of Europe were Christian and the Jacobins were opposed to Christianity, Burke maintained that Christian Britain and the rest of the European nations could not, without betraying the moral essence of their nations, make peace with the Jacobin government whether Robespierre or the Directory was in charge of it. But the nations of Europe did make peace with the Jacobins, and we, the European people, have been paying the consequences of that ‘peace’ for centuries, in small dribs and drabs at first, but now, in the 21st century, we are paying the price with our blood.

During the French Revolution, Jacobin sympathizers throughout the European nations were either completely indifferent to — or, in many instances, they rejoiced at — the torture and murder of white Christians. And they justified their indifference and/or their exaltation by claiming that the murdered whites were insufficiently Christian, so they deserved to be killed:

What ferocity of character drew on the fate of Elizabeth, the sister of King Lewis the 16th? For which of the vices of that pattern of benevolence, of piety, and of all the virtues, did they put her to death? For which of her vices did they put to death the mildest of all human creatures, the Duchess of Biron? What were the crimes of those crowds of Matrons and Virgins of condition, whom they massacred, with their juries of blood, in prisons and on scaffolds? What were the enormities of the Infant King, whom they caused by lingering tortures to perish in their dungeon, and whom if at last they despatched by poison, it was in that detestable crime the only act of mercy they have ever shewn?

What softening of character is to be had, what review of their social situations and duties is to be taught by these examples, to Kings, to Nobles, to Men of Property, to Women, and to Infants? The Royal Family perished, because it was royal. The Nobles perished, because they were noble. The Men, Women and Children, who had property, because they had property to be robbed of. The Priests were punished, after they had been robbed of their all, not for their vices, but for their virtues and their piety, which made them an honour to their sacred profession, and to that nature, of which we ought to be proud, since they belong to it. My Lord, nothing can be learned from such examples, except the danger of being Kings, Queens, Nobles, Priests, and Children to be butchered on account of their inheritance.
– *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Is such liberal ferocity in the past? No, it is not, it is still with us. Have not the liberals countenanced the massacre of the whites in South Africa because they were ‘racists’ and therefore outside the ken of humanity? And haven’t the conservatives ignored the plight of pro-Apartheid whites in South Africa because they were insufficiently Christian, because they were — horror of horrors — white separatists? But South Africa really is the entire Western world. The liberals must destroy everything white because old Europe was Christian, and the conservatives will not defend old Europe or the continued existence of whites who champion old Europe, because the antique Europeans, from their utopian viewpoint, were insufficiently Christian. Belloc, the ‘conservative’ Catholic, was an ardent supporter of the Jacobins because he felt that the murdered aristocrats were insufficiently Catholic, so they deserved to be purged. That ‘conservative’ angelism is what enables the liberals to reign unopposed. And if the great purgers are not opposed, they will enlarge their vision of the purge. It is no longer the aristocrats who must be destroyed, it is all the non-illuminated whites who must be blotted off the face of the earth. Rich or poor, all whites have become aristocrats in the eyes of the liberal Jacobins.

The liberals’ onslaught has intensified in the 21st century because there is no longer any Christian check on their hatred, and it has intensified because every individual white fears that he will be found wanting, that he will be seen as too white, making him one of the non-illuminated whites who must go to the guillotine. This is why white liberals scream ‘racist’ at the top of their lungs at the slightest pretext and more often than not with no pretext whatsoever. They must prove that they are illuminated whites who have transcended whiteness. They live in the hope that the dark gods of liberalism will place a mark on their door so that the angel of death will leave them alone. But the dark gods of liberalism are not gods of mercy: they will kill the illuminated whites just as readily as the non-illuminated whites.

And the conservatives? Will they resist the liberals’ onslaught? No, they won’t. Their mission in life is to preserve impersonal, cosmic, Chardinian Christianity, and impersonal, abstract democracy. Individual human beings, particularly non-illuminated white human beings, do not interest them. They live for the future, a future in which they have won the illuminated debate with their liberal cousins and the world is run according to their Socratic, white minds, which have transcended racism, provincialism, and all feelings, including a passion for the living God, that stem from the human heart. The European with a heart that still lives must reject the inhumanity of Christless liberalism and its cousin, intellectual Christianity, which is also Christless because it lacks a heart of flesh, grounded in pietas.

If the words and sounds mean nothing—
'people' and 'the fatherland'—
if for us they have no meaning
more than numbers, earth, and strand,
futile is all formulation,
all talk of 'God's congregation'
or God's kingdom's hills and vales.

If our hearts lack any feeling
that we are a race divine,
if no pain that with this calling
we ourselves could not align,
we mock words we cannot follow,
make 'redeemed', 'reborn' sound hollow,
though God wants us as His own.

In the people's mouth the Word tells
what the world has never seen;
when the Word sounds in the heart's depth,
only hearts know what it means;
for the bowstrings of the spirit
and the flaming heart's sweet lyric
are the echo of God's Word.

-N.F.S. Grundtvig

Throughout the gospels, the scribes and the Pharisees follow Christ around in order to mock Him and to tally up His transgressions against the law. When He tells them why He heals people on the Sabbath and why He eats with publicans and sinners, the scribes and the Pharisees never listen to His explanations. They are not interested, because they have only one concern – their own power. And Christ is a threat to their power. Some of the scribes and Pharisees might even have suspected that Christ was indeed the Son of God, but that doesn't matter to them. It is this world, and this world only, that they care about. The modern scribes and Pharisees in the liberal-conservative camps have applied the sneer and the tally sheet of transgressions against the liberals' law to the antique Europeans who gave their hearts to Christ. "Seek and ye shall find." The friends of the man who was sick with the palsy found a way to bring their friend to Christ. They lowered him down from a hole they made in the ceiling. Is it really so difficult to find the Son of the living God if we go to the heart of old Europe? Isn't He the moral essence of that civilization? We must have a ground to stand on, the words 'people' and 'the fatherland' must be our connection to the God who enters human hearts. My God, who is Jesus Christ, and my people, who are the antique Europeans, formed a union of hearts with Christ. Who shall sever us from that union? Certainly not the liberals, and certainly not their conservative brethren. The bonds of the heart should never be broken. And they shall not be broken. Outside of those bonds is cold, merciless death – within those bonds is mercy, love, and life. +

No More Night – June 15, 2019

The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: But because the Lord loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt. Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations. –Deuteronomy 7: 7-9

Toward the end of Thomas Aird's poem "The Devil's Dream on Mount Aksbeck," the devil is offered a chance to accept the mercy of God:

At last, from out the barren womb of many thousand years,
A sound as of the green-leaved earth his thirsty spirit cheers;
And, oh, a presence soft and cool came o'er his burning dream,
A form of beauty clad about with fair creation's beam;
A low sweet voice was in his ear, thrilled through his inmost soul,
And these the words that bowed his heart with softly sad control:—

"No sister e'er hath been to thee with pearly eyes of love;
No mother e'er hath wept for thee, an outcast from above;
No hand hath come from out the cloud to wash thy scarrèd face;
No voice to bid thee lie in peace, the noblest of thy race:

But bow thee to the God of Love, and all shall yet be well,
And yet in days of holy peace and love thy soul shall dwell.

“And thou shalt dwell ‘mid leaves and rills far from this torrid heat,
And I with streams of cooling milk will bathe thy blistered feet;
And when the troubled tears shall start to think of all the past,
My mouth shall haste to kiss them off, and chase thy sorrows fast;
And thou shalt walk in soft white light with kings and priests abroad,
And thou shalt summer high in bliss upon the hills of God.”

The devil rejects God’s mercy:

So knew the Fiend, and fain would he down to oblivion go;
But back from fear his spirit proud, recoiling like a bow,
Sprung. O’er his head he saw the heavens upstayed bright and high;
The planets, undisturbed by him, were shining in the sky;
The silent magnanimity of Nature and her God
With anguish smote his haughty soul, and sent his Hell abroad.

At Eastertime we greet our fellow Christians with, “Christ has risen!,” and the reply is, “Indeed He has!” One can picture the devils in hell commenting on the success of their master:

1st Junior Devil: “Our master has sent his hell abroad.”

2nd Junior Devil: “Indeed he has.”

The devil has been enormously successful in the past 100 years; he has sent his hell abroad throughout the European world, the only world where Christ once held a significant place. But there is an irony involved in the devil’s success. That proud spirit had to get the consent of the very creatures he hates in order to work his will upon them. Isn’t that rather ignoble, to prowl about the world trying to ruin souls by trickery instead of a straight-forward challenge? Yes, in my opinion it is rather ignoble, but then I am not privy to the innermost thoughts – nor do I want to be – of the devil. Perhaps he is able to save his ego by some sophistry we do not understand, but howsoever he convinces himself that petty treachery is compatible with his pride, he does work his will upon mankind by making it appear that what men desire most is what the devil can provide for them.

There never was a time when the temptations of the devil were not appealing, but I think Charles Maturin gets it right in his novel *Melmoth the Wanderer*, in which he depicts men and women of old Europe, whom the devil asks to give up their souls for what he can give them. They ultimately refuse to give up their souls; the devil fails. Why does he fail? He fails because those Europeans lived in a Europe that was consecrated to Christ. Our Savior was still present in the hearts of the European people in the ‘unenlightened’ days of Christian Europe. There were limits to the evils they did, because Christ was present in their hearts. And so long as He is present within the human breast, Satan cannot enter. But once the European people’s heart-to-heart covenant with Christ was broken, Satan can, will, and did become the ruler of the European people. The constant turning away from God and the turning back to God in the Old Testament is the story of a heart-to-heart covenant, the breaking of that covenant, and the return to the covenant. When Moses, the people’s connection to the living God, went up to Mt. Sinai, the Hebrew people felt abandoned by God and returned to Baal. The European people have made the same return to Baal, which is a return to nature and nature’s gods, as the Hebrews did when Moses ‘abandoned’ them.

The Grand Inquisitor hurls the accusation, “You abandoned mankind,” at Christ. And what is Christ’s answer? He does not give an answer. It seems that Satan is there for us, but our Lord is not. That is the crux of the matter. Is there a realm of existence that “knows not seems?” Hamlet’s mother did not see the vision from another world vouchsafed to Hamlet, yet she asserted with certainty, “I see nothing, yet all that there is I see.” The scholastics thought there was no incompatibility between reason and revelation: “Since all that is can be known by reason, including God’s revelation, why should we not place reason on an equal level with revelation?” Why indeed? We should not place human reason and God’s revelation on an equal level because we cannot know God through reason. Reason forms no covenants, it only draws up contracts. Reason cannot see beyond what seems. If we look at God’s word through the eyes of reason, it appears that He does not answer prayer and that He lied about His imminent return. But if we approach His holy word with our hearts, and if we pray with our hearts, does not a different picture of God emerge, distinct from the absentee God whom we see with the eyes of reason? All deep thought comes from the heart – if we refuse to think from the heart we will never see anything other than the material world, the world of Baal.

Once reason contemplating nature became synonymous with revelation the stage was set for the triumph of Satan in the Western world. Satan started his own back-to-nature movement. The clergymen told their people that God was in nature, which opened the door for the liberals, who took that clerical maxim one step further – “God is nature.” Our modern non-civilization is a synthesis of the ‘rational’ civilizations of Babel, Sodom and Gomorrah, and Egypt. The European people prefer their Egyptian night to Christian Europe, but why do they prefer that night? They have no heart left for God; that is why they have chosen the night of science and the dark races over Christ. Science will sustain them where Christ has failed them, and the sacred negro will allow them to feel connected to Baal.

In my lifetime, I have seen the devastation caused by the liberals’ rationalistic attack on Christ. I had a college professor who spoke for that whole world of liberal vipers. In class after class, he pounded home his theme, “Where is the life in a dead body? How can you believe in a God that cannot help you in this world and cannot sustain life in your body after you leave this world?” If, like Lady Macbeth, we have made thick our blood and stopped up “th’ access and passage to remorse” then we cannot answer the liberals. Nor can we answer the liberals if we have accepted the clergymen’s anti-vision of God – that He does not enter human hearts, He only comes to enlightened minds. But if we have a heart for God, if we are drawn to Him by something in our hearts that is beyond reason, we will know that He has not abandoned us on this earth and He will not abandon us in the world to come. It was not a little thing, our connection to the antique Europeans, it was everything, because through those hearts of flesh, we touched the heart of God.

The conservatives of the 20th century such as Weaver, Tate, and Kirk, all proceeded under the assumption that the disease of liberalism could be cured by rational analysis. But rational analysis, whether it is the rational analysis of a liberal or a liberal conservative, is not true thought, because it does not encompass the wellspring of thought, the human heart. Stavrogin, in Dostoyevsky’s novel *The Devils*, is rational to the end:

The citizen of the Canton of Uri was dangling just by the door. On the table there was a scrap of paper with the words, “Accuse no one, I did it myself,” written in pencil. Next to it on the table there was also a hammer, a piece of soap, and a large nail, apparently in case the other one hadn’t held up. The strong silk cord on which Nicolai Stavrogin had hanged himself was lavishly smeared with soap. All this indicated that to the last second he was in full possession of his mental faculties and had acted with premeditation. After the autopsy, all our medical experts rejected any possibility of insanity.

Stavrogin’s end is our end if we continue to see with the rational jewels of the head rather than with the eyes of the heart. Before the churchmen decided we could combat the king of rationalism with our own reason, separated from a spirit-infused heart, there were integral men, our European progenitors, who spoke of a different way:

Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time. –Anglo-Saxon Poetry

The synthesis of Babel, Sodom and Gomorrah, and the Egyptian night needs a rationalist base to hold it together. If even a few Europeans thought with their hearts, that synthesis of evil would start to crumble. The modern Europeans are proceeding as if nature, the nature which can be dissected and analyzed by rational minds, is all. Our young people are brought up to believe that they should welcome the assault of the colored heathens on the white race and spend their lives combating racism and global warming. The great rationalist, utopian state that Lincoln hoped would “long endure” has given birth to a brood of vipers, conceived and nurtured by the rationalism of the devil. And if we are one with Satan in his rationalism, we will be one with him in his estrangement from God and humanity:

O’er soft and unsubstantial shades which towering visions seem,
Through kingdoms of forlorn repose, went on the hurrying dream;
Till down where feet of hills might be, he by a Lake was stayed
Of still red fire—a molten plate of terror unalloyed—
A mirror where Jehovah’s Wrath, in majesty alone,
Comes in the night of worlds to see its armour girded on.

The awful walls of shadows round might dusky mountains seem,
But never holy light hath touched an outline with its gleam;
’Tis but the eye’s bewildered sense that fain would rest on form,
And make night’s thick blind presence to created shapes conform.
No stone is moved on mountain here by creeping creature crossed;
No lonely harper comes to harp upon this fiery coast.

–Thomas Aird

It was only the ethical remnant of what was once the European people’s heartfelt faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen that sustained the European people in the latter half of the 20th century. Now that the ethical remnant has been destroyed,

there is no “holy light” left over Europe. All is darkness. Dylan Thomas was aware of the dying of the light, but he was unable to trace that light back to its source, so he died in an alcoholic stupor. At least he had the heart to know that life was unbearable without the light. That is the beginning of wisdom. Is it possible to go any further, to actually move toward God’s “holy light”? Before there was Nature, there was the God who was and is greater than nature. How do we know that? Because of what is inside of us that yearns for something, for someone, beyond nature. We who are about to die need that “holy light” to illuminate our hearts and give us a glimpse of a spiritual realm of existence that transcends the shallow, closed-in world of darkness that has become the only world for the modern Europeans.

The counter-revolution cannot begin until we throw off the chains of nature and nature’s gods. It is not impossible to break those chains, but we must leave the dungeons of academia behind and venture forth into the open air of that other realm, the realm of visionary hearts of flesh who loved so much that they saw their beginning and their end in the cross of Christ. I don’t see any hope for our people until we, the last Europeans, stand up to the principalities and powers of the Liberalism and declare that this, our modern utopia of science and the sacred negroes, is not heaven on earth, it is hell. A hell we reject in the name of Christ’s holy light that once shone over the European people, as the Star of Bethlehem once shone over the shepherds on that night of nights when the light of the world came to us through our incarnate Lord. +

Keep Thy Heart - June 8, 2019

When on that shivering winter’s night, the Pequod thrust her vindictive bows into the cold malicious waves, who should I see standing at her helm but Bulkington! I looked with sympathetic awe and fearfulness upon the man, who in mid-winter just landed from a four years’ dangerous voyage, could so unrestingly push off again for still another tempestuous term. The land seemed scorching to his feet... But as in landlessness alone resides the highest truth, shoreless, indefinite as God—so, better is it to perish in that howling infinite, than be ingloriously dashed upon the lee, even if that were safety! For worm-like, then, oh! who would craven crawl to land! Terrors of the terrible! is all this agony so vain? Take heart, take heart, O Bulkington! —Melville, *Moby Dick*

Then keep thy heart, though yet but ill-resigned—
Clarel, thy heart, the issues there but mind;
That like the crocus budding through the snow—
That like a swimmer rising from the deep—
That like a burning secret which doth go
Even from the bosom that would hoard and keep;
Emerge thou mayst from the last whelming sea,
And prove that death but routs life into victory.

— Melville, *Clarel*

Maybe I am alone in my need for heroes, men who have gone before me who have loved what I love and fought for what I love. Some people regard that need as a weakness, a moral failing; if that is so, then I am morally weak. I don’t expect perfection from my heroes; I believe in original sin. What I need from my heroes is a reverence for Him, in and through the European people. For this reason most of my heroes predate the 20th century, because the 19th century, even though science had most certainly reared its satanic head in that century, was the last century in which the best of the European people still loved Christ at their racial hearth fire.

One of the exceptions to my ‘no heroes in the 20th century’ credo had been Anthony Jacob, who wrote *White Man, Think Again!*, a book that was published and then banned in South Africa in 1965. What struck me about Anthony Jacob was that he actually seemed to care, in contrast to other 20th century conservatives, about white people. And he also, in contrast to the 20th century neo-pagans, seemed to understand the importance of the European people’s connection to Jesus Christ. There were many passages in his great work that led me to believe that Anthony Jacob was not a 20th century agnostic:

Only sham love compromises; genuine love never does because it never can, because love is the comprehension of life itself – and is a form of light. It is not love that evades vital (i.e. ‘life-full’) issues or runs away or talks false peace; it is love that fights to the death, for it knows that to compromise is to dilute, and that to dilute love is to kill it. That is why the gentle, hard-as-nails Jesus (who taught us to disdain death; not, like the Orientals, to disdain life) came with a sword in his hand....

It is surely not wise for the Church to pander to this idolatry. Even if Christianity were to be the religion only of a select few, it would be none the worse for that. Has it ever been anything else but the religion of a select few, and can it ever be anything else? Christianity is the religion of the White and not the non-White peoples, who debase it even where they accept it. They might pay lip-service to it where the white man is strong and his institutions accordingly respected, or where it has obtained a form of superstitious hold over them. But they can no more accept and comprehend essential Christianity than the white man can accept Shamanism. This, above all, makes it all

the more reprehensible that the Church, instead of recognizing this, should swing round viciously upon the white man and hold him to blame for it – that white man upon whose unadulterated identity Christianity exclusively depends.

So was Anthony Jacob a Christian? A new edition of *White Man, Think Again!* (2017) has been published in which the editor, a ‘friend’ of Anthony Jacob, tells us that Jacob had no religion:

Secondly, and Tony did not have to be told to do this, as he “knew it by himself,” as he said to me, the book would have to have a decidedly pro-Christian slant, even though personally, he was not a believer in any religion. This was because Christianity was one of the mainstays of Afrikaner nationalism, and the Voortrekker Press would simply not publish a book which did not hold that position.

The phrase, “a sword shall pierce your heart” describes my reaction to Kemp’s assertion. Does that negate everything Anthony Jacob ever wrote? No, of course not. Anthony Jacob was the most eloquent and courageous defender of the white race in the 20th century, and his assessments of the black African people, the liberals, and the white people of Africa have stood the test of time. What Kemp says about Jacob’s religious indifference touches me to the core of my being, but it in no way negates anything Anthony Jacob wrote. Why am I so affected? Because I loved Anthony Jacob for what he said in defense of my people. I felt, when I read of his indifference to Christianity, as I felt when I learned of my mother’s agnosticism. I still loved her, but I could no longer trust her as a guiding light. In terms of faith, I had to keep a spiritual distance from my mother. So it is with Anthony Jacob. When I first read *White Man, Think Again!* some forty years ago, the passion of Mr. Jacob entered my soul; he was one of my heroes. Now? He is a great man, whom I admire, but he is no longer my hero.

Not all those who say ‘Lord, Lord’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven; I think there is more of Christ in a man such as Anthony Jacob, who loves his people, than there is in a thousand intellectual Christians who are willing to sacrifice their fellow whites on altars consecrated to the sacred negroes. But a man, if he is to be truly a man, needs to be connected to His people through the God of love. The question of Christ’s resurrection from the dead can never be a matter of indifference. The older neo-pagans such as Samuel Francis, John Tyndall, and alas, Anthony Jacob, respected Christianity as a magnificent creation of the white race. The second and third tiers of neo-pagans spit on Christ, lumping Him in with their Jewish enemies. The older neo-pagans make for better company, but neither view is acceptable. All talk about race is meaningless if Christ be not risen. Why should I care about keeping my people separate and distinct from the people of other races if there is no God who has made my people separate and distinct from other races? The charity which begins at home and perishes without one, which Anthony Jacob writes so eloquently about, has a source. If white people are cut off from that source, they will become – no, they have become – men without souls doomed to look at life second-hand through the dark races, as the liberals view life, or through their own mind-forged fantasy world of pure intelligence, as the intellectual Christians and neo-pagans view life. It is always the same hurdle that must be overcome, the hurdle of intellectual pride. Are we too intelligent to believe that Jesus of Nazareth was and is the Son of the living God? I am not too intelligent to believe in that God. And I don’t understand, nor do I want to understand, why the men of ‘intelligence’ find it easier to believe in their petty, puny minds than in the heart of Christ.

Men like Arthur Kemp are very good at handing out practical advice, based on animal husbandry and demographics, but their knowledge is grounded in empiricism, which is the quicksand of the devil. This empirical knowledge appears to be safe, solid ground, unlike the mystic waters of Christian Europe, but the quicksand envelops a man and chokes the life out of him while the great raging sea brings us, if we look to Christ to guide us, safely home. There is a link between Bulkington, the true hero of Melville’s *Moby Dick*, who chooses landlessness over the empirical land, and the pilgrim Clarel, who finishes his earthly pilgrimage with a vision of the living God. Bulkington is Clarel.

The neo-pagan Nikos Kazantzakis, the author of *The Last Temptation of Christ* and *Zorba the Greek*, gives us a glimpse, in his autobiography, of the neo-pagans’ pride of reason. Kazantzakis rewrites the prodigal son story. He has the prodigal son, upon his return, tell his brother, “I failed but you shall succeed. Leave our father and become a success on your own.” Why did the story of the prodigal son fail to stir Kazantzakis’ heart? Because Kazantzakis believed that the mark of a man is that he kneels to no-one, not even to our Father which art in heaven. In contrast to Kazantzakis is Johanna Spyri, the author of *Heidi*. The grandfather in *Heidi* comes down from the mountain to reconnect with his people and his God after his meditation on the story of the prodigal son. Is it really so terrible to admit one has sinned and then to ask for forgiveness from the God of mercy? “Yes, it is,” says the neo-pagan, “because there is no God, only a sickly Jewish carpenter whom the Judaic-Christians call their God.” And the ‘Christian’ equivalent of the neo-pagans, the scholastics, create their own God of pure intellect so that when they worship, they worship their own minds.

Pastor N. F. S. Grundtvig of Denmark saw that his people could only know the living God if they searched the Scriptures, as St. Paul enjoined them to do, with their hearts. With the prophetic heart of that second tier of Christian prophets who warned us what would happen if we abandoned the prophetic fire and the prophetic knowledge of the one true God, Grundtvig told us that the holy word of God was rendered null and void if it was sifted through the minds of theologians. In order for the Word of God to take root in our hearts, Grundtvig maintained, it had to come to us undiluted by

theological experts. The theological expert is the creation of Satan because through him Satan can turn everything into an intellectual construct. And Satan is undefeated in the intellectual arena.

The living God cannot come to us through His holy Word if His holy Word becomes, which it has become, the sole property of theological experts. And the story of our people, of their love affair with Jesus Christ, as told by the European bards, can only be received in our hearts if we hear that story from the bards themselves, unobstructed by creatures called literary critics. Do you see the hellish closed circle that has enveloped the European people? They have gone from being free men who belong to Christ to being the bond slaves of Satan, who keeps his kingdom in order by constantly appealing to the Europeans' pride of intellect, manifested in their faith in experts who have scientized life. An automobile can be scientized, but not a man, and certainly not the Lord God. The Roman Catholic scholastics and then the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train, scientized God in order to hand Him to the laity in a neat little box with a golden ribbon on it and a label that read, "Not to be opened except by the clergy." Pope Francis the blasphemer spoke for all the anti-Christian Christians when, in a recent audience, he wagged his finger at the faithful and warned them they could not go directly to God, they must go through the Church. Through the Church consisting of men and women who believe in Christ the Lord? No, that is not the Church which Francis the blasphemer is referring to. He is referring to the Church as an assembly of great minds who have taken upon themselves the right to determine who and what God is. Small wonder, particularly since the church men have decided that the negro is God, that the neo-pagans have chosen to reject intellectual Christianity for the Sturm und Drang of neo-paganism. But in the end, Pope Francis the blasphemer and the Christian intellectuals are spiritually united to the neo-pagans, because both camps have chosen to reject the living God for an abstract God that emanates from their minds. The blaspheming Christian intellectuals have chosen the noble black savage while the neo-pagans have chosen their superior white genes. The pope's mind-forged heresy will always triumph over the neo-pagans' heresy, because the Europeans will always cling to the heresy that has a personal savior. The neo-pagans have no savior in their religion.

It is often the good swimmer that drowns, because he places too much confidence in his ability to conquer the ocean currents unaided by anything other than his own athletic prowess. So it is with human intelligence. It is almost always the very smart men who fall victim to the snares of Satan. They think they can go it alone, without recourse to the living God, and as a consequence they end up prisoners of Satan and science. It is Dogberry, the bumbling constable in Shakespeare's *Much Ado About Nothing*, who discovers and brings to light the villainous machinations of Don John the bastard and his evil cohorts. The smart men, such as Claudio and Antonio, were unable to see and discover the villainy of Don John because they had too much confidence in their own intelligence. St. Paul tells us that the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men. If we become foolish as He was 'foolish,' we will be able to see visions that the intelligent men do not see. The men of intellect who inhabit the first circle of hell, the virtuous pagans such as Anthony Jacob, Samuel Francis and John Tyndall, seem so wise in the ways of the world, but when we look closer we see that they are blinded by the same satanic ray of light that blinded Adam and Eve:

Adam was at the same time the most enlightened and the best of men; the most powerful in thought and the most powerful in love. But whatever has been created must necessarily have a progressive course. Instead of waiting for new attainments in knowledge to be derived from the revolution of ages, and to be accompanied by an accession of new feelings, Adam wanted to know every thing at once. Observe, too, what is very important: man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tinctured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to under take so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that over powered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks.

-Chateaubriand, *The Genius of Christianity*

I have often been disappointed – although in the case of Anthony Jacob it goes beyond disappointment – when I discovered that a man I thought was going to be my companion in the battle against the devil and his minions was not going to be my companion because he had no use for the Suffering Servant. But it is better to go into battle alone than to have a false ally who will desert you in the day of battle. We must accept a man's word when he says he does not believe in Christ. But we can hope, if the tenor of his life revealed a sense of pietas, that at the last moment, at the hour of death, the man saw the risen Lord. That is my hope for that first tier of noble neo-pagans from whom I was estranged on this earth.

Now back to the present and the enemy before us. The liberals have intensified their merciless persecution of the white race. They have given their black shock troops virtual free reign to rape, torture, and murder white people; and neo-paganism, whether the Greco-Roman neo-paganism of the first tier neo-pagans, such as Jacob, Francis, and Tyndall, or

the new, updated neo-paganism, whose adherents look to a future of white intelligence independent of the Greeks and Jesus Christ, will not be able to stop the bloodletting of the liberals and their colored allies. We need men who are firmly rooted, in spirit and blood, in Christian Europe. A merciless enemy can only be successfully opposed by men who fight in the name of the God of mercy.

A man fights for what he holds dear. It makes a difference whether a man treasures his white genes, the sacred negroes, or Jesus Christ, the first and the last. If we have taken Christ into our hearts, we will be connected to other hearts of flesh, living and dead, who have taken Christ into their hearts. That communion, the communion of saints, will sustain us against an enemy who is possessed by the devil. Without faith in the God whose love passeth the understanding of the colored barbarians, the liberals, and the neo-pagans, we can never restore our civilization or protect our people from the pestilence of liberalism and the arrows of the colored barbarians. We need to go beyond intelligence to the foolishness of God, the God who was so foolish that He was crucified for our sins: "He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not his mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not his mouth." That God and kinsman cannot be a mere footnote in the white man's history: He is our history.

The first tier of neo-pagans, such as Anthony Jacob, who had a certain respect for old Europe and her people but were unable to see that Christ was the spiritual fount of old Europe, are all gone now. The second and third tiers of neo-pagans have no respect for old Europe and her people. They look to a new Europe that is... What is that new Europe? What rough beast will we worship in the new Europe? The neo-pagans need to strike the 'pagan' from their name, because the real European pagans, our progenitors, bent their knees to Christ. They saw beauty on the cross. Where is the beauty in neo-paganism? The liberals tell us we must worship the dark races and make Christ one with the gods of heathendom, while the neo-pagans tell us we must worship Hitler and their white genes. Over and against the liberals and the neo-pagans is the Man on the white horse: He once was at the center of Europe. Now He rides alone on the periphery of Europe, ready to enter the lists again if we call on Him by name. +

Breaking Satan's Rules - June 1, 2019

This circumstance assures some degree of permanence to the power of those, whom we know to be permanently our rancorous and implacable enemies. But to those very enemies, who have sworn our destruction, we have ourselves given a further and far better security by rendering the cause of the Royalists desperate. Those brave and virtuous, but unfortunate adherents to the ancient constitution of their country, after the miserable slaughters which have been made in that body, after all their losses by emigration, are still numerous, but unable to exert themselves against the force of the usurpation, evidently countenanced and upheld by those very Princes who had called them to arm for the support of the legal Monarchy. Where then, after chasing these fleeting hopes of ours from point to point of the political horizon, are they at last really found? Not where, under Providence, the hopes of Englishmen used to be placed—in our own courage and in our own virtues, but in the moderation and virtue of the most atrocious monsters that have ever disgraced and plagued mankind. — Edmund Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

The prolife movement as a movement to provide protection under the laws of the United States for the unborn was a colossal failure. But was it a total failure? No, because some babies were saved by the efforts of proliferers. I feel the same way about Trump's presidency. He has failed to stop white genocide and he has failed to stop legalized abortion, but his presidency has not been a total failure, because some white lives have been saved simply by his rhetoric about the illegals and by his restrictions on federally funded abortions. In addition, many private colleges and schools with a Christian ethos have temporarily avoided their inevitable shutdowns by the liberals as a result of Trump's presidency. But both the prolife movement and Trump's presidency were and are failures as movements, because they both were and are movements from within Liberalism. To seek justice for whites and mercy for the unborn within the framework of democracy is, which oft our stage we have shown, to seek redemption from the devil.

In order to ensure Trump's defeat in the upcoming presidential election, the liberals are deplatforming everyone even tangentially connected to 'toxic whiteness.' Some of those deplatformed are called 'white supremacists,' some are called 'haters,' and others are simply told they've been deplatformed because of a 'technical glitch.' I remember an old Andy Capp cartoon in which a neighbor woman comes to Andy's door and asks to borrow his bottle opener. Andy tells her he can't loan her his bottle opener because he's using it to cut linoleum. The woman starts to walk away, stops, ponders a moment, and then turns back towards Andy's back door. "You can't cut linoleum with a bottle opener," she shouts. Andy shouts back at her, "You can do anything you want with a bottle opener if you don't want to loan it." The liberals can and will deplatform for any reason they make up, but there is only one reason — they hate white people.

I understand why liberals are doing what they are doing: they are possessed by the devil. But I do not understand the 'conservative' whites. Every time one of them is deplatformed, he or she expresses outrage and surprise. Why are they outraged and surprised? Did they really expect fair play from the liberals? If they did, then they do not understand liberalism. They don't see the obvious: liberalism is from the devil. And that is the problem with the resistance to

liberalism: it is a non-resistance, because it is not a resistance rooted in the spirit and blood faith of our people. It does not go to the heart of the Christian fairy tale, hence it is powerless against liberalism.

The conservatives often give an intellectual nod to Christianity as a religion, but they look askance at you when you talk of Christ and the devil. Such talk hearkens back to the so-called Dark Ages (really the centuries of spiritual enlightenment) that are best left behind for a more intelligent, less intense type of Christianity that does not include talking snakes and personal encounters with the devil as depicted in the Gospels when our Lord confronts the devil in the wilderness.⁽¹⁾ Likewise the neo-pagans: they are too intelligent to be taken in by fairy tales. They will combat the liberals with their own version of intelligent liberalism, based on their fantasies of Viking pagans who never existed in reality and their superior brain cells too full of intelligence to believe as their white ancestors, whom they hold in contempt, believed.

The Christian fairy tale is either entirely true, from the Garden of Eden to Christ's resurrection from the dead, or it is entirely false. If it is the truth, then we should act on that truth. We should not be surprised when the liberals do evil; we should expect them to do evil, because they are satanic. Once we have overcome that major hurdle, we will act according to the reality of the enemy before us. We will not fight democratically, because the democratic process is a train bound for hell with no stops on the way to the station.

What would happen if we listened, once again, to the lay of the European minstrels? What if we do not proceed according to the liberals' ironclad rules of behavior? We don't know what might happen, but look what happened in old Europe when white people responded to the lay of the greatest minstrel of them all, the Lord God, Jesus Christ. Old Europe came to life like some mystical wonderland from a storybook, because the European people took Christ into their hearts. And in order to take Christ into their hearts, they needed a racial hearth fire. Hearts of flesh do not come into being from the brain of a god as the goddess of wisdom, Athena, came to life when she sprang from the head of Zeus. No, hearts of flesh come into being in men and women with familial and racial hearth fires connected to Christ. White Europe, which was once a mystic realm of the spirit, is now a slaughterhouse with white carcasses hanging on the walls and white grazers standing in line just outside waiting to come in and be slaughtered. This is the world we live in. There is no way back through the satanic democratic process. But outside of that process there is someone greater than liberalism. His world is a world of miracles. We need to leave the liberals' world and commit to fairy tale Europe with our whole heart, mind, and soul. Then? Miracles will occur in Europe once again.

The liberals came to power throughout the European world by constantly playing the liberal Anvil Chorus: "Science, science, science; Racism, racism, racism." The din of that music, constantly repeated, drowned out the softer melody of the European minstrels. And over the course of time, that chorus entered the hearts of the European people. Like the wedding guest that "has been stunned and is of sense forlorn," The European people became the unthinking, unfeeling tools of a satanic liberal hierarchy filled with hatred for Christ and the people who loved Him. The lay of the King of the European minstrels, our Savior, who sang of His house with many mansions and how He would be with us always, even when Science failed to sustain life in our bodies, was heard no more. There was only the liberals' Anvil Chorus.

Trump should be supported by all white people, but he should be supported for what he is, a heroic rear-guard of a defeated army. And whites have been defeated because the liberals' Anvil Chorus has beaten down the lay of the European minstrels. Men who heed the minstrel's chorus of Christ crucified, Christ risen, do not need to live their lives in slavery to the democratic process that hammers out the Anvil Chorus of liberalism: "Science, science, science; Racism, racism, racism."

The United States was the first white nation to adopt a government based on abstract principles rather than the traditional faith of the European people. France, a few years later, followed the American example. At first the French followed Robespierre's model: "Jacobinism now!" Then, after Robespierre, they followed the American model, "Let us move incrementally toward the kingdom of God on earth." During our Civil War, the first modern war in that the North disregarded the rules of chivalry because Utopians do not look upon themselves as original sinners, the Unitarians of the North shifted from incremental Jacobinism to Robespierre Jacobinism. They stayed with Robespierre Jacobinism from 1860 to 1874 when the Reconstruction Era was supposed to have ended. But did it end? No, it did not. The Southern people were still being reconstructed, just as the Northern people were being reconstructed, into a non-people without a racial hearth fire. It would have been better, spiritually, for the Southern people had the overt "Reconstruction" been made permanent, because under those repressive strictures the Southern people saw themselves as a white Christian people, separate and distinct from their Jacobin oppressors. Once they were mainstreamed, what became of the Southern people? Once we, the European people, were mainstreamed into Liberaldom, what became of us as a people?

The intellectual Christians throughout the Christian era of European history always denied they were living within a Christian culture. They denied that there could be a Christian culture. What those Christian Utopians, who always pointed to the sins of the European people, failed to grasp was that the European people, in the midst of their sins, held to a belief that Christ was the spiritual summit of human existence. All European societies were in agreement on that belief. And that

belief, no matter what the Utopians say to the contrary, made the European people different from the non-European people.

The American and French revolutions were both spawned by men determined to be governed by a different spiritual ethos than the people of Christian Europe. We can now see clearly what that new ethos was; it was a very old ethos, the ethos of darkness. The liberals have decreed that we must all live in a pagan realm where nature is all. All wisdom, all truth, is to be found in the material realm. The liberals have discovered the beauty of the Noble Savage and the godlike perfection of an ever-evolving democratic system, which acts as a great reaping machine, destroying all things white and Christian, and protecting all things dark, bestial, and heathen.

We can't change the fact that we live amongst liberals, but must we be of them? It is my contention that the European who is still connected to Christ through old Europe constitutes a spiritual force the liberals cannot deal with, because it is outside their frame of reference. They are used to white men who follow all the rules of liberalism. The integral Europeans, the men who set themselves apart from liberalism, are the Europeans who will bring Liberalism down. Just as our Lord rejected the worldly temptations of Satan in the wilderness, so should all Christian Europeans set themselves apart spiritually from Satan's world. We are Tell, standing athwart the mountain pass with an arrow for Gessler's heart, and we are Guiderius and Arviragus, the sons of Cymbeline, standing alone against the Roman legions and refusing to yield, "Our Britain's harts die flying, not our men." Would that could be said of all of us, once again. The liberals are not invincible, they are not gods. But if we believe that their Anvil Chorus of "Science, science, science; Racism, racism, racism" is a greater chorus than "King of Kings and Lord of Lords," we will surely perish. "Once more unto the breach!" +

(1) And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season. And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. —Luke 4: 1-14

The Narrow White Gate - May 25, 2019

I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world; let his nobility remain in 's court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter. Some that humble themselves may; but the many will be too chill and tender, and they'll be for the flow'ry way that leads to the broad gate and the great fire. — *All's Well That Ends Well*

Let us begin with the four white public school teachers in New York City who were recently demoted or removed from their duties for "toxic whiteness." The brave new world is here. The liberals have left incremental Jacobinism behind in order to proceed with the last act of the drama in which they throw off their masks and stand before us in all their satanic fury, confident that the white grazers are too spiritually gutted to distinguish good from evil and the remnant band of Europeans who can still distinguish good from evil are too few and too marginalized to resist them.

We have taken "too little care of this." The attack on all things white, because whiteness was wedded to all things Christian, started in the devil's workshop. The academy in church and state was and is the place where Satan reigns. It is there, where the men of intellect, unaided by hearts connected to the living God, join with Satan to go on an unsentimental journey to a mind-forged heaven on earth. Men were supposed to become as gods if they went with Satan on that journey, but they have become worse than beasts, they have become un-men.

I first heard the concept of 'toxic whiteness' articulated in my college classroom in the early 1970s. A radical sociology professor (are there any other kind?) called the *Leave It to Beaver* television show of the late 1950s an "insidiously white" show. Later, throughout the 1970s and the 1980s, I frequently heard the liberals refer to the *Leave It to Beaver* show as a hideous manifestation of evil. Only Walt Disney was demonized more than *Leave It to Beaver*. And why was *Leave It to Beaver* demonized? The show was demonized because it was the Jane Austen of television shows, depicting the ordinary activities of a white, middle class family (Austen's characters were mostly white, upper class families) with warmth and

humor. Why is that evil? Let's go to the heart of the matter – whiteness is evil because whites were and are still called to be the Christ-bearing race. If you hate Christ as the liberals hate Christ, you must attack every manifestation of whiteness, because whiteness is indeed toxic to liberals and to all the non-white races who reject the God of mercy in order to serve the heathen gods of sacrifice.

We wouldn't want to follow Wally and Beaver into their college years, because their world, the world of the 1950s and early 1960s, was the twilight world of ethical Christianity. The full-fledged faith in Christ crucified, Christ risen was gone, but the ethical remnant of that faith still remained, soon to be extinguished. Mother Goose, in *The March of the Wooden Soldiers*, tells us we can never return to the childhood of our race. She was wrong – through Christ that return is possible. We, like Wally and Beaver, can return to whiteness, but only if we renounce incremental Jacobinism and go all the way back to Europe, when it was white and Christian.

The great betrayal of Christ in the 20th century took place within the ranks of the conservative intelligentsia. I do not cite the liberals as traitors, because they were and are the avowed enemies of Christ. It is the conservatives, who expressed (at least intellectually) a belief in Christ, that were and are the traitors. And their betrayal consists of this – they had no sympathetic connection to Christ through their people, they had only a Socratic belief in a mind-forged, abstract God. Without that sympathy, they became as tinkling cymbals and sounding brass, fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils. Pope John XXIII stood for all the conservatives when he expressed loving forgiveness for the black savages who tortured and murdered his fellow whites and his Catholic brethren. Is not such forgiveness genuine Christian charity? No, it is not, because without what Burke called “charitable rancor,” without a protective, loving impulse to fight for one's own people when they are attacked, a man is worse than the heathens, he belongs to the dark angel who has made the hatred of Christ and His people his one deep and abiding passion. The godless, inhuman popes, and the think-tank conservatives, who want to preserve systems while they blissfully accept the death of their people, are one in their repudiation of that which is essential, a heart of flesh connected to God through kith and kin. They made common cause with the liberals who have made common cause with Satan. Let God judge their souls, but we shall judge their actions. They are false to their people and their God. When the conservatives in church and state bid us abandon our “charitable rancor” in the name of a nonracist, universalist love of generic mankind, we shall reject them as we reject the devil and all his works.

“See how they love one another,” was the mark of the Christian. “See how they hate one another,” is the mark of a liberal. The liberals, in the name of liberalism, have made whatever is bestial, whatever is cruel, and whatever is anti-Christian the basis of their satanic faith. It is no longer possible, now that the liberals have proceeded with the last act of their anti-white drama, to see the race war in any other light than the true light. The race war is a war of faith. Our people once believed that when Christ came to this earth, divine mercy walked among us in the flesh. We were redeemed from Satan's power by the “heroic munificence” of Christ the Lord. Can the liberals' hatred for whites possibly be understood without reference to the God that the whites took into their hearts and their racial hearth fire? Surely such hatred, a hatred of epic proportions, must have something supernatural that fuels it.

The liberals' hatred comes from Satan. He cannot abide the God of mercy, because he does not believe that mankind is deserving of mercy. The Shavian sneer, the hatred of all things human and Christian, is the essence of Satan. The liberals have made the satanic sneer and the detached intellect, detached from pietas, the harrowing essence of their faith. Just as Christ harrowed hell to save poor sinners, the liberals harrow whites to save themselves from Christ's mercy, which insults their intelligence, to build a new Tower of Babel that will place them above the angels and above the Lord God.

Kurtz, in Conrad's *Heart of Darkness*, looks at the evil he has done and the evil mankind is capable of and pronounces judgement on that evil: “The horror, the horror.” The democratic leadership of the West, liberal and conservative, does not look at liberalism and say, “The horror, the horror.” Without the perception that liberalism is a satanic, reptilian entity, we will be destroyed by it, because we will not have the will to resist. If we don't feel the flames of hell when we come into contact with liberalism – “Your soul deserves the place to which it came. If having entered Hell, you feel no flame” – we will not feel the need to call on Christ, the hero of great “munificence,” who descended into hell itself in order to save poor sinners from Satan's power. We cannot look at pure hell without being paralyzed with fear, unless we look at that hell knowing our Lord goes before us in the battle against Satan and his minions. The conservatives who will not champion that which must be conserved, their people, and the church men such as Pope Francis the Blasphemer, who court favor with the liberals and their heathen gods of color, have no problem with white genocide because they have become spiritually anesthetized; they do not feel the flames of liberalism. What is impossible for a European Christian – to live in the midst of liberals without feeling the flame – is possible for the anti-European ‘Christian’ intellectuals – they are content to live amongst liberals and become co-heirs of the kingdom of hell on earth which shall become a reality when whiteness is purged from the face of the earth.

When there is no “charitable rancor” in our hearts that makes us want to defend our people when they are the victims of cruelty and injustice, and when there is no “charitable rancor” in our hearts that makes us want to defend our honored dead and the civilization of unparalleled spiritual beauty they bequeathed to us, we become the accomplices of Satan in his

assault on all things white and Christian. The late Samuel Francis and the late John Tyndall tried to get whites to defend themselves by pointing out the impracticality of liberalism – it is bad for whites in the material realm. But people won't fight – at least white people won't – for materialism. What is the spiritual force driving mere materialism? The liberals have a religious zeal that will destroy their white enemies unless their white enemies come at them with an unshakeable faith in the Man-God who harrowed hell.

The logical, pragmatic conservative refuses to believe that the liberals will go through with their stated plan to destroy whiteness, because he believes that common sense will prevail and the liberals will see it is against their self-interest (since they are white) to destroy whiteness. This is where mere pragmatism fails the conservative. If we see through, not with the eye, we can see that the liberals have replaced the mystery of the Christ story with a new mystery religion. They believe that they have been changed, that their repudiation of whiteness has purged them of whiteness. They believe if they endure to the end, if they love the black man and all the colored races while hating all whiteness, they will be saved. After raising Estella to hate all humanity, particularly the male half of humanity, Miss Havisham is shocked when Estella has no love for her. The liberals will be shocked when their colored minions, whom they have loved and nurtured, turn on them, but they will cling to their religion to the end, because they hate Christ and all those who believe in Him.

Is liberalism a religion? Yes, it is. The liberals have institutionalized the hatred of the white race and the love of the colored races with one exception: the colored people who embrace the white man's religion must be purged along with the white man. The murdered black Christian Nigerians earn no tears from the liberals because they, in the liberals' eyes, are apostates — they have left the true religion to embrace the hated white man's God. But is the liberals' religion a faith? Can you just create an abstract faith with no basis in reality because you can't stand reality? The liberals' religion is a non-faith.

When Robespierre saw that straight atheism did not work, he instituted harvest festivals in which he made his people bow down before nature. Is that faith? No, it is not. Nor is the liberals' nature-based religion of the noble savage a genuine faith. Real faith is of the spirit and blood, it reaches into the depths of the heart. Our ancestors' white faith was of the heart. They loved their people in and through the Savior. When the heathens attacked their hearth fires, they struck back because such attacks were directed at their people and their God, who were united in one incorporate union. That is the union, not the union of American atheistic states, or the anti-white European Union, which we must fight to preserve. If we love much, if we renew our covenant with the Christ of old Europe, we will strike back in defense of our people and our God. The first step back must be an internal conversion — we must reclaim our white souls by embracing our white Christian heritage and rejecting, as we reject Satan, all those who tell us our redemption lies in our repudiation of all things white and Christian. Within provincial, white Europe is a narrow gate that leads to His house of many mansions. Outside that world is the broad gate which leads us to Satan and his kingdom of eternal night. +

That Other Realm - May 18, 2019

A kind providence has placed in our breasts a hatred of the unjust and cruel, in order that we may preserve ourselves from cruelty and injustice. They who bear cruelty, are accomplices in it. The pretended gentleness which excludes that charitable rancor, produces an indifference which is half an approbation. They never will love where they ought to love, who do not hate where they ought to hate...

That the Christian Religion cannot exist in this country with such a fraternity, will not, I think, be disputed with me. On that religion, according to our mode, all our laws and institutions stand as upon their base. That scheme is supposed in every transaction of life; and if that were done away, everything else, as in France, must be changed along with it. Thus religion perishing, and with it this constitution, it is a matter of endless meditation what order of things would follow it. But what disorder would fill the space between the present and that which is to come, in the gross, is no matter of doubtful conjecture.

-Edmund Burke, *Letters on a Regicidal Peace*

The age of prophesy ended with John the Baptist, who stood in the long line of prophets that foretold the coming of the Lord. Once our Lord entered history, the age of prophesy was over. But there was a second tier of prophets, men of Christian Europe who told us what would happen if we abandoned the Christ of whom the prophets spoke. Foremost among those prophets was Edmund Burke. Burke, right from the beginning of the French Revolution, saw that the French Revolution was not a mere regime change; it was not an attempt by one faction of Monarchists to place a different monarch on the throne. The revolution represented an attempt to replace the Christian faith as the rule of law in order to facilitate the rule of Satan. Because of Robespierre's maniacal consistency in that he did not attempt to dethrone Christ incrementally but all at once, Burke's criticism of Robespierre was eventually accepted by the bulk of the European people, minus the liberals in his own party. But his criticisms of the anti-Christian nature of the underlying satanic ethos of the French Revolution – liberty, equality, and fraternity – did not have any effect on the European people. Once Robespierre disappeared from the scene, the Europeans embraced the American experiment in Jacobinism, which was and is an incremental implementation of the rule of Satan over the rule of Christ. Every single member of the new French Directory

that deposed Robespierre had signed the death warrant of Louis XVI, and every single European nation that went democratic signed on to the death of Christian Europe. Prior to the American and French revolutions, the moral basis of the European governments was Christian; after those two revolutions the moral basis of the European governments was satanic.

Such an assertion, that the age of democracy ushered in the reign of Satan, seems outrageous because Satan did not immediately rear his head in the democratic nations of the West. But that is because of what Burke called “the unbought grace of life.” The ruling ethos of the democratic governments was based on the assumption that “Christ be not risen,” but the Europeans still largely adhered, until the 1960s, to the ethical code that came from a belief that “Christ is risen.” We now, in the 21st century, can see Satanism undiluted now that the unbought grace of life has been spent. There is no Christian ethos at work in the European nations because the belief that Christ be not risen has taken hold throughout the European nations. Dostoyevsky, who was a prophet as Burke was, has been answered. He posed the question, “Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?” The reply of the “intelligent” Europeans is, “No.”

The European people have yet to come to terms, as Burke and Dostoyevsky did, with liberalism. Burke stated flatly that liberalism was from the devil: “The first liberal was the devil.” And Dostoyevsky, about 80 years later, echoed Burke in his novel *The Devils*, in which he warned the West about the satanic nature of the Bolsheviks. Most classical liberals, who are falsely labeled ‘conservatives,’ accept Burke’s criticism of the Robespierre Jacobins, but they fail to understand his warning that the democratic ‘ideals’ of the Jacobins, whether they were Robespierre Jacobins or incremental Jacobins, represented a flight from Christ in order to build a new European society based on the Satanic principles of the thing called liberalism.

All that was good in the democratic nations of Europe came from that remnant of grace left over from the Christian religion, which was confined to the private realm in the age of democracy. Tragically the European people mistakenly believed that democracy and science were responsible for what was good in their nations. Countries such as Denmark and Sweden seemed like paradises in the 1950s and early 1960s. They had avoided the capitalist excesses of the United States and the socialist excesses of the Soviet Union. But what happened to those nations when they spent the unbought grace of life? They lost their sense of pietas; they no longer loved their own in and through Christ, so they succumbed to the moral rot from within that accompanies sexual Babylon and the barbarian assault from without that is visited upon a people who have no faith. The incremental Jacobinism of the United States and the post-Robespierre Jacobinism of France became the ruling principle of the non-communist nations of Europe, and as a result they have all become satanic nations that worship the noble savage. The formerly communist nations of Europe, which now appear like paradises compared to the older democracies, will become like unto the Western democracies if they do not repudiate incremental Jacobin democracy. Listen to our prophets, men such as Burke and Dostoyevsky, men who had the prophetic fire of Isaiah and Jeremiah. They told us that there can never be a Christian democracy. The ethos of “Give us Barabbas!” can never be allowed to rule over our faith in the Man of Sorrows.

When Christ joined the two apostles on the road to Emmaus and heard of their sadness at His death, He gently upbraided them for their lack of faith: “Then he said unto them, ‘O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken. Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?’ And beginning at Moses and at the prophets he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.” Christ enjoins the apostles to do what St. Paul, after his conversion, enjoins us to do: search the scriptures with our hearts. The Catholic scholastics and then the Protestant scholastics who followed in their train, maintained a scholastic equivalent of “Dueling Banjos”: they sought to avoid the pitfalls of the passionate heart by appealing to reason. But reason, devoid of the passion of the heart, always becomes the servant of Satan. We can certainly fall from grace through misplaced passion, but we most certainly will fall from grace, as Adam and Eve fell from grace, if we make reason, divorced from the heart that loves, our sovereign Lord.

Strong passion under the direction of a feeble reason feeds a low fever, which serves only to destroy the body that entertains it. But vehement passion does not always indicate an infirm judgment. It often accompanies, and actuates, and is even auxiliary to a powerful understanding; and when they both conspire and act harmoniously, their force is great to destroy disorder within, and to repel injury from abroad. —*Letters on a Regicide Peace*

The unbought grace of life must be defended by hearts on fire with that charity of honor that motivated the prophets, St. Paul, and the European people when they were a people and not a democratic herd of cattle. The wars within Christendom were horrible, tragic affairs. Men, even Christian men, are not angels, but the evil effects of wars between Christians were mitigated by the European people’s faith in Christ. The wars of liberalism have been so much worse than the wars between Christians ever were for the reason that there is no mercy in the liberals. A Christian will extend mercy to his enemy because he feels that he too is a sinner, but the liberal will not extend mercy to his enemy because the liberal does not believe in the beginning of the Christ story. He does not believe that liberals are the sons and daughters of Adam and Eve whose humanity is tainted with original sin.

The Southern people of the United States were the defenders of Christian civilization in the northern hemisphere during the American Civil War, yet they were forced to accept a Carthaginian peace, a peace without mercy, at the close of the war. Why? Because the Jacobin leadership of the North did not see themselves as men in need of Christ's mercy. They, like Shylock, demanded their pound of flesh, for they believed themselves to be without sin: "What judgement shall I dread doing no wrong?" The liberals believe that all sin rests with their enemies. That is why the country least responsible for World War I, Germany, was forced to pay war guilt money to the nations that entered the war on the side of the assassins. The liberals of America, France, Britain, and Russia had no mercy on their enemy. Why should they have mercy? They were without sin and their enemy was the embodiment of evil. In World War II the liberal dynamic was at work again. This time Germany was equally at fault, but why did the Western powers side with the Communists? They sided with the Communists because communism and democracy both stem from the same Jacobin roots. Communism is Robespierre Jacobinism and modern democracy is incremental Jacobinism. Lincoln, Lloyd George, Clemenceau, FDR, and Stalin were one in their Jacobinism and one in their rejection of Christian Europe.

Melville asks the question in his poem *Clarel, a Pilgrimage to the Holy Land*, "Wherefore ripen us unto pain?" The spiritual life is painful. If we love deeply the death of our loved ones and the contemplation of our own death is unbearable unless we believe that Christ is who He said He was. But if there is no faith in Christ, how does a person face that terror of terrors? The liberals' solution is to avoid the depths. They have created a whole civilization – I call it an anti-civilization – based on an avoidance of the spiritual realm of existence. They must emphasize, in church, academy, and government, the material realm and only the material realm of existence lest they come into contact with the spiritual depths of life. Then they would have to face the horror of horrors without any spiritual armor. Science, and its attendant religion, Negro worship, is not a faith that can sustain us in the face of death. Science offers us an anesthetized passage from life to nothingness, and the liberals' materially based religion helps us to be eased with our nothingness in this world by blotting out the image of God in man.

The liberals' hatred beyond hatred for Trump can only be understood through the eyes of a Christian European. Then we can see that Trump has transgressed against the basic tenet of liberalism: that incremental Jacobinism must always move forward. What was acceptable ten or twenty years ago within the confines of liberalism is no longer acceptable once the liberals have broken down a new moral barrier. Homosexual marriage is one example. Once you give your assent to that, there is no turning back. Border restrictions and legalized abortion are two more examples. Trump has shown a sincere desire to turn back some of the incremental gains of the liberals; therefore, they must destroy him. Incremental Jacobinism has advanced beyond the Robespierre Jacobinism of the Russian communists; the liberals have incrementally killed the Christian faith of the European people. Without that faith the European people have nothing inside of them that says, "We won't accept your world." They accept the liberals' world because they don't believe there ever was any other world. We desperately need a European Puddleglum.

"No. I suppose that other world must be all a dream."

"Yes. It is all a dream," said the Witch, always thrumming.

"Yes, all a dream," said Jill.

"There never was such a world," said the Witch.

"No," said Jill and Scrubb, "never was such a world."

"There never was any world but mine," said the Witch.

"There never was any world but yours," said they.

Puddleglum was still fighting hard. "I don't know rightly what you all mean by a world," he said, talking like a man who hasn't enough air. "But you can play that fiddle till your fingers drop off, and still you won't make me forget Narnia, and the whole Overworld too. We'll never see it again, I shouldn't wonder. You may have blotted it out and turned it dark like this, for all I know. Nothing more likely. But I know I was there once. I've seen the sky full of stars. I've seen the sun coming up out of the sea of a morning and sinking behind the mountains at night. And I've seen him up in the midday sky when I couldn't look at him for brightness."

Puddleglum's words had a very rousing effect. The other three all breathed again and looked at one another like people newly awaked.

"Why, there it is!" cried the Prince. "Of course! The blessing of Aslan upon this honest Marshwiggle. We have all been dreaming, these last few minutes. How could we have forgotten it? Of course we've all seen the sun."

-C. S. Lewis, *The Silver Chair*

The venomous beast that must be killed before the European everyman can begin the journey back to the spiritual realm of existence is the great scholastic dragon. The churchmen had a choice. They could have chosen the way of the passionate heart, the way of St. Paul and those noble Europeans who followed in St. Paul's train by holding Christ in their hearts. But the churchmen went the way of Hawthorne's Mr. Smooth-it-away in "The Celestial Railroad" and the Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky's *Brothers Karamazov*. Was it ever supposed to be that easy? "Can wisdom be put in a silver rod, Or love in a golden bowl?" We do not need great intellects, we need hearts that love Christ in and through the people of Europe, whom the liberals demonize while simultaneously denying that they ever existed. Edgar's words, "Men must endure their going hence even as their coming hither," echo our Lord's words, "He who endures to the end shall be saved." The passionate heart, the European who loves much, shall endure to the end. +

The Wheel of Fire - May 10, 2019

You do me wrong to take me out o' th' grave.
Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound
Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears
Do scald like molten lead

—King Lear

There is a certain practical wisdom in many of the old adages such as, 'A stitch in time saves nine,' and, 'You can lead a horse to water but you can't make it drink.' But some old adages are wrong. For instance, let's take the old adage that I heard ad nauseum in my childhood, 'Sticks and stones can break your bones, but names can never hurt you.' Oh really? The slanderous word can and does hurt more than sticks and stones. Just look at what the word 'racist' has accomplished for the liberals. It has brought about the destruction of a civilization and created the most satanic non-civilization the world has ever seen.

All governing bodies, if they are truly governing bodies, must restrict free speech. If they allow the customs, manners, and morals upon which their authority to rule is based to become the constant subject for ridicule and contempt they will soon cease to be a governing body. Louis XVI did not lose his crown and his life because he was too oppressive and didn't allow free speech, he lost his crown and his life because he did not suppress free speech. He let the pamphleteers in the press and the academy run wild with their criticisms of the customs, manners, and morals that were the foundations of the French monarchy, while refusing to suppress the Jacobin's advocacy of liberty, fraternity, and equality as alternatives to the French monarchy.

Before the French Revolution the American Jacobins – Jefferson, Franklin, and Madison – engineered their own revolution. Prior to our "glorious" union of atheist states under the mantle of the Constitution, every single state had a denominational, Christian state religion. This is the way it must be. You cannot have a governing body that governs according to some abstract theory separate and apart from the religious faith of the people of the nation. But that is precisely what the American constitutionalists set out to do. They told their people that, "Your religion and the customs, manners, and morals that go with that religion are a private thing. What you must adhere to as your rule of law is a vague belief in the will of the people as determined by democratic procedures implemented by enlightened minds."

So America — and all of Europe eventually followed America — became a nation governed by the principle of benign, religious indifference. "We won't be Christian, but we will still be moral and virtuous." But if the moral foundation of your nation is no longer the Christian faith of Alfred the Great, what is the moral foundation of your nation? Can "What is truth?" be a ruling principle? If we reject Christ, what "rough beast" will become our religious truth? The people, as defined by the Illuminati, are the ruling authority of the European nations. And who are 'the people'? The noble black savage is the God of the descending race of the European un-men who once worshipped Jesus Christ.

The reason why the rulers of America did not suppress the 1960's Phil Donohue Show-type of free speech — "Why not abortion? Why not gay-lesbian rights?" etc. — was because there was no moral consensus against such things. Every society has certain boundaries that cannot be transgressed; you are not permitted to engage in 'free speech' on those boundary topics. For instance, the sanctity of the noble black savage cannot be challenged in our society because the noble black savage is the sum total of the European people's faith. The belief in Christ's resurrection from the dead and the civilization that was based on that belief can be challenged and spit upon. That tells us all we need to know about our anti-civilization and its rulers.

The liberals are not morally correct in any of their policies because liberalism is satanic, but the liberals are strategically correct. They should, now that they have absolute power, crack down on all free speech in order to retain their power. Why

should they permit the slightest criticism of their regime? Who do they have to answer to? The churches? Certainly not, the churches are in the liberals' back pocket. The white peasantry? Again the answer is no. There is no white peasantry. The Gnostic non-faith of the modern European people started in the churches, spread to the academy, and then was handed down to the masses. That new faith has killed the white peasantry. There are no integral white men left who will venture forth against the liberal leviathan, armed only with faith in Christ and David's slingshot. Instead, white men with slide rules and calculators try to prove that it is illogical for liberals to destroy the white race.

The new liberal purges on the social media platforms of everyone to the right of Jane Fonda are happening because of the upcoming presidential election. The liberals don't want a repeat of the last presidential election. Why don't they just ban elections? They will ban elections in the near future if they don't get the results they want. In the past they allowed elections to take place because the elections helped to perpetuate the myth that the people, not a liberal oligarchy, rule the nation. We all know the myth of the historical dialectic of the thesis and the anti-thesis, which is brought to a close when the people, whether they are the communists or the democratic Europeans, become the final synthesis. But the liberals will not continue with the subterfuge if they do not get the electoral results they want. If too many whites vote white, they will lose their voting rights. And they will lose their voting rights because whites are not considered to be 'the people,' and only 'the people' have rights.

It's important to note that the liberals do not have to supply a reason for their suppression of whites. They might call the offending white a white supremacist, a hater, or an advocate of violence. All those 'reasons' are just subterfuges. The liberals are on a mission to build the kingdom of hell on earth, so they must crush all opposition to their regime. That is why it is futile for whites to seek fair play from the liberals. They are not committed to fair play or to any other outmoded ethical standard from the white era of the Europeans' history. This is the new era, in which malice and hatred bear down truth and mercy. There is nothing benign in religious indifference, because people must have a religion. If they won't have Christ, then they will be forced to worship the libearls' savage gods of color.

The classical liberals, who are now called conservatives, are forever trying to seek redemption from the devil because they are proceeding according to the spiritual agenda of Dostoyevsky's Grand Inquisitor, who bids us look to a man-made system rather than to the living God. "Christ's plan for man, to the extent that we can understand it, is inefficient and impractical." That is the substance of the Grand Inquisitor's complaint against God. "You thought too much of men, they can't handle their freedom. We gave them something better, we gave them a system." The democratic system has become, for the white man, like unto the theological refuge that the Grand Inquisitors of Christian Jewry gave their parishioners. It is the armor that David rejected. But the systems, in church and state, are the devil's snares. We have become thoroughly enmeshed in systems and lack the strength, which only comes from a faith in someone greater than the systems, to extradite ourselves from the devil's snares.

The undergirding of the liberals' new faith is the belief, articulated by men such as Rousseau, Diderot, Einstein, and Shaw, that the Christian faith belongs to that intermediary stage of human evolution, one step above the totem and taboo stage of mankind's history, but well below the level of scientific man, whose religion is cosmic and intellectual in contrast to Christianity, which is provincial and stupid. But it is a curious thing – why does the 'higher' religion return us to the totem and taboo religion in which we bow down before the sacred negro?

At some point the European, if he is ever going to reclaim his spiritual manhood, must deal with the question of science. Can we believe, against the evidence of science, that Christ rose from the dead? If we can't believe in that miracle then we must submit to the dictates of the men of science who bid us worship the man-gods, because there is no God-Man.

Burke in his opposition to the French Revolution articulated the alternative to the cosmic religion of humanity. He saw the old religion and its attendant code of ethics as the only religion for the European people. The new religion of humanity was a false religion without honor and without charity.

We know, and it is our pride to know, that man is by his constitution a religious animal; that atheism is against, not only our reason, but our instincts; and that it cannot prevail long. But if, in the moment of riot, and in a drunken delirium from the hot spirit drawn out of the alembic of hell, which in France is now so furiously boiling, we should uncover our nakedness, by throwing off that Christian religion which has hitherto been our boast and comfort, and one great source of civilization amongst us, and amongst many other nations, we are apprehensive (being well aware that the mind will not endure a void) that some uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition might take place of it. – *Reflections on the Revolution in France*

And what is that uncouth, pernicious, and degrading superstition that has taken the place of the European people's faith in Christ? You know what it is, because the liberals have taught us our catechism. "You shall love the sacred negro with all your heart, mind, and soul, and you shall hate the white man with all your heart, mind, and soul." What is a white supremacist? We are never told exactly what that entity is, but those two words have the power to destroy the white race. Why do those words and the other word, racist, have the power to destroy us? They have that power because the

Europeans have given liberals the power to destroy them with the devil words. If a man does not believe in the Word made flesh, he will be the slave of the devil words of the liberals. White men now spend their entire lives on this earth trying to prove that they are not racists, that they are not white supremacists, but they can never get out from under the racist-white supremacist label because when the liberals invoke those words, they mean whatever the liberals want them to mean, and they apply to any white man who impedes the liberals onward and upward march to utopia.

No appeal to the liberals' sense of justice or their mercy will avail the white man who has fallen into their clutches. There is no justice in the liberals' courts and no mercy in the liberals' hearts of stone. They will follow the logic of liberalism to its ultimate conclusion. All non-illuminated whites – thee and me – must die for the sin of racism/white supremacy. Only when the white man stands up to the men with the devil words and refuses to be ashamed of white piety will there be any relief for the whites living in the midst of liberal Babylon. Until that time the liberals will rule Liberaldom through the power of the devil words. Would the Europeans be afraid of those words if they had hearts of flesh? If they loved their God and their people, they would be fearless in defense of their God and their people. Perfect love casteth out fear. The love that once was there must once again become the animating spirit of the European people. But what are the chances that the European people can be stirred from within? Are they capable of seeing His blood upon the rose? It doesn't appear so. There was still, in the latter half of the 20th century, a slight ethical remnant of the Christian faith left in the European people. But now even that ethical remnant has been destroyed. The love that once was there, for kith, kin, and God has been replaced by a hatred for kith, kin, and God. Through the power of his words – racism and white supremacy – Satan has severed the white European from Christ and His people. In the face of our death and the death of our loved ones we can only hold onto His promise that He has conquered death. So it is with the death of our civilization. We can only hold onto His promise that He will be with us always even in the face of death. Nothing eternal perishes! And the bond forged by the European people with Christ the Lord is an eternal bond that will sustain us in life and death so long as we refuse to sever that bond by adhering to the words of the devil instead of His holy word. +

The Parable of Europe - May 4, 2019

This world is a parable—the habitation of symbols—the phantoms of spiritual things immortal shown in material shape. May the blessed second-sight be mine—to recognise under these beautiful forms of earth the Angels who wear them; for I am sure we may walk with them if we will, and hear them speak! – J. S. LeFanu

We shall always believe a lie if we seek to understand existence through the eyes of the psychologists. Their eyes see only the material manifestation of a much deeper spiritual malady, which shall always remain outside the ken of the superficial minds of the psychologists. Thus when Malcolm Muggeridge coined the term, “the great liberal death wish,” to describe the liberals of the West, he was deceiving himself and his conservative readers and only scratching the surface of the thing called liberalism. Muggeridge accused the liberals of a yearning for death, because they seemed to have no desire to defend themselves against the communist threat from without and the moral threat from within – the Babylonian sexual revolution. But if we look at the liberals at that time in 1979 and the liberals of today, we do not see any indication of a desire to die. What we do see is a desire to live free of the restraints of the Christian faith bequeathed to them by their European ancestors. They were and are like unto the devils depicted in St. Matthew:

And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. – Matthew 8: 28-32

The liberals are in the process of drowning themselves in the sea of diversity, but that is not their desire; their desire is that thee and me shall be drowned in the sea of diversity, and that they will float above the rising waters on a celestial cloud of glory destined for the elect who have obtained, through the power of their exalted intellects, a mind purged from the evils of whiteness and freed from the burden of Christ, who bids us take up our cross and follow Him. Everything the liberals do is based on their desire to be free of the cross of Christ. What seems like a death wish from a Christian perspective is their life wish. Thus the liberals will continue to invite Moslems into the white nations, they will continue to exalt the noble black savages no matter how murderous they become, and they will continue to systematically destroy every last vestige of the Europeans' culture when it was Christian. Any white who resists the disestablishment of Christian Europe will be destroyed.

Satan is not omnipotent, but he is much more intelligent than we are. However, he does have to work through human beings; he has to get them to buy into his agenda. How well has he done? It would seem he is doing quite well. Probably not as well as he would like, because he is never satisfied, but he certainly has accomplished something that our European

ancestors never thought would have been possible: he has built Satandom on the ruins of Christendom. But it is one thing to take a fortress and another thing to hold it. We shall see how long Satan manages to hold onto his kingdom of hell on earth. It seems, now that he has conquered Europe, that he can reign in perpetuity, but there are always a few Hamlets that “know not seems.” It is those individuals that give the devil sleepless nights.

The liberals, inspired by the devil, are in the process of rooting out everything from a time when the Europeans were still ethically Christian and everything from an even more distant time when the European people were believing Christians. There is nothing too insignificant, too ‘small potatoes,’ to be overlooked. The liberals will eliminate everything from the Europeans’ Christian past. And they will eliminate our Christian European heritage in the name of eliminating racism. Think about that. If whiteness is evil, then everything white must be eliminated. But if we eliminate all whiteness, then we eliminate the only culture in which the Word took flesh and dwelt among us. That is precisely what Satan wants.

Of course it is very disturbing – no, it is much more than disturbing, it brings out an anger that is beyond anger – when the liberals hack away at everything decent and virtuous in our past in order to solidify their unholy liberal reign. The recent posthumous assault on Kate Smith was just one more liberal assault on our white heritage. The Kate Smith statue was removed from Philadelphia and her recording of “God Bless America” was banned because that kindly Virginia belle had once sung the songs, “And That’s Why Darkies Were Born,” and “Pickaninny Heaven.” Both songs, by the way, extol black virtues, as the Southern whites so often did in the spirit of noblesse oblige, but that makes no difference to the liberals. They simply look for whites who place blacks within the framework of an older white civilization and then they condemn the whites as racist, which of course means they are damned.

The banishment of Kate Smith and her recordings is reminiscent of the liberals’ ban of Disney’s *Song of the South*. The movie extolls what Donald Davidson called the “good darkies,” but it had to be banned because blacks were depicted in a setting in which they were subservient to whites. They were also depicted as Christians, not as drug pushers, pimps, and jive artists, but that didn’t matter to the liberals, the movie was banned as racist. I had to get my copy of it from a foreign country. But of course the damnation of Kate Smith’s recordings and Disney’s *Song of the South* are just two examples of the pillorying of whites by the liberal inquisition.⁽¹⁾ Our monuments, our art, our entire past must be eliminated in the name of “eliminating racism.” After Roxanne rejects Cyrano, he goes on a rant against everybody and everything. His friend, who knows him, says, “Say this to all the world, then whisper to me, ‘she loves me not’.” The liberals scream racism to all the world when they are pillorying white people and their culture, but what they really are saying is, “I hate Christ and His people.” Burke knew them inside and out:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. –*Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Christ, when He walked this earth, said that He had to go about His Father’s business. The liberals, so long as they walk this earth, must go about doing Satan’s business. That business consists of tearing in pieces His image in man. And sadly, as the liberals intensify their attack, the churchmen intensify their repudiation of all things Christian and European. Pope Francis speaks for that hideous breed of vipers when he praises the savage gods of the rain forests and sends money to the invaders of the European nations. Tell all the world you are being kind and compassionate, then listen to the truth: “You have betrayed your God and your people in order to court favor with the devil.” As the liberals become more uncompromising, the churchmen become more compromised. At first we, the European Christians, were advised to be compassionate and open to other races and other cultures. In the name of Christianity we were supposed to compromise. Now we are no longer told to compromise, we are told to surrender to the liberals in the name of a new religion based on the worship of the noble savages of color and the hatred of the white race.

It is now, after the European people have been systematically de-Christianized, that the liberals can take off their masks. We can look directly in their faces and see the sneering face of Satan, but who is to say what is satanic? The European grazer has no moral basis to judge anything. After over a century of indoctrination, the liberals have entered the European grazer’s inmost soul and convinced him that there is no God except the gods of the liberals. While the 20th century conservatives spent their time defending democracy, the mad-dog liberals spent their time tearing to pieces God’s image in man. Of what good is democracy when your people have lost their vision of the Lord God, Jesus Christ? It is of no use to the Christian, but it is a great weapon of the devil.

When the liberals openly tell us that violence against white people is “good violence” and call for the assassination of white politicians such as Trump and Orbán, white Christians cannot become Quakers in the hopes that the liberals will spare them while killing their white brethren. But the main battle is a spiritual battle. We cannot mount a counterrevolution

without having made an internal conversion from liberalism to Christ. When that happens, we will know when we must be violent and when we must refrain from violence.

Most of the violence today comes from the liberals and the colored heathens, which is supposed to be the “good violence.” The violence of the New Zealand mosque shooter is bad violence, according to the liberals, because it was not violence against white people. But all the violence, the mass shootings, strike at the core of the white culture, the culture of the antique Europeans, because at the core of that culture is Christ. Does He enjoin us to fight without taking His charity of honor into account? The liberal, the colored heathen, and the neo-pagan are one in their superficiality. They see only with the material eye so they think that only material means can be used to “get results.” It is not the promised end that Christ wants us to pursue, but it is the end result of the pursuit of Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth.

The civilization of the parables, of which the prophet spoke, “I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world,” is the civilization of the antique Europeans. Their belief in our Lord’s parables compelled them to look past the worldly wisdom of the scribes and the Pharisees to the heart of God. There is the true wisdom, there is the love that passeth all rational understanding. When we eschew the parables of Christ in which He enjoins us to view Him as “He that soweth the good seed,” to whom shall we turn? The liberals have made it clear to whom they have turned. Must we also turn to Satan in order to combat Satan? No, there is a world that our ancestors entered, through faith, that is our world. Nothing has transpired in the 20th century and the 21st century that should separate us from the antique Europeans’ world of Christian parables. Christ’s crucifixion, death on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead is still the sign of our redemption. Neither science, democracy, nor the noble savage can serve as an alternative to that sign. Is it not better to trust in Him, to believe in the parable of Christ crucified, Christ risen, than to believe in Satan’s hellish world of diversity and multiculturalism, where there is no light, no mercy, and no God? +

(1) My favorite cartoons are the Mickey Mouse, Donald Duck, and Goofy cartoons that Walt Disney created in the 1930s through the 1950s. But there are certain cartoons which cannot be seen in their entirety today. You can buy special “From the Vault” DVD copies in which a liberal commentator explains why the cartoons are evil (racist), and the DVDs are rigged so that you cannot fast forward past the commentary (I turn off the sound). Two cartoons that are particularly good (and therefore have been condemned) are *Mickey’s Friend Friday*, in which he battles, Robinson Crusoe style, black cannibals in order to save Friday. And in *Spare the Rod*, Donald Duck battles a liberal psychiatrist and pygmy head hunters who have escaped from a circus train. But of course the list goes on and on. The Dr. Dolittle books have been censored by Loftings’ own family because they were racist. The author of the Tin-Tin books repudiated his *Tin-Tin in Africa* book, and on and on it goes. There is a huge liberal bonfire raging into which the white grazers are told to throw every last remnant of our white past. And when they have completed that task, the liberals will tell the white grazers to jump into the fire themselves. Will they do it? Yes, they will, because once they have repudiated their past, they will have no way of discerning the truth. If the liberals tell them the fire is democratic, multicultural, and diverse, they will enter the fire in the belief that they will emerge from the fire cleansed of whiteness and ready to become part of Liberaldom. Of course the fire will consume them, but the grazers, having repudiated the miracle of Christ crucified, Christ risen, have decided to believe in the miraculous miracle of liberalism, which promises them a place in Liberaldom, which in reality is Satandom, if they will repudiate the one great evil – whiteness.

The Outcast Europeans - April 27, 2019

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. John 9: 35-39

When the kingdom of Judah was destroyed a small remnant of Jews were sent as captives to the land of Babylon. And remarkably they remained faithful to their God while suffering through their Babylonian captivity. In the book of Psalms we read of their faithfulness:

By the rivers of Babylon, there we sat down, yea, we wept, when we remembered Zion. We hanged our harps upon the willows in the midst thereof. For there they that carried us away captive required of us a song; and they that wasted us required of us mirth, saying, Sing us one of the songs of Zion. How shall we sing the Lord’s song in a strange land? If I forget thee, O Jerusalem, let my right hand forget her cunning. If I do not remember thee, let my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth; if I prefer not Jerusalem above my chief joy. – Psalm 137: 1-6

The European people are suffering through their own Babylonian captivity, but they have not, like the ancient Jews, remained faithful during their captivity. Why haven’t they? One reason is that the European people refuse to admit they are in captivity. How can a democratically elected government be compared to Nebuchadnezzar? You’re right – it can’t: Nebuchadnezzar was much kinder to the Jews than the liberals are to Christians. The liberals permit state-sanctioned Christianity (which is not Christianity), but they crush any and every manifestation of a genuine, heartfelt faith in the

Christ of old Europe. Yet the European people refuse to accept that democratically elected governments can be more destructive and more opposed to everything Christian and virtuous than the 'tyrannical' pagan kings of the Old Testament. Abortion is called 'choice,' white genocide is called 'diversity,' and the worship of the noble savage is called 'respect for civil rights.' Is that not tyranny? Is that not a captivity infinitely worse than the Babylonian captivity of the Jews?

The second reason that the exiled Jews remained faithful is that the Lord sent them prophets such as Jeremiah, Daniel, and Ezekiel so that they could hear the word of the Lord. Many, many times the Jewish people rejected the words of the Lord given to them through the prophets, but the Jews of the Babylonian captivity did not reject the words of the Lord.

Would the words of the Lord have had any effect on the remnant Jews if His words had not been presented to them by men with hearts inflamed with a love of the Lord? Daniel, Ezekiel, and Jeremiah were not theologians or philosophers. If they had been, they would not have been able to stir the hearts of their people. Like St. Paul, the prophets Jeremiah, Daniel, and Ezekiel were poets of God. They circumcised their hearts, and that circumcision allowed them to hear the word of the Lord God. We are not lacking philosophers and theologians in modern Christian Jewry, men who will tell us what their intellects have discovered about the nature of God. What we are lacking is men and women with hearts of flesh who know God feelingly, because their hearts are connected to Christ's heart by way of a sympathetic connection to their people. The channels of grace are our familial and racial hearth fires; if we allow the liberals to reroute those channels of grace and direct them toward the people of other races and other faiths, we will become... We have already become, a non-people without a familial or racial home.

That which is essential to our faith, the love of Christ in and through our people, must be accepted as an unchallenged prejudice that is deeply embedded in our hearts. And we must act according to that prejudice without making it into a syllogism. A man cannot act if everything in his life must be figured out without reference to his prejudices. The church men have been neutered because their faith in Christ is a propositional faith, dependent on theology and philosophy. They place Christ outside the realm of the human heart, where all true knowledge of God dwells, and make our faith dependent on the human intellect, which translates to their intellects. And what have they come up with? Nothing that a man can believe in that will sustain him in the dark nights of the soul. The prophets and St. Paul loved much — they sought the knowledge of God through a heart to heart communion with the living God; consequently, they had something to give us — a certainty that Christ is the God who enters human hearts, that He is our Jesus who will abide with us in life and death. That prejudice took root in the hearts of the antique Europeans, and all those men and women who cling to that prejudice constitute the church of Jesus Christ. The church buildings, inhabited by men and women who have no contact with the God of the prophets and St. Paul, are the great liberal cleansing houses. They exist to purify the white Christians and make them receptive to the new Messiah, the Benamuckee of the liberals, who does not enter human hearts.

White people now take it as a given that they must hate every manifestation of white pietas. The Dalai Lama is able to see and say that Europe should belong to the Europeans and that refugees should return to their native countries, but no white man will dare to say that the European nations must be white. In fact the white Europeans now have an ingrained prejudice against white Europeans. Conservatives and liberals tell us that white nations must be diverse, which means they must be dominated, numerically and culturally, by the colored tribesmen. (1) If a white person even suggests what the Dalai Lama said openly, he is labeled a white supremacist (the label 'racist' has lost some of its potency due to excessive use) who must be punished either by economic disenfranchisement, imprisonment, or death.

The church of faithful hearts who love much, the church of the prophets and St. Paul, will not fail us, but the church of the scholarly minds, the really smart men, has failed us and will continue to fail us. As we sink further and further into the slough of despair, the church men still tell us not to worry, because soon they will come up with the answer to the God problem, and then all things will be set right. That will be the last word we hear as we slide into the mire of the slough of despair. But St. Paul bid us search the Scriptures with our hearts. There, in that communion of hearts of flesh with the Word made flesh, we can know our Lord.

I frequently reference the great hearts of Europe, men such as Burke, Rembrandt, Scott, Shakespeare, and Dostoyevsky, because they are part of that long line of Christian warriors who saw life feelingly, and as a consequence they bore witness to the living God. But there is an unnamed great heart who set the stage for the great hearts of Europe. He appears in John 9. I wrote about him once before in an article entitled, "The Gift of Sight." His story is our story. And his response to the liberals of his times should be our response to the liberals, in church and state, of our times. The man was born blind, and Christ gives him sight. First, his neighbors question him:

The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he. Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened? He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight. Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

Then the Pharisees question him:

They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them. They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

When the Pharisees are unable to make the man born blind admit that he was not born blind, they decide to go to work on his parents:

But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

His parents wanted no part of their son nor were they interested in the man who cured him. Why? The apostle tells us that they were afraid that the Pharisees would put them out of the synagogue. Think about that. They felt no desire to know the man who made the blind to see, their own son, but they were very concerned lest they be forced to leave the synagogue. Does not that sound very familiar? The grazers of modern Churchianity do not care to know the Christ of old Europe, the Christ who made the lame to walk and the blind to see, the God of Rembrandt, Handel, and St. Paul, because to adhere to the God of those people would stink of “white supremacy” — it would result in one’s expulsion from the modern Christian synagogues of diversity and multiculturalism. But we should leave those synagogues in order to experience what the man born blind experienced when he refused to betray the man who gave him his sight:

Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses’ disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

From whence comes the courage to defy the Pharisees who have the power to make us leave the synagogue? It comes from the love of Christ who has given us sight. We were blinded by sin and the fear of death, and He gave us the sure and certain hope that through His cross we would be redeemed from sin and death. To have been nothing, as John Donne tells us, and then to be co-heirs with Christ is something beyond the ken of the human mind. Only the heart that loves can believe in that mystery.

The man born blind is willing to be cast out for Christ’s sake, but what he gains by his rejection of the Pharisees is something so much greater than what he loses by not being a member in good standing of their church:

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.(2)

Does not every word in John 9 resonate with us today? The liberals in church and state are in the process of casting out all those men and women who profess an allegiance to the Christ of the European people when they were a people. If we cling to that God and those people, we will be cast out of the synagogues of the liberals. But what will we lose if we are cast out of the liberals’ synagogues? We might lose — no, we will lose — many of the material benefits that come with an adherence to the dictates of the rulers of the synagogues of modernity. But what will we lose if we abandon the faith of our people? We will lose that intimacy with Christ that the man born blind obtained through his fidelity to Christ and his rejection of the Pharisees. But of course there is a price we must pay for that intimacy with Christ.

Jeremias de Decker, the great Dutch poet, who was an intimate friend of Rembrandt, told us the price we must pay in two short lines from his poem, “The Passion of Jesus Christ (Good Friday)”: “Men cannot receive uncrucified, The fruit of the cross.” What is a constant source of amazement and inspiration to me is the way our people, the antique Europeans, took Christ into their hearts without flinching from the crucifixion: “Even though it is a cross that leadeth me.” Such courage,

such fortitude, such faith only comes from an intimacy with Christ that the intellectual Christians can never know, and that the liberals spit on. Cannot we, the remnant band, the captives of Babylonian liberalism, take heart from the remnant band of Jewish exiles, the man born blind, and the antique Europeans, and stand up to the rulers of the synagogues? We can and we shall, because we have seen Him and because we know that it is He and He alone who speaks to our hearts. The darkness around us is deepening, but there is light. The man born blind saw that light: “And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.” +

(1) Our enemies have such contempt for us that they openly tell us how they will destroy us. I reference once again the Moslem mayor of London, who said that for the sake of diversity we must accept the fact that London is the murder capital of the world. He invokes that word, diversity, as he would invoke the power of a magic talisman. And it works. Whites will sacrifice everything, their wives, their children, and their heritage, on the altars of diversity. If the Europeans no longer believe in the Word made flesh, they will be destroyed by the word of Satan, “diversity.”

(2) The significance of the fact that Christ sought out the man born blind when He heard that the man had been cast out of the synagogue cannot be overemphasized. We all, because we are spiritually weak, fear to be cast out of the synagogues of the principalities and powers of this world. But if we love much, if we love Him, He will seek us out. The grace of God is a living reality: the man born blind is our exemplar.

The Darkness Deepens - April 21, 2019 [with addendum on being deplatformed]

[Please see ‘To My Readers’ addendum at end of article]*

But let us take care. The moral sentiments, so nearly connected with early prejudice as to be almost one and the same thing, will assuredly not live long under a discipline, which has for its basis the destruction of all prejudices, and the making the mind proof against all dread of consequences flowing from the pretended truths that are taught by their philosophy. – Edmund Burke, *Further Reflections on the Revolution in France*

The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity; the rest is crime. – Edmund Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Let me begin with Edmund Burke:

Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections.

The liberals are holding all sorts of sympathy ceremonies for the victims who were killed in the New Zealand mosque. In my area there was a huge ecumenical ‘religious’ ceremony in which all the female clergy and most of the female laity wore some sort of Moslem headgear. Do the liberals really feel pity for the Moslems who were killed by Brenton Terrant? No, they don’t, because the liberals have separated themselves from the font of pity and mercy, they have separated themselves from Christ. Men and women who kill babies in their mothers’ wombs and then throw them on the trash heap are not, I repeat, are not full of pity for the victims in the New Zealand mosque. What the liberals are doing, laity and clerical, is showing the liberal world how virtuous they are. When white Christians are murdered by Moslems and/or black barbarians, there is no outpouring of sympathy for the victims, because when the victims are white, they are justly killed for the sin of whiteness, according to the dictates of liberalism. And when dark-skinned Christian Nigerians are killed by Moslems, there is no outpouring of sympathy for those victims, because they are considered Uncle Remuses, who have adopted a white man’s religion.

Brenton Terrant was responding to the merciless assault on his people by a merciless enemy. Where he went wrong was in responding to a merciless enemy with the same tactics used by his enemies. When Rogers, of Rogers’ Rangers fame, attacked the Abnaki Indians, this is what he told his men: “You all know what these Indians have done to New England. For near a hundred years they’ve been sneaking up on our towns and farms, cutting folks to pieces while they were still alive, roasting ‘em alive, torturing ‘em every way a sick mind could think of. Well, we’re going to put an end to that. Remember our orders – kill every fighting man among ‘em, but let the women and children alone even though they’ve killed and captured ours.” When the Christian kills, his actions must be motivated, as they most certainly were in the case of Rogers and his men, by love. And the killings that must be done in defense of those we love must be done within the confines of chivalry: “let the women and children alone.” From a purely pagan, pragmatic standpoint, it is good policy to kill the children, because they are savage warriors in the making, and it is good practice to kill the women, because they

are the breeders of savage warriors. But the code of chivalry forbids pagan pragmatism. (1) The Christian does not advocate the abortion of black babies because there is a good chance that they will grow up to be black murderers, nor does he advocate the indiscriminate killing of Moslems regardless of their age, sex, or degree of culpability in the Moslem invasion of the West. I do not believe that any good can come from a response to Islamic terrorism rooted in neo-paganism, because neo-paganism, like liberalism, lacks that “charity of honor.”

Who is to blame for the shootings in New Zealand? First and foremost it is the liberals. They are allowing the Moslems to enter the white nations in the hopes that the Moslems will kill off the whites. And secondly I blame the Moslem invaders. I am against bombing them over there, in their own countries, but I am in favor of banning Moslems from the white nations. I find it astounding that the pro-Israel ‘Christians’ throughout the European nations, especially in this country, are adamantly opposed to violence against domestic Islamic terrorists and liberals who defend the terrorists, yet they have no compunction about bombing innocent Moslems over there. And they are relatively innocent when they are over there, unless you think a Christian can kill a Moslem just for being a Moslem.

It shouldn’t be hard to see that any killing that does not stem from pietas — “I will defend my own” — is evil. But the modern ‘Christians’ have reversed that simple Christian precept — It is all right to kill if the killings are state-sanctioned wars of conquest, but it is wrong to kill in defense of our loved ones. The end result of that kind of twisted theology is that white Christians have become hypocritical Quakers. They will not fight the colored barbarians or the liberals, who have ordered the destruction of the white race, but they will fight, through the state, to destroy all enemies of atheistic, Jacobin democracy.

The magnificent hymn “In the Garden” speaks of an intimacy with Christ that can only come when His heart unites with our hearts. “He walks with me and He talks with me and He tells me I am His own.” Yes, we are sinful, yes, we are imperfect, but He felt that we had something inside us worthy of redemption. The intellectual Christian puts God ‘out there,’ because ‘out there’ he can control God by keeping Him away from human hearts. That Semipelagianism has destroyed Western man. “Our intellects are pure, but our hearts are sinful.” The European Christian rejects that Gnostic perversion of the faith:

Now with zeal we must search our breasts shrewdly, the vices within, with the eyes of the heart. With the other eyes, the jewels of the head, we cannot at all see through the spirit of the thought, whether good or evil dwells beneath, so that it may be pleasing unto God at the dread time. — Anglo-Saxon Poetry

We are creatures of the heart. If we are not allowed to come to the garden alone to commune with the living God because our hearts are impure, but must only approach Him through the great wizards of the intellect because their minds are pure, then we are lost souls. We have no touchstone of reality. The non-whites still have a reality, they have never left their nature gods. But the white man cannot go back. He must have a heart-to-heart connection to the God above nature, or else he must be an outcast man, doomed to wander through the arid wastes of a mind divorced from the human heart. (2)

And in order to fortify his dried-up soul, he will worship, second-hand, the gods of nature. The liberal worships the gods of color while the neo-pagan tries, like Hitler, to revive the pagan gods of the ancient Europeans. The liberals have been more successful than the neo-pagans because their ‘noble black savage’ has a contemporary historical presence that the ancient Vikings lack. If and when the European people come to see Christ, once again, as a God who enters human hearts, they will be renewed as a people and will not acquiesce to their own destruction because the wizards of intellectual Christianity have turned them away from the living God.

Something very old and something very new has become institutionalized in the European nations. The something old is paganism, and the something new is post-Christian paganism. The old paganism was cyclic, it did not progress, it simply, like nature, repeated itself over and over. But post-Christian paganism, which is liberalism, views the historical process as an ever-evolving, ever-advancing process. History is moving, under the guidance of the liberals, toward something magnificent:

And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?

In the fullness of time, the fusion of liberalism and paganism has given birth to the Prince of Darkness. He has become the ruler of the European nations by luring the churchmen away from the Christ whom we encounter in our hearts, and toward the Christ that can only be known through the minds of the philosophers and theologians. It wasn’t necessary for Satan to attack the laity directly, because once he turned the clergymen away from the living God it was only a matter of sitting back and letting nature, and nature’s God, the noble black savage, take its course. What have they, the clergymen, wrought? They have given us darkness where there was light — they have taught us that the highest form of love is the abandonment of our kith and kin, they have taught us that only great minds can know God, and they have taught us that

there never was a Christian people, it was all a lie. But it was those people who said, without qualification or equivocation, that Christ rose from the dead on the third day. If those people were not Christian, if they were the source of all evil, to whom do we turn to in this world? To the modern clergymen who have blended liberalism and paganism? To the liberals who bid us worship nature and nature's god, the noble black savage? Or do we turn to the neo-pagans who bid us worship our white genes? (3)

The conservatives in church and state, who are not conservative, have joined with the liberals in that which is essential – our apprehension of the living God. They have both placed God out there and have forbidden access to Him except through them. That is paganism:

From these things, I began to instruct him in the knowledge of the true God; I told him that the great Maker of all things lived up there, pointing up towards heaven; that He governed the world by the same power and providence by which He made it; that He was omnipotent, and could do everything for us, give everything to us, take everything from us; and thus, by degrees, I opened his eyes. He listened with great attention, and received with pleasure the notion of Jesus Christ being sent to redeem us; and of the manner of making our prayers to God, and His being able to hear us, even in heaven. He told me one day, that if our God could hear us, up beyond the sun, he must needs be a greater God than their Benamuckee, who lived but a little way off, and yet could not hear till they went up to the great mountains where he dwelt to speak to them. I asked him if ever he went thither to speak to him. He said, "No; they never went that were young men; none went thither but the old men," whom he called their Oowokakee; that is, as I made him explain to me, their religious, or clergy; and that they went to say O (so he called saying prayers), and then came back and told them what Benamuckee said.
– *Robinson Crusoe*

The 'conservatives' tell us that Benamuckee is Christ, but we must wait till they do more research and study before we can know anything about Him. And the liberals tell us that Benamuckee is the noble black savage, the Messiah, whom the prophet Jesus Christ prepared the way for. Thus the mad-dog liberal branch of the new paganism trumps the classical liberal branch of neo-paganism because the mad-dog liberals have a flesh and blood savior that they can call their own. But that god is a false God; his dethronement will come about when the European people fight their way through the wizardry of the experts and return to the God of their people. Until that time, they will be at the mercy of the liberals' god, a god who has no mercy.

The editor of *National Review* magazine recently published a rousing defense of Google's internet monopoly. Isn't that a betrayal of the magazine's original intent? No, it is not. *National Review* was always a modernist, liberal magazine just as 20th century conservatism was always a modernist, liberal movement, Gnostic in origin in that it championed a process over the reason for the process. Mary fell down at her Savior's feet and was upbraided by Martha for a lack of respect for the process of hospitality consisting of kitchen work. For what end was kitchen work intended? It was for Christ, who bid us come to Him in the garden. If the system is all, we shall end up with Benamuckee as our god, because Benamuckee only requires external assent and sacrifice. But if we step away from the systems and seek Him in the garden, we will understand with our hearts and we will serve the living God of mercy and love. That is not a little distinction – the distinction between the gods of sacrifice and the God of mercy. It was our people who made that distinction crystal clear, and it is the modern church men and their secular partners in crime who want to blur that distinction. To what end? To go with the demon-possessed swine who went over the cliff. +

(1) I have learned since I wrote my first article on the subject of Brenton Terrant that he did indeed target women and children along with Moslem men. We must, as Christians, condemn such actions. But that should not make us become hypocritical Quakers. And let us not be too sanctimonious. In my mid-twenties I went to visit a Roman Catholic conservative writer whom I admired. He was of Eastern European extraction and he had suffered much under the communists. During the course of a long conversation, he asserted quite casually that you had to target the communists' women and children because they were targeting your women and children. I went away from that conversation in a state of shock. This was not the Walter Scott ethos that I expected to hear from my idol. When I had time to think over what my idol had said, I asked myself how I would have felt had I been under the communist yoke and/or I had members of my family killed by the communists. It becomes a messy business, doesn't it? Still, in the end, my idol was no longer my guiding light. I don't believe in going outside that charity of honor, which the best of our blood adhered to. The Moslem mayor of London has told us that the soaring murder rate in that once peaceful city is the price we must pay for diversity. In the face of that hideous ideology of violence, and now that the major cities of the United States have become like unto Africa, we should look at how a Christian people once fought heathenism without becoming like unto the heathens.

To the credit of the British soldier be it said, that infuriated as they were by the thirst for vengeance, the thought of the murdered women, and the heat of battle, not a single case occurred, so far as is known, of a woman being ill-treated, insulted, or fired upon—although the women had been present in the massacres, and had constantly accompanied and cheered on the sorties of the mutineers. To the Sepoys met with in Delhi no mercy was shown; every man taken was at once bayoneted, and the same fate befell all townsmen found fighting against us. The rest of the men, as well as the women and children, were, after the fighting was over, permitted to leave the city unmolested, although large numbers of them had taken share in the sack of the white inhabitants' houses, and the murder of every Christian, British or native, in the town. It would, however, have been impossible to separate the innocent from the guilty; consequently all were allowed to go free.—*In Times of Peril* by G. A. Henty

Let us reject genocidal policies of the liberals and the neo-paganism of Brenton Terrant for the faith and courage of the European people when they were Christian in spirit and blood.

(2) The countries of Eastern Europe and Iceland still have a chance, if they reject diversity and democracy, to avoid the bloody consequences of diversity and democracy. But they must return to their non-democratic Christian roots. That is a warning from a man who lives in the hellish pit of diversity to the men and women who are at the top of the pit: "Don't enter the pit." As for the rest of us? We must remain faithful while suffering through our Babylonian captivity.

(3) I realize that when a Christian European rejects the fusion of liberalism and Christianity in the organized churches and also rejects neo-paganism, he has no place to lay his head. I suppose that is why there are so few Christian Europeans. But the Son of Man also had no place to lay his head.

* Addendum: 'To My Readers'

[originally posted April 21, 2019 by CWNY upon his return from being deplatformed for his March 23, 2019 post, An Alternative Vision to Liberalism and Neo-Paganism]

And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things. —Philippians 4: 7-8

If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. —John 15: 8

I did not take a vacation, I was terminated for "hate speech," which translates to, I did not completely condemn Brenton Terrant. If you read the article for which my blog was taken down, you know that it was not an endorsement of Brenton Terrant. (1) But I did express a certain sympathy for what motivated him to do what he did. Mao Tse-tung was the greatest mass executioner in history, and yet I have never heard of a blogger being deplatformed or a writer being blackballed for expressing an admiration for him. And I only expressed a "certain sympathy" for Brenton Terrant.

Because I was taken off and did not leave voluntarily, I did not get a chance to say farewell to my readers. I'm not so naïve to think there was not a great deal of people, perhaps a majority, who read my blog to mock and scorn. But still there were some who got something — dare I say a quickening of the spirit? — when they read my posts. To those people, I want to say that I did not leave voluntarily. The liberals removed me. I only wonder what took them so long, because I do hate liberalism as I hate the devil and all his works.

I thought, and still think that the organized churches have compromised with liberalism, and that the other camp, the neo-pagans, constitute a non-Christian alternative to liberalism. Both those options should be, in my judgement, unacceptable to European Christians. I wrote to present a counter-vision, and I will continue to present that counter-vision if I find a platform for my writing. If not, God bless you, my friends, whom I never saw with the material eye, but shall always hold in my heart. I believe that the Christ of old Europe is the living God and that we can find that God through the "mysterious human relationships" that the liberals have condemned as racist and the church men have condemned as poetical superficiality. St. Paul showed us the better way — charity never faileth.

Brenton Terrant is a terrorist, but it should be noted that his terrorism was a response to Moslem terrorism. That does not make his terrorism acceptable, but it should make us want to look at the cause of his passionate response. He is a young man who desperately wanted to put a stop to terrorism, the terrorism against his people. I was particularly moved by his account of the murder of a young eight year old Swedish girl by Moslem terrorists. That was the terrorist act that made him decide to do something. I ask you, do you want to live in a nation in which your young men do not want to do something to stop that type of terrorism? I live in such a nation, and it is not a place fit for human habitation. But I also do not want to live in a nation in which the only alternative to liberalism is the neo-paganism of Brenton Terrant.

What is at stake is the continued existence of the European people. The liberals have made it clear they want to replace the European people with non-European people. The liberals often kill by proxy through the people of color and in the abortion mills through designated executioners called doctors. Both forms of murder are sanctioned under the guise of democracy. The 'Christians' tell us we must never violently resist state-sanctioned white genocide or state-sanctioned abortion, because democracy is the Christian form of government. If that is so, then why is it that the age of democracy has given us wars without chivalry, legalized abortion, and white genocide? Are such things Christian? Must a Christian submit to the dictates of democracy even when such dictates are completely against the Christian faith?

I do not think that the coming of democracy has eliminated the need for Christians to defend the innocent and defend their kith and kin. It is always preferable to defend the innocent and your people with gentle persuasion, but what if the enemy cannot be persuaded? Must we submit without a fight? We must fight as our Lord would have us fight, always obeying the code of chivalry, which seeks to limit the suffering of our enemies, including the wounded and sick and prisoners of war. But can a Christian, in good conscience, refuse to fight because he lives in a democracy?

I didn't disagree with the passion of Brenton Terrant's reaction to Moslem terrorism, but I did disagree with the indiscriminate nature of his reaction. I thought and still think that his reaction was outside the boundaries of Christian chivalry. In a follow up to the article that got me shut down, I wrote an article in which I attempted to delineate the differences between the Christian response to the

barbarism of the heathens and a non-Christian response to that barbarism. I never got a chance to publish that article, so I'll publish it now, after this foreword.

We are faced, in the 21st century, the first post-Christian century of the European people's history, with a perverted theology of violence. There is no longer a Christian charity of honor which places limits on violence. What we have now is state-sanctioned violence with no limits. Whatever is state-sanctioned violence – violence against the unborn, violence against white people, and violence against all peoples and nations not democratic and capitalist – is considered “good violence.” (I have actually heard liberals use that term). ‘Christians’ who are committed to non-violence against the evils of liberalism – whether that violence is legalized abortion (the ultimate act of terrorism), black barbarism, or Moslem terrorism – are usually big supporters of state violence. The mega-bombing wars of the 20th and 21st century were all perpetuated by outright liberals and intellectual Christians. If an individual violently responds to the violence of the Jacobin state, the murder of Randy Weaver's wife and son, or the murder of LaVoy Finicum, the rancher friend of the Bundy family, or if he violently responds to the violence encouraged and abetted by the liberal state, the Moslem and colored heathen invasion of the white nations, he will be condemned and dealt with by the Jacobin state. That is the law of the liberals. But a genuine Christian, a European Christian, should not be bound by the law of the liberals. There is a higher law, grounded in Christian charity that says we must fight to protect the innocent and we must fight to protect our people. But we must not fight outside the boundaries of Christian chivalry.

I fear that a time is coming, it may already have come, when the European Christian will be forced to side either with the liberals or the neo-pagans, just as the Southerners who wanted a peaceful solution to the secession issue were forced to take up arms with the Southerners who thought violence was the only solution. Violence could be prevented if the liberals wanted to prevent it. They could ban all Moslems from the white nations and enforce a strict segregation of the non-whites and the whites within the confines of the European nations. But they will not do that, because they are the great haters. They hate Christ and they hate the white race that once championed His cause. The race issue is a religious issue. It can't be solved without reference to Him, the rejected, outcast King of Europe. +

(1) A friend who searches the internet much more than I do informed me that the neo-pagans hate me even more than the liberals hate me. That is understandable, because I have criticized the neo-pagans along with the liberals. The devil often sends us two evils, or even three or four evils, that seem to be diametrically opposed in the hopes that we will choose one evil over the other evil and still remain in his camp. Does the devil really care whether a man is a neo-pagan or a liberal? No, he does not. He has one abiding hatred: he hates Christ and all those men and women who have taken Christ into their hearts. It is a tragedy of Shakespearean proportions that young Europeans know nothing of their Christian heritage and see only the rot of liberalism and the stink of neo-paganism before their eyes. And they won't see an alternative to liberalism and neo-paganism unless the European Christians show them the alternative. How is that possible, considering that the liberals control all means of communication, including the internet? I don't know. Help of the helpless, Lord, abide with us.

An Alternative Vision to Liberalism and Neo-Paganism - March 23, 2019

Your soul deserves the place to which it came,
If having entered Hell, you feel no flame.

-Adam Mickiewicz

I read the Manifesto of Brenton Tarrant the New Zealand mosque shooter. There is a certain nobility in that young man. He has a heart, which is more than can be said of the liberals and their Christian allies, who are not Christian. But I still stand by my initial response to the killings in the mosque, which I wrote last week before I knew there was only one shooter and before I read the Manifesto. It is not wrong to resist the onslaught of merciless enemies who rape and murder your people. The fact that Tarrant wanted to do something about the rape and murder of his people places him far above the liberals and the false Christians of organized Christian Jewry, who see the destruction of the white race as a necessary step on the road to Utopia, which is the kingdom of hell on earth. Having said all that, I must add that the neo-paganism of the Mosleys and the Identitarians disgusts me. How can a European proceed in any action of great enterprise without taking the Man of Sorrows into account? It is true that the code of chivalry, which stems from the antique Europeans' connection to Christ, has often been more honored in the breach than the observance, but nevertheless it was real, just as Christ's presence in the European people was real. We can't become virtuous pagans again, without becoming like our enemies, who are beasts of prey. The Europeans have shown themselves to be more proficient at killing than the other races, but is that ultimately our pride and glory? No, it can't be. Our pride and glory should be in Him who saves our people from being mere biological entities fit to slaughter or be slaughtered in the biological arena. Do we belong to Him or to the dung heap? That question cannot be put aside as a poetical side issue, fit for parlor talk and playtime. It must be decided upon. If we belong only to nature as the men and women of the nature-based religions of Islam, liberalism, Judaism, and the rest posit, then let us all proceed to act like beasts, let us kill or be killed. But if, as the condemned and forgotten antique Europeans believed, condemned by the liberals and forgotten by the neo-pagans, we belong to Christ then we must proceed according to His charity of honor which tells us that we must fight as He would have us fight, extending mercy to an enemy who has no mercy.

When hell is empty and all the devils are here on earth, it becomes imperative that we follow Edgar's injunction to speak what we feel and not what we ought to say. I feel a hatred beyond hatred for the liberals and their anti-Christian Christian allies, who have created a hell on earth that makes young men such as Brenton Terrant feel compelled to respond in kind to the devilry of the liberals and their colored allies. And I feel a sadness and disgust that the only resistance to the devilry of the liberals is coming from young whites who have no faith in the Christ they have never known, because the church men won't preach Christ crucified, Christ risen, and have given themselves over to a non-faith in cosmic nothingness. Brenton Terrant is not a terrorist, he is a brave young man who responded to Islamic terrorism without the aid and guidance of the Christ of old Europe. Let us pray not only for his physical well-being as he faces the wrath of the liberals, but let us also pray that he finds the God of His people, the God who made the lame to walk and the blind to see. Christ still comes to all those who call on Him by name. (1)

If there is only going to be two forces in the world, the liberals and the colored heathens vs. the neo-pagans, with whom does the Christian side? With neither. Of what good does it avail us to gain the whole world if we lose our souls? If the liberals win, the Christian loses, and if the neo-pagans win, the Christian loses. The Christian European must not make the same mistake as the halfway house Christians. They were afraid of going it alone with Christ as their only support, so they attached themselves to the liberals who seemed to be the rulers of this world. We can't seek to ally ourselves with the neo-pagans in the hopes that they will fight the liberals and their colored minions for us. We must fight them ourselves, in His name. If we do that, the neo-pagans with hearts of flesh will convert and bend their knees to Christ. The ones who have hardened their hearts and trust only in their minds will ultimately be absorbed by liberalism.

One thing I've noted when reading the literature of the neo-pagans is that they have an inordinate confidence in their ability to control history. The Christian is concerned with, "What does God want me to do?" Then he acts on that belief, leaving God to determine the results of his action. But the neo-pagan thinks that his own mind is providence. "As I think, so the world shall be ordered." But the world will never be ordered as the neo-pagan wills it to be ordered, because existence is too complicated to be "figured out" by the human mind. We must give our wills up to Him.

The neo-pagan believes in the Father, which is his own intellect, and he believes in the Holy Ghost, which is science, but he has no Savior. The triune God is eternally part of the fabric of the European people's history. Even when they reject Christ to form a new religion, their new religion is constructed in a perverse imitation of Christianity. The liberals have a Savior, and the neo-pagans do not. I have often wondered why the neo-pagans are so obsessed with linking their cause with Hitler. I think it is their hope that he can be the Messiah that they seek. But the liberals' messiah, the noble black savage, seems to resonate with the European people more than Hitler does. Hitler made some noise for a time, but the egalitarians, the Jacobins of democracy, ultimately brought him down. All neo-pagans will go the way of Hitler unless they return home and embrace the Christ of eternal Europe.

St. Paul said that the last enemy which shall be destroyed is death. And yet the liberals and the neo-pagans both proceed as if they have conquered death without the aid of Christ. They both look on the survival of the species on this earth as the only realistic victory over death that is possible. The liberals want a kingdom of God on earth controlled by God the Father, which is their intellects, a kingdom which is made possible by the Savior, which is the sacred negro, and a kingdom sustained by the Holy Ghost, which is science. But can I or you or any of our loved ones be saved from death by the liberals' religion? And the neo-pagans who tell the white man that fertility, white fertility, is necessary to rout the colored barbarians, do they tell us why we should be fertile? Our people once believed that children were a blessing, the fruits of a Christian union. If Christ be not risen, then why should we procreate? To extend our miserable lives as a species a few more years here on earth? We can't have the fruits of faith in Christ without faith in Christ. We must have a childlike faith in "our Jesus" in order to form the type of union that results in children. Children are not weaponry to be used against the enemy, they are blessings from God. They help us to share in the sorrow of His crucifixion and the joy of His resurrection. Liberalism and neo-paganism come together on the issue of procreation. Both "religious" groups seek to wrest from God the procreative blessings which are His, and His alone, to give. And He wills that our children should be conceived and loved in and through Him. Let us leave, forever, the stink of the science laboratory and animal breeding programs to once again conceive Christian children consecrated to Christ the Lord.

While the neo-pagans either embrace the rotting corpse of Hitler, hoping that somehow he can be a savior, or while they look for another Messiah, the liberals have found their Savior. And the book of their Savior is *To Kill a Mockingbird*. "Stand up, your father is passing," is the liberals' fantasy. They are the Father, they are the great and benevolent Atticus Finch who loves his only begotten son of the spirit, who is Tom Robinson. With the support of science, which is free of prejudice, provincialism, and everything suggesting that there is anything or anyone that is above nature, the Father and the Son are worshipped and glorified. The liberals are so lost in their love of themselves and their abstract negro gods that they do not take note of the fact that the negroes hate them in their assumed role of the great Atticus Finch. They know nothing of the white man's flight from Christ through them. All they know is that the white man is weak and does not care about his own people. So they will smite the white man and his children, even Atticus Finch and his children. The Moslems and the other non-whites also fall under the liberals' protective mantle, so long as they hate the devil, which is

the unredeemed whites. But they too will not accept the liberals' vision of liberal greatness, and like the blacks they will kill the whites, liberal and non-liberal, with a maniacal hatred that is rooted in Satan's hatred of Christ.

The liberals have created hell on earth, and they order us to live in it while they torture, maim, and murder us. The neo-pagans offer us a different version of hell on earth. They offer us a science laboratory devoid of light, devoid of love and devoid of God. I reject both worlds and both visions. My heart belongs to old Europe. I don't see how it is possible to commit to any other world. When Christ asks His apostles if they too will leave Him, Peter replies, "Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou has the words of eternal life." We can't leave old Europe, because He resides there. He does not live in the liberals' hell on earth or in the hellish science lab of the neo-pagans. In the old Anglo-Saxon poem called "Daniel," the author bids us —

Consider now the holy might and wondrous works of God. We saw how He shielded the young men in the furnace from death and the leaping flames, because they served Him.

The Messiah that the prophets heralded came to us as the Suffering Servant. Our people saw their salvation in His crucifixion and resurrection. If we look at existence through their hearts, we will see that our salvation does not come to us through the sacred negro or through the minds of great white thinkers. Are we really too intelligent to believe that He is still our only hope? +

(1) Pray for Brenton Terrant. Pray as Henry Lyte prayed: "Help of the helpless, Lord abide with me." Please Lord, abide with Brenton Terrant, in life and death, abide with him as we hope and pray that you will abide with us.

The Discarded God of a Condemned People - March 16, 2019

To have once been nothing, and now to be co-heires with the Son of God: That Son of God, who if there had been but one soule to have been saved, would have dyed for that; nay, if all soules had been to be saved, but one, and that onely had sinned, he would not have contented himselfe with all the rest, but would have dyed for that. And there is the goodnesse, the liberality of our King, our God, our Christ, our Jesus. — John Donne

It is easier for me to understand the nihilist than the halfway-house Christian. I disagree with the nihilist, but I understand him. If your reason will not let you believe that Christ rose from the dead, then it follows that life has no meaning. But the halfway-house Christian, the man who professes to believe in Christ's divinity and then rejects the aspects of the Christ story that do not agree with what he deems reasonable is impossible for me to understand. I must acknowledge the existence of such people, the halfway-house Christians, because they are legion, but I cannot really understand them from within as I can understand the nihilist.

Let me pick out one former acquaintance as an example of the halfway-house Christians that I cannot understand. He was a Roman Catholic priest in good standing with the Church. I naively thought when I made his acquaintance that since he regularly celebrated mass and recited the Nicene Creed in church he believed in the Christ story as I, a man in his mid-twenties who had gone from nihilism to faith in Christ, believed. But our two faiths were not compatible. My acquaintance did not believe in original sin as depicted in the Bible nor did he believe in any of the Old Testament miracle stories such as the Flood, the destruction of the Tower of Babel, nor the parting of the Red Sea. Did he still believe in Christ's resurrection from the dead? Yes and no. He believed in some kind of spiritual life after death, but whether it was a personal resurrection or not was unclear to him. What was this halfway-house Christian's passionate belief? His passion was for the negroes. He passionately believed that they, as a race, were the suffering servants whom he had to love with his whole heart, mind, and soul. Now, that modern priest was probably closer to the liberal side of the great divide than other halfway-house Christians, but all the modern 'Christians' have problems with some aspect of the Christ story which begins in the Garden of Eden and culminates in Christ's resurrection from the dead. My difficulty in understanding such 'Christians' centers around my difficulty in viewing some of God's miracles as more rational than others. If Christ is truly who He said He was, why is it more difficult to believe in original sin, the creation of the world, the creation of man, and the other Old Testament miracles than it is to believe in Christ's divinity? If Christ was truly God and Man, doesn't everything else follow? Why should we stay in a rationalist limbo, trying to reconcile the Christian faith with a watered down intellectual Christianity that is more compatible with human reason?

The Christian rationalist has no firm ground to stand on. He is forever at the mercy of the next encyclical or the latest biblical study which will tell him just how much, or how little, he is supposed to believe of the Christ story. Thomas Hughes spoke to that very issue over a century ago:

At the same time, as we also know that the methods and principles of historical investigation are constantly improving, and being better understood, and that the critics of the next generation will work, in all human likelihood, at as great an advantage in this inquiry over those who are now engaged in it, as our astronomers and natural philosophers enjoy over Newton and Franklin — and as new evidence may turn up any day which may greatly modify their conclusions — we cannot suppose that there is the least chance of their settling the controversy in our time. Nor, even if we thought them likely to arrive at definite conclusions, can we consent to wait the result of their investigations... Granting then... that if these facts on the study of which they are engaged are not facts — if Christ was not crucified, and did not rise from the dead, and ascend to God His Father — there has been no revelation, and Christianity will infallibly go the way of all lies, either under their assaults or those of their successors — they must pardon us if even at the cost of being thought and called fools for our pains, we deliberately elect to live our lives on the contrary assumption. It is useless to tell us that we know nothing of these things, that we can know nothing until their critical examination is over; we can only say, “Examine away; but we do know something of this matter, whatever you may assert to the contrary, and mean to live on that knowledge.” — *Alfred the Great*

St. Paul enjoined us to keep in memory “that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that He was buried and He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures;” That Christ rose from the dead “according to the Scriptures” was the faith that sustained our people against the pestilence that walketh in darkness and the destruction that wasteth in noonday. We have succumbed to the pestilence of liberalism and are being destroyed by the colored heathens because we have lost our connection to the living God. We can’t know Him without hearts that love much, and we can’t love in the abstract, we must love our own, the people of our racial hearth fire, or we will not have the heart to love God. Our minds might assent to the basic tenets of Christianity, but if our hearts are not moved by Christ, our faith is as a sounding brass and a tinkling cymbal. The 20th century conservatives in the church who wanted to conserve the church while jettisoning the European people, and the conservatives in the secular society who wanted to conserve our democratic institutions while jettisoning the European people, were not conservatives. They were the aiders and abettors of the outright liberals who wanted to attack Christ through His people. If you won’t defend the people who took Christ into their hearts, you are, in essence, leaving Christ behind and forging ahead with the liberals who have adopted a strange new God who requires sacrifice and rejects mercy.

In my lifetime I have seen the completion of the transformation process of the devil. Europe and Christ used to be synonymous. Ben Gunn said he had not eaten a Christian diet for three years on Treasure Island. There was no need for him to say he had not eaten a European diet because Christian and European meant the same thing. Now when you link the antique Europeans with Christ in ‘Christian’ circles, when you speak of the covenant between the ancient Europeans and Christ, you are treated like a pariah. How can you claim that racists were one with Christ? Is not racism the original sin? No, it is intellectual pride, pride in our ability to place God out there, away from our racial hearth fire, and proceed according to our own abstract idea of God, that is the original sin. Pietas is the way to God; it does not lead us away from God. When you proscribe the European hearth fire, you have proscribed the living God. The flood of non-European people into European countries is the equivalent of a satanic reversal of Christ’s incarnation. When the ‘Dream of the Rood’ Europeans took Christ into their hearts, He became incarnate in Europe. Now that the liberals have demonized Christian Europe and opened up the floodgates to the colored heathens, Satan has become incarnate in Europe.

Satan did not ask Adam and Eve to deny God, he bid them expand their knowledge of God. They were told to give up the provincial, sentimental God who cared for His children, in order to become full partners with a cosmic God. The devil was a Chardinian. Under the guidance of the liberals, the European people have participated in a second fall of man. They rejected the little way, the narrow path of love that Christ chose when He took flesh and dwelt among us, for the broad path of cosmic knowledge. Do we really know God better now that we do not love our people? It seems to me that we have lost God now that we no longer love our people. We are passengers on a plague-infested ship, piloted by the devil.

Anthony Jacob, who was banned from all the 20th century conservative publications, wrote that “charity not only begins at home, it perishes without one.” Burke wrote about, “that charity of honor,” which sustains a Christian people. Both men, Burke and Jacob, were true conservatives. They wanted to conserve their people, who were white and Christian. That should have been the goal of all the men who claimed to be conservative, but it wasn’t. They sought to preserve an abstract, universal, conglomerate called ‘the people’ who were loyal to a remote, abstract God who could only be presented to ‘the people’ after he/she/it was dissected, analyzed, and purged of racism, sentimentality, and provincialism. Who is that purified God? Behold, it is the sacred negro.

The little Christ born in a stable in Bethlehem became the savior of the world. The great cosmic Christ born in the minds of Christian rationalists became an inconsequential God who lives only to rubber stamp the decrees of liberalism. It is now verboten in ‘Christian’ circles to invoke the Christ of old Europe. We are enjoined to look to the new, streamlined Christ, who cannot save, He can only provide comfort and support to the liberal elect who seek to build a kingdom of God on earth. In that kingdom, the liberal elect, who have purged themselves of whiteness, will take charge of the eternal religious festival dedicated to the colored gods who have redeemed us from... What, pray tell, do they redeem us from? Do they redeem us from death? No, but they do redeem us, if we worship them, from the original sin of racism. But then again do they really redeem the white man from the sin of whiteness? The reality of the liberals’ brave new world seems to contradict their theory. No matter how devoutly the liberals worship the sacred negroes, no matter how subservient the

white grazers are to the sacred negroes, “thou art a sinner because thou art white” is still stamped on the foreheads of the liberals and the white grazers. Is there no atonement in the new religion? No, there is not. There can be no atonement, for the unpardonable sin of whiteness. Shouldn’t that tell us something, shouldn’t that tell us everything, about the new religion? Can a savior who has no mercy be a savior? Why were our people’s hearts drawn to Christ? Was it not because He, through His divine charity, redeemed us from sin and saved us from death? Why is that vision of the living God, the vision of the proscribed and condemned antique Europeans, now an anathema and the new vision of the merciless gods of color the ruling orthodoxy? Must the European people remain forever in their self-imposed exile from their people and their God all because of ‘racism,’ that man-made bogeyman who keeps the liberals’ kingdom of eternal night in order?

My children never went to ‘school,’ because they were educated at the parental hearth fire. Their religious education consisted of the literature of the West and the Bible. It was truly amazing to see how the literature of the West commingled with the Bible. The history of our people is the retelling of the Christ story. If you try to eliminate the Christ story from our people’s history, you eliminate our people. And conversely if you try to eliminate our people from the Christ story, you eliminate the Christ story as a historical reality. You make it an abstract theory. St. Paul’s “according to the Scriptures,” becomes “according to the abstract theories of really smart men.” And those smart men have given us a Gnostic God who is everything and nothing. He is too weak to be a savior, so he has given way to the new black Messiah. Our people, when they were a people, had a heart to heart covenant with the living God. Donne’s ode to “Our Jesus,” which was the lay of the antique Europeans, must be our faith while the lay of the liberals who sing of the colored gods of sacrifice must always be an anathema to us. In the name of the God of Mercy, we must cling to the Christ-centered hearth fire of the European people.+

Addendum: Let’s be clear about the liberals’ fake tears for the victims of the shootings in the mosques in New Zealand. The liberals do not care about the death of Moslems. They do not care about the death of anyone, with the exception of their own illustrious selves. Bush and Blair killed millions of innocent Moslems with the consent of the liberals. The liberals will use this shooting to clamp down on white people who advocate, by word or deed, that white nations should remain white. “Terror has no religious affiliation,” the liberals intone. Don’t believe them. Islam is a religion of terror and so is liberalism. Legalized abortion is terrorism, the massive bombing of civilian populations is terrorism, and on the Moslems’ ledger is a legacy of bloody terror against white Christians. So was the shooting justifiable? You could make a case that it was; are not all Moslems by what they profess potential terrorists? Yes, they are. But still, my heart did not soar within me when I heard of the shootings as my heart soars when I hear of the shooting of an abortion doctor or as it would soar if I heard of the shooting of a violent Jihadist or a black murderer and rapist. A Christian should not live in the land of theory. Even though you can make a theoretical case for the shooting of all members of a religious sect that advocates terror, we must listen to our Christian hearts, which recoil at the indiscriminate slaughter of civilians, even if the civilians are members of a religious body, liberal or Moslem, opposed to white Christians. A Christian has the added burden of fighting within the moral parameters of his Christian faith. That puts him at a disadvantage when he fights enemies who have no moral parameters. But that is our cross, a cross that our Savior, in my judgement, wants us to bear.

The halfway-house Christians will rush to condemn the perpetrators of the shooting. They will not be full of loving forgiveness for the men who did the shootings, because the shooters were not members of a liberal-sanctioned religious sect. They were, in the vernacular of the liberals, ‘white supremacists.’ But they are not the moral pariahs the liberals claim they are. White self-defense is not morally reprehensible. But we see, in these shootings, the insufficiency of white self-defense that is not grounded in the Christian faith. The mark of a Christian is not that he doesn’t fight, the mark of a Christian is that he discriminates when he fights, between the militant, aggressive enemies of his people and the non-militant civilians who had the misfortune to be born into a false religion.

I realize that it is simpler to take either an ‘all violence is wrong’ stance, or a ‘by any means necessary’ stance, on the subject of white self-defense. But I can’t do that. The liberals and their heathen allies must be resisted. They are violent and merciless and we must resist them. With violence? Yes, with violence. But should our violence be without mercy? No, there is the difference between us and them. We must temper our violence with mercy. There will be no mercy for the shooters in this case, because they are white. But they should be shown mercy, because they are not as responsible for the killings as the liberals who let the Moslems into New Zealand and the Moslems who declared war on white Christians. But nevertheless, we must hold out for Christian warfare, which extends mercy to the enemy, a mercy that seems to be lacking in the men who did the shootings in the mosques.

The liberals have no problem with bombing Moslems over there, because over there, they are the enemies of liberalism. But they do have a problem with killing Moslems in white nations because over here the Moslems are part of an invading army that are doing what the liberals desire: they are destroying the white race.

A Mystery - March 9, 2019

But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory: – I Corinthians 2: 7

For it is only through our mysterious human relationships, through the love and tenderness and purity of mothers, and sisters, and wives, through the strength and courage and wisdom of fathers, and brothers, and teachers, that we can come to the knowledge of Him,

in whom alone the love, and the tenderness, and the purity, and the strength, and the courage, and the wisdom of all these dwell for ever and ever in perfect fulness. – *Tom Brown's School Days*

St. Paul enjoins us to believe in Christ's mysterious, divine charity: "Behold I shew you a mystery: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

It was the devil's self-appointed task to destroy, through his liberal minions, the Europeans' faith in Jesus Christ by attacking that mystery which St. Paul writes about and Handel put to music. Truth, the liberals tell us, cannot be mysterious, it must be rational and scientifically verifiable or it is not truth. Where is the scientific evidence that Christ rose from the dead? And where is the scientific evidence that those men and women of old Europe who believed that Christ rose from the dead are with the Lord, body and soul, even though they are dead and buried? There is no scientific evidence to support the major tenets of the Christian faith, nor is there a rational explanation for the Trinity, the virgin birth, original sin, or the creation of man from the dust of the earth and the creation of woman from the rib of man. So isn't it time to leave the age of credulity and enter the new age of science and reason? "Yes, it is time to leave the age of credulity," the liberals tell us. "That is why we have taken the reins of government in church and state." One thinks of the prophetic words of Isaiah: "And the government shall be upon His shoulders." Yes, the government should be upon His shoulders, not the liberals' shoulders. But before we leave the credulous antique Europeans behind, let us look at the new mystery religion that has replaced Christianity.

The gods of the pagan Greeks succumbed to rationalism, and as a result the Greeks succumbed to the Romans. But the Roman gods were mere state gods, they no longer had any mystery. The mystery religions replaced them in the hearts of the people. Christ did not conquer the mystery religions because His story was rational and scientific. He conquered the mystery religions because His incarnation, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead was a greater mystery than that of the mystery religions. (1) The pagan Greeks and Romans watched their civilizations die because they failed to realize that rationalism kills mystery and without mystery there can be no faith. And what happens to a people without faith? They die out as a people.

St. Augustine quite naturally thought the coming of the 'barbarian' hordes, the European tribesmen, meant the end of civilization. He wanted to give the faithful something to hold on to, so he invented a false concept of the Church. The Roman organization became, in Augustine's mind, the true Church. Everything outside of that Church was the city of man, which was evil. Catholic and Protestant theologians have differed on many things, but they all have remained under the spell of St. Augustine regarding the church of Christ. They do not believe that the Word of God is passed on from heart to heart; they believe it must be passed on through mind-forged organizations consisting of smart men who hammer out creeds and special bulletins about God and then pass their findings on to the faithful. And the main purpose of those creeds and bulletins is to destroy the mystery of Christ crucified, Christ risen so that their rational formulations of the essence of Christianity can take center stage. It is not a question of St. Augustine or Aquinas. Nor is it a question of Aquinas or Calvin. It is a question of St. Paul and the circumcised heart versus the mind-forged theories of theological experts who thought, and still think, that Christ can be put in a scientized box and played upon as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern sought to play upon Hamlet.

HAMLET. I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

GUILDENSTERN. My lord, I cannot.

HAMLET. I pray you.

GUILDENSTERN. Believe me, I cannot.

HAMLET. I do beseech you.

GUILDENSTERN. I know no touch of it, my lord.

HAMLET. 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages with your finger and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most excellent music. Look you, these are the stops.

GUILDENSTERN. But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony. I have not the skill.

HAMLET. Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be play'd on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.

The conquest of Rome by the European tribesmen was providential, because the Europeans, when they bent their knees to Christ, did not bend their knees to the Roman system. Why should they bend their knees to a system they had defeated? They bent their knees to a God whose heart was greater than the heart of Odin:

The Nordic religion was not a religion of dread, or of magic formularies to propitiate hostile powers. Instead of covering its temples with frescoes of the tortures of the damned, it taught people not to be afraid of death. Its ideal was the fellowship of the hero with the gods, not merely in feasting and victory, but in danger and defeat. For the gods, too, are in the hands of fate, and the Scandinavian vision of the twilight of the gods that was to end the world showed the heroes dying valiantly in the last hopeless fight against the forces of chaos—loyal and fearless to the last. It is an incomplete but not an ignoble religion. It contains those elements of character which it was the special mission of the Nordic peoples to add to modern civilization and to Christianity itself.

—*History of England* by G. M. Trevelyan

The central conflict throughout the Christian centuries of Europe has been between the churchmen, the intellectual Christians who wanted to turn the mystery religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen into a scientized philosophy, and the European people who loved much and wanted to hold on to the Christ of St. Paul and the Apostles. The conflict finally ended in favor of the churchmen when the preponderance of scientific facts, and the alliance of the churchmen with the liberal proponents of scientific facts, convinced the European people to give up on the Christ of the Gospels and St. Paul.

It seems too obvious to have to be stated, but that has been Satan's goal all along – to obscure the obvious Gospel truth that Christ comes to us through the heart, in order to make us believe that we cannot know God unless we find the right 'system.' The great system never comes – it is always in the future, a future that can only be realized if we repudiate the past where Christ dwells with our people. In the meantime, we still need a religion. That is where the liberals step in. They kept debunking the Christ story because it was a mystery that defied science and reason, while they handed mankind a new mystery religion that was just as irrational and unscientific as the religion they rejected.

The centerpiece of the liberals' new religion is the noble black savage. Feminism, legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, transgenderism and every other evil under the sun are part of the liberals' mystery religion, but the various parts of their religion are held together by the worship of the sacred negro. Just as Christ is the cornerstone of the Christian faith, so is the negro the cornerstone of the liberals' faith. While the churchmen have taken great pains to divest Christianity of its mysterious, irrational elements, thus destroying the faith, they have also taken great pains to embrace the mystery of liberalism, which is the mystery of the noble black savage. How can men who do what blacks do – rape, murder, and pillage – be sacred entities? And how can we, mortal men who must die, expect to be saved from death by the worship of the noble black savage? "Ah, that is the great mystery of our faith," the liberals tell us in rapturous ecstasy. But must we submit to the liberals' mystery religion?

If a man believes that this world is all there is, he will embrace the liberals' new mystery religion, because it is the religion of the powers that be. And if a man wants to have success in this world and keep open a possibility of some position in the next world, which may or may not exist, he will embrace organized Christian Jewry, which combines the worship of the negro with a cookie-cutter Christianity. But what if a man loves and hates with the same passion as the ancient Europeans, the men who left Odin for Christ? Such a man will not bend his knee to the liberals' mystic negro, nor will he compromise with the Christian philosophers. He will have all or nothing: he will have the Christ story with all its mystery, all its tragedy, and all its triumph.

"Why should you not explain the mystery of God in logical, rational terms? Are you afraid that your faith cannot stand up to reason?" Such is the refrain of the great rationalists throughout the Christian centuries of Europe – the Shaws, the Russells, and the Voltaires. And the theologians have taken the bait. They approached God with slide-rules and dissecting kits in order to pluck out His mystery. Is that how we know the living God? Christ called a little child unto him and said, "Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven." It is the poetic of our people to which we must cling, their childlike trust in His promise that we need not fear the world because He has overcome the world. Christ did not try to explain the tragedy of life away, instead He drew us to His sacred heart so that we would be able to see our redemption in His sacrifice on the cross. The antique Europeans understood the mystery of Christ crucified, Christ risen, because they, like unto a child, understood the Christ story with their hearts rather than with their rational, empirical minds.

We cannot approach God in the spirit of internet trolls and expect to see the Kingdom of Heaven. There is more wisdom in Robert Louis Stevenson's *A Child's Garden of Verses* than in all the theological tomes ever written. Why? Because there is a reverence for the mystery of a Christian hearth fire in those poems of Stevenson's childhood. Without that reverence, we will surely die out as a people, and we will not, as individuals, have any contact with the living God. The mark of a man is not that he kneels to no-one. The mark of a man is determined by whom he kneels to. Our people once knelt in "humble

adoration” to Christ. If that seems foolish to the philosophical trolls and is a stumbling block to the Jews and the neo-pagans, then so be it. We will cleave unto Him, because the mystery of His loving charity is the mystery that speaks to our hearts:

THE UNSEEN PLAYMATE

When children are playing alone on the green,
In comes the playmate that never was seen.
When children are happy and lonely and good,
The Friend of the Children comes out of the wood.

Nobody heard him and nobody saw,
His is a picture you never could draw,
But he’s sure to be present, abroad or at home,
When children are happy and playing alone.

He lies in the laurels, he runs on the grass,
He sings when you tinkle the musical glass;
Whene’er you are happy and cannot tell why,
The Friend of the Children is sure to be by!

He loves to be little, he hates to be big,
‘Tis he that inhabits the caves that you dig;
‘Tis he when you play with your soldiers of tin
That sides with the Frenchmen and never can win.

‘Tis he, when at night you go off to your bed,
Bids you go to your sleep and not trouble your head;
For wherever they’re lying, in cupboard or shelf,
‘Tis he will take care of your playthings himself. +

(1) If the Christian rationalists would leave the stage and let Christ’s Gospel stand alone against the liberals’ mystery religion, Christ would triumph once again. It is our duty to see that the Christian rationalists cease their intellectual warbling and listen to the forgotten voice of the ancient European people who understood the mystery of Christ crucified, Christ risen, because they saw life “feelingly.”

The Return to Damascus - March 2, 2019

And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. – Acts 9: 3-5

It is painfully obvious from a Christian perspective that the liberals have triumphed over the Christian Europeans. The Christian channel of grace, the familial and racial hearth fire, has been dammed up so that liberalism can live into perpetuity, and Christian Europe will remain a dead letter. And liberalism, a religion that adheres to the doctrine that whites are evil and the colored heathens are godlike, will remain the religion of the European people until what is Christian is no longer synonymous with the doctrines emanating from the organized Christian churches. -CWN

The French Jacobins and the American constitutionalists (Jefferson, Franklin, and Madison were not Christians) were determined to live by a faith that was not dependent on the Christian’s God. The American experiment in atheism was not as sudden and drastic as the French Revolution, but it eventually became like unto the French Revolution in the 1860s when the Jacobin government of the North waged a merciless war against the Christian South. But it was not till the early part of the 20th century after World War I that the white intelligentsia of the European nations completely cut their ties to the Son of God. It became impossible in the aftermath of World War I for the intelligent European that Dostoyevsky spoke of to believe in the divinity of Christ and the mercy of God. That feeling of God-forsakenness was the mark of the ‘intelligent’ European after World War I and continued to be the mark of the European intellectuals through World War II.

During the period between the wars, the existentialists took center stage. ‘Existence precedes essence’ was their mantra, and under that banner they proclaimed the death of God. But men cannot live without a religion. The pure atheism of men such as Sartre, Becket, and Camus gave way to the worship of the noble black savage and other savages of color. But it was the existentialists, who claimed that reality was their *raison d’être*, who paved the way for negro worship, feminism, and

all the other satanic –isms, because if the pure horror of existence makes the existence of a loving God impossible, then men are free to pursue other gods. And the European people have done just that – they have pursued the gods of liberalism.

There were Christian responses to the existentialists, but the problem with the responses was that they were based on the false assumption that God could be handed to mankind in the form of a computer printout: “Here, this will explain the ways of God to men.” The Christian apologists were like the ape who disguised a donkey as Aslan in C. S. Lewis’s book *The Last Battle*. When the donkey was unmasked, the dwarves did not turn to the real Aslan, they rejected Him as well – they were not going to be fooled again. The churchmen went into battle with false theories about the essence of God, and the end result of their theorizing was the destruction of the people’s faith in the real Christ, the Christ whose existence precedes and transcends all the essences the human mind ever conceived of. The existentialists only defeated a caricature of Christianity, they did not defeat the living God.

The Christ of the Gospels, the Christ whom the European people loved before they became too ‘intelligent’ to love a fairy tale God, was not brought into the lists against the existentialists. The remote computer printout God was considered sufficient. But we need our exiled Savior. “Will He no come back again?” No, He will not come back again so long as the mind-forged Christ, the false Aslan of the theologians, remains in the organized churches. That Christ is compatible with negro worship, feminism, and the hatred of the European people’s vision of the living God. We can’t have two Christs. If the Christ of old Europe is not the living God, then we are of all men most to be pitied, because the Christ of modernity is not the God who saves.

In Shakespeare’s *Measure for Measure*, the cynical, superficial Lucio tells the Duke, who is in disguise, that he knows the Duke and loves him. Yet he has nothing but bad things to say about him.

LUCIO. Sir, I was an inward of his. A shy fellow was the Duke; and I believe I know the cause of his withdrawing.

DUKE. What, I prithee, might be the cause?

LUCIO. No, pardon; ’tis a secret must be lock’d within the teeth and the lips. But this I can let you understand, the greater file of the subject held the Duke to be wise.

DUKE. Wise? Why, no question but he was.

LUCIO. A very superficial, ignorant, unweighing fellow.

DUKE. Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking. The very stream of his life, and the business he hath helmed, must, upon a warranted need, give him a better proclamation. Let him be but testimonied in his own bringings-forth, and he shall appear to the envious a scholar, a statesman, and a soldier. Therefore you speak unskilfully; or, if your knowledge be more, it is much dark’ned in your malice.

LUCIO. Sir, I know him, and I love him.

DUKE. Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

The whole history of the European people and their break with the living God is contained in that exchange. Christ did not come to us in power and might so that we could know with rational certainty that He was the Son of God. If He just wanted our minds He would have come down off the cross when the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders mocked Him: “If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.”

Christ wants our hearts. David and Mary Magdalene found favor with God. Why? Certainly not because they were great sinners. They found favor with the Lord because they had hearts that loved much. They had the knowledge of God that stems from the love of God. Loving knowledge binds us to Him while mere catechism knowledge creates a gulf between us and Him. The miracle of our people, when they were a people, was that they followed the path of loving knowledge and forsook the path of intellectual knowledge divorced from the heart which loves. The loving heart knows the beloved: the scientized intellect knows nothing. The cold obituary in the newspaper that describes the mother, father, or spouse you loved hardly describes the loved one. It is you who loved them that really knew them. The church of Christ consists of those men and women who love Christ as St. John and St. Paul loved Him.

Why did St. Paul bid us circumcise our hearts instead of opening up our minds? He wanted us to see the Christ he encountered on the road to Damascus, the Christ who enters human hearts. That is the Christ the liberals flee from like the devils in the Gospel who begged our Lord to let them enter the swine. And that is the Christ whom the churchmen have replaced with their computer printout God, who rubber-stamps the sacred decrees of liberalism. It’s not possible for a loving heart connected to Christ’s sacred heart to accept the fusion of liberalism and Christianity, while condemning the

antique Europeans as unChristian because they loved their own people. “The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose,” and he can cite church documents and use theology for his own purpose. If that is so, how does the European Everyman separate truth from falsehood? It is impossible unless we go through the narrow gate that the liberals and the churchmen have barricaded and placed sentinels in front of to stop anyone from attempting to break through the barricade. But we must break through. The heart that truly loves will not be satisfied to live outside of his racial hearth fire where there is no mercy, no love, and no Savior.

In the short story “The Man Who Saw Through Heaven,” Willbur Daniel Steele depicted an evangelical minister who lost his faith when he went to an observatory and stared at the heavens through the instruments provided to him by scientists. He had a road to Damascus experience in reverse. He replaced Christ with nature and nature’s gods. His road to Damascus story in reverse has been the story of the 20th and 21st century Europeans. They think they have seen the living God in science, which will save them from the existentialists’ vision of nothingness. But what if the prophets, the apostles, and the antique Europeans were the true existentialists? What if the fairy tale is true? Just because our scientized brains tell us that Christ be not risen does that mean that darkness is right? There is a subterranean current of our lives, if we do not let go of the vision of our heart, that draws us to the Christ story in its entirety. Like Posthumus in Shakespeare’s *Cymbeline*, who sees the heavenly vision with his heart: “The action of my life is like it, which I’ll keep, if but for sympathy,” and St. Paul, who sees Christ darkly through a heart circumscribed by the love of Christ, the European can see the living God if he leaves the road that leads away from Damascus and returns to the road to Damascus where he will encounter, once again, the living God whom St. Paul and the antique Europeans knew and loved.

I rejected the modern world in my mid-twenties when I came to believe in the Christ of old Europe. As the shadows of modernity lengthened and engulfed all of what was once Christendom, I became conscious of the fact that I was a man in exile. There was nothing left of my people and their faith. And the most striking contrast between my people, the antique Europeans, and the modern Europeans, was the complete absence of the prophetic fire in the modern Europeans. The prophets who told us of the coming of the Lord had passionate hearts that enabled them to hold on to their faith in the living God despite the opposition of the Jezebels and the Ahabs. What happened to that passionate, prophetic fire? Was it no longer necessary once Christ took flesh and dwelt among us? That cannot be true. It is the prophetic fire, the passion for a connection to the living God, that enables the Christian to pass on the faith from one faithful heart to another. We can’t become lukewarm exponents of a Socratic Christ without losing our faith in the passionate Shepherd who died on the cross for our sins. In all the fairy tales that come from the heart of old Europe, a rescue comes at the last moment – “When hope seems nearly gone, God’s relief to us will surely come.” But does real life, our existential life here on this earth, really work that way? Where is God’s relief to us? The relief has come and is with us now, even unto the ending of the world, but we cannot avail ourselves of that relief unless we possess the prophetic fire that sustained Elijah in the desert and our people throughout all the Christian centuries when they strove so mightily to maintain the prophetic fire. I love them now and always – they are my people and they have borne witness to our Jesus, the God of our ascending race. +

The Mysterious Stranger - February 23, 2019

Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.
– I Corinthians 13:8-10

I can live no longer by thinking. – Orlando, *As You Like It*

Prior to the advent of Ray Harryhausen, the greatest special effects creator of all time, monsters in movies were usually just photographically enlarged lizards. Harryhausen gave a reality to film monsters that was truly amazing. I still vividly remember the monsters that he created for the movie *The 7th Voyage of Sinbad*, which I saw in my childhood. I saw the movie in an enormous movie theater, the type of theater that no longer exists, armed only with a \$.25 box of popcorn which was big enough to last through two showings of the movie.

Toward the end of the movie a Cyclops has a battle to the death with a dragon. My sympathies were entirely with the Cyclops. But in the end the dragon kills the Cyclops. If it had been Sinbad that killed the Cyclops I wouldn’t have minded, because Sinbad was the hero, he was one of my own, he was human. My sympathy with the Cyclops stemmed from the fact that the Cyclops, through the brilliance of Harryhausen’s animation, seemed to have more human traits than the reptilian dragon. I also rooted for King Kong over the Tyrannosaurus Rex in the original King Kong movie for the same reason. Now, what is the point of such nostalgic meanderings? When I see Trump battling with Ann Coulter, Nancy Pelosi, and the rest of the reptilian lizards of Liberalism, my sympathies are with Trump, because at least he has some humanity. He is

not one of my own, he is not an antique European, but he has not, like the Coulter of Liberalism, completely left his humanity behind.

Why do I say that Trump has some humanity? There are two reasons. The first reason is that Trump, unlike the two Bushmen and Reagan, has actually tried to appoint pro-life judges. The second reason is that Trump, unlike the two Bushmen and Reagan, has actually tried to include white people in the American dream. Trump will fail in both instances just as Sisyphus failed to get the rock up the hill, but there is a certain nobility, at least in my judgement, in his efforts.

Those who claim Trump has betrayed them on the immigration issue have never listened to any of Trump's speeches. He has never, even though the liberals call him a white supremacist, been a believer in a white America. He believes in real diversity, that white, black, brown, red, and yellow can and should live together in the great American melting pot. The liberals hate Trump because their diversity is an Orwellian diversity: "Everyone is equal, but some are more equal than others." Trump's Americanism is completely against reality, because a diverse people are not a people, but he has not suddenly betrayed his ideals now that he is President; he is being true to his Americanist beliefs.

As for the wall, it might, if built, save some white lives, so it will not be a total waste, but the wall issue is not really the central issue. We need to evict every single non-white and every single liberal from our nation, because the colored tribesmen and the liberals are committed to the destruction of the white race. The wall is the band aid on a wound that needs to be cauterized, which I spoke of a few weeks ago, it is not the solution to the problem of white genocide.

The reason that Trump has earned the ire of the reptilian Republicans such as Ann Coulter and of the reptilian Democrats is because he is not a fully initiated reptilian himself. Mark him well, you will not see his like again in any elected office in any white nation. The liberals will not permit even one particle of valiant dust in the satanic mills of democracy. If that is the case then wither does the white man go, what is his recourse if the satanic mills reject him?

Turn and fight — that is the white man's only recourse. If the liberals tremble before a man who has only a small modicum of valiant dust, what would they do if they had to face an army of integral Europeans with valiant blood? They would crumble before such an army. But valiant blood, the valiant blood necessary to defeat the liberals, cannot be purchased on the cheap in the markets of democracy and organized Christian Jewry. Valiant blood comes from within; people who look without, to manmade intellectual systems, will always be defeated by those who have a blood faith. The liberals cling to the colored heathens in order to fuse their Gnostic hatred of all things white and Christian with a blood faith grounded in the hatred of all things white and Christian. The two entities, the liberals and the colored heathens, constitute the incarnation of Satan in the midst of what was once Christendom.

The intellectual systems that have destroyed the European people come from the two sources that St. Paul makes reference to in I Corinthians 1: 22-23: "For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness." Our Lord is crucified anew whenever an intellectual system based on Caiaphas's kangaroo court and on Socrates dialectic is substituted for a heart-to-heart connection to Him. The organized churches have fused the two strands together, the Greek element and the Judaic element, to form a bulwark against Christ. The democratic systems of the European nations are the secular counterparts of the anti-Christian systems of the churches. Thus the secular entity, the Jacobin system, has fused with the Church systems in order to ensure that Satan shall reign in church and state.

Ivan Karamazov claimed he did not reject God so much as he rejected God's world. But isn't that tantamount to rejecting God? Let us take a look at heaven, prior to our Lord's incarnation. And let us suppose our Lord has gathered a team of experts from earth, five PhDs, to advise Him on the best way to reach out to mankind.

Christ: I've decided to reveal myself to mankind.

PhD#1: That is good, but you must be careful to market yourself so that you appear in the best possible light.

Christ: I've decided to enter the womb of a virgin, be born in a stable, and live an obscure life as the son of a carpenter. Then I intend, when I reach manhood, to heal the sick, cure the lame, heal the blind, and raise some poor souls from the dead.

PhD#2: I don't think the virgin birth stuff is a good idea — the people aren't going to buy that. The healing the sick, curing the lame, and making the blind see is okay, but you'll need some reliable witnesses, preferably men of science, to attest to the cures. As for the raising of the dead, that is ridiculous. I wouldn't try it.

PhDs#3, 4, and 5: (in chorus) Yes, we wouldn't try it.

Christ: Then I intend to allow the Jews to condemn me to death and the Romans to crucify me. Afterwards, I shall rise again from the dead on the third day, appear to my followers in the flesh, and return to my Father in heaven while leaving the Holy Ghost here on earth to comfort my people.

(The five PhDs look at each other and at Christ with worried looks on their faces. Finally PhD #4 speaks up.)

PhD#4: I think you should go with a less fantastical plan of reaching out to mankind. I suggest you leave things in our hands. We have some great think tanks on earth that can come up with a great organizational plan for your entry down there on earth. Leave things in our hands, and we'll clean up your act in order to make it more practical and appealing to mankind. After all, we've had a lot of organizational experience and you haven't had any experience.

PhDs#1, 2, 3, and 5: Yes, PhD #4 is right, just leave it to us. We'll come up with the right plan to suit your needs and ours.

PhD#1: Where did He go?

PhD#2: I don't know, He just suddenly disappeared.

PhD#3: Well, He isn't going to get very far as a God if He won't talk to people.

PhD#4: I tried to talk with Him, but I don't think He listened to me.

PhD#5: What will we do if He proceeds with His own crazy plan?

PhD#1: We'll just have to work like hell to redirect Him. We'll have to turn His plan into something more acceptable to the human mind.

PhD#2: Gosh, He's a pain in the you-know-what.

PhD#3: (looking at PhD#1) You mentioned hell – maybe it's time to start working with that other guy.

PhD#4: Well, he is certainly easier to work with, and he is also much smarter than Christ.

PhD#5: If he is willing, let's go with him.

PhDs#1, 2, 3, 4 and 5: Agreed.

Christ decided to enter history by way of the human heart. And He prepared us for His entry by constantly urging His people, through the prophets, to turn from the worship of Baal, which is the worship of the sensual material world, and look to a personal God who is more than the sum total of the divergent parts of the natural world. But the Caiaphases of Jewry and the Greeks who reject the foolishness of the Incarnation hold to the religion of Baal, because if God can be contained within the confines of their systems, which consist only of what can be analyzed, dissected, and catalogued by the human mind, then they control God; in fact they become greater than God, because their minds tell us who and what God is. The pride of intellect is the original sin, and Satan can frame that sin in the form of virtue. The virtuous churchmen of Europe are proud of their knowledge of God, but that pride kills love, and faith can only be engendered by love. The darkness deepens — Lord with me abide.

There is no point in writing with the hope of enkindling some remnant spark of humanity in the European people if the European people are irredeemable. And it does seem like the systems analysis people have triumphed. Conservative and liberal are all of one mind on the subject of God: he or she or it is the sum total of their mind-forged vision of the natural world. Anyone who tries to inject an element of pietas into church politics or state politics is met with the intellectual sneer and more often than not public censure in the form of economic disenfranchisement, imprisonment, and sometimes execution, all in the name of virtue, because white pietas is not part of the religion of the modern liberals. So why bother?

I look to Edmund Burke, who felt compelled, despite what seemed to be the impossibility of putting a dent in the armor of the Jacobins, to stay true to something inside of him that urged him to fight on. And Anthony Jacob picked up where Burke left off. He took up the defense of the European people and their God in spite of the intellectual sneer and the condemnation of the intellectuals in church and state. It all seems hopeless, but that is what Satan wants. There is a world of pure delight that is more, much more, than the sum parts of the natural world, and the way to that world is through the love of our own in and through that mysterious stranger who is Christ the Lord. +

Thus Is Mercy Crucified - February 16, 2019

I hate him for he is a Christian. – Shylock

But mercy is above the scepter'd sway,
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings;
It is an attribute to God himself;
And earthy power doth then show likest God's
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore Jew,
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,
That in the course of justice, none of us
Should see salvation. We do pray for mercy,
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render
The deeds of mercy. – Portia

Tucker Carlson seems to be the only man with a soul left in the mainstream media. He covers stories that the other soulless men and women of the media will not touch. I recently saw the video clip from his news show of the arrest of the 66-year old Roger Stone. As you know, Roger Stone was found guilty of the heinous crime called “lying to Congress.” The FBI descended on the arch villain with enough men and heavy artillery to launch an invasion of Mexico and clean out the drug lords. But that type of invasion would be racist and imperialistic, not to mention risky, because the drug lords might shoot back. Far better to invade Roger Stone’s home and arrest him for a non-crime. (1)

Humpty Dumpty said that whenever he used a word it meant whatever he wanted it to mean. So it is with the Humpty Dumpty liberals; whenever they make a law, it means whatever they want it to mean. Thus, the liberal law called “lying to Congress” really means, “We don’t like your politics, so we are going to send our goon squad to get you.” As the FBI attacked the arch traitor and fiend who lied to Congress, you could hear a minstrel’s voice in the background singing,

“Send in the goons,
Where are the goons?
Don’t bother, they’re here.”

So it shall be for all of us, when we run afoul of the maniacal Humpty Dumpties of Liberalism. Ask not for whom the goon squad comes, it comes for thee.

The utopian ideal of our constitutional government was based on what Andrew Lytle called a “cynical balancing of powers.” Our government was composed of a legislature, which was supposed to be the most powerful branch of government, followed by the executive branch, and then the judiciary, which was meant to be the least powerful branch of the government. In practice the judiciary became the most powerful branch of government with the executive branch and the legislative branch vying for second place. When the executive branch is in line with the liberal elite of the nation, the executive branch is more influential than Congress. Such was the case during Obama’s presidency. When the executive branch is not totally in lock step with the liberal elite, Congress becomes more powerful than the President. This is why Trump lost the battle for the Wall: Congress had the real rulers of the nation, the liberal elite, on their side. Nothing is ever done in a Jacobin state that goes against the anti-Christian principles of Jacobin liberalism. Elections are meaningless in Jacobin nations; they are held in the name of a mythical ‘people’ in order to serve the cause of Christ-hating liberalism. (2)

It is easy to get side tracked and blame everything on the Jewish financiers such as Soros, but the Jewish financiers, the Shylocks, have always been a thorn in the side of the European people. We must ask ourselves why the thorn in our side was allowed to become a deadly infection. We need go no further than Shakespeare for the answer to that question. Shylock was not allowed to triumph over Antonio, because the Christians would not allow him to work his will upon them. They bent his Jewish law, the law of hatred for Christ and His people, to their law, which was the law of mercy. *The Merchant of Venice* is verboten nowadays, but even in the 1960’s when the play was still read and performed, Shylock’s soliloquy on the universality of hatred was used as a justification for the equality of all people and all faiths.

I am a Jew. Hath not a Jew eyes? Hath not a Jew hands, organs, dimensions, senses, affections, passions, fed with the same food, hurt with the same weapons, subject to the same diseases, healed by the same means, warmed and cooled by the same winter and summer, as a Christian is? If you prick us, do we not bleed? If you tickle us, do we not laugh? If you poison us, do we not die? And if you wrong us, shall we not revenge? If we are like you in the rest, we will resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a Christian, what is his humility? Revenge. If a Christian wrong a Jew, what should his sufferance be by Christian example? Why, revenge. The villainy you teach me, I will execute, and it shall go hard but I will better the instruction.

So Shylock demands his pound of flesh. And let us note that he refuses thrice the money. There is something Shylock wants more than money. Even Jewish financiers have a faith; we cannot just ‘follow the money trail’ in order to discover the hidden conspiracies that supposedly govern our lives.

“You two green-horns! Money, you think, is the sole motive to pains and hazard, deception and deviltry, in this world. How much money did the devil make by gulling Eve?” – *The Confidence Man*

Faith governs our lives. Shylock’s hate-based faith is more important to him than his gold. He can’t crucify Christ anew, so he strikes back at Him by attacking His people. Thus Antonio must bare his breast and prepare himself for sacrifice on the altar of the Jewish financiers. But he is spared, at the last trump, because Christ, through His people, intervenes, and mercy triumphs over sacrifice. The European people are now at the mercy of the Jewish financiers because they have no Christian mediator to step in and stop the bloody sacrifice. If there are no Christian conduits for Christ, the Shylocks of Liberaldom will triumph. And they must not triumph, because our faith, based on mercy not sacrifice, must be the law of our people. The essential point that is always missed when the purveyors of the ‘equality of faiths’ read *The Merchant of Venice* is the Duke’s response to Shylock after Shylock has been found guilty of attempted murder:

That thou shalt see the difference of our spirit,
I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it.

Yes! There is a difference between the spirit of a Christian European and an unrepentant Jew, just as there is a difference between the spirit of a pagan and a Christian. We do not have a Judeo-Greco-Roman-Christian heritage, we have only one heritage, the heritage of men and women who loved Christ. There is no mercy outside of Christ’s love. The neo-pagan and the Jew are fraternal twins at odds with each other. They are competing for the same turf – a merciless world run by their brains, which are fueled by hearts that hate the living God.

The Shylocks of ancient Jewry saw what they viewed as the heretical cult of Jesus of Nazareth become the religion of the European world. Now, in this the 21st century, the wheel has come full circle. The Christians are in the minority again because the gentiles have become Shylockian Jews. There is no need to spend a fruitless search for the true biological Jew. Look to our people’s history instead. During the French Revolution the Jewish financiers joined with the French Jacobins, the lapsed Catholics, to destroy Christian France. When you are attacked by ten thousand tigers you don’t try to distinguish between the Bengal tigers and the Siberian tigers, you simply try to defend yourself against their ferocious onslaught. The gentiles have become spiritual Jews, they have rejected Christ. It makes no difference whether it is a biological Jew or a liberal gentile who takes the pound of flesh nearest the heart of the Christian, the Christian is still just as dead.

Only when we have established that it is the unrepentant Jews (not the Jessicas who have become Christians) and the post-Christian liberals and neo-pagans who have become like unto the Jews, who want to destroy the white Christ-bearing race, can we launch a successful Christian counterattack against Satan and his minions. If we ally with one branch of liberalism in order to attack another branch of liberalism, we will dilute our faith, which is grounded in the love of the God-Man. But if our faith is not diluted, we will have the strength and courage to fight to the death. How can anything of lasting value be accomplished if we make common cause with those who hate Him?

Roger Stone is being persecuted because he is connected to Trump, and Trump is being persecuted because he is tangentially connected to Christian Europe. There must be only one hundred percent, pure, unadulterated liberalism in the nations of Europe. That is what the liberals seek. All those who want even a modicum of old Europe will be destroyed. Never make the mistake of believing that the enemies of Christian Europe do not mean what they say. Louis XVI didn’t believe the Jacobins meant what they said, Nicholas II did not believe the communists meant what they said, and the white grazers do not believe the liberals mean what they say when they talk about the elimination of all white people and their God. But they do mean what they say. The hatred of the whites because of their Christian past is the liberals’ faith, and they are systematically and maniacally acting on that faith.

When I was growing up I read Bullfinch’s work on Greek mythology, and I always felt sorry for Ajax, who, unlike Achilles, Hector, and Odysseus, did not have a god to back him. He stood alone, and he fought and died alone. In that context, the context of a world in which the gods had no ethical compass, Ajax was the most heroic warrior of them all. But how should we feel about a people who refuse to fight for a God with an ethical compass that passeth the understanding of mortal men’s minds, a God who took flesh, dwelt among us, was crucified for our sins, and then rose from the dead on the third day? Should we flee from that God and seek to blend our faith in Him with the unrepentant Jew, claiming that the Jews do not have to convert because they are the chosen ones of God, regardless of their rejection of Christ? Or should we go on ‘ecumenical jihads’ and make common cause with Moslems and Jews? Or worse yet, should we make the negro our

primary god and place Christ below the negro in our pantheon of gods? Small wonder that the liberals, who do not dilute their satanic faith, have defeated the white Europeans.

The reason we must go into the future holding on to the strings of our Christian European past is because the antique Europeans knew that love must not be diluted, it must not be an abstract concept or a fuzzy impersonal commitment to a generic people and a generic God. Love must be personal and devotional, we must love our Jesus and we must love our kith and kin in and through our Jesus. The liberals do not dilute their hatred, it is one and indivisible. We must respond to the liberals' hatred with an undiluted love of the God-Man and His people. Without the love that once was there we will surely fail, but with that love we will be more than a match for the liberals. +

(1) The police and the military units of the European nations exist to serve the State. And the various liberal states throughout Europe and her satellites, such as the United States and Canada, have one goal: to destroy the European people. Despite that rather obvious fact, white grazers persist in viewing their local police and military as 'their' troops and 'their' police. They are no such thing. They are hired goons, who delight in preying on defenseless whites, whether they are proliferers, yellow vests, anti-immigration protestors, or Republicans who "lied to Congress." The French goons who assaulted the retired Foreign Legion officer for daring to participate in an anti-immigration protest are the prototype for all the goon squads of the liberal states. They have no God, no honor, and no nation. They serve the Shylockian, 'pound of flesh' states of Liberalism.

(2) Why, if the people rule, was the colorization of the European states never put to a vote? The 'people' only exist when the liberals want to invoke them in order to justify their bloodletting.

The Miracle of Christian Europe - February 9, 2019

They say miracles are past; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern and familiar, things supernatural and causeless. Hence is it that we make trifles of terrors, ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge, when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear. – Shakespeare

My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before him innocency was found in me; and also before thee, O king, have I done no hurt. – Daniel 6: 22

A friend recently related to me that his son had taken a course in theater during his time at the local university. Toward the end of the course, which covered only contemporary black and feminist playwrights, my friend's son began to suspect that the Ph.D. teaching the course had never even read Shakespeare. When he asked her about Shakespeare, she replied, "He was some white male who wrote long, boring plays many years ago." Now, you might applaud that sentiment because you have never cared for Shakespeare yourself, or you might consider it of no consequence that Shakespeare has disappeared from college curriculums, but Shakespeare has always been regarded as one of the greatest poets of the European people. He was, in the words of Ben Jonson, "Not for an age, but for all time." Jonson was right, but of course Jonson was speaking of the continuum of European history. When he said that Shakespeare was "for all time," he meant so long as the European people remained true to their God and their race. Once they have forsaken their God and their race, the continuum of European history will be over; the European people, as a people, will no longer exist. I would submit that that doleful tragedy has already occurred. The Europeans are no longer a people. All the blather about restoring America, Britain, France, or any other European nation by electing an anti-immigration candidate and/or a prolife candidate is empty rhetoric. Advocates of such policies are deaf, blind, and dumb. You can't treat a serious wound with a band aid, you must cauterize the wound before you can restore the body to health. The European people have passed the point of first-aid, they need major surgery, the surgery of the divine physician, in order to escape their death-in-life existence.

I remember reading a neo-pagan's blog post a few years back in which he mocked the notion that "gentle Jesus" was the only one who could stop white genocide. The intellectual sneer is a very effective weapon, particularly in an age in which men have been debased by the pride of science. But the neo-pagan was not and is not alone in his intellectual contempt for Christ. The liberals and the churchmen are one in spirit with the neo-pagan, differing only from him in their style of mockery. They don't attack Christ directly, they attack Him indirectly by mocking His people. The liberals mock and condemn the 'racists' of Christian Europe, and the churchmen join them in their mockery and condemnation. So gentle Jesus goes into the dustbin of history, and we are left with the neo-pagans' brains, the liberals' noble black savage, and the churchmen's blueprint for a new Christianity that will give us a purer, nobler Christ than the one whom the antique Europeans worshipped.

If our Jesus, the gentle Jesus of Handel, Shakespeare, Rembrandt, Dickens, Scott, and the European people from whom those artists came, is not God, then we should drink the liberals' hemlock, because we have no reason to live. And I would

submit that the European people have come to that conclusion; they are drinking the hemlock of racial oblivion because they have been defeated by the intellectual sneer; they do not believe in the gentle Jesus of the antique Europeans.

Our thoughts, for good or evil, spring from our heart. The French Revolution sprang from hearts that hated the Christ of the European people. The culture that was supplanted by the Jacobins sprang from hearts that loved Christ. There is a great deal of anger toward God in all of us because our lives are full of suffering of a physical and spiritual nature – sickness, decay, and death in the physical realm and unrequited love and loneliness in the spiritual realm – the slings and arrows of outrageous fortune of which Hamlet speaks. But the European people, when they were a people, overcame their anger and surrendered themselves to His love. That is not a little thing, it is all in all. The two cultures, one based on the hatred of God and the other based on the love of God, have always been the contending forces within the confines of Europe. For centuries the ‘love of Christ’ culture was the dominant culture, but now it is the ‘hatred of Christ’ culture that is the dominant culture. The ill effects of that culture are all around us, but those effects will not be removed until the European people’s hearts are stirred enough to overcome the civilization of the intellectual sneer.

The essence of modernity consists of making man self-sufficient by eliminating all mysteries. If what we can see in the material world is all that there is to see, then life is simple. Love is mere friction, honor is a meaningless word, and faith in gentle Jesus is sentimentality. Dostoyevsky’s *Underground Man* hurled his defiance at modernity when he told the liberals that “a man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key.” That defiant stance vis-à-vis the modern liberal world is no longer the mantra of the European. The people who stood in reverent awe before the mystery of God’s creation and His redemptive love now sit in a soulless stupor in front of television sets that proclaim the goodness of the sacred negro and the evil of whiteness. In this, the holiest month on the liberals’ calendar, we should reflect on the end of European history and the new history of Europe now that the break with the ‘love of the Christ’ culture is complete.

When the continuum of Christian Europe is broken, the classical liberal who still cherishes the fruits of Christ’s Europe but does not acknowledge Christ as the source of those fruits, is cut adrift from life by the new breed of liberals who hate all things white and Christian. Dostoyevsky describes the descent from classical liberalism to malicious, Christ-hating liberalism in his novel *The Possessed*. Stephen Verkhovensky, the classical liberal, denounces the new breed of liberals:

“And I declare,” Mr. Verkhovensky squeaked, throwing himself unreservedly into the fray, “that, to me, Shakespeare and Raphael are of greater value than the emancipation of the serfs, than nationalism, than socialism, than the younger generation, than chemistry—and perhaps even than mankind itself! And it is this way because they represent the very highest human achievement, an achievement of beauty without which I wouldn’t be able to go on living.

“Oh, Lord,” he cried, throwing up his hands, “ten years ago I was shouting the same thing from a platform in Petersburg, using almost exactly those same words and, like you now, the people there didn’t understand a thing; they snorted, laughed, and hissed. Ah, you poor, little people, there must be something missing in you if you can’t understand these things! Let me tell you that mankind could survive without the English, without the Germans, and most certainly without the Russians; that it could subsist without science and even without bread. But it is impossible to do without beauty because then there would be nothing left for us to do in the world! And that’s the whole mystery and the whole story! Science itself wouldn’t last a minute without beauty—do you realize that, you who are laughing now? It would turn into black ignorance and it wouldn’t be able to invent a nail for you. No, I won’t give in!” he concluded shrilly and incongruously, bringing his fist down violently on the table.

Stephen Verkhovensky is right, but he, like our modern classical liberals whom we call conservatives, does not go far enough. It is true that we cannot live without beauty. But true beauty is moral beauty; we cannot luxuriate in the fruits of the antique Europeans’ faith in Christ if we do not share their faith in the God-Man. I once read a music critic’s blurb describing a recording of Bach. The critic said that we need not share Bach’s faith in order to enjoy his music. Oh really? We must share Bach’s faith in order to enjoy the music, just as we must share the antique Europeans’ faith in order to share the fruits of the culture they bequeathed to us. The conservatives want to create a democratic culture that is not a haven for degenerate mad-dog liberals. But democratic cultures are cultures based on the hatred of Christ – they will always be a haven for mad-dog liberals and a ‘hell on earth’ for white Christians. What was good in the democratic cultures of the 1950s was not a result of the democratic way, it was a result of a lingering Christian ethos in a people who were in the process of letting go of their lifeline, which was and is the Suffering Servant whom the prophet Isaiah told us would come to us.

Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken.- Isaiah 53: 4-8

A friend asked me if I thought that white people would ever get sick of worshipping the negro. I told him that negro worship would remain the faith of the European people until they turned their hearts away from the democratic culture

grounded in the hatred of Christ and returned to the European culture grounded in the love of Christ. That seems like an impossibility at present. But I cling to the fairy tale response to impossible odds. David slew Goliath and routed the Philistines armed only with his faith in the living God. Once we, the remnant band, resist the temptation to make democratic alliances with heathens and decide to venture forth in the name of the Man of Sorrows, trusting only in Him, the tide will turn. Do I really believe such ‘nonsense’? Certainly not in the dark nights of the soul, but when the poetic fire is upon me, as it was upon all our people when they loved much, I do believe that His divine charity, and His divine charity alone, will enable us to conquer the liberals. Faith moves mountains and faith is engendered by love. God came to us through His divine humanity in order to set our hearts on fire. Anyone, be he clergyman, neo-pagan, or liberal who bids us mock “gentle Jesus” is our enemy. We have dwelt too long in the science lab and the philosopher’s classroom. It is time to look at life through the eyes of the antique Europeans who saw their one true love on The Cross. +

Depth Speaks to Depth - February 2, 2019

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. – John 3:16

Look to thy soul, O man, for none can be surety for his brother:
Behold, for heaven—or for hell,—thou canst not escape from Immortality.

-Martin Farquhar Tupper

Let us begin with John:

Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. –1 John 4: 2-3

John does not focus on a belief in a generic God; he wants to place the one true God before our eyes. And he emphasizes that the one true God is Jesus Christ, who came to us “in the flesh.” That belief, that Jesus Christ was true God and true man, became part of the collective soul of the European people. The true Gospel commentary is not the rationalized, scientized clap-trap called Biblical studies, it is the testimony of the European bards, who show us Christ interacting with His people. And His people believed as St. John and St. Paul believed, that Jesus Christ came to us in the flesh because He loved us. He was and is:

Prophet, priest, and king, the sacrifice, the substitute, the Savior,
Rapture of the blessed in the hunted one of earth, the pardoner in the victim:

George Bernard Shaw, the quintessential liberal whom the modern liberals either ignore or condemn, gave us the reason, in *Back to Methuselah*, for the European people’s loss of faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ. The reason was called ‘science.’ The rational, scientized mind cannot believe in the Word made flesh. That the spirit of God took flesh and dwelt among us is an anathema to the Jew, the Moslem, the philosopher, and the scientist. The philosophers and theologians in the church set the stage for the scientists, and then the scientists took command of the religious life of the European people. In the early 20th century, the Christian churches were on the defensive; they tried to show that Christianity and science were compatible, and by the end of the 20th century science had triumphed. The Word made flesh, our Lord and Savior, was turned into a Gnostic God who could be all things to all people. And that type of faith is of the anti-Christ whom the apostle warns us about.

Something vital is lost when we approach our God from a purely rational and scientific standpoint. Something vital is lost because depth speaks to depth. I majored in English literature in college because I liked English literature. That sounds like the logical thing to do, but it wasn’t. I discovered that the professors of literature had no understanding of the great authors. Why was that? It was because the professors did not approach the great poets with visionary hearts, they approached the European bards through the analytical minds of psychologists and philosophers. How can superficiality, which is what the science of psychology and the discipline of philosophy are, deal with depth? It can’t. The same process, the process of turning depth into superficiality, which took place in the study of literature, also took place in the religious sphere. The churchmen jettisoned the European people’s vision of the Word made flesh, which came from a heart to heart encounter with Christ, in favor of rationalized systems that were more in accord with science, which translates to superficiality. I once read a book by a “conservative” Catholic theologian that was advertised as an orthodox defense of the major tenets of the Christian faith. But when I came to the chapter on eternal life, I discovered that the author was not as advertised; he was not an orthodox Christian. He ridiculed the antiquated notion of the resurrection of the body and

posited, in place of that doctrine, a new scientized version of formless specks of spiritualized matter comingled with each other after their lives were ended here on earth. Why is such a doctrine more compatible with science than my belief and the antique Europeans' belief that we shall meet our loved ones in the flesh in His heavenly kingdom?

I look to recognize again, through the beautiful mask of their perfection,
The dear familiar faces I have somehow loved on earth.

But of course I am being unscientific, while the theologian who believes that our immortal souls become a pixie dust that is scattered throughout the cosmos is scientific. Unamuno was right when he referred to the resurrection of the dead: "All or nothing." Either science is wrong, and Christ is the Savior who gives us eternal life, or science is right and we return to the compost heap. There is no in-between, no quasi-resurrection of human particles. There can be no compromise with science; it is all or nothing.

Jesus Christ is the heart of God. He can only be found in the depths of hearts who love much. That was the triumph of the antique Europeans. The Europe they built was in response to His love: "We love Him because He first loved us." The Christian utopian, speaking from a diseased mind devoid of a heart for God, hurls anathemas at the antique Europeans for failing to build the kingdom of God on earth according to the dictates of his rationalism. The liberal hurls anathemas and condemnations at the antique Europeans because (we know the litany): "They were racist, sexist, etc." We cannot stay wedded to the superficiality of nature/science-based systems in church and state and still maintain a connection to the Word made flesh. The spiritual abortion of the antique Europeans from the womb of Europe has been performed in the name of a new nature/science-based faith that places the noble black savage at its unholy center. We can't compromise with the regicides who performed that abortion, whether they be Christian Jews, neo-pagans, or liberals — they all have the blood of our people and our Lord on their hands.

Shaw correctly identified the cause of the European people's loss of faith. But he, as a science-based man whose heroes were all scientists, did not think that the loss of Christ the Lord was a tragedy. He suggested that men should create a new religion that was more compatible with science. Therein lies the incredible superficiality of the Western intellectuals who have lost their connection to Jesus Christ. Can faith be created in a test tube? Is it that easy? Do you just pour in a few chemical ingredients and then say some psychological mumbo-jumbo over the ingredients, and then presto-change-o, you have a new religion! That is what Nietzsche and the modern neo-pagans think you can do. And that is what Shaw thought as well. Thus science doth make superficial, heartless idiots of us all, if we accept science as the truth and the way.

Neither Shaw nor Nietzsche nor any of the other members of the European intelligentsia who bid us turn away from Christ and look to science saw the final outcome of their apostasy. We now, in the scientific 21st century, can see the end result. If the European people refuse to worship the God-Man, they will worship the beast in man. Thus the liberals worship the negro, and the neo-pagans worship their genetically superior intellects. Is this the final end? Yes, it is if we deny that Jesus Christ came to us in the flesh. "Nearer, My God, to Thee," is a beautiful hymn, but "Nearer, My Genes, to Thee," and/or "Nearer, My Negro Gods, to Thee" are not beautiful hymns, they are blasphemous odes to a science-based faith that has no room for the Light of the world.

The French Jacobins replaced an older spirit-based government with a nature/science-based government. All the nations of Europe gradually adopted similar atheistic Jacobin governments under the guise of democracy. The human spirit cannot survive under such regimes. A Trump or an Orbán might inject a certain element of discord by using rhetoric from the Christian era of Europe, but such rhetoric will not change the fact that the devil has become the ruler of the democracies of the European people. The European people became a people because they joined their hearts to His heart — they cannot become a people again by blending intellectual Christianity with nature and nature's gods. Those gods and the people who worship them belong to Satan.

Superficiality is the linchpin that holds all of Liberalism together. There can be no depth in a liberal society because if men and women plunge to the depths of their hearts, they will discover an incredible longing there that cannot be filled by the modern —isms. All the nature/science-based systems have not been able to change the tragedy of life here on earth. The tragedy is that we, who feel immortal longings, must die. To perish in the nature-science compost heap? Or to die in this world and go unto eternal life in His Kingdom come? Life is unbearable without faith in His promise of eternal life. What are the alternative visions of the various branches of liberalism? The mad-dog liberals tell us we can be part of the kingdom of God on earth if we will worship the negro and support the movement to end global warming. The neo-pagans tell us we can create a kingdom of great minds that shall not survive their short term on earth. And the churchmen who want to blend Christ with nature and science make Christ subordinate to nature and science. He too becomes subject to extinction. Against the superficiality of modernity stands the antique Europeans who plunged to the depths with the sure and certain hope that He was there. Christ descended into hell and on the third day He rose from the dead. If we make His tragedy our tragedy He will make His triumph our triumph. We must turn from the dung-heap un-civilization of superficiality and embrace the people who believed that Christ is the grave where buried love doth live. +

Our Kindred Faith - January 26, 2019

Count, count your hopes, heirs of immortality and love;
And hear my kindred faith, and turn again to bless me.

— Martin Farquhar Tupper

Picture a liberal household on the eve of Martin Luther King Jr. Day. Two quality children, one girl, seven years old, one boy, five years old, and one liberal father and one liberal mother are in attendance.

Girl: Mother, why do we celebrate Martin Luther King Jr. Day tomorrow? Aren't we supposed to celebrate him every day of the year?

Mother: Yes, dear, we should keep Martin Luther King Jr. and the sacred blacks in our hearts 365 days of the year, but we need to have a special day to take time off and celebrate the wonderful goodness of Martin Luther King Jr. Do you understand that, dear?

Girl: Yes, mother.

Mother: Do you understand why we must always love Martin Luther King Jr. and the black race?

Girl: Yes, mother, like teacher says, we must love the blacks with our whole heart, mind, and soul so that we can share heaven on earth with them once the white males are eliminated from the face of the earth.

Mother: That is right.

Girl: But Mother?

Mother: Yes, dear?

Girl: Aren't Daddy and little Joey white males? Must they be destroyed?

Mother: Daddy has been trained not to be white and not to be a male. And little Joey will be trained not to be white and not to be a male. So it's quite possible that neither Daddy nor Joey will have to be destroyed. But don't get too loving Joey or Daddy too much, because they are white males, and white males are mostly evil, even when they have been retrained not to be white and male.

Girl: But Mommy (she starts to tear up), I really do love Joey and Daddy.

Mommy: You mustn't use terms like 'love' when speaking of white males. They can be tolerated when they behave properly, but you must never love them. Our love must be reserved for the black race. You cannot love black and white; that would be a betrayal of the black race, which we must love and revere. Now wipe your tears and light the candles on the Martin Luther King Jr. altar.

Girl: Will there be presents on the altar in the morning?

Mother (smiling): I wouldn't be surprised if there were many presents. Say your prayers to Martin Luther King Jr. tonight and see what happens tomorrow morning.

[The children go up to bed.]

Father: I'll start putting the presents on the altar.

Mother: Yes, you do that.

Father: Shall we attend the 9 o'clock service or the 11 o'clock?

Mother: The children will be up early – they’ll be so excited – so let’s attend the 9 o’clock service. And this time, don’t embarrass me by trying to sit with me in the front pew.

Father: I wasn’t trying to sit with you in the front pew. I know that white males must sit in the back of the church. But you forgot your pocketbook – I was just trying to give it to you. I intended to go right back to my assigned seat.

Mother: Just don’t let it happen again.

Father: Yes, dear. Do you have any final instructions?

Mother: No.

Father: Then I’ll say goodnight.

Mother: Not until you’ve said your prayers.

[The father kneels before the altar.]

Father: Yes, dear.

[Curtain]

The liberals worship the negro, that is obvious. Martin Luther King Jr. Day is much more important to them than Christmas. They will tolerate any and all attacks on Christ during the Christmas season, but they will brook no opposition to the deification of Martin Luther King Jr. or any of the sacred negroes on Martin Luther King Jr. Day – or on any other day of the year. If I were a learned academic, who published an article on the absurdity of the incarnation and birth of Christ, there would be no hostile comments from the liberals. In fact, I would be lauded for publishing a thoughtful scholarly work that demythologized the Christ story. But if I were to publish an article stating that Martin Luther King Jr. was a Marxist and a degenerate, Nelson Mandela was a vicious terrorist, and the black race was not to be worshipped, the liberals would have me destroyed. So we must ask ourselves in this special week that the liberals have set aside for religious festivals why the liberals worship the black race.

The movie *Rebel Without a Cause* was considered liberal in its day but is now condemned because it suggested that juvenile delinquency was caused by absentee fathers and fathers who yielded their authority to the female of the species. The liberals have moved on from such antiquated notions, but there is a line in that otherwise unremarkable movie that I want to highlight. When the hero, James Dean’s character, is about to play ‘chicken’ with his automobile against another boy’s automobile, Dean’s character asks his opponent, “Why are we doing this?” The other boy replies, “You got to do something.” The liberals no longer believe in Christ, but men and women must believe in something, so they have turned to the sacred negro. Do they love the sacred negro? No, they don’t; they worship him. What is the difference? A pagan does not love his gods, he propitiates them with sacrifices. That is the great difference between the Christian God and the pagan gods. Christ wants mercy, not sacrifice; He wants our love and He wants us to love our fellow men in and through Him. The post-Christian liberal worships as a pagan: he is incapable of a deep, heartfelt love because he has cut himself off from the font of love, but he can worship in the old pagan style, he can propitiate his gods through sacrifices. And whom does the liberal sacrifice to his heathen gods? He sacrifices other whites in the hope that his sacrifices will be acceptable to the sacred negroes, who will then allow him to be with them in the kingdom of heaven on earth.

There simply are not enough whites to fulfill the sacrificial needs of the negro gods, whose need for white blood seems to be insatiable. So the liberal must look for racism everywhere. If he can’t find it, he must invent it, in order to send more whites to the sacrificial altars of the negro gods. Already the liberals are turning on each other in order to keep the sacrificial altars supplied with fresh white blood.

God will judge the hearts of the various missionaries who tried to convert the black heathens. No doubt there were some who were sincere Christians, but at some point the attempt of white Christians to convert the colored heathens became a new religion opposed to Christianity. It was the whites who converted – they began to worship the negroes, giving them the reverence and adoration that was meant for Christ. Now the new religion has been institutionalized throughout the Western world. The liberal rulers, the Grand Inquisitors, will only permit state-sponsored churches to exist, churches that preach a blended Christianity that speaks of Christ the civil rights champion, but not of Christ the Savior.

In our modern democracies we have mock elections in which the outcome is already predetermined. Every candidate agrees to acquiesce to the extermination of the white race in the name of liberty, equality, and diversity. Trump, as off this stage we have shown, was a throwback to the 1950’s liberal, who wanted the whites to be part of the brave new world. The

liberals only permitted him to run because they were certain he would lose. Once he won, the liberals made sure that he was kept in check. There is absolutely no political discourse in our anti-nation. Our young people have nothing inside them but hatred for a God they never knew and for their own people whom they only see through the liberals' eyes. Their discourse consists of screaming obscenities at Trump and every white male who opposes any part of the liberal agenda, an agenda that has brought us hell on earth.

The great shift from Christianity to negro worship took place because of the failure of the Christian churches to preach Christ Crucified, Christ Risen, as St. Paul preached Christ Crucified, Christ Risen, with an inner certainty that Christ was who He said He was. When Christ became an abstract philosophical God, He was rejected, just as the abstract philosophies of the Greeks were rejected by the devotees of the mystery religions. The spiritual vacuum created by intellectual Christianity allowed Satan to enter the heart of Christendom and construct Satandom over the ruins of Christendom.

The new religion, the worship of the negro and the other gods of color, has revolutionized every aspect of European culture. The new culture can be seen in its most horrific aspect when we look at the cruel feminist matriarchy that has replaced the Christian patriarchal family structures of old Europe. The feminist movement sprang up from the civil rights movement. Liberal white women who spent all their time demonizing white males for their 'oppression' of blacks decided they too were oppressed by the evil white males. And if white males were evil, then the culture that white males built was evil. So it became necessary for white females to take charge of the construction of a brave new world devoid of white men and the white man's God. All the evils that stem from Lady Macbeth feminism – "Come you spirits, That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here, And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full Of direst cruelty" – such as legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and transgenderism, come from the initial break from the oppressive white 'racist' culture created by the unredeemable original sinners – white males. You can't go back to anything good and decent because any opposition to the perversions of liberalism is deemed racist. The churches will not champion the Christ of old Europe, because He was the God of racist white males. But they will support the savages of color and the horrific unsexed feminists because they are the chosen ones – they are not white racist males. So where does that leave the white Christian? Will he renounce his ancestors and step into a future in which he can only survive if he worships the noble black savage and consents to live according to the dictates of the feminist harpies? Or will he become like unto the hero in Thomas Nelson Page's story "The Goth"? Will he hew his way, sword in hand, through the legions of academics, feminists, and colored heathens and return to his racial hearth fire? It seems as if he has chosen the former course; he has chosen to worship the sacred negro and follow the dictates of the feminist Lady Macbeths. He has chosen to break the great bond of mercy, which connected him to his God and his European ancestors, and pursue instead the path of merciless sacrifice.

The bond must be renewed, or humanity as it once was will be no more. Only the demonized Europeans, who established a sympathetic tie to Christ the Savior, truly became human beings. Our Lord told us that we were not born to die, we are immortal, with personalities who belong to an immortal God. That is too great an inheritance to be sacrificed on the altars of negro worship and feminism:

Count, count your hopes, heirs of immortality and love;
And hear my kindred faith, and turn again to bless me.
For lo, my trust is strong to dwell in many worlds,
And cull of many brethren there, sweet knowledge ever new:
I yearn for realms where fancy shall be filled, and the ecstasies of freedom shall be felt,
And the soul reign gloriously, risen to its royal destinies:
I look to recognize again, through the beautiful mask of their perfection,
The dear familiar faces I have somewhere loved on earth:
I long to talk with grateful tongue of storms and perils past,
And praise the mighty Pilot that hath steered us through the rapids:
He shall be the focus of it all, the very heart of gladness,—
My soul is athirst for God, the God who dwelt in Man!
Prophet, priest, and king, the sacrifice, the substitute, the Saviour,
Rapture of the blessed in the hunted One of earth, the Pardoner in the victim;
How many centuries of joy concentrate in that theme;

Once the sympathetic bond is renewed, miracles will occur, that is certain. Will the European people renew that tie? We can't reason our way back to Christian Europe. But we can love much and kneel before His sacred cross, which is the sign of contradiction to the unholy altars consecrated to the liberals' merciless gods, who require the bloody sacrifice of the European people. Those men on the sinking Titanic, those men of Europe, are our guiding lights. They went to their deaths singing "Nearer My God to Thee."

In the Gospel according to John, we are told that "many of the people believed on Him, and said, When Christ cometh, will He do more miracles than these which this man hath done?" What miracles do the liberals expect from reason, the negro,

and science, their unholy trinity? They expect to build the kingdom of God on earth without the cross of Christ. That is the impetus that drives the liberals. They, like the Jews who rejected Christ, want an earthly kingdom.

If Christ was God, the liberals tell us, He would have come down off the cross and built Liberaldom. And since He didn't do as they willed, they have rejected Him and turned to the sacred negro gods. In opposition to the liberals' celebration of Martin Luther King Jr. and the negro gods, let us celebrate this week, and every week of the year, the European people who loved the Man of Sorrows, who promised us a cross in this world and a place in His kingdom come in the next world.

+

Purely Sentimental - January 19, 2019

The national dustmen, after entertaining one another with a great many noisy little fights among themselves, had dispersed for the present, and Mr. Gradgrind was at home for the vacation.

He sat writing in the room with the deadly statistical clock, proving something no doubt – probably, in the main, that the Good Samaritan was a Bad Economist. – *Hard Times*

Our ruin will be disguised in profit, and the sale of a few wretched baubles will bribe a degenerate people to barter away the most precious jewel of their souls. – *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

Every year during the Christmas season we are greeted with a capitalist salvo against Dickens' *Christmas Carol*. His work is excoriated by the capitalists as sentimental _____ [expletive deleted]. And the Victorians who loved the *Christmas Carol* are also sent to the dustbins of history with the label 'sentimental,' which in the mind of the capitalist translates to, 'idiots who don't understand how wealth is created and distributed in a capitalist society.' As one of those idiots who weeps when Bob Cratchit describes his visit to the gravesite of Tiny Tim and who rejoices when he discovers that Tiny Tim "did not die," let me say a few words, expletives deleted, against the tough guys in the ranks of the capitalists, the men who hate Dickens' Christmas Carol, and in defense of the people who get all 'sentimental' over it.

Those who deride sentiment always have a sentiment about something else that is dear to them. They use the word 'sentimental' as a devil word in the hopes of defacing what you hold dear and elevating what they hold dear. What does the capitalist hold dear? What makes him feel all warm and gushy? The capitalist, be he neo-con or *National Review* conservative, gets all warm and gushy about free markets and wars to expand free markets on into infinity. In justification of his sentimental love for free markets and wars to expand the free market, the capitalist tells us how much better mankind, in the aggregate, is when the capitalist system is in place. The capitalist then goes on to tell us how much more wealth there is in capitalist societies compared to socialist and communist societies.

Let us grant that capitalism creates more wealth than socialism and communism. But let us also note that communism and socialism are reactions to capitalism run amuck. On the Welsh side of my family tree, the men were all coal miners. My great-grandfather, a first generation Welsh-American, started working as a breaker boy at eight years of age and then advanced to become a full-fledged coal miner. (1) He died of a heart attack at age 60 while walking home on Christmas Eve laden with Christmas presents for his eight children. He was the only member of his family, one of eight brothers, to live past age 50. His brothers all died of black lung. "Cry me a river," the capitalist responds. But what type of system is it when negro slaves live better than white Christians? (2) That marvelous system of creating wealth that theoretically 'trickles' down to the masses but in reality stays invested in the Darwinian elite, never would have been modified in the slightest degree if the capitalists had not been compelled to make concessions by the labor unions, which, over the course of time, became capitalist entities themselves, freezing out the nonunion workers and casting them into outer darkness.

In his movie *Metropolis*, Fritz Lang gives us a hint at the solution to the eternal conflict between the capitalist and the laborer. After a long bitter conflict between capitalism and labor, the movie ends with a compromise: "Head and hands want to join together, but they don't have the heart to do it... Oh mediator, show them the way to each other..." Then the mediator steps in, and the capitalist, who is the head, joins hands with the laborer, who is the hands: "The Mediator Between Head and Hands Must Be the Heart!" And so the movie ends. Sentimental mush? Yes, from the capitalist's perspective it is sentimental mush; the capitalist does not want to compromise with labor. And from the Marxist perspective, the movie is also sentimental mush, because the Marxist does not want to compromise with the capitalists, he wants to eliminate them. It's significant that Lang later repudiated the movie because as he moved further to the left, he left 'sentimentality' behind and looked to Marxism for salvation from the capitalist system. But before he became a hardened Marxist he was on the right track.

Lang was right – the heart must be the mediator between labor and capital, but it must be a heart purified by the one true Mediator between God and Man and between men and men. When the adherents of two ‘this world only’ systems clash, they will be forever at each other’s throats, because both groups have proceeded without Him. The grace of God is not something we can see with the material eye, but the fabric of our life here on earth, if viewed with the interior eye of a heart connected to His sacred heart, allows us to see that His grace is the only reality we can hold onto in this vale of tears. If that is sentimental mush to the capitalist, then so be it. I prefer, like Fezziwig, to stay with old Europe and its ancient customs and traditions, grounded in the love of Christ, than to live in the world of the entrepreneurs and plunderers. Scrooge was an easy convert compared to the modern capitalist, because he lacked an ideology of wealth. The modern capitalist would have thrown the ghost of Jacob Marley right out the door and then returned to his study to read Gilder’s *Wealth and Poverty*.

The deriding of sentiment in favor of pure intellect has deep roots. Socrates derided the simple faith of the Athenian people in favor of his “sublime” faith in nothingness. And the Athenian people reacted to his theology by inviting him to drink hemlock. St. Thomas changed St. Paul’s “charity never faileth” to Aristotle’s “reason never faileth,” and the faithful responded with the Protestant Reformation. In due time the Protestant Reformation produced Protestant scholastics who were just as opposed to “charity never faileth” as the great medieval scholastic. When does the Hegelian dialectic end? With Protestantism? With Communism? Or does it end with Capitalism? The dialectical struggle between men of strife will end when Christ returns. Until that time there will be wars and rumors of wars between systems grounded in materialism and espoused by men with a sentimental attachment to their own reason divorced from the God who enters human hearts. (3)

The monstrous inhumanity of capitalism and its children, socialism and communism, consists of their atomization of human souls. The individual human being becomes part of an aggregate herd called humanity. There are no family ties, no racial ties, and no religious ties to the humane God in their systems. There is only the great debate over the allocation of the goods of this world. And whether it is communism, socialism, or capitalism the final solution always entails the distribution of goods to a small elect and the casting into outer darkness of the undeserving non-elect. The communist-socialists simply differ with the capitalists on the issue of the elect. The capitalists want to be the elect, while the Marxist-capitalists want the people, be they the French proletariat or the noble savages of color, whom they (the Illuminati) will lead, to be the elect. The Christian European must respond with, “A plague on both your houses.” We should maintain our sentimental attachment to what was the common faith of the European people prior to the age of systems, the faith in the God-Man who overcame the world through His divine charity, which, unlike the materialist, rational systems grounded in this world only, never faileth.

The capitalists have correctly identified their greatest enemy in Charles Dickens. No man ever attacked capitalism with a greater zeal than Charles Dickens. God bless him for it! But Dickens did not succumb to the false either/or of capitalism vs. communism. He rejected both heresies. In *Hard Times*, the hero, Stephen Blackpool, rejects the capitalism of Josiah Bounderby and Thomas Grandgrind and the socialism of the radicals for an ancient non-ideological faith in Someone beyond the ken of the systems analysis men.

‘If aw th’ things that tooches us, my dear, was not so muddled, I should’n ha’ had’n need to coom heer. If we was not in a muddle among ourseln, I should’n ha’ been, by my own fellow weavers and workin’ brothers, so mistook. If Mr. Bounderby had ever know’d me right—he if he’d ever know’d me at aw—he would’n ha’ took’n offence wi’ me. He would’n ha’ suspect’n me. But look up yonder, Rachael! Look above!’

Following his eyes, she saw that he was gazing at a star.

‘It ha’ shined upon me,’ he said reverently, ‘in my pain and trouble down below. It ha’ shined into my mind. I ha’ look’n at ’t and thowt o’ thee, Rachael, till the muddle in my mind have cleared awa, above a bit, I hope.

...

They carried him very gently along the fields, and down the lanes, and over the wide landscape; Rachael always holding the hand in hers. Very few whispers broke the mournful silence. It was soon a funeral procession. The star had shown him where to find the God of the poor; and through humility, and sorrow, and forgiveness, he had gone to his Redeemer’s rest.

And what of Thomas Gradgrind, the man of facts and figures? His sentimental love for the daughter he ruined through facts and figures, brings him back to faith, hope, and charity:

Forced to admit that much of his misfortune is attributable to his own hard system of philosophy, he becomes a humbler and wiser man, bending his hitherto inflexible theories to appointed circumstances; making his facts and figures subservient to Faith, Hope, and Charity; and no longer trying to grind that Heavenly trio in his dusty little mills?

The repentant Gradgrind, like the repentant Scrooge, is in accord with Burke, Shakespeare, Scott, Dickens, and the European people during that ‘sentimental’ Christian era of their history. Hard economics, the economics of systems,

whether the system be capitalism or Marxism, must be subordinate to His reign of charity. It is worth noting that neither capitalism nor communism has ever produced a major poet. The capitalists have Carl Sandburg and the leftists have a longer list of minor poets, but the major poets see something more than 'this world only.' How could it be otherwise? The great European poets are in line with the Gospels and St. Paul. And our Lord and His apostle never advise us to seek first the things of this earth so that we can buy our way into heaven.

The reason that Trump is hated by the communists on the left and the capitalist Republicans is because he has injected a discordant note into the political debate. He has one foot in the camp of the capitalists, but he also has one foot in the camp of the men of old Europe who wanted the economic numbers to be subordinate to individual human beings. Buchanan, when he turned against free trade, also earned the hatred of the Democrats and the Republicans. This is how it will be in the European countries so long as the one true Mediator is left out of our systems. The Marxist left will be at odds with the corporate capitalists, and both sides will be at war with anyone who even suggests – let alone tries to implement – any policy of an economic or social nature that hearkens back to the ancient faith of the European people.

In Shakespeare's *A Midsummer's Night's Dream*, Theseus decides to hear the play of the bumbling working class men of Athens despite the fact that he has been told that the play is an inept production:

I will hear that play;
For never anything can be amiss,
When simpleness and duty tender it.
Go, bring them in; and take your places, ladies.

All our works on this earth are inept stammerings. We see through a glass darkly. But when our works stem from a heart that sees His sacred cross as the penultimate of reality, they are pleasing to our Lord just as the inept production of the Athenian workmen was pleasing to Theseus. Is it possible to prefer the capitalist's vision of Walmarts and wars-without-end to Dickens' vision of a Victorian village consecrated to the Son of God? The capitalist and the Marxist are united in their vision of an earthly paradise centered on themselves, on their prideful attempts to create a world controlled by their minds and their wills. Dickens' vision leads us to the Savior who has overcome the world, while that other vision leads to the fiery pit. But the capitalist need not worry – he will feel right at home in hell, because the devil is not a sentimentalist.

+

(1) From *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters* by George Fitzhugh:

Coal mines. – The number of children and young persons employed in these mines is enormous, and they appear to commence working, even underground, at an earlier age than is recorded of any other occupation except lace-making. The Commissioners report –

"That instances occur in which children are taken into these mines to work as early as four years of age, sometimes at five, not unfrequently between six and seven, and often from seven to eight, while from eight to nine is the ordinary age at which their employment commences... That a very large proportion of the persons employed in these mines is under thirteen years of age; and a still larger proportion between thirteen and eighteen.

"That in several districts female children begin to work in the mines as early as males. "That the nature of the employment which is assigned to the youngest children, generally that of 'trapping,' requires that they should be in the pit as soon as the work of the day commences, and, according to the present system, that they should not leave the pit before the work of the day is at an end."

The pit is an exact metaphor for what capitalism gives us – hell on earth.

(2) From *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters* by George Fitzhugh:

Is not slavery to capital less tolerable than slavery to human masters?

Where a few, as in England, Ireland and Scotland, own all the lands, are not the mass, the common laborers, who own no capital, and possess neither mechanical nor professional skill, of necessity, the slaves to capital?

Was it not this slavery to capital that occasioned the great Irish famine, and is not this same slavery that keeps the large majority of the laboring class in Western Europe in a state of hereditary starvation?

In old societies, where the laborers are domestic slaves, and exceed in number the demand for labor, would not emancipating them subject them at once to a mastery, or exacting despotism of capital, far more oppressive than domestic slavery?

And from *American Statesmen on Slavery and the Negro* by Nathaniel Weyl and William Marina:

To what extent was Calhoun's comparison objective and factual? To what extent was it mere special pleading in favor of the peculiar institution? One uncontested fact lends force to Calhoun's assertion that the conditions of the Negro slave were better than those of

unskilled white labor. Throughout the South, it was customary to employ Irish gangs in digging irrigation ditches and draining swamps, work that was not only unusually hard and dangerous, but which exposed the laborers to malaria and a variety of gastroenteritic diseases. When asked the reason for this preference, a planter told that eminent observer of slavery in the South, Frederick L. Olmsted: "It is dangerous work and a negro's life is too valuable to be risked at it. If a negro dies it is a considerable loss you know." Wh. H. Russell, the *London Times* correspondent in Washington during the Civil War, speculated about the vast number of "poor Hibernians (who) have been consumed and buried in these Louisianian swamps, leaving their earnings to the dramshop keeper and the contractor, and the results of their toil to the planter."

... In his classic study *The Health of Slaves on Southern Plantations*, Postell reviews testimony of contemporary physicians to the effect that the Negro slave received "good care, wholesome diet, prompt medical attention, and restraint from dissipations which were injurious to his health" and was "healthier in the main than the whites." To what extent was Calhoun's comparison objective and factual? To what extent was it mere special pleading in favor of the peculiar institution? One uncontested fact lends force to Calhoun's assertion that the conditions of the Negro slave were better than those of unskilled white labor. Throughout the South, it was customary to employ Irish gangs in digging irrigation ditches and draining swamps, work that was not only unusually hard and dangerous, but which exposed the laborers to malaria and a variety of gastroenteritic diseases. When asked the reason for this preference, a planter told that eminent observer of slavery in the South, Frederick L. Olmsted: "It is dangerous work and a negro's life is too valuable to be risked at it. If a negro dies it is a considerable loss you know." Wh. H. Russell, the *London Times* correspondent in Washington during the Civil War, speculated about the vast number of "poor Hibernians (who) have been consumed and buried in these Louisianian swamps, leaving their earnings to the dramshop keeper and the contractor, and the results of their toil to the planter." ... In his classic study *The Health of Slaves on Southern Plantations*, Postell reviews testimony of contemporary physicians to the effect that the Negro slave received "good care, wholesome diet, prompt medical attention, and restraint from dissipations which were injurious to his health" and was "healthier in the main than the whites."

(3) I recently listened to an exchange between Tucker Carlson and a Jewish neo-con by the name of Ben Shapiro. Shapiro was going into raptures about the glories of automation which would place 10 million truck drivers out of work. That type of free market economics makes the capitalist feel all warm and sentimental, but it sickens anyone with a soul.

The Red Death of Liberalism - January 12, 2019

For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? – Matthew 16: 26

And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. — Matthew 18: 2-3

In Edgar Allan Poe's story "The Masque of the Red Death," the revelers at the party thought they were safe from the Red Death that was ravaging the surrounding countryside, but in the end they too were devoured by the Red Death. It does not take a prophet to know that the European people are in the position of the revelers, because the Red Death of Liberalism is not in the future, it is in the present. The European people are partying while the Red Death kills them off.

Despite differences in politics, the various mainstream news outlets, such as CNN, NBC, and Fox, and the various alternative news sites such as Breitbart, the Council of Conservative Citizens, and the Drudge Report are all united in that which is essential to perpetuate the Red Death; they are united in their belief in the democratic process. You get the information out to the people, and then they act on that information by participating in the democratic process, which includes voting, writing letters to Congress, and participating in nonviolent protests.

The alternative news sites have sprung up because the moderate liberals think — and they are correct — that the mad-dog liberals are suppressing the truth, they are not reporting the story of white genocide. But despite the fact that the mad-dog liberals control the content of the mainstream news organizations and reserve the right to regulate the alternative news sites, the moderate liberals, who are called conservatives, still cling tenaciously to the hope that somehow the democratic process, which is the tool of Satan, can be used to dethrone Satan. This can never be. Isabel's heartfelt plea to the Duke in Shakespeare's *Measure for Measure* is just as true today as it was then: "You bid me seek redemption from the devil." We must look to someone besides the devil for our redemption.

Many of the post-World War II conservatives expressed a sympathy for and/or a belief in Christianity, but they prefaced their stated belief in Christianity as a religion with the rejection of the antique European people's faith in Christ. They did not go into the future holding on to the strings of the past, because they rejected their racial hearth fire where the Christ of old Europe dwelt and replaced it with a universalist religion without a place for the Christ of old Europe. The 'conservatives' did not believe, in contrast to Burke, that democracy and its accompanying universalist platitudes was

incompatible with the Word made flesh. They blended Christianity with democracy and came up with Christo-liberalism, which is liberalism salted with some Christian phrases, but is still, at its core, liberalism. The shipwreck of the European people took place when the conservative leadership in church and state steered the good Ship Europe onto the rocks of philosophical speculation and racial amalgamation.

I don't want to leave the 'progress' heresy that I touched on last week, because that heresy is the link between the mad-dog liberals and the conservatives who claim to be in opposition to the mad-dog liberals. When you accept the premise that democracy and its universalist assumptions of racial and cultural diversity is progress, how can you oppose the progressive reforms of democracy? You can't. The conservatives never tell us we must kill abortion doctors, because a Christian people do not permit the slaughter of infants. Nor do they tell us that we must imprison the liberals and drive the colored heathens from our nations. Instead they tell us that we must work through the democratic process to limit abortions and we must work through the democratic process to restrict immigration. Can you be moderate when dealing with the devil?

Why, now that the liberals have thrown off their false humanistic masks and revealed themselves in all their satanic inhumanity, are the churchmen and the 'conservatives' more willing than ever to compromise with them? Part of the reason is the obvious one. The liberals are in power, and it is dangerous to oppose the powers that be. But that is only part of the reason. The modern conservatives would not continue to adhere to the democratic process out of sheer cowardice, because there are many conservatives who are not cowards. The mad-dog liberals could not rule without the consent of the non-cowardly conservatives. Why then do they consent to the rule of the mad-dog liberals? The conservatives consent to the liberals' rule because the conservatives believe in the democratic heresy. They believe that democracy and its attendant customs and traditions is superior to the governments of old Europe with their attendant customs and traditions. But is the democratic culture, which has given us race-mixing, legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and transgenderism, really superior to the customs and traditions of old Europe? By some magical hocus pocus the modern conservative thinks we can have democracy without the above-mentioned evils. Is that possible? I recently saw a travelogue by James A. Fitzpatrick, the man who traveled the globe for MGM Studios. He was visiting Denmark, which at that time (1950) seemed like the ideal democratic state. But was that wonderful 1950s nation wonderful because they were a democracy or because the evils that come with democracy had not surfaced yet? Denmark at that time was still white, and her people were still living according to the Christian ethos of their forefathers. Now that democracy, with its racial diversity and sexual perversity, has taken root in Denmark, is it still the ideal state that Fitzpatrick lauds? No, it is not. Denmark, like all of the European nations, has succumbed to the Red Death of Liberalism, because Denmark followed the path of democratic diversity.

Like a mad scientist who seeks to put together a human being by collecting body parts and fusing them together, the 20th century conservatives have sought to reconstruct the Christian faith by fusing all the theories of God together – Greek, Roman, Hebrew, and Moslem – in order to make a universalist Christian façade that was acceptable to the scientized brains of modern Europeans. But like the mad scientist, the conservative intellectuals forgot the animating spirit. They forgot pietas. The love that once was there, at the Europeans' racial hearth fire, the love for their people and for Christ, was missing. You can't kill pietas and still expect a man to love a generic God and a generic people. In *Great Expectations*, Miss Havisham, who has raised Estella to shun mankind so that she will not be deceived by an excess of sentiment for individual members of mankind, is horrified when Estella grows up and has no heart to love "even her," Miss Havisham. The atrocity stories reported by the alternative news sites fall on deaf ears because the European people have no heart left for their people or their God – the scientized intellects in church and state have killed white pietas.

What is missing in the scientized Christian façade of the modern churches is the incarnate Lord. Why do the church men make common cause with Jews, Moslems, and academics while denouncing the white European Christians who have not cut their ties to the 'racist' and 'sexist' antique Europeans? It is because the scientized mind always has a problem with the Word made flesh. It goes against the tenets of Gnosticism. And when our incarnate Lord's incarnation is Gnosticized, so is His resurrection from the dead. Do we believe as little children, do we believe that we will see our Lord in the flesh along with all our loved ones in the place which He has prepared for us? Organized Christian Jewry now serves as a halfway house for Europeans who can't quite quit the Christian habit. In the halfway house churches, the recovering Christians are shown how they can have a little bit of faith in Christianity while giving their heart and soul to the colored gods of liberalism. Those gods are scientific because they are natural. And what is natural is sacred, is it not?

I had a philosophy teacher in college who was a devotee of Nietzsche and his doctrine of eternal recurrence. Nietzsche was not a great favorite with the liberals. On the one hand they liked his anti-Christian polemic, his devotion to the "eternal cosmos" instead of the 'unnatural' Christian God. But they did not like his doctrine of eternal recurrence, because that doctrine was in conflict with the liberals' doctrine of progress. Liberalism combines paganism with a secularized Christian theory of history. The Christian Europeans believed history would end with the return of Christ, while the liberals believe that history will end when they have set up the kingdom of God on earth. And that God must be a natural God, because nature is all. Enter the sacred negro. Nietzsche would have deplored the worship of the negro, just like our modern neo-

pagans deplore the worship of the negro, but Nietzsche is at one with the liberals in his rejection of the unnatural God-Man who died on the cross and rose from the dead on the third day.

The Christian Everyman has not fared well in the age of science. Under the auspices of scientific truth, the neo-pagan and the mad-dog liberal have launched an unrelenting attack on Christ and His people. And the Christian Everyman has surrendered to the enemy because the leaders in church and state who were supposed to conserve that which was essential, the love which sees beauty on the cross, have compromised with the devil who bids mankind look at God through the eyes of a scientist examining a bug under a microscope.

The Christ-haunted playwright Eugene O'Neill once wrote a play called *Lazarus Laughed*. At first those who saw Christ raise Lazarus from the dead rejoiced and laughed at death. But over time, the eyewitnesses began to doubt what they had seen. "Maybe it was a trick, maybe Lazarus didn't really return from the dead." What happens to Lazarus' friends over the short space of O'Neill's play has happened over a longer period of time to the European people. Doubt set in. The European people could look at nature unflinchingly because He had conquered nature, but as their knowledge of nature increased, their faith declined. Did Christ really conquer nature, or was He still subordinate to nature? Was He and is He the precursor of the sacred gods of color, the cosmic God of Teilhard du Chardin, or is He Jesus Christ, our sovereign Lord and Savior?

From whence comes the spiritual virility to resist the scientific onslaught on our sacred faith? Is there anything that can stop the Red Death of Liberalism? The answer to those questions lies in our past. They, the European people when they were a people, believed in Christ more than in science. They trusted the Word made flesh more than the research of the scientists. If it be neo-paganism, it shall fail, if it be liberalism, it shall fail, if it be Christo-liberalism, it shall fail, but His charity shall not fail. He has left us a Comforter until He returns, and I have never known one single man or woman with a heart of flesh who failed to find comfort in the Man of Sorrows. If we return to pietas, the love of our own, we will find Him, the God above nature, the God with a human heart. +

The Mystic Toyland - January 5, 2019

Childhood's joy land,
Mystic, merry toy land
Once you cross its borders
You can ne'er return again.

-Mother Goose in *The March of the Wooden Soldiers*

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. – Colossians 2: 8

In the wonderful fairy tale movie *The March of the Wooden Soldiers*, Laurel and Hardy, who are both Third Dumb Brothers, do battle with Barnaby and the boogeymen to save the inhabitants of Toyland from destruction. At the beginning of the movie, long before the final battle in which the wooden soldiers drive the boogeymen out of Toyland, Mother Goose sings the Toyland song. In the song she tells us that once we cross the borders of that mystical world of Toyland we can "never return again." Never? With all due respect to Mother Goose, I would assert that it is possible to return. She is right to tell us that we shouldn't seek to leave Toyland, but she is too 'this world only' practical to see why it is not written that no one ever returns to Toyland after leaving Toyland. With men it is impossible, but with Christ it is possible.

The Garden of Eden was like unto Toyland. It was a wonderful mystic world which God made to sustain Adam and Eve. But it could only sustain them so long as they were like unto little children. Satan was the Barnaby of the Garden of Eden: he placed a wedge between Adam and Eve's childlike faith in God, leading them down the path of philosophical speculation: "Dying from a bite of an apple? Don't be absurd! Just think about it – how can knowledge be bad?" So Adam and Eve were banished from the mystical Garden, and so were we, their descendants, banished from that mystical storybook land.

The reason our European ancestors used to celebrate Christmas was because the birth of our Lord and His subsequent crucifixion and resurrection from the dead allowed us to return to the storybook land of Eden, but of course that return can only be through His cross. And that has been the main reason why the liberals have built Liberaldom over the ruins of Christendom. They have rejected the cross of Christ. The traditions and customs of the Christian Europeans were outward symbols of a deeply held interior faith. Our people believed He had gone to prepare a place for us in His Kingdom, a

Kingdom that was the visionary home of the European people. The theologians' attack on the Word Made Flesh opened the door for liberalism:

As a history of the world, the empirical history after Christ is qualitatively not different from the history before Christ if judged from either a strictly empirical history or a strictly Christian viewpoint. -Karl Löwith

The devil never attacks God directly, he always attacks God through His people. The theologians who tell us there never was a Christian Europe, that there is no empirical or qualitative difference between pagan Europe and Christian Europe, leave us with a God who did not take flesh and dwell among us; they leave us with a Gnostic God without a local habitation or a name. He is the unknown God whom the Athenians worshipped: "There is no sign of Christ in Europe from a strictly Christian viewpoint." That is the eternal refrain of the men of philosophy and theology. But the history of our people, which we can see clearly if we see through, not with, the eye, gives the lie to the sneering cynicism of the men of the scientized intellects.

It would be more accurate to say there is no sign of Christ from a Christian utopian viewpoint. All have sinned and fallen short of the glory of God, but can we honestly look at European history and say we see only sin? That would be like visiting the Louvre and condemning the whole museum because you saw trash bins in the basement. Christian utopianism always places the followers of that type of intellectual Christianity with the secular liberals against their own people. Hilaire Belloc thought Robespierre's bloodletting was necessary to purge the Republic of Catholics who were insufficiently Catholic. So we should thank Robespierre and his cohorts for giving us the pure, unadulterated, Catholic France that we see before us today?

Satan wants the churchmen to speculate about God. He loves theological disputes because he knows that philosophical speculation leads men away from the love of God, away from their mystical core, and into the realm of eternal night. When the European people followed the way of the cross, which was the way of St. Paul, when their intellects were purified by loving hearts, they lived, interiorly, in a mystic Toyland. Their young men saw visions, and their old men dreamed dreams of His Kingdom come. What do the European people see now and what do they dream about? They see the sacred negro and they dream of the kingdom of God on earth, which can only be achieved when the white race is eliminated from the earth.

The idea that mankind progresses morally is neither Christian nor pagan. It is post-Christian. The Christian Europeans believed that history was moving toward the return of Christ, they did not believe they were moving onward and upward to moral perfection, a moral perfection that would bring about the Kingdom of God on earth. The difference between the Christian view of history and the post-Christian view of history accounts for the great divide today between the reigning liberal culture and the culture of the antique Europeans. Old Europe was indeed a mystical Toyland, a Toyland that we can return to if we reject intellectual Christianity and return to the heartfelt faith of St. Paul, the apostle who enjoined us to circumcise our hearts and let the dear Christ enter in. But if we reject the antique Europeans as impure and degenerate because they were insufficiently Christian, which always translates into, 'they were racist and sexist,' then we must join with the liberals and look to another Christ, a purified Christ, who will rule over the Kingdom of God on earth, which is, in reality, the kingdom of hell on earth.

The vilification of the European people in the 'Christian' churches, which has been going on for over a century, has resulted in the secularization of Christ the Lord. If the antique Europeans were wrong, if Rembrandt's Christ was not the true Christ, then who or what is Christ? Christ has become a nebulous figure in modern Christian Jewry. He is something more than man, but less than God. Pope Francis paved the way for the eventual elimination of Christ altogether when he deified the savages of the Amazon Rain forest. Therein lies the hope of men who live in this world only — the future belongs to the noble savages of color — they are the salvation of mankind, minus the non-illuminated members of the white race, who cannot be saved because their unilluminated whiteness damns them to hell.

There used to be, let us go back 125 years ago, two reasons why a man could not celebrate Christmas. The first reason was bereavement. When a man lost a loved one during the Christmas season, it was not possible to celebrate Christmas as he was wont; a man must have time to grieve. But when Christmas comes the next year, the Christian European places his honored dead at the Christmas feast, and he is able, once again, to celebrate Christmas. Dickens' marvelous essay called "What Christmas Is As We Grow Older," which Christopher Grey referenced in *The Shepherds of Europe*, beautifully describes how our grief over the death of our loved ones is transformed into joy because of our faith in the Babe in the Manger.

The second reason a man could not celebrate Christmas some 125 years ago was the Ebenezer Scrooge reason. Scrooge didn't believe in the Christ of Europe. The Jews and the Ebenezer Scrooges of old Europe could not celebrate Christmas because they worshipped another god, a golden idol, instead of Christ the Lord.

Now we come to our present century, the first non-Christian century in Europe since the European people first bent their knees to Christ. In modern Satandom a third obstacle has emerged, which makes the celebration of Christmas very difficult. When Scrooge repented, when he saw the light, he ventured out into a Christian community to share his new-found faith with his fellow Christians. Now, the man who has kept Christmas in his heart for 365 days of the year and wants to celebrate what he believes in his heart with the type of outward ceremonies described in Washington Irving's *Old Christmas* must withdraw from the community around him, because the community around him consists of liberals who despise Christ and intellectual Christians who have blended Christ with liberalism. Christmas, when celebrated with family and friends who believe in Christ as St. Paul believed and as our European ancestors believed, should afford us a "foretaste of heaven." (I must credit the daughter of a close friend with that wonderful description of a truly European Christmas.) Despite the liberals' and the theologians' condemnation of the antique Europeans, we are one with them in faith and blood.

The estrangement I feel during the entire calendar year from the surrounding community intensifies during the Christmas season because I see, as I celebrate Christmas as the old Europeans celebrated it, the divide between the spiritual beauty of our ancestors' faith and the satanic ugliness of modern liberalism clearly delineated. A man has to be either morally anesthetized or completely immersed in the satanic culture of liberalism in order to celebrate Christmas with liberals or intellectual Christians. When Christmas is celebrated as the antique Europeans celebrated it, we feel renewed for the battle. We know our enemy and we know that we must hold Christmas in our hearts, as the ghost of Christmas present enjoins us, 365 days of the year lest we be defeated by the enemy of mankind who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

In the name of a purified God and a purified people, religious experts such as the previously quoted Karl Löwith bid us leave the mystical European Toyland and seek Christ in another land, a multi-cultural hell, with another people. But who is the purified Christ and who are the purified people? Behold, it is a second fall of man. We have left Christ and His people in order to dwell in Satan's kingdom of hell on earth. The liberals and the intellectual Christians tell us we must not worship the past, in fact we must hate our past in order to progress. What must we progress toward? The liberals say it is the kingdom of God on earth. And the intellectual Christians tell us that we must progress toward a clearer understanding, with their help, of the nature of God. But while we are coming to that clearer understanding of God we are enjoined to worship the next best thing, the sacred negro and the other colored gods of nature.

We do not worship the past as the liberals and the intellectual Christians worship the future. We revere the past because He dwells in the past with our people, who, despite their imperfections, had hearts of flesh. And with those hearts of flesh they saw and knew the living God, the God the liberals hate and the theologians and philosophers have syllogized out of existence. That despised and rejected God has a name and a place: His name is Jesus and His place is with the European people who have not crossed the borders of that mystical storybook land of Christian Europe.

Modern Europe is not our world. We do not seek electoral victories that promise us a piece of the liberal pie. We seek to drive the liberals and their colored allies out of storybook land just as the wooden soldiers drove Barnaby and the boogeymen out of Toyland. Why speak of fairy tales as Satan tightens his grip on the European people? Why not suggest something practical, like a new political party? It is because Satan has the people who embraced democracy and science in his grip that I want the European people to place themselves back in that glorious European fairy tale in which the Babe in the Manger grows up and becomes the Savior of the world, who "hath borne our griefs and carried our sorrows." Is He really so obscure and remote from us? Only if we have no heart for our people and the sacred heritage they bequeathed to us. Do we stand with St. Paul and the antique Europeans, or do we stand with the liberals and the Athenian intellectuals who worship an unknown God that exists only in the future? The Israelites who had to decide whether they stood with Moses or with Korah, Dathan, and Abiram had a similar choice. Satan will not prevail if we stay with the people who revered the Babe in the Manger. We, the European people, ask Him to stay. +

Remembrances VIII: The Shepherds of Europe - December 22, 2018

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.
And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.
And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.
And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.
And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.
And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.
And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.

And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

– Luke 2: 8-18

~~~~~

I won't go over old ground in this remembrance. It's been two years since Father Bontini updated the remembrances for me. Since that time we, the Christian Britons, have lost our territories in Northern Scotland, but we have retained the land mass that used to constitute Wales and we have taken control of all the major isles – the Western Isles, the Orkney Islands, the Shetland Islands, the Isle of Skye, and the Isle of Man. Ireland, North and South, as well as England and Scotland, with the exception of Skye, belong to the Moslems. But the moral essence of Britain still lives in Arthur II's Britain. It wouldn't be accurate to say we are in a constant state of siege, but we are in a constant state of readiness for a siege. There have, for instance, been six major Moslem assaults on Britain – we are Britain – in the past year. But in between the assaults, life in Britain goes on in defiance of the Moslem and the liberal world around us.

Shakespeare graces our stage, true British shops and true British craftsmen are in abundance, and the old Book of Common Prayer, which is simply a liturgical version of the Bible, has been brought back. Much has been lost, but what we have now is sacred to us because we realize just how precious our heritage was, and still can be if we do not falter in our resolve to maintain white, Christian Britain.

What has taken place in Britain for the last half-century is part of a worldwide campaign to destroy the white race. The liberals hate Christ, but they cannot strike out at Him directly, so they attack the Europeans, who were and are the Christ-bearing race. By a strange metamorphosis, the liberals have renounced their white souls and made the destruction of the white race their 'holy' mission in life. And of course the colored heathen are quite willing to aid the liberals in their mission. In the end, if the plans of the liberals are not altered, they too will be eliminated by their colored minions, just as a pet snake will turn and strike his keeper, but that is not my concern. I am concerned about the whites who have remained faithful. They are my people and I must support them until the Lord sees fit to take me home.

In Britain and the rest of the European countries, the colored assault has come under the banner of Islam. In the United States, Banyon, Canada, and the other European satellite countries, the colored assault has been waged in the name of the sacred negro. The situation in all the European countries and those countries settled by Europeans is very fluid. Sometimes I hear of white setbacks and then I hear of white counter-attacks. Just last month, for instance, I heard that all of Bavaria was in the hands of the white Christians, but only two months prior to that I had heard that all of Germany belonged to the Moslems. Reports from the various European countries are sketchy and indeterminate. And in these remembrances I want to stick to events that I either witnessed myself or were witnessed and reported to me by close friends. What follows is an account from my friend, Arthur Walker, who used to run a private detective agency in Georgia. He is now a leader of the White Underground in what used to be called the United States of America.

– Rev. Christopher Grey

~~~~~

The territory that we formerly held consisted roughly of the land masses of what used to be the states of Georgia and South Carolina. But we were forced to abandon those land masses because we simply lacked the men to defend them. Some whites, as you know, made their way across the ocean to Christian Britain. The rest of us have become part of the Underground. We keep contact with each other through the use of (I know you hate the devices but they are necessary) digital cell phones and other such communication devices. We have some members working as moles in the liberal population. They provide us with valuable information about the liberals' army and police force.

We exist as a loose collection of clans, only we rove around more than the Scottish clans of old. I am, for want of a better word, the clan leader. Of course the leadership was thrust upon me because of my connection to you, Reverend. You have no idea what you mean to the white Christians of this nation. The old United States no longer exists as an independent nation. Personally I don't think it ever did exist, but perhaps I am letting my Southern heritage influence me. Even if the Southland was the only true nation in the Northern Hemisphere, as I maintain, it no longer exists at present. What we have now is the United Republic of the Americas, which consists of what formerly constituted Canada, the United States, and Mexico. Now they are one united country with one government and one state-sponsored religion. Yes, the nation which once prided itself on the separation of church and state has now become part of a theocracy.

I've mentioned some of the uglier aspects of the new state religion before, but let me go through a few more of the details. The 'worship' services are conducted by a mixed group of clergymen, mostly Catholic priests with some Protestant ministers. The litany is a bizarre mixture of the Catholic Mass, the new Anglican Book of Prayer, and the Quran. But all the readings are geared toward negro worship. Just one example will suffice – when they say the Apostle's Creed, they

proclaim, “I believe in the sacred negro, the natural ruler of this heaven on earth, and I believe that the negro is the savior of all those who call on him by name. I believe in the holy Catholic Church of the negro, I believe in one God, who is the negro, and I believe that the negro will come to rule over all the earth when whiteness has left the earth. Amen.”

That creed is recited in every church throughout the United Republic of the Americas, by every white person left alive and by all the colored citizens of the United Republic. What can we say of such a creed? Do all whites believe it? It’s difficult to know how many whites have given their internal assent. Every once in a while we get a breakaway, a man or woman who has had enough and seeks to join the Underground. What follows is a story of one breakaway. I suppose, lest I forget, I should tell you that every member of the white clan takes an oath of allegiance to King Arthur II. You see, we need, like all men, a particular land and one particular king to whom we pledge our allegiance. The wheel has come full circle. We have come home to Christian Britain. And when we conquer the Americas, we will not, this time, throw the tea into the ocean. We will welcome a visit from our King, who serves the King of Kings. Now, on to the story of one man’s journey from darkness to light. Such stories never get old.

~~~~~

Act I, Scene 1. The Story of John Taylor, a Priest in the Church of the United Republic of the Americas.

I was six years old when my parents were forced to give me up to the state. As you know, the new Constitution of the United Republic requires that a white man who wants to marry a white woman must get a special dispensation from the state. Having obtained that dispensation to marry he must then agree to have no more than one child. If the white female gives birth to a second child, one of the children must be turned over to the state to be executed or to be trained as a priest in the One Holy Catholic Church of the Negro. The life or death of the white child is up to the discretion of the state. My parents decided to keep my baby brother and offer me up to the state. I don’t think they did this because they hated me; my memories of them are of two kind, fond parents. But my baby brother was more vulnerable and more likely to be executed to spare the expense that goes with the care of infants. So I was given to the state in the hope – I know my parents had that hope – that I would be made a priest and not a corpse. And such was the case. I became a priest. I’ve learned since then that over three-fourths of the second white children are executed. But I still have no idea why I was not one of the children executed by the state.

I won’t bore you with the details about the course of study I went through in order to become a priest of the United Republic of the Americas. Suffice it to say it was long and thorough. Every aspect of liberal culture was shoved into my heart, mind, and soul. By the time I was ordained at age 22, I was eminently qualified to go forth as an apostle for the Lords of Liberalism – the sacred negroes.

For my first two years I was a parish priest. I said the sacred negro mass and I attended to the needs of my parishioners, which meant I brought them Holy Communion when they were sick, the wafer representing the blood of the negroes who had been slain by white racists, and I did the usual visitations and such.

Then, two years into my parish work, I was given a new assignment. I was sent to work as a special counselor in the rehabilitation unit of the United Republic of the Americas. It was my job to visit whites who had been imprisoned for racism. I had to decide whether they could be rehabilitated or whether rehabilitation was impossible. If I recommended rehabilitation, they were sent to rehabilitation camps, but if I thought they could not be rehabilitated they were executed. Did I feel any remorse when I labeled a white man or white woman “unfit for rehabilitation”? No, I did not. You must remember that I had been trained from birth to believe that white racists were evil. So I felt no guilt or remorse when I sent white racists to their doom.

You might wonder how many white racists I recommended for execution. I can’t give the exact number, but I would estimate that I sent at least 200 out of the 300 I interviewed to be executed. Of course, now their faces haunt my dreams, but they didn’t haunt me back then.

I think I began to question the religion of the sacred negro – but I can’t be sure that my doubt didn’t start before that – when I was sent to interview Paul Davis. I was thirty years old at the time and Paul Davis was twenty-eight. He had been accused of marrying a white woman without special dispensation, and he was also accused of fathering four children by that same woman without reporting any of the births to the state. His case was an extreme one – he seemed like a recalcitrant racist. I had little doubt of what my recommendation to the Council would be. But still, I was a professional, and I was determined to conduct my interview with an open, liberal mind. I have since learned that there is no mind more closed than a liberal one, but that is not part of this story.

~~~~~

Act I, Scene 2. John Taylor's Interview of Paul Davis, Conducted in Davis's Prison Cell.

Taylor: I see by the records that you were imprisoned two weeks ago. I would like to help transfer you from this prison to a rehabilitation center. Would you like that?

Davis: No, I would not like that.

Taylor: Then you prefer to stay in prison?

Davis: No, I would prefer to get out of prison to be with my wife and family.

Taylor: But you have no legitimate wife, you were married without permission from the state. And you did not turn your children over to the state after their births.

Davis: Why should I turn my children over to the executioners?

Taylor: Come now, you know the answer as well as I do. Let me read to you from the Liberal Code of Law, which is sacred to all true citizens of the Republic. I quote, "When any white male who has married with the proper state approval fathers a second white child, he must turn one of the white children over to the state. And when a white male marries a white female without permission from the state, his life, his wife's life, and all his children will be subject to execution by the state." Did you know that was the law?

Davis: Yes, I did.

Taylor: Then why didn't you comply with the law?

Davis: Because I don't recognize the validity of the law. I hold to another law, it begins with...

Taylor: I must stop you right there before you incriminate yourself any further. You were going to refer to a certain book and a certain God depicted in that book. Don't utter His name or mention that book in my presence, or I shall be forced to terminate this interview right now and recommend that you be executed as soon as is humanly possible.

Davis: I knew I was a dead man as soon as I was arrested. But I saved my family – I made sure that they found refuge in the White Underground before the Liberal Police came for me.

Taylor: (closing the book in which he has been taking notes). Then there is nothing left to be said. I'll mark you down as an irredeemable white racist and recommend that you be put to death.

Davis: Without a trial?

Taylor: Of course without a trial. You know that white racists are not entitled to the protection of the law. They are outside the law.

Davis: In most cases. But the sons and daughters of the white Illuminati who have transcended whiteness and become spiritually black, and any offspring they might have, are entitled to due process. Isn't that so?

Taylor: Yes, it is so. But how does that apply to you? Surely you're not claiming to be related to one of the Illuminati?

Davis: But I am related to one of the Illuminati. Governor Grover is my father. As you know, all white children are required to take their mother's name, in keeping with the principles of feminism. But if you check the records, you will see that I am the biological son of Governor Grover. I never knew him – he was separated from my mother when I was one year old, but I am his son, his one and only child, a fully authorized and certified child.

Taylor: If what you say is true, then you will be entitled to a trial. I'll check on your story and get back to you.

Davis: Yes, you do that.

~~~~~

Act I, Scene 3, John Taylor's Aside.

I did check on Davis's story and discovered he was not lying. His father was the Governor of the district. He told me that he wanted nothing to do with his son, that he had had nothing to do with his upbringing, but he did acknowledge that Paul Davis was his only child. So I turned in the necessary paperwork and Davis's trial was set for two weeks hence.

It might seem curious that such a government as ours should give anyone a trial. Why go through the motions of a trial when the verdict has been predetermined? But that is the point. Liberals need trials to justify themselves. They believe in liberalism, to a certain extent. The trials are their version of 'Lord, I believe, help my unbelief.' The more illegitimate the regime, the more legalese and paperwork is needed to convince the rulers of the revolutionary regime that they really do constitute a legitimate government. The French Jacobins, the Russian communists, the American 1776ers all cloaked their revolutionary movements in reams of legalese and paperwork. They labeled falsehood self-evident, and truth subversive. Thus reenacting, as all revolutionary tribunals do, the trial and crucifixion of our Lord. So, observing all the rules of criminal procedure and with all the proper liberal legalese, Davis was tried for high treason against the United Republic of the Americas.

Once I presented the paperwork, I thought my work was done. But I was in for a shock. When I came into work two days after my meeting with Governor Grover, I had a short cryptic note on my desk: "You are to defend Paul Davis. Signed, Governor Grover." The note sent chills down my spine. If I truly tried to defend Paul Davis, wouldn't I, after the trial was over, be accused of an excessive sympathy with an irredeemable white racist? And wouldn't that make me a white racist, subject to the same penalty as all white racists? I asked for clarification in a return memo, but I got no response. In desperation I went to Father Todd, an older priest who lived in the rectory with me; he was the parish priest who generally said mass while I was the special priest in charge of the rehabilitation process. I occasionally assisted at mass, but in the main I stuck to the rehabilitation work. But I needed advice, and Father Todd was at hand.

~~~~~

Act I, Scene 4.

Taylor: They've asked me to defend Paul Davis.

Todd: I thought that was an open and shut case, that he was already sentenced to death for white racism, which is treason.

Taylor: There was a complication. It turned out that his father is Governor Grover.

Todd: That's some twist of fate. Did the governor ask you to defend Davis?

Taylor: Yes, and I'm rather worried about it.

Todd: Why?

Taylor: I'm afraid I might be accused of racism after the trial is over, or maybe even during the trial. After all, it's only natural for people to think you share the views of someone you defend.

Todd: I think your worries are unfounded. Just let him speak for himself and then back away.

Taylor: You mean I should just put him on the stand and let him denounce himself.

Todd: Yes.

Taylor: But that wouldn't be a very good defense.

Todd: You're not obligated to make a good defense, you are simply obligated to put up some defense. I highly recommend that you let the racist damn himself, and then walk away. I think that is what Governor Grover wants as well.

Taylor: That sounds like the best plan. Thank you, Father.

Todd: It was my pleasure.

~~~~~

Act II, Scene 1. The Trial of Paul Davis for High Treason.



[Twelve jurors, four black men, four black women, and four white women are seated. No white males are permitted on juries, not even white males who are members of the Illuminati. The white Illuminati are, however, permitted to be judges. And in this case the judge is a member of the Illuminati; his name is Judge Parker. The prosecuting attorney is also a member of the white Illuminati.]

Bailiff: Here ye, hear ye, the most illustrious high court of the United Republic of the Americas is in session, the honorable Judge Parker presiding. All rise.

[All rise and then are seated.]

Parker: Paul Davis, you are accused of high treason by marrying a white female without the permission of the state, and subsequently fathering four children by the same female without offering up three of those children to the state for execution or for training in the priesthood. How do you plead?

Davis: Not guilty.

Parker: Do you deny the truth of the charges then?

Davis: No, but I do not acknowledge that marrying a woman of my own race and fathering children by that woman is a crime of any kind. Therefore, my plea is not guilty.

Prosecutor: I rest my case. The defendant Paul Davis is guilty as charged.

Taylor: The defense also rests.

Parker: But you haven't presented a defense of your client.

Taylor: It was my client's wish that he be allowed to defend himself. And I complied with his request. Therefore the defense rests.

Parker: All right then, I'll pronounce sentence. Paul Davis, you have been found guilty of the most serious and heinous crime known to man. You are a white racist. I sentence you to be handed over to the torturers and then executed. There can be no mercy for white racists, because a white racist is outside of the orbit of grace that has been established by our religious tenets. Grace comes from the negro, who is the god of nature. Outside of the natural world there is no salvation. Take the racist wretch away.

~~~~~

Act II, Scene 2. John Taylor's Aside.

I was not a lawyer, I didn't spend a lot of time in the courts, so I can't say for sure that Davis's trial for treason was the shortest on record, but I think it must have been, because the defendants, I was told, usually tried to deny their racism. Davis came right out with it. He even seemed to think his racism was a virtue. I was very far from approving of his views, but I was struck by the boldness of his racism. Truly he was a brave man, albeit a brave man with a perverted, distorted view of existence.

Something else struck me about the trial. I knew Davis was to be sentenced to death. My own recommendations had sent many men and some women to their deaths, but the words, "handed over to the torturers," struck a discordant chord in my soul. "Why was it necessary to torture the white racists?" I asked myself. And my answer? "It was necessary to torture the white racists to impress upon other whites the seriousness of white racism." Did I accept that answer? Not entirely. I was uneasy. And Father Todd sensed my uneasiness. The Sunday after Davis's sentencing, two weeks before his scheduled torture and execution, I concelebrated a mass with Father Todd. After the mass we sat down to breakfast together in the rectory.

~~~~~

Act II, Scene 3.

Todd: This jelly is delicious, it's homemade, you must try some.

Taylor: No thank you, father.

Todd: Come on, you can't be watching your weight, you don't have any weight on your frame to watch.

Taylor: (placing a small blob of jelly on his toast). Thank you, I will have a taste.

Todd: (studying Taylor's face). What's the matter, Jonathan? You don't seem yourself.

Taylor: I'm sorry if I'm not much company.

Todd: Oh, don't worry about that. Nobody can be cheery all the time. You're not obligated to put on a cheery face just for me, but if there is something troubling you that I can help you with, I'd be only too willing...

Taylor: It's really nothing.

Todd: Well, now I know there is something troubling you. Every time, in my years in the priesthood, that someone told me that their troubles were 'really nothing' their troubles turned out to be really something.

Taylor: Really, Father, it's really...

Todd: Yes, I know, it's really nothing. Now that we've established that it's really nothing, why don't you tell me what the 'really nothing is' that is bothering you?

Taylor: Well, it's not exactly something I can put a name to. I suppose it comes to this: I feel degraded. I feel that I've been part of a shameful affair.

Todd: Are you referring to the trial and conviction of Paul Davis?

Taylor: Yes.

Todd: Listen, Jonathan, it's not always easy to accept the existence of pure evil. But we know from the tenets of our faith that pure evil exists in the white race. We must oppose that evil with our whole heart, mind, and soul. And evil is not some disembodied spirit, it is located in the hearts of white people, particularly white men. But I'm not telling you something you don't know. You've been raised on the Baltimore Catechism of Vatican IV.

Taylor: Yes, I have.

Todd: Then you know that we are created to love the sacred negro with all our heart, mind, and soul, and to hate all white men who have not gone through the process of metamorphosis.

Taylor: But are white people, and most especially the white males, really so evil? Don't they have some common humanity with the rest of mankind?

Todd: No, they don't. I think in your heart you know they don't. You know your catechism.

Taylor: But then, by what right do we exist? Aren't we white?

Todd: Now you really surprise me. We are not white. We have gone through that great spiritual cleansing that has made us whole again, we have attained oneness with the colored races.

Taylor: But we don't even torture animals, yet Davis was sentenced to be tortured.

Todd: It is a necessary deterrent. After all, animals are not racist.

Taylor: Well, it still troubles me.

Todd: Look, Jonathan, take a week off, go to the mountains or some place. Go on a retreat to Mt. Nelson Mandela, but go somewhere to clear your mind and your soul of the rot that is clouding your vision. You are needed here, don't lose everything you've built up.

Taylor: Well, the trial ended early, so maybe I can afford to take a week's vacation.

Todd: By all means, you can't afford not to.

~~~~~

Act II, Scene 4. The Retreat House on Mt. Le Conte, Now Named Mt. Nelson Mandela, in the Tennessee Great Smoky Mountains.

[It is the fourth day of Taylor's retreat. He has seen no one until today, when he encounters an old man who seems, like Ahab in Melville's Moby Dick, to be a man who has just stepped away from a stake where he was being burned alive.]

Old Man: Greetings, I hope I am not disturbing you.

Taylor: (sitting on the porch with a book). No, I'm just a little surprised to see someone in this area; it's pretty isolated.

Old Man: Yes, it is isolated.

Taylor: May I ask you what you are doing up here?

Old Man: Why, are you some sort of a policeman?

Taylor: Of course not, I'm a priest and this is the retreat house of my order. I didn't mean to pry into your business.

Old Man: Didn't you?

Taylor: Well, I guess I did. You don't usually see white men roaming around the countryside without a permit.

Old Man: How do you know that I don't have a permit?

Taylor: It must be prominently displayed on your outermost garment, and I don't see it on your person.

Old Man: That's very perceptive of you. And in point of fact, you are right, I don't have a permit to roam through these mountains or any other place in the United Republic of the Americas. I am what you would call a recalcitrant white racist. The type of man you would recommend for execution.

Taylor: How do you know that about me?

Old Man: It could be because I saw your picture in the paper during the trial of Paul Davis. Or it could be that you once recommended me for execution.

Taylor: (looks closely at the old man). Have I ever seen you before?

Old Man: I was clean shaven then, without the beard and the long hair, but you still should have recognized me. A man ought to remember the occasion when he sends another man to his death.

Taylor: If what you tell me is true, I can only say I did what my conscience and my duty dictated.

Old Man: I'm sure you did. But that doesn't excuse you. What you did was evil and what you are still doing is evil.

Taylor: (standing up and assuming a defensive posture) What is your purpose here?

Old Man: Calm down, I'm not here to hurt you. Nor am I here to chastise you for sending me to be tortured and executed.

Taylor: Then why are you here?

Old Man: I'm here to play Ananias to your Saul of Tarsus.

Taylor: I don't understand you.

Old Man: When St. Paul was called Saul, he persecuted Christians, but then he encountered the living God on the road to Damascus. After that encounter the Lord sent Ananias to him because our Lord needed Paul, "to bear my name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel."

Taylor: But I'm not this Saul you speak of.

Old Man: Of course you're not Saul, but you are like unto him in that you are persecuting Christians.

Taylor: Even if what you say is true, you are not Ananias or whatever his name was.

Old Man: I'm taking upon me the role of Ananias, and you, even if you are not St. Paul, are going to bear our Lord's name to the Gentiles and Kings and the children of Israel.

Taylor: I have a cell phone with me.

Old Man: Yes?

Taylor: One call and the police will come and get you, you are an escaped white racist.

Old Man: That's true, but what makes you think the police can find me? They couldn't hold me in prison after you marked me for execution, and they'll never be able to get me out of these mountains.

Taylor: What is to stop me from laying hold of you and making you wait for the police?

Old Man: You're welcome to try, but I wouldn't advise it.

Taylor: You must be at least forty years older than I am, surely you couldn't resist me?

Old Man: (he advances on Taylor and throws him to the ground with ease). Let's have no more talk of restraining me against my will.

[The old man helps Taylor up.]

Taylor: All right, I can't restrain you, and you claim you can elude the police. What is it you want, and please don't tell me you want to play Ananias to my Saul.

Old Man: But that is what I'm going to do. Let's go inside the cabin.

~~~~~

Act II, Scene 5. John Taylor's Aside.

The old man spent three days with me. I was the wedding guest, and he was the Ancient Mariner who held me with his glittering eye. I kept telling myself that I should call the police or I should run from his presence. But I was fascinated by him. He told me at the onset that he was going to tell me the actual history of my people and once I had heard their story, the Old Man, henceforth called the Ancient Mariner, said that I would want to resume my place in the European story. What was the European story and what was my place in it? The Ancient Mariner started with God's plan to create mankind: Satan rebelled against Him because he hated the little, sniveling creatures called men. And he showed his contempt and hatred for mankind with the first man in the Garden of Eden. From that time on, according to the Ancient Mariner, Satan has been in a constant state of war with mankind. The European people became his main focus because they loved the Son of God who died on the cross for their sins.

It was all quite new to me. I had heard that Christ had once been important to white racists, and I knew that my church had once (before His name was banned) included His name in the litany along with the other lesser prophets, but I did not know that Christ had once been considered a god nor that He was still revered by some Europeans who were still living.

The Ancient Mariner wove Bible history and European history together in one integral story. Shakespeare, Scott, Dickens, and a whole canon of European poets and sages became, in the tale of the Ancient Mariner, one with Isaiah, Jeremiah, St. Paul, and the Apostles. And they all pointed to one magnificent beginning, the incarnation of Jesus Christ, and one magnificent denouement, the crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus Christ. Maybe if I had grown up in the old liberal days, when the Christ story as told by the European people was still permitted to be told, albeit told only to be ridiculed, I would not have been so impressed with the Ancient Mariner's tale. But it came to me fresh and new, like a bolt of lightning from another world. And there was something else. The Ancient Mariner possessed a passion and fire that I had never known. My whole life had been guided by one principle: to subdue all the passions of my heart, because they might be racist, and

racism was evil. But right in front of me was an impassioned man with a heart on fire and he was an unapologetic white racist! It was something to behold, but still I was not quite convinced. I was intrigued and fascinated by the Ancient Mariner, but I needed to know more.

In the evening of the third day, sitting by the fire in the living room of the retreat house, I asked the Ancient Mariner to tell me his story. He looked at me with his glittering eye, which was pure fire, and said, "I suppose it is time for my story. You've been an attentive listener and you do in part believe. Perhaps my story will be the final push."

~~~~~

Act III, Scene 1. The Ancient Mariner's Aside.

I grew up in what was then called New York City (it is now called New Africa). I was raised in the Roman Catholic faith at a time when Christ was still nominally seen as the Savior of mankind, in that we said our prayers to Him and not to the sacred negro as you do now. But although Christ was still theoretically the reason we went to mass, in those days the social gospel, the gospel of diversity, was the driving force behind the mass. And when Pope Francis I came out with the encyclical on the black race, in which he developed the point that collectively they were co-equals with Christ and just as necessary for our salvation, the stage was set for the eventual elimination of Christ from the mass. But I don't want to get too far ahead of myself. The point is that I was raised with some contact with the actual Christ story. It was not completely suppressed in those days. Nor were the works of literature, music, and art from Christian Europe suppressed in those days as they are now. Still, despite some exposure to the Christ story, it didn't take. I wasn't moved by it. That could have been because of the dry, lifeless way it was presented to me, or possibly it was just my own perversity, but whatever the reason I became completely enthralled with liberalism. I fancied myself a great artist, because I wrote songs and played an electric guitar. If records from that time period had not been expunged, you could look up my name and see that I had a few best-selling albums.

My most popular song was a protest song I wrote at the time when the African nation of Banyon was being run by a white minority, about 10% of the population. There was a black terrorist in that country who was jailed for rape and murder. He was guilty of those crimes and many more, but I, like the entire Western intelligentsia at the time, thought all the blacks in Banyon were saints and all the whites in Banyon were devils. So I wrote a song about the great African Saventi. I still remember, God forgive me, the refrain:

A man without taint
Fights the forces of hell
Saventi the saint
Will fight till he hears the whites' death knell.

I went across America and most of Europe singing that song and others like it. Besides getting rich from my albums, I also earned a letter from President Saventi and an invitation to visit him in Banyon after the fall of the white government and the election of Saventi as the first Banyonese president of the new republic. This was two years after my tour. I eagerly assented. I went to Banyon as a Catholic would go to Rome for an audience with the Pope. Banyon was my Rome and Saventi my Pope.

Before I tell you of my meeting with Saventi I must tell you that I was in a love with a white woman from Banyon. She was my age, which was twenty-six. She wrote to me during my anti-apartheid tour and subsequently came to visit me. She was beautiful and she was a fervent anti-apartheid white. "I am ashamed of my people, in fact, I don't regard them as my people," she said on many occasions. "I will fight apartheid with all my heart and soul, and if it takes bloody revolution, I'll take my part in that." I assured her that I didn't think it would take a bloody revolution.

"The world is against the white supremacists in Banyon. Soon there will be elections and Banyon will be a free black state." I was right about the elections. Apartheid ended two years after Jennifer's visit to the States. But was it bloodless? Only while the election was taking place. Afterwards there was a bloody massacre of whites. But of course I was blind to that massacre as were the rest of the liberal whites throughout the world. I probably would have remained blind had it not been for Jennifer. But let me tell you of my dinner with the great Saventi. I'll pick up the conversational thread as the dinner was winding down."

~~~~~

### Act III, Scene 2.

Saventi: You know it was great artists like yourself who helped pave the way to the Free Republic of Banyon?

AM: I'm glad I played some small part in the establishment of your Republic, but really there were so many people of the West who supported your cause.

Saventi: Yes, but most did not have a public voice. You had a public voice, and you had the courage to use that voice. You are a true citizen of Banyon.

AM: I am honored.

Saventi: But all is not perfect here in Banyon. There are still some in the West, the white fascists, who claim we are allied with the communists and we are massacring the whites. These are base lies.

AM: What can I do to help you?

Saventi: You can now sing the praises of the free black, integrated Banyon just as you used to sing about the evils of white, apartheid Banyon.

AM: I will, I've already started writing a song about the new Banyon.

Saventi: Excellent, and now I know you must be tired. I'll have one of my wives show you to your quarters.

AM: Thank you, I am rather tired. But I must ask you one more question.

Saventi: Just one?

AM: (smiling). Just one for now. I made the acquaintance of one of your citizens, an anti-apartheid activist, during my concert tours. I heard from her regularly up until the election. But since that time, I have not heard from her. I wonder if you could help me get in touch with her.

Saventi: She is a sweetheart of yours?

AM: (blushing) Yes, I suppose she is.

Saventi: Say no more. I will help you find her.

AM: Ah, there is just one difficulty. She may have stopped writing because she has found someone else. I don't want to embarrass her if she really doesn't want to see me.

Saventi: I understand. I will make discreet inquiries and then let you know. What is her name?

AM: Her name is Jennifer Dawson.

Saventi: Don't worry, you shall hear from her, I'll see to that. And in the morning I'll have one of my men show you around the black Free Republic of Banyon so that you can refute the white fascists of your nation.

AM: I don't need to see it in order to believe in the free state of Banyon. I've seen you and I believe in you.

Saventi: As always, you are too kind.

[Exit the AM, with an escort, to his bedchamber]

~~~~~

Act III, Scene 3. Ancient Mariner's Aside.

The next day I was given a sumptuous breakfast, but my host was not present. I was told he had some important business to attend to, by the man who was to be my guide through the capital city of Banyon. I was disappointed that President Saventi could not be my guide, but I certainly understood. He was an important man.

I was taken through sections of the capital city by my black guide along with two armed black bodyguards. "White fascists make it necessary," my guide explained. But I didn't see whites anywhere. What I saw was absolute squalor and hostile

looking black men and women. I tried to beat down my former image of the capital when it had been ruled by whites. The liberals showed those pictures, prior to the revolution, in order to show how disgustingly white the city was. But in doing so they gave people like me a glimpse of a clean, well-run city which was a shocking contrast to the new capital city. But in the end I put it down to “the growing pains of a country that has thrown off colonialism,” and tried to think good thoughts about the new Free Black Republic of Banyon.

Although what I saw of Banyon was not very uplifting, there were whole areas that I was not allowed to see at all. “Too dangerous, there might be white fascists there,” was all I was told. So my tour was not very enlightening or uplifting. When I returned to the Presidential Palace, I was given another wonderful supper, but my host was not in attendance. His first deputy did attend, but when I asked him about Jennifer Dawson, he told me he knew nothing of such a woman nor had “his excellency” told him anything about the matter. I was taken completely by surprise when at the end of the dinner, I was told that I would be taken to the airport at 10 a.m. in the morning.

“I hope you had a pleasant visit with us,” was the final words of the first deputy.

Back in my room I was frantic. I had come to see the new Banyon, but that was really secondary. My main reason for coming had been to see the woman I loved. Now I was told that I had to leave Banyon without seeing her. It was unbelievable to me. How could Saventi send me away without seeing Jennifer? Could it be that he had discovered she had found someone else? That had to be it. That would also explain why I was being sent away so suddenly. The great, kind, and good Saventi wanted to spare me the pain and embarrassment of finding out that the woman I loved was not in love with me. But still, I wanted to see her, because love always hopes against all odds. I didn’t doubt Saventi’s kindness, but I still wanted to see Jennifer. How could I convince Saventi to let me see Jennifer?

What followed was providential, although I wouldn’t have named it so at the time, because I didn’t believe in Providence, I believed in liberalism, and the liberal’s God is the black man.

There was a knock at the window, and through the window came a black Rumpelstiltskin.

“Do you wish to find the young lady called Jennifer Dawson?”

“Yes, do you know of her?”

“Certainly.”

“Could you tell me where she is?”

“No, I cannot tell you, but I can show you where she is, but we must leave here immediately.”

So I left immediately with a pint-sized negro who insisted on being paid \$10,000 American dollars for taking me to Jennifer Dawson. What the greedy little opportunist didn’t know was that I would have paid him ten times that amount. I was rich, I had made a fortune with my anti-apartheid protest songs. But I did have enough sense to withhold \$5,000 of the money.

“You’ll get the rest when I see Jennifer.”

“Certainly, I understand,” the little dwarf intoned in a nauseatingly smooth voice.

The black Rumpelstiltskin did not possess a car, but he knew where I could rent one without any questions asked. So I went with him and paid an exorbitant price for one night’s use of a broken down black Cadillac. The enormously fat negro who rented the car to me seemed to be, facially, a dead ringer for the greasy Rumpelstiltskin. I assumed they were related, which made me feel a little better about the secrecy of my trip. Maybe the fat negro would not squeal on his cousin or brother, whatever the dwarf’s relation to him was.

I did the driving; the dwarfish negro’s legs were too short to reach the gas pedal, while the dwarf gave me directions. After about a 90 minute drive, we came to a vast plain with only a few trees. My companion told me to stop the car at the bottom of the embankment. We both got out of the car.

“This is as far as I go.”

“What do you mean?”

“My cousin will send a car for me, with my two brothers in it. The one will drive me back, and the other will wait for you to drive you back.”

“But I’m not paying you the rest of the money until I see Jennifer.”

“You will see her. If you go to the top of that hill, you can look down and see a prison camp for white fascists. Jennifer Dawson is in that camp.”

“But she was not a white fascist, she was an anti-apartheid activist. This is a horrendous mistake. I will see Saventi about this.”

“It was Saventi who ordered her imprisoned.”

“I don’t believe that!”

“Saventi ordered the imprisonment of all white fascists on the day of his inauguration.”

“That can’t be true, the press would have reported it.”

“Well, they didn’t. And what I tell you is true. Jennifer Dawson is in that prison camp. But if you don’t believe me, that is your privilege, I’ll go now.”

I saw another car pulling up with only one person in it. One of the midget’s cousins must have been following us. I didn’t have a gun, but I had youth and considerable strength on my side. I took my five thousand from the dwarf and beat his cousin to a pulp.

“You won’t get any money at all until you take me to Jennifer Dawson. And if what you say is true, you won’t be paid in full until you help me get her out of that prison.”

The saving grace for me or for any man, and by grace I mean Him from whom all grace flows, was that I had one spark of humanity left in me: I genuinely loved that woman. My love for her made me man enough to treat those two blacks like the savages they were instead of like the deities that I and my fellow liberals said they were.

Through a series of bribes I was able to get Jennifer past the camp guards and out to the bottom of the hill from which we started. What I saw en route to Jennifer’s cell was something I’ll never forget. It was something out of Dante, where poor, tortured men and women, all white men and white women, were suffering through every indignity and every torture ever conceived. If I could have done it, I would have freed them all and killed all their black tormentors. But I couldn’t, so I tried to free Jennifer. When I saw her, I did not at first recognize her. Her naked body was emaciated, and she was a mass of bruises from head to foot. Only her eyes, which burned with a special light, told me that she was Jennifer Dawson. I wrapped Jennifer in my shirt and carried her from the prison. I placed her in the back seat of the car. When I heard cries of, “A prisoner has escaped!” I started up the car. Neither the midget nor his cousin tried to stop me, but they kept yelling to the guards to hurry up before I got away. We did get away from the immediate vicinity of the prison camp, but when the car ran out of gas, I was forced to walk on, carrying Jennifer in my arms, until we left the desert behind and came to one of Banyon’s many jungles.

I spent three days trying to get deeper into the jungle without taxing Jennifer’s strength too much. I didn’t know if we were being followed or not. But I didn’t want to make us easy to find if we were being followed. I carried Jennifer a good deal of the time, which made for slow going, but Jennifer simply couldn’t walk very far. On the third day I found a rather hospitable looking cave that I thought would serve as a place where Jennifer and I could stay while she regained her strength. As it turned out Jennifer and I were not the only whites who had decided to seek refuge in the cave. We had stumbled on the beginnings of a white colony in the midst of the jungles of Banyon.

~~~~~

Act IV. The Colony.

[Wooded area outside the cave. The Ancient Mariner’s name was and is David Morgan.]

DM: I can’t tell from the outside just how far that cave extends.

Reverend Hill: No, you can’t. That is why we decided it made a good refuge for us.



DM: How many are you?

RH: There are exactly 441 white refugees who are making their home here. There will be 443 if you and your lady stay here.

DM: How did you all get here? Did you come here together?

RH: No, we didn't come here together. When the terrible bloodletting started, the whites who could fled to wherever they found a road not blocked with black savages. Most of them were cut down, but some made it to the jungle. At first we were a small band of twenty, but gradually, over the last six months, we have increased our number to the 441 you see here.

DM: Jennifer has been telling me a little of what happened after the end of apartheid, but I didn't press her for too many details, because it seems to exhaust her to talk about it too much.

RH: That is understandable.

DM: She was raped and tortured.

RH: Yes, I assumed as much. I'm afraid that is the norm, not an aberration in the new black Free Republic of Banyon. On the night of the election I saw white women being dragged through the streets, tortured, raped, and made, while being tortured and raped, to suffer every other indignity that could be heaped on human beings. They were violated, not only in their bodies, but in their souls. Some white men fought for their wives and children, but they were unarmed and unprepared for the savagery of the attack. Most of the men were butchered.

DM: May I ask how you managed to escape?

RH: Let me first say that I didn't deserve to escape. I was one of the clergymen, we were legion, who clamored for the end of apartheid. It was the Christian thing to do, I said, because we were all God's children and so on and so on. Reality and I were not friends. But I was forced to look at the reality of the black man on that night of sorrows, the night that Banyon became a free black republic.

I had called for a special election evening service to give praise to God for setting the blacks of Banyon free from their oppressors. I was confident that they would be freed, because the polls said that the anti-apartheid forces would win. The relentless pressure from the West and from whites like me from inside Banyon had finally turned the whites in Banyon against themselves. They wanted the world to love them, they no longer wanted to be called racists.

DM: Did everyone here vote for an end to apartheid?

RH: No, there are many here that voted against ending apartheid, but they still had to suffer from the sinful, willful ignorance of people like me. But I must say there has been no rancor from those people. We are all in the same boat now, and they have chosen not to shun us.

DM: I'm not a native of Banyon, but I was an anti-apartheid activist in my country.

RH: I know that, I recognized you when you came in. I used to have some of your albums.

DM: It seems like years ago, but it was only one week ago that I was being wined and dined by Saventi. Now, I plan to kill him.

RH: I don't think you will be allowed anywhere near him.

DM: We'll see. Right now, I want to help Jennifer recover. Is there much danger of discovery here?

RH: There is a slight danger, but the natural savages of color do not like to venture out of the friendly confines of the city. Strange, isn't it? You would think, based on the rhetoric of men like me, that the noble savages would be more comfortable in the jungle than the unnatural white men. But that is not the case. The negroes have been too busy, for the last six months, looting and destroying the formerly white cities of Banyon, to venture out into the jungles of Banyon. So we are safe for a time. But eventually, when they have made the cities unlivable, they will come looking for white settlements to loot. That is when they will get a surprise.

DM: How so?

RH: They will find formerly passive whites who will fight to the last man. Everyone here now knows about the black race.

DM: Will you have a chance?

RH: Not much of a chance, but we will have no chance at all if we don't fight.

DM: You say you were an Anglican cleric, but the people here consult you about their physical ailments.

RH: I was a late vocation. After I graduated from medical school, I decided I was not cut out for medicine. I shifted to divinity school and took orders in the Anglican Church. From that time on, I plagued the world and the whites of Banyon with my self-righteous pap about freedom and equality.

DW: As a medical man, what do you think of Jennifer's chances?

RH: As a medical man, I can't say what her chances are. She was raped by Saventi and then he turned her over to his special troops to be raped and tortured by them. Then she was taken to that prison camp where you found her. It's a wonder she has lived this long. I think her desire to see you again kept her alive.

DM: When you spoke with her what did she say?

RH: She felt guilty for her part in the blood bath, that much I know. But I assured her that she was not alone, that I was a greater offender than she was. Still, she had to tell me of that night.

"The bloodletting was beyond horror, Reverend, it was something unearthly, it was as if the devil had come up from hell to urge his black minions on and on to greater and greater atrocities. I saw true evil that night. All my life I had spoken out against evil white men. I realized on that terrible night that it is only white men, white men who love the devil's antagonist, who can help against the evil of black barbarism. I spit on the U.N. and all those phony freedom loving organizations that bid us love the noble black savages while hating our own people."

DM: I did the same thing.

RH: So did I and so did all the clear-thinking, kind, compassionate liberals of the West. In the name of love, we demeaned the God of love in order to go whoring after the devil's own, the black barbarians.

DM: Is there really a devil, Reverend?

RH: Yes, there is. What has happened in Banyon is the proof. Mere psychology cannot explain Banyon. We need recourse to the Gospels in order to understand what is happening here. Our Lord believed in the devil, and He told us to shun the devil and all his works. What have I, and my fellow liberal clerics done? We have embraced the devil and all his works by our support of the colored heathens against the Christ-bearing race.

DM: That is a strong condemnation of everything I once believed in.

RH: Is it true? That's all that you need to ask yourself. Is it true that there is a devil and there is a loving God who is the antagonist of the devil?

DM: But it goes against everything modern, everything...

RH: Everything scientific and reasonable?

DM: Yes.

RH: Is what happened in Banyon reasonable and scientific? It is demonic. Science and reason are man-made abstractions. Reality is of the spirit. There is a devil and there is a God, our Lord Jesus Christ. That is the reality we must come to terms with.

DM: I've never really considered Christ as an actual reality. He was always, in the church I was brought up in, a kind of social worker, a man ahead of his time who paved the way for civil rights.

RH: That is what I was brought up to believe as well, although in my time there were still a few clergymen who actually believed that Christ was the Son of the living God. Actually, there was only one that I can think of. He was later barred from preaching and removed from his parish for preaching racism. His name was...

DM: It was Christopher Grey, wasn't it?

RH: Yes, it was. I take it you've heard of him.

DM: Yes, all liberals, and I was certainly a liberal, knew of Christopher Grey. He was racist and he was...

RH: Christian?

DM: Yes, and we all hated him with a passion.

RH: So did I. I once met him when he came to Banyon – this was after he was barred from the Anglican Church. He came here to visit a friend who had fled Kenya when Kenya became an independent black state. His friend kept telling us what would happen if we copied Kenya, but of course we didn't listen to him. Grey gave some public lectures supporting his friend's views of African affairs. I attended one of those lectures and confronted him afterwards.

"By what right do you come here and preach hate?" was my first question to him when he stepped away from the podium.

Christopher Grey replied, "I preach the hatred of the devil and all his works, if that is what you mean by hate. But there is a difference between your hate and my hate. Your hate is grounded in the hatred of the living God, who, since you can't strike back at him directly, you attack by attempting to destroy the Christ-bearing race. I hate the devil, because I love Christ and His people. Surely you can see the difference?"

Of course I couldn't see the difference at all. I was too filled with hatred for that man and what he stood for to see any truth in anything he said.

DM: Was that the last time you saw him?

RH: No, it wasn't. That was three years ago. I saw him just six months ago on the eve of the anti-apartheid election. He saved my life.

DM: Was he living in Banyon?

RH: No, he came, once again, at the request of his friend, to help his friend and his family escape from Banyon. He got his friend and his friend's family out of Banyon and then came for me. I was locked up in the white compound, scheduled to be executed the next morning. That night he came to the prison, strangled the two guards and set me and forty other white captives free. The others he took back to Britain with him, but I decided to remain here.

DM: Why?

RH: To try to atone for my sins against Christ and His people. Gradually, over the last six months, I managed to give aid and comfort to a large number of the despised and rejected whites of Banyon. I should have been attending to their needs during the twenty years that I was a cleric here, but I was too busy doing the devil's work, attending to the needs of Satan's black minions.

DM: They certainly were my gods and I suppose they were and still are the gods of the white European people.

RH: Yes, they are. I don't know the outcome of all this. All we can do is try to serve the living God in and through our people. Which is the way of the cross, the way of all our people until the advent of reason, science, and negro worship destroyed the European peoples' belief in the living God and in themselves as the Christ-bearing race. Every white man and every white woman must ask themselves where they belong, if not with their own people. Where will they learn to love if it is not by their own racial hearth fire? I, who preached love for all mankind, hated my own people. I was a pariah, fit for nothing but treachery against my own people. Neither you nor Jennifer need to beat yourselves to death over your own guilt; it was my responsibility, the responsibility of my entire generation, to preach the love of Christ through the love of one's own, one's kith and kin.

DM: Still, there is this matter of a white man's honor. I've only had a week to ponder my mistakes, or should I say sins. But all those romances of Walter Scott, which will be banned in the future no doubt, which I dismissed as part of my

unenlightened past, have come rushing to the forefront of my memory. A Walter Scott hero would not allow his intended to be raped without avenging that outrage. I am going to kill Saventi. I know his death will not restore white Banyon, some other black thug will take Saventi's place, but I must kill him. It is part of the code, a code I've disgraced by prancing around the world singing folk songs about the noble black savage. That code, dormant for most of my life, has taken hold of me. I'm new to this Christian European thing, Reverend. Am I wrong?

RH: In wanting to kill Saventi?

DM: Yes.

RH: No, I don't think it would be wrong to kill Saventi. It would be a great good, but there are prudential concerns. You don't want to just throw your life away in a futile attempt. And what about Jennifer? She needs you.

DM: I don't think Jennifer would want me to kill Saventi to avenge her honor, but I do think she wants me to fight for the white people of Banyon. And the one, Jennifer's honor, is connected to the honor of every white in Banyon, the murdered, raped, and tortured whites of Banyon. And I am the only white man that might be able to get near Saventi. I don't think he knows precisely what happened to me. The black midget and his cousin certainly won't be talking; they acted without his orders. So I think if I suddenly show up with some plausible story about where I was, Saventi might be fooled and give me another audience. Then I'll kill him.

RH: Speak to Jennifer before you go, that is all I ask. Then go with my blessing.

~~~~~

Act V, Scene 1. Two Weeks Later.

[David Morgan (the Ancient Mariner) is walking with Jennifer in the white encampment.]

Jennifer: This is the first time I've walked outside of the cave.

DM: How does it feel?

Jennifer: Wonderful, but I don't think I can manage much of a walk.

DM: That's all right. We'll go back whenever you say. I'm just glad to see you up. Rev. Hill says you've made outstanding progress.

Jennifer: I guess Heidi's grandfather was right?

DM: What do you mean?

Jennifer: In that story – I read it when I was a little girl – goat milk and faith is what helps Heidi's friend Klara to walk.

DM: Is it possible for either of us to have faith, the kind of faith that Rev. Hill has?

Jennifer: Rev. Hill's faith is of recent vintage, too. Yes, I think it is possible. I'm only an infant, as regards my faith, but I can feel it inside of me, it is real.

DM: I've only mentioned it once, but now that you're on the mend I must...

Jennifer: You must kill Saventi, is that what you want to tell me?

DM: Yes.

Jennifer: I love you, David, and I'm afraid for you, but I won't ask you not to go. I used to consider myself a feminist. In fact I was such a feminist that I felt guilty when I began to fall in love with you. Real feminists do not love men. But my faith has changed that. I see that there are things a man, a man of honor, must do or else he is not a man. A woman must respect that.

DM: Will you marry me before I go?

Jennifer: Yes.

~~~~~

Act V, Scene 2. Morgan Has Obtained a Private Audience with Saventi.

Saventi: We were very worried about you. Where have you been all this time?

DM: In the desert. Strange as it sounds, I was abducted from my room and taken to some place in the deserts of Banyon.

Saventi: How far did your abductors take you?

DM: I don't know, I was unconscious.

Saventi: Then how did you know you were in the desert?

DM: When I regained consciousness, that's where I was.

Saventi: Who were your abductors?

DM: I don't know.

Saventi: Why, because all black men look alike to you?

DM: Aren't you assuming they were black? How do you know they weren't white fascists?

Saventi: Were they white?

DM: No, they were black.

Saventi: Then why play games with me?

DM: I'm not playing games with you.

Saventi: Yes, you are, Mr. Folk Singer, the great champion of black Banyon. You lying, white fascist. I know where you were. You were with that whore, Jennifer...

[Morgan moves towards Saventi, but Saventi draws a revolver and points it at his head.]

One more step and I'll blow your brains out. Guards! [The guards enter.] Take this man away.

~~~~~

Act V, Scene 3. Saventi's office.

[Saventi is talking to Kantini, the head of his secret police, the man in charge of hunting down white fascists.]

Kantini: I don't see why we must treat him differently than the rest of the white prisoners. I've refrained, at your orders, from torturing him, and he has been fed like a king, but I still must say I don't understand.

Saventi: Kantini, you are a good and loyal pit bull, but I'm afraid you do not understand the politics of our particular situation. We control Banyon because the liberal whites love us; they have created a fantasy of the poor but noble black savage who needs their aid and their pity. I know this to be true because I have studied at their universities.

Kantini: I spit on their pity.

Saventi: So do I, and I'll go further than that — I hate the liberals of the West more than I hate the white reactionaries.

Kantini: I hate all whites.

Saventi: As I do, Kantini. I assure you, we will kill them all. But we must be wise. We must not give our enemies, and we have a few in the West, the opportunity to say we are behaving just like the white fascists who used to rule Banyon. This David Morgan fellow is very famous in the United States and Europe. If we torture and kill him, the West will take note.

Kantini: But surely you aren't going to let him live?

Saventi: Of course I'm not going to let him live. But it must seem right to the liberal West. They must be shown by a reliable witness that David Morgan has become a white racist.

Kantini: And who will be that reliable witness?

Saventi: Pope Francis.

Kantini: That pig?

Saventi: Yes, that pig will be my reliable witness. His papal visit is next week. He wants to give the black Republic of Banyon his blessing. I intend to make sure that Pope Francis is my witness to the world. He will see that David Morgan is a white racist that I must execute for the good of the state. Never fear, my good and faithful pit bull, David Morgan shall die.

Kantini: Will your Excellency allow me the privilege?

Saventi: Yes.

Kantini: Then he shall die slowly and painfully.

~~~~~

Act V, Scene 4. Pope Francis's "Interview" with David Morgan, in His Jail Cell.

Pope Francis: I've heard terrible things about you, my son.

DM: What did the great Saventi tell you?

PF: That you joined in a plot, a plot of the white fascists hiding in the jungle, to kill President Saventi.

DM: I did try to kill Saventi, but there was no plot. It was my own idea, no one else was responsible.

PF: But what could possibly have possessed you? You were such a good friend of the black people of Banyon. Was it because of that woman?

DM: What woman?

PF: Jennifer Dawson.

DM: What did he tell you about her?

PF: He told me that you were in love with her, but when you discovered that Saventi had made her his fourth wife you went berserk. You stormed out of the Presidential Palace and eventually ended up with the white fascists, plotting your revenge on President Saventi. My son, we all must suffer disappointments in life, and disappointments in love are some of the worst of them, but we must persevere, we must be true to our ideals despite disappointments. President Saventi is a saint. He forgives you for your attempt on his life, and he will permit you to leave the country on the condition that you renounce all attempts on his life and never write or speak a word against President Saventi or the Free Black Republic of Banyon. I think those are more than generous terms. If you accept them, I am to be your safe convoy back to Europe and from there, you can return to your homeland.

DM: I can't accept those terms, because they are a lie. Saventi is a monster. He raped Jennifer Dawson and then turned her over to his black henchmen to be raped and tortured in a white prison camp. I saw one of those prison camps, your Holiness, and they were something from hell. I won't renounce Jennifer or my people. I intend, if I live, to tell the world what I saw here and to kill Saventi.

PF: President Saventi told me you would fabricate lies to justify your hatred of him. Please relent, it's not too late to stop your execution.

DM: It's not too late for you to become a white Christian. Why won't you believe me?

PF: Because I believe Saventi. I looked into his face and I saw holiness.

DM: I have nothing more to say to you then.

PF: I'm still willing to be your safe convoy if you'll only repent. Otherwise you will be executed. I can't blame Saventi, he can't permit such plots against the state.

DM: I thought you were against capital punishment.

PF: Not in this case, this is a legitimate execution. White racism must be purged from the face of the earth.

DM: You go to hell.

[Later that night, Morgan is asleep in his cell when he is awakened by a strong hand on his shoulder. When he looks up he sees a very large white man. He also sees that his cell door has been torn from its hinges.]

Christopher Grey: It's time to leave this place. Your people are waiting for you in the jungle.

DM: Who are you?

CG: My name is Christopher Grey, and we must move quickly.

DM: I can't leave until I kill Saventi.

CG: He is dead and so is Kantini.

DM: How?

CG: Never mind how. Come with me.

~~~~~

Act V, Scene 5.

[The Ancient Mariner, David Morgan, concludes his story as told to John Taylor.]

Ancient Mariner: That was some 40 years ago, I suppose Christopher Grey was in his early sixties back then. He is still alive today. He is over one-hundred years old.

Taylor: I've heard some terrible things about him.

AM: Of course you have, you've heard those things from liberals.

Taylor: Who is he then?

AM: He is flesh and blood; that is certain. But he is a kind of Melchizedek, the mysterious high king of Salem, who came seemingly out of nowhere to aid Abraham. Now mind you, I'm not saying Christopher Grey is Melchizedek, but I am saying he has done what Melchizedek did. On many, many occasions he has come to the aid of Christians who seemed destined to perish at the hands of colored barbarians or liberals. I can't recount all the missions of mercy he has successfully carried off. My case was just one of his many miraculous missions of mercy. When he took me out of that cell, we traveled through the Banyon desert for many miles. As we approached the jungle where Jennifer and the rest of the white Banyonites were, I looked up at the sky and couldn't help but feel that I was back with the shepherds who were vouchsafed a vision of the Star of Bethlehem. I knew nothing about stars, so I didn't know what the modern name for the star was that shone so brightly that night. But for me it was the Star of Bethlehem. Its light gave my new-found faith a special intensity and fervor. Christopher Grey didn't try to discourage me when I got on my knees before the star. He got down on his knees with me and recited Scripture:

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.
And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.
And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.
For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.
And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.
And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,
Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.
And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

Taylor: Once you got back to Rev. Hill and the other whites, did you take up residence there?

DM: No, we didn't. Jennifer wanted to stay with the white remnant of Banyon, to try and be of some use. You see, she wanted to make up for her treason. But Rev. Hill thought that she could get better medical care in the States. At that time the States still gave medical care to whites.

Taylor: I've heard of those times.

DM: The USA eventually went the way of Banyon and outlawed whiteness, but for about 12 years Jennifer was able to receive medical treatment in the United States. We were told by all the doctors that Jennifer, because of all the injuries she had endured at the hands of the black barbarians, could not bear children. But ten years after our return to the States she gave birth to a baby boy. He is alive and well today with a family of his own.

Taylor: Does he live here with your wife and you?

AM: He lives near me. He has lived in the White Underground since he was five years old.

Taylor: And your wife?

AM: We had 38 good years together. She died two years ago. We both tried, during that time, to support the whites in Banyon and the United States. I continued my song writing, but of course my pro-white folk songs were banned. Still, we did what we could. I think I would have given up if it hadn't been for Jennifer. She looked on me as a rock, so I had to be one.

Taylor: And now?

AM: The dead are not dead; she still needs me to be a rock, and I need her to be my inspiration. Of course, we are both sustained by Him and through Him.

Taylor: What became of Christopher Grey?

AM: He returned to Britain in order to be a thorn in the side of the Moslems and the liberals, but he has visited these shores on other mercy missions. He has friends throughout Europe, the United States, and Banyon.

Taylor: This all seems so fantastical. Your world is so different from the world I have known.

AM: It rests with you to decide which world you belong to. I have told you of your people and their God.

~~~~~

Act V, Scene 6. Two Weeks Later.

[John Taylor is in the rectory with Father Todd.]

Father Todd: Do you feel well enough to assist at mass this afternoon?

Taylor: No, I don't, can we wait a little while longer?

Father Todd: You'll forgive me if I seem unsympathetic, but you don't seem disabled. Why can't you assist at mass? It's been two weeks since your alleged beating at the hands of Paul Davis.



Taylor: What do you mean by my 'alleged' beating?

Father Todd: I don't think you were really beaten at all. I think you played Sidney Carton to his Charles Darnay.

Taylor: I don't know what you are talking about...

Father Todd: Sidney Carton, in Dickens' A Tale of Two Cities, changed places with Charles Darnay and went to the guillotine in Jacobin France instead of Darnay.

Taylor: I've never read Dickens; his books are on the Index. What were you doing reading a condemned book?

Father Todd: Don't try to put the blame on me. Dickens' works were not on the Index when I was a young man.

Taylor: You mean in those terrible days when everything white and Christian was not proscribed by our wonderful government?

Father Todd: There it is.

Taylor: What?

Father Todd: Outright blasphemy. I haven't forgotten why you went on vacation. You had doubts about your vocation as a priest consecrated to the sacred negro.

Taylor: Okay, Father, I will tell you the truth. I no longer believe in the sacred negro. I believe in the God of my people. I believe in the Lord Jesus Christ. I believe that He died to save me from sin and death, and I love Him in and through the people of my own race. I freed Paul Davis because I was in a position to free Paul Davis. I had him change clothes with me, and then he tied me up and left the prison pretending to be me. The authorities believed that he had beaten me and changed places with me. Now, you know the truth. But I must tell you that I only wish that I could free all the white captives of this hideous monstrosity of a church that you serve, and I, God have mercy on me, used to serve.

Father Todd: (screaming). You filthy, degenerate, treacherous snake! I'll tell them everything and you'll die slowly, painfully, and justly.

Taylor: All in the name of liberty, equality, fraternity, and the sacred negro, isn't that about the size of it?

Father Todd: I won't listen to this blasphemy any longer.

[Father Todd reaches for the cell phone on the table.]

Taylor: I'm afraid I anticipated you, Father Todd. Your cellphone is permanently out of order.

Father Todd: That won't stop me. I'll drive to the government offices to report you.

[The Ancient Mariner, aka David Morgan, enters the room with four male companions.]

DM: I'm afraid you will not be able to visit with the government officials, Father Todd.

FT: Who are you?

DM: We are members of the European resistance movement, the people you call white fascists. You are going to be tried for your crimes against your people. You had better pray to the God that you have forsaken that we are more merciful than the god and the people that you serve.

[Exit Father Todd with two of the white males.]

Taylor: What will happen to him?

DM: He won't be tortured, I'll promise you that much.

Taylor: Will he be executed?

DM: It's possible, if he seems irredeemable. But first he'll be imprisoned. He'll be fed well and treated humanely. Then comes the big 'if' – If we see that he truly and sincerely has left the Church of the sacred negro in order to return to Christ's church, we will find a place for him in the White Underground. But that will be up to him. Right now, he is headed for prison.

Taylor: How is Davis doing?

DM: He's doing fine. He never thought he would see his wife and children again. Now it looks like he'll be around to see them grow up white and Christian.

Taylor: That's good.

DM: He is very grateful to you. His wife says they will name their next child after you. John, if he is a boy and Joan if she is a girl.

Taylor: That is very kind of them, but it was you...

DM: Nonsense. You were a hero, a real life Sidney Carton.

Taylor: I'll have to read that book someday.

DM: You'll get a chance to read all of Dickens' works where you are going. Arthur's Britain does not ban Christian works.

Taylor: Are you sure that I belong in Britain?

DM: Yes, I'll miss you, but right now the government officials are too focused on you. You need time to live and grow as a Christian. Arthur's Britain is the place for you. If you leave tonight, William and James will put you on the ship with some other future Britons; you will arrive in time for Christmas.

Taylor: All right, it's settled. But I won't say goodbye – we shall meet again.

DM: Most certainly. [They embrace.]

~~~~~

POSTSCRIPT: Three weeks later, Christmas Eve Day.

[Taylor is with Christopher Grey in his cottage at Tintagel.]

Taylor: Is it true that on the first two Christmas Eves here, you performed the entire Christmas Carol from memory?

Grey: Yes, like my hero, Sir Walter Scott, I have a photographic memory. The works I want to remember stay with me. But last year, our third Christmas in the new-old Britain, I decided to dole out the parts. I was the Ghost of Christmas Past and the narrative voice. This year, our fourth Christmas, I'll just be the narrative voice.

Taylor: I'm a little nervous about my part. I only read the Christmas Carol for the first time on the boat coming over here.

Grey: You'll be fine.

Taylor: Is this typecasting?

Grey: (laughing). No, you are playing Scrooge as a young man because you are younger. After all, you are a repentant Scrooge – if you played him that would be typecasting.

Taylor: (laughing). Well, I only hope I don't ruin it.

Grey: You won't.

Taylor: I certainly can identify with Scrooge after his conversion. He is so happy that he is a light as a feather. Do I have a right to such happiness?

Grey: Don't put the grace of God in that category. None of us have any rights – we have His love and that is everything.

Taylor: Whomever I talk to here, they seem to be of one accord – “Christopher Grey is a man who walks with God.” How does a man like myself learn to walk with God?

Grey: Just love Him in and through your people.

Taylor: That's all?

Grey: That is everything.

Taylor: Rev. Grey, I don't mean to burden you, particularly on Christmas Eve day, but I would like to know more of your story. You understand that I do not ask for your story in a spirit of mere intellectual curiosity?

Grey: Yes, I understand that. There is something from my past that might help you. It's not my whole story, but it certainly has determined what the content of my life's story has become.

Neither of my parents were Church of England, they were what was called 'non-conformist,' in that they attended a Protestant Gospel-based church, but they were not narrow sectarians. If you believed that Christ was the Son of God who died for our sins, my parents looked on you as their fellow Christian. Both my parents were large in stature, my mother was very tall for a woman, and my father was a raw-boned, muscular man well over 6'6" tall. I only bring that into the story because, as you'll see, it is going to have something to do with my path in life. It's a wondrous thing, how seemingly irrelevant things can shape our destinies.

With such parents, and with the fruits of the earth to nourish me, I grew up to be quite a strong, muscular young man. I don't think my spirit was as strong as my body was though. I accepted my parents' faith, but I didn't pay as much attention to my spiritual life as I did to my physical life. I lifted weights, which I forged at the farm in our blacksmith shop, and the weightlifting added to my natural strength inherited from my parents. Don't worry, this is all leading somewhere.

Taylor: (laughing). I'm not going to sleep, I assure you.

Grey: Okay. I never had any desire, in my young manhood, to do anything but farming as my life's work. I pictured myself marrying some pretty farm girl and settling down on a farm near my parents' farm. And while I was preparing for that life I indulged my two passions – wrestling and weightlifting.

It was the wrestling that changed my destiny. In order to be successful as a wrestler – and I was quite successful as a country wrestler – you needed more than strength, you also needed endurance. So almost every night, after my farm chores were done, I did three to five miles of roadwork. I didn't do my running in the morning because I started the farm work so early that I really wasn't able to fit the running in then. I knew all the roads in the area and there were virtually no cars in those days, the country folk were still using horse coaches and carts, so there was very little danger of running into a vehicle in the dark. Looking back on it now, I realize I was in more danger than I thought. The British people in those days were allowed to bear arms. I never considered the fact that with my size and in the dark, a farmer could easily have mistaken me for a large animal of some kind and blasted me with his shotgun. But I ran in the darkness, completely oblivious to any danger. That is not a deliberate metaphor for my spiritual state at the time, but you can take it for one.

Now I come to the night when God called on me by name. I suppose I'm open to the usual charges of seeing divine intervention in an accidental circumstance, but it is my conviction that what happened on that night, so many years ago, when I was 20, was no accidental circumstance.

I was about two miles into my run when a horse-driven carriage, going extremely fast, too fast for safety, passed me on the road. In fact I had to dive into a ditch to avoid being hit by the carriage. As I got up I noticed that whoever was driving the carriage had stopped about 100 yards up the road. A young woman got out and ran back toward me. She was visibly upset, almost in a state of hysteria. At this point, let me shift to the dramatic mode, which is the way I see the events of that night.

~~~~~

Young Woman: Are you hurt?

Young Grey: No ma'am, I'm not hurt, but I must tell you that you were going too fast for these roads and...

Young Woman: Yes, I know, but I have to prevent something terrible from happening. Now, if you're not hurt, I must be going.

Young Grey: Wait, if you must get somewhere in a hurry, I can take you there. I know these roads.

Young Woman: (looking me straight in the eye) Will you take me where I want to go without asking questions?

Young Grey: (looking her in the eyes) Yes.

Young Woman: Then let's go.

~~~~~

Taylor: You really went with her without asking questions?

Grey: You must understand that I was young and a romantic at heart. I know such things are not even spoken of today, especially in the world you've come from. But for me it was the fulfillment of the deepest yearning of my heart – to do battle against the forces of evil, and I believed anyone opposed to that fair lady had to be evil, for the sake of a damsel in distress, was all that a romantic could ask for.

Taylor: Was it all you had hoped for?

Grey: Yes. We went about two miles farther down the road and then she asked me to stop. She had reason to believe that her younger sister, blinded by a fatal infatuation, had run off with an older man. My lady knew, by instinct, that the man was evil. And by evil she meant diabolical.

"We might encounter anything in that grove where she was told to meet him. Are you willing to face anything for a woman you don't even know?" she asked me.

I told her I was. Then we proceeded to the grove in the woods. What I saw sent chills down my spine. The sister was bound and gagged, stretched out on some kind of altar. There were present one white man, dressed in Satanic robes, and he was assisted by four loin-cloth attired black men. The white Satanist was going through a satanic ritual with the obvious intent of sacrificing my lady's sister to the devil. My blood was up with that charity of honor and I rushed upon the demonic white man. But before I could reach him I had to deal with his black henchmen. That didn't take long. Once I had disposed of them, I turned to deal with the diabolist. First, he pointed the sacrificial knife at me, but then, surveying my size and the look in my eye, he pulled a revolver from out of his robes and pointed it at my heart, saying, "One step further, and you die. I command you to go back, in the name of Satan, I command you!"

"In the name of Christ, I defy you."

Taylor: I presume he missed?

Grey: He fired at point-blank range and missed.

Taylor: What happened to him?

Grey: I killed him.

Taylor: And his henchmen?

Grey: I thought I made that clear, I killed them when they tried to stop me from preventing the sacrifice.

Taylor: That must have been rather traumatic, to kill five men like that at such a young age?

Grey: I wouldn't use the term 'traumatic' – I don't like the terminology of psychology.

Taylor: I'm sorry, it will take some time to divest myself of the trappings of my old life.

Grey: I'm not reproaching you. I just want to keep things clear. The incident stirred up something deep inside of me, but it was not bloodlust, nor was it remorse for what I had done. What it stirred up in me was something that Edmund Burke said was missing in the French people during the bloody French Revolution. He called it, "that charity of honor." It is the

white Christian's response to the murder of other white Christians and to the destruction of God's image in man. That is what stirred within me that night, and that is what I, and every white man who is still Christian, lives by. There was an instinct inside of me, deeper than reason, telling me that I had to kill in defense of innocence. The Christian heart will see us through where reason fails.

Taylor: Why did he miss?

Grey: I can't prove this, but I think the words 'Jesus Christ' made him flinch just enough to shoot wide. There is great power in the Word made flesh, and His word was made flesh in my heart on that night.

Taylor: There are similarities between your story and David Morgan's story.

Grey: Every white Christian is called to fight the devil and his works. It might not always be a physical fight, although in our current post-Christian era, it is often likely to be, but the spiritual battle is always with us. What I encountered on that night was unusual in that the white diabolist, a professor, actually believed in Satan. Most liberals then and now do Satan's will, but they do not actually believe in Satan. But what that liberal was doing, sacrificing a white Christian on the altars of Satan, with the aid of colored heathens, was to become the liberals' religion in the 20th and the 21st centuries. I have lived a long life, I've seen the liberals destroy all of Christian Europe, and now, thank God, I've lived to see the beginnings of the European people's return to Christian Europe. You shall be part of that movement – the great homecoming of the European people.

Taylor: What happened to the two women?

Grey: The fair damsel became my wife, and her sister lived many happy years with a Christian husband. They had a large family. My wife died young, but she has never left my side. It won't be long now till I see her again face to face.

Taylor: Is that incident what made you become a clergyman?

Grey: Yes, I never wanted, before that evening, to be anything but a farmer.

Taylor: Any regrets?

Grey: No, even though I was finally dismissed from my parish for 'racism' I got to meet many Christians and do some good in my work as a clergyman.

Taylor: Is there a true church?

Grey: Yes, but it is not the Anglican Church or the Roman Catholic Church or any of the other organized churches. Christ cannot be put in a closed box. He is not, as my friend C. S. Lewis said in his Narnia series, a tame lion. Christ's church consists of those who believe in the Lord Jesus Christ as true God and true man. And when I refer to belief, I'm not referring to an intellectual assertion of the truths of Christianity. I'm talking about an interior conviction that Christ is our Savior.

Taylor: How does one come to that faith?

Grey: Through your people. Stay by your racial hearth fire, stay with Christ, and all will be well. Now that I've told you a little bit about my beginnings, let us come to the present. Don't worry about your part in the play, you'll be fine. I'm sure your performance will be worthy of Dickens. He and all of Europe's honored dead will be with us today. Did you ever read what Dickens said about Christmas and our honored dead?

Taylor: No, I haven't. I'm afraid I have a lot to catch up on.

Grey: This is what he wrote: [Grey recites from memory]

On this day we shut out Nothing!

"Pause," says a low voice. "Nothing? Think!"

"On Christmas Day, we will shut out from our fireside, Nothing."

"Not the shadow of a vast City where the withered leaves are lying deep?" the voice replies. "Not the shadow that darkens the whole globe? Not the shadow of the City of the Dead?"

Not even that. Of all days in the year, we will turn our faces towards that City upon Christmas Day, and from its silent hosts bring those we loved, among us. City of the Dead, in the blessed name wherein we are gathered together at this time, and in the Presence that is here among us according to the promise, we will receive, and not dismiss, thy people who are dear to us!

Taylor: That is beautiful.

Grey: Yes, it is. After tonight's service and play, we'll have all sorts of games and parties on Christmas Day. It's for the children. We have a lot of children in Christian Britain. You are welcome to come to any of the festivities that strike your fancy.

Taylor: Thank you, from the bottom of my heart.

~~~~~

Finis. Christmas Eve in Christian Britain.

[The play ends with Grey as the narrative voice]:

Scrooge was better than his word. He did it all, and infinitely more; and to Tiny Tim, who did NOT die, he was a second father. He became as good a friend, as good a master, and as good a man as the good old city knew, or any other good old city, town, or borough, in the good old world. Some people laughed to see the alteration in him, but he let them laugh, and little heeded them; for he was wise enough to know that nothing ever happened on this globe, for good, at which some people did not have their fill of laughter in the outset, and knowing that such as these would be blind anyway, he thought it quite as well that they should wrinkle up their eyes in grins, as have the malady in less attractive forms. His own heart laughed: and that was quite enough for him.

He had no further intercourse with Spirits, but lived upon the Total Abstinence Principle, ever afterwards; and it was always said of him, that he knew how to keep Christmas well, if any man alive possessed the knowledge. May that be truly said of us, and all of us! And so, as Tiny Tim observed, God Bless Us, Every One!

Grey: And now, please sing with me: [All the white Britons join in song]

All:

Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;  
The darkness deepens; Lord, with me abide!  
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,  
Help of the helpless, oh, abide with me.

Swift to its close ebbs out life's little day;  
Earth's joys grow dim, its glories pass away;  
Change and decay in all around I see—  
O Thou who changest not, abide with me.

I need Thy presence every passing hour;  
What but Thy grace can foil the tempter's power?  
Who, like Thyself, my guide and stay can be?  
Through cloud and sunshine, Lord, abide with me.

I fear no foe, with Thee at hand to bless;  
Ills have no weight, and tears no bitterness;  
Where is death's sting? Where, grave, thy victory?  
I triumph still, if Thou abide with me.

Hold Thou Thy cross before my closing eyes;  
Shine through the gloom and point me to the skies;  
Heav'n's morning breaks, and earth's vain shadows flee;  
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me.

Grey: Merry Christmas! +

---

## The Light of the World - December 15, 2018

Away in a manger, no crib for a bed,  
The little Lord Jesus laid down his sweet head.  
The stars in the sky looked down where he lay,  
The little Lord Jesus asleep in the hay.

The cattle are lowing, the baby awakes,  
But little Lord Jesus no crying he makes.  
I love Thee, Lord Jesus, look down from the sky  
And stay by my cradle 'til morning is nigh.

Be near me, Lord Jesus, I ask Thee to stay  
Close by me forever, and love me, I pray.  
Bless all the dear children in thy tender care,  
And take us to heaven, to live with Thee there.

-----

I grew up at a time when the European people were leaving Christmas as a celebration of the birth of our Lord and Savior behind and replacing that celebration with post-Christian, paganized celebrations of rock music and the sacred negro. But there were still remnant bands of Christians in the late 1950s and the 1960s who kept Christmas in their hearts, because the culture of the heart, which was old Europe, had not completely disappeared.

It doesn't matter if intellectual Christianity survives, because that religion does not reach the heart. Satan has successfully cut off the European people's access to the living God by separating the European people from their racial hearth fire, where hearts of flesh commune with other hearts of flesh, and through that communion touch the heart of God. I look at our modern world with horror, because even the very secular world in which I grew up seems infinitely superior to the present. It seems there are shades of darkness – we have “progressed” from grey darkness to pitch-black night.

Because I do not think darkness is right, I intend to celebrate the Light of the World this Christmas. So I'm pulling up the drawbridge and shutting out the liberal world that I hate. There must be some antique Europeans out there – God always has His remnant. I love that remnant band. May you have a very Merry Christmas! +

---

Addendum: The usual story will appear on Dec. 22 and Dec. 29. The regular blog posts will resume on Jan. 5.

Most of the dystopian novels and short stories of the 20th century focused on right-wing dystopias. Only Orwell and Kipling prophesied that it would be the leftists who would give us a dystopian hell on earth. Orwell and Kipling were right. But even Orwell and Kipling failed to see that the leftist dystopias would not include white Europeans. But that is the case. Lord, abide with us!

---

## **The Sign of Our Redemption - December 8, 2018**

For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. – Luke 2: 11-12

---

We are advised in Psalm 1 not to “walketh in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.” With that injunction before us, let me ask a question – has there ever been a ruling elite more ungodly, more sinful, and more scornful of everything good and decent than the liberals? Of course the answer to that question is obvious – there has never been a ruling elite as evil as the modern liberals. They fit the psalmist's description like a custom-made suit. But if it is clear that the liberals are the people the psalmist warns us about, why do the modern Europeans ignore the psalmist's advice and submit to the rule of the liberals?

It could be that the European people submit to the liberals' rule because the liberals have the power of life and death. They can take a man's means of making a living from him, they can imprison him, and/or they can kill him when he opposes liberalism. Isn't that the answer to the question, why do the modern Europeans not oppose their liberal rulers? No, it is not the answer. We cannot, considering how powerful the liberals have become, expect one individual or a few individuals to launch a military counterattack on the liberals, but we should expect, if the European people were still Christian, to see signs of internal dissent. We should see signs that the European people do not accept liberalism. The liberals could not have established complete ascendancy in the European nations if the European people had not given their internal assent to liberalism. And that is the tragedy of modern Europe – the European people have not, in their hearts, turned against liberalism.

Let me put the tragedy before the reader's eyes by relating an incident from my childhood. I and a half dozen friends in our preteen years, 11 or 12 years of age, were playing basketball at a public court when a group of high school kids came and told us to leave the court. This had happened before – might makes right on the playground – but since my team was winning and the game was almost over, I asked the high school kids to wait until we finished. They refused to wait, but I stubbornly refused to leave the court, which was very foolish. The leader of the high schoolers proceeded – for want of a

better description – to beat the hell out of me. Fortunately, this was a dispute between white kids, so I was not beaten to death, but I was forced, literally and figuratively, to eat dirt and concede defeat. But I never gave internal assent to the high schoolers; I didn't believe they had the right to force us from the court.

The liberals have the European people on the ground eating dirt just as the high school bully had me on the ground eating dirt. There is no shame involved if you are beaten by overwhelming force, but there is shame involved, and something worse – dishonor and disgrace – if you give internal assent to your enemies and lay in the dirt, saying and believing that your punishment is well-deserved and if you are ever allowed up and out of the dirt you will promise to never do anything that forces the liberals to place their collective foot on your neck and grind your face into the dirt.

Now, my playground example is not an exact copy of the European tragedy. The liberals do have their collective foot on the culture of the antique Europeans and on all the white people who defend that culture. But not every white grazer is made, at least not directly, to eat dirt. Most of the white grazers stand by and watch while other whites, whites who try to oppose liberalism, eat dirt. The white grazers are in the position of my school chums, who stood by while I was beaten. But my school chums were better than the modern white grazers. They thought I was stupid to oppose the high schoolers, but they didn't think I was in the wrong. They had not given internal assent to the bullies. The white grazers have given internal assent to the liberals. They believe that white South Africans and all other 'racist' whites deserve what they get and that the black savage is indeed noble. And that is a tragedy. We must recover our honor by refusing to give internal assent to liberalism or we shall stand disgraced before our ancestors and our God. We all die, we can't control that. But we can control whether we die at one with God or at odds with God, at odds with God because we have walked in the counsel of the ungodly, stood in the way of sinners, and sat in the seats of the scornful.

The internal assent to liberalism, which is from the devil, was given by the European people at the time of the French Revolution. Burke, with unparalleled passion, a passion stemming from white pietas, and with great eloquence, an eloquence only exceeded by Shakespeare, turned all but the most ardent European liberals against Robespierre and his butchers. But he was unable to turn the European intelligentsia against democracy as a new system of manners and customs designed to replace, in the European people's hearts, the customs and manners of Christian Europe. The story of the European people ever since the French Revolution has been the story of a terrible, horrifying descent into hell. Under the mantle of democracy, the devil became the ruler of the European nations. And once he conquered Europe, he conquered the world, because he has always held the colored nations in the palm of his hand.

There was always a Greek contingent that thought the Christ story was foolishness and a Hebrew contingent that considered the Christ story a stumbling block, lurking on the fringes of Christian Europe. Those two forces ultimately had more in common with the colored heathens than they had with the Christian Europeans. And it was through the democratic process that the pagan Greek intellectuals and the recalcitrant Jewish Pharisees and Sadducees managed to join with the colored heathens and place the Christian Europeans on the fringes of Europe while the liberals took over the vital center of Europe.

The Old Testament, the Gospels, the letters of St. Paul and the other apostles present us with a fairy tale vision of the living God. The European people, the 'barbarians' who conquered Rome, accepted the fairy tale vision of Christianity. But the men of intellect, the European intelligentsia, which in the beginning consisted almost entirely of clergymen and then later extended to a whole class of secular academics, were always ashamed of fairy tale Christianity. They were tainted with the dwarfs' fear of being fooled:

Aslan raised his head and shook his mane. Instantly a glorious feast appeared on the Dwarfs' knees: pies and tongues and pigeons and trifles and ices, and each Dwarf had a goblet of good wine in his right hand. But it wasn't much use. They began eating and drinking greedily enough, but it was clear that they couldn't taste it properly. They thought they were eating and drinking only the sort of things you might find in a stable. One said he was trying to eat hay and another said he had got a bit of an old turnip and a third said he'd found a raw cabbage leaf. And they raised golden goblets of rich red wine to their lips and said "Ugh! Fancy drinking dirty water out of a trough that a donkey's been at! Never thought we'd come to this." But very soon every Dwarf began suspecting that every other Dwarf had found something nicer than he had, and they started grabbing and snatching, and went on to quarreling, till in a few minutes there was a free fight and all the good food was smeared on their faces and clothes or trodden under foot. But when at last they sat down to nurse their black eyes and their bleeding noses, they all said:

"Well, at any rate there's no Humbug here. We haven't let anyone take us in. The Dwarfs are for the Dwarfs."

"You see," said Aslan. "They will not let us help them. They have chosen cunning instead of belief. Their prison is only in their own minds, yet they are in that prison, and so afraid of being taken in that they cannot be taken out."

-C. S. Lewis, *The Last Battle*



And they were also tainted with the Parisians' fear of being considered stupid: "In Paris, when they want to disparage a man, they say: 'He has a good heart.' The phrase means: 'The poor fellow is as stupid as a rhinoceros.'" (Balzac, *Eugenie Grandet*) The democratic wars of the late 1700s up to World War I were wars to establish the new-old coalition of pagan intellectuals, unrepentant Jews, and colored heathens over the Europeans, who believed in His kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven.

World War I marked the end of Christian Europe. Throughout the 20th century you could still see the beautiful remnants of the European fairy tale. And you could still see the beautiful remnants for the same reason that a profligate son who has spent over half of his billion dollar inheritance still appears to be rich. But the Christian capital has now been spent. World War II was a war between three unchristian -isms - democratism, communism, and Nazism. Which was worse? All three were and are united in their hostility to the Christian fairy tale.

The lie that liberals and conservatives have been putting out for centuries is that the dawning of the democratic era of European history was the dawning of a new age of light. That democracy equals light and old non-democratic Europe represents darkness is a given in the modern world. Liberals, who hate everything white and Christian, should view the democratic era of European history from that perspective. But why do professed Christians still cling to a messianic faith in the democratic process? Why do they continue to equate all things democratic with goodness and light when it is obvious that democracy has produced the ungodly, sinful liberals who mock and scorn the cross of Christ?

The modern Christians accept democracy and all its attendant evils because they have only an intellectual faith. They have not given Him their hearts. They will complain about certain aspects of liberalism, but they will never oppose liberalism itself, because they think liberalism is light and European Christianity is darkness. But what our people, the antique Europeans, bore witness to is true. We can walk on water if we believe in Him alone, or we can try to blend His word with the principles of democratic liberalism and drown in the sea. There is no third way. The European people are drowning because they have not repudiated liberalism in their hearts.

The angel of the Lord told the shepherds that He, the Christ child, would be "a sign unto you: Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger." When conservatives stop pointing to other democracies where the democratic cancer is not as severe as in the Western nations as our exemplars, but point instead to the dear, dear land of storybooks, to nondemocratic Europe, when Christian women stop calling themselves Christian Feminists, and when white pietas is not condemned as 'racist,' then and only then will the European people become what they were meant to be - the advocates for and the protector of His Kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven.

Christmas still has an impact on the European people, but it cannot be just one moment of nostalgia or one tiny acknowledgement of a cute little story. The Christ story was at the center of our non-democratic ancestors' culture; it was not subordinate to the democratic process of the liberals. The liberals' brave New World has had its day. Do we really want to "walketh with the ungodly, standeth in the way of sinners, and sitteth in the seat of the scornful"? That is not the way, or at least it should not be the way of the Europeans. We do not belong to the city of democracy and liberalism. We belong to His city: "For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord."+

---

## Lo! He Abhors Not the Virgin's Womb - December 1, 2018

Yea, Lord, we greet thee, born this happy morning,  
Jesus, to thee be all glory giv'n;  
Word of the Father now in flesh appearing;

---

After a verbal exchange with Feste, the Lady Oliva's fool, Viola, the heroine of Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*, realizes that Feste is anything but a fool.

This fellow is wise enough to play the fool,  
And to do that well craves a kind of wit.  
He must observe their mood on whom he jests,  
The quality of persons, and the time,  
And, like the haggard, check at every feather  
That comes before his eye. This is a practice  
As full of labour as a wise man's art;  
For folly that he wisely shows is fit,  
But wise men, folly-fall'n, quite taint their wit.

In modern Liberaldom, any man who wants to make a living must not offend the principalities and powers of Liberaldom. He must be wise enough to play the fool. He must pretend, even if he is not a liberal, to be in complete accord with all the basic tenets of liberalism, particularly the main tenet: 'Thou shalt love the negro with thy whole heart, mind, and soul, and thou shalt hate the white man with all thy heart, mind, and soul.' If the white grazer is found deficient, if he violates the great commandment, he will be cast into outer darkness where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Independent of the immorality of supporting liberalism, and we really can't separate ourselves from that issue, is the problem of the ever-changing nature of liberalism. Liberalism is an express train. The first station stop is called "equality for all." That is where the colored heathens are invited on the train with the whites. The second station is the "some are more equal than others" stop. At that station the whites are piled into the box cars, they are no longer allowed in the passenger section of the train. At the next station stop, the "white genocide station," the whites are taken out of the box cars and herded into the stockyards where they will be slaughtered. And then the train moves on to its final destination – which is hell.

The difficulty in coming to some kind of terms with the engineers of the liberal train is that they move past the different stations so fast. A case in point – about 24 years ago I was asked, by a conservative magazine editor, to write a series of articles for his magazine. I jumped at the opportunity because at that particular time I was struggling to support a wife and children. I sent off the first article, full of hope and expectation. I honestly thought the article would be well received. There was nothing, from my point of view, controversial about what I had written. The article was not about race. So I was very surprised when the editor asked me to take out a reference I had made to "Christian Europe." I refused to take out the reference, and as a consequence my career as a conservative pundit was over before it began. I had failed to see just how far to the left the political spectrum had shifted. Even the "conservatives" were too liberal to permit a good word to be said about the antique Europeans. And it has gotten much worse in the last 24 years. Men are fired for using words such as "niggardly" and terms such as "cotton-pickin'." Nor is it enough to remain silent about issues pertaining to the sacred negro. Anything less than enthusiastic support is seen as hostility to the liberals' regime, and that hostility is punished. How did we come to this pass? Why is white pietas, which is our only connection to the living God, proscribed in church and state? And why do white people submit to the proscription?

I must come back to the same theme again. White people are the only people who have made the hatred of their own people into a religion. All our major institutions – our churches, our schools, our universities, and the various media outlets – preach hatred of the white race. Why do the whites stand alone, hating their own people and worshipping the people of other races? The whites stand alone in their hatred of whites because they stood alone in their acceptance of Christ as Lord and Savior. Christianity is a dangerous religion; it must be taken to heart, it must be lived, in order to be the life-sustaining force that once inspired our people. We must believe His cross, the cross that "leadeth us," is our salvation. If we refuse to take up the cross we will become post-Christian intellectuals, we will become liberals who hate their own people, or we will become white grazers who tolerate the hatred of their own people. There is an overwhelming beauty at the heart of the Christ story. But it is a moral beauty that can only be seen by a human heart, a heart enflamed by His love in and through the channels of grace He has provided for us. Without white pietas we cannot know the Savior. We will be left with our intellects alone, and our intellects alone always produce men and women who see with, not through the eye. They see nature and nature's god, the noble savage, they do not see the beauty of the Man of Sorrows who has redeemed the world.

All heresies emanate from the clergy, and then spread outward to the laity. The reason the heresies start with the clergy is because the clergy are the men of intellect. They think about God until they think Him into a closed box of their own devising. It is always the humanity of God that gives the churchmen problems. They can't really accept the incarnate God, the God who took flesh and dwelt among us. So they take refuge in either a non-incarnate Pharisaical-Sadducean God who would not deem to soil Himself by taking human flesh, or else they take refuge in the Socratic Christ, who hands down his philosophical precepts to the thinking men.

The liberals' religious hatred of the white race stems from the churchmen's qualms about the incarnation of our Lord and Savior. St. Augustine, who never quite left his Manichaeism behind him, asserted that there was the City of God, which was the organized Catholic Church, and the City of Man, which consisted of the human flotsam that had to be avoided at all costs. If we excuse St. Augustine, which I do not, because he lived in a time when the European barbarians were at the gates of Rome, we still must ask why the churchmen who followed St. Augustine, the churchmen who could see the Word made flesh in the European nations, still maintained that there was no such thing as Christian Europe. We are told that the people from whom Rembrandt, Handel, and millions of other witnesses to the Word made flesh came, were an illusion. They didn't exist. But if they didn't exist, to whom should we look to in order to see the Word which was made flesh? Should we look to the men of intellect? "Yes," say the churchmen. "You must look to us!" But if we must look to the men of intellect, why should we not look to the men of intellect outside the church? If intellect is all, let us look to the men who were too smart to be fooled by the Christ story. The churchmen acquiesce to the demonization of the white race in the hopes that their modified philosophical Christianity, a Christianity that demythologizes the incarnate Lord, will prove

acceptable to the liberals who will then leave the organized churches intact and allow them to be part of the brave new world of science, reason, and the noble savages of color. But that world is not a world that men and women with hearts of flesh can live in.

The mantra of the heretic in every age is that he equates the hatred of humanity with the love of God. The heretic thinks he must hate all things human in order to champion God. But doesn't that leave the God-Man out of the picture? Our Lord took flesh and dwelt among us so that He could join the human with the divine. If we renounce our humanity we renounce our connection to the living God. This is where the connection between the liberals and the Christian heretics comes into play. The heretic denounces the Word that was made flesh in the European people, because he refuses to accept the fact that humanity can be sanctified by the grace of God. The liberals agree. They refuse to see the moral beauty of the antique Europeans because they hate, like the fallen angel, the Word made flesh. The maniacal hatred of the liberals for white people is an ancient hatred that is fueled by the devil. He cannot strike God directly, but he can attack God by attacking the people who formed an incorporate union with Christ. Wherever the image of God in man appears, Satan strikes. Has he totally effaced that image? No, he hasn't, but we are in dire straits. The image of God in man has been banished to the catacombs of Europe where men and women who "receive Him still" hold a place at their racial hearth fire for the Son of God.

We cannot continue to deceive ourselves about the nature of liberalism. Donne said that, "No man is an Island," least of all John Donne, "because I am involved in Mankind." But John Donne was speaking as a European who had discovered, through the grace of God, that his humanity was part of Christ's divine humanity, he knew the worth of his soul and the souls of his fellow men. However, if we take that faith in the Word made flesh away from the Europeans, what is left of our humanity? We see the birth of the non-humans, the liberals. They have built an island unto themselves: it is an island inhabited by creatures devoid of all humanity. And is not such an island the devil's isle? For him, paradise is an island of dead souls, an island inhabited by creatures who have renounced their God-given humanity and hate the God-Man as Satan hates the God-Man.

The modern European grazers are trying desperately to carve out a niche for themselves in Liberaldom. That can never be, because the liberals must destroy the people who once championed the Word made flesh. Nor should we want to be part of Liberaldom. Don't look to Christian democracies – they are snares of the devil. Christ always loses when the veracity of His word is put to a vote. We do not want Barabbas, we want our Lord and Savior, we want our Jesus. +

---

### **Still Our Ancient Foe - November 24, 2018**

And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

–Luke 4: 1-8

---

Now that there is no longer any opposition to liberalism, the liberals have made explicit that which was always implicit in liberalism. They believe that every kind of violence – rape, assault, torture, and murder is licit so long as it is done to cleanse the republic of the impure. "We are against violence," the liberals tell us, "unless it is violence against fascist racists." But aren't all white people fascist racists? Yes, they are, except the special Illuminati, who have transcended whiteness. So then we must conclude that the liberals mean to exterminate all the non-illuminated whites. And they are doing just that. This purge is a repeat performance. Robespierre was against capital punishment, except (there is always that exception) when capital punishment was used to cleanse the republic. The liberal Jacobins will never be satisfied until there are no white people left. They keep the grazers in line by letting them think that they can be part of the Illuminati. "Let the white South Africans perish, and let the white racists in every European nation be exterminated, what is that to me. I am not racist, I will be spared." Such is the fantasy of the white grazer. The angelic liberals will put a mark on his door and he will be saved from death. But will he? No, he will not, nor in the end will the Illuminati themselves be saved from the black plague that they created to destroy the non-illuminated whites.

The liberals always sing hymns of joy every time a new wave of colored heathens enter a European nation, but does it ever occur to the liberals that their world, which is sustained by whites, will perish when the colored heathens replace the whites? No, that never does occur to the white liberals. Our reason is illuminated by what is in our hearts. The liberals' hearts belong to Satan. There are no rational arguments that can make them denounce Satan. They support the colored

heathens because the colored heathens are the human conduits to Satan. And conversely they hate the white race because whites once were, and could be again, the human conduits to Christ the Lord. It is the eternal battle of good vs. evil. The liberals have made their choice while the European grazers remain in limbo. In that comatose state they are easily manipulated by the devil.

The conservatives' failure to understand the religious dynamic of liberalism has led us to a dismal swamp of futility. The conservatives continue to point out the irrationality of liberalism while the liberals continue to intensify their devotion to all things Satanic. The liberals do not see that their cushy government jobs will cease when there is a colored majority. The neo-con liberals do not see that an egalitarian army consisting of feminists and colored heathens cannot fight. Soon, and quite possibly now, we will no longer have an army that can defeat either Russia or China. (It wouldn't be so bad if Russia took Alaska and the rest of the United States, but China is a different matter.) And then the neo-cons won't be able to play with their paper soldier army anymore. And the feminists? There is no feminism in the cultures of the colored heathens. Since liberalism will be no more when Heathendom replaces Liberalism, why not welcome the colored heathens into the white nations? We should not do that because we, the white remnant, are not heathens. White Christians should not desire to live in a black South Africa, an Islamic Britain, or the Aztec state of California. It is not an either/or proposition: reptilian liberalism or colored barbarism. The white European should reject both, but as long as the European people believe that liberalism and Christianity are compatible, they will continue to support white genocide in the hope that the liberal angel of death will pass them by.

The oft-quoted witticism, attributed to a whole host of wits, which suggests that a man who is not a liberal when he is young has no heart, but if he is still a liberal when he is old then he has no head, is, like all attempts to be clever rather than truthful, a very great lie. The lie contained in the immoral witticism is that liberals, even when they are in error as they are in their youthful, halcyon days, are still not in sin because their hearts are in the right place. And the conservatives, even when in later years their practical, cynical wisdom turns out to be closer to reality than that of the 'idealistic' liberals, are still considered evil because they have no humanity, they lack hearts. The deadly assumption underlying that 'clever' witticism is that liberals have good hearts. That is contrary to reality. Was the devil well-intended when he told Adam and Eve to defy God? Byron thought so and so did Gide and a whole host of European intellectuals, but the antique Europeans, as a whole, did not view the devil as the hero in the story of the Garden of Eden. And then we come to the French Revolution. Were the liberals, the Jacobins, really men and women who had their hearts in the right place? I would say that the Jacobins had hearts that belonged to the father of liberalism, Byron's hero, and that those hearts were evil. But then I am a reactionary beyond the ken of liberal humanity. And that is my point. Shouldn't we all, we Europeans, if we have any real humanity, be beyond the ken of liberal humanity?

The 20th century did produce men with no hearts. The theoretical conservatives in church and state were men who saw reason divorced from the human heart as the truth and the way. They fit neatly into the parameters of the previously mentioned witticism. But the real conservatives, men such as Edmund Burke and Anthony Jacob, did not divorce reason from their passions. They loved their people and used their reason to champion their people's cause. Faith springs from a heart imbued with that charity of honor, it does not stem from the brains of the philosophers and theologians. "There are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophies." The liberals have hearts consecrated to the devil. He gives them the passion to strike out at God through their attack on the white race. How can we counter the liberals' attack? We can eschew the conservatism of systems and embrace the conservatism of the heart, which is the conservatism of Ratty in *The Wind in the Willows*:

'By it and with it and on it and in it,' said the Rat. 'It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other. What it hasn't got is not worth having, and what it doesn't know is not worth knowing. Lord! the times we've had together!'

"Still our ancient foe, does seek to work us woe." When we forget that, we lose the war against Satan and his minions. Our "ancient foe" cannot be defeated by reason divorced from the heart. Chateaubriand's observations on the fall of man should be heeded:

Observe, too, what is very important: man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tintured with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to undertake so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that overpowered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks. -*The Genius of Christianity*

The European intellectuals were so impressed with their God-given reason that they decided to go it alone. They gave an intellectual assent to God, but they no longer were attached to God, they no longer had a heart to heart connection to the living God, because they thought that their reason had made such a connection unnecessary. And that pride of reason leads to liberalism, because it creates a void in the human heart that must be filled. Just as communism is a derivative of capitalism, so is liberalism a derivative of intellectual Christianity. We must have a faith that touches our hearts. If we give only an intellectual assent to God and the things of God, without giving Him our hearts, we will either become liberals, who have given themselves over to Satan, or we will be defeated by the liberals because we haven't the heart to fight them.

If we can believe the Gospel accounts, and why should we question them, we see that Christ wanted something more from his followers than mere intellectual acceptance of His divine status. He wanted their love: "Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?" Christina Rossetti speaks for our people when she asks: "What can I give him?" And then she answers her own question: "Give my heart." It is striking how often St. Paul stresses that one great theme – we must give Him our hearts. If we don't love much, if our reason is not illuminated by Him, then we will fall prey to the devil who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. Liberalism is an all devouring hellhound who does the work of his master. With an unerring instinct, that hellhound attacks whatever connects mankind to the living God. And it is the purveyors of 'go it alone' intellectual Christianity that have left us defenseless against the hound of hell, which is liberalism.

The question that Thomas Hughes poses in *Tom Brown at Oxford* when his hero is confronted with a choice between Socrates or St. Paul is, "Shall we be heathens or Christians?" St. Paul's way is the way of our people, the way of hearts that loved much. There is a great dichotomy between St. Paul's faith and the faith of the theologians that followed him. There is no dichotomy between St. Paul's faith and the antique Europeans' storybook faith in the Man of Sorrows who redeems us from sin and death. Why did we reject the romance of the Christ story and replace it with a philosophy called Christianity? It is always that "pride of science" that keeps us from the living God. Intellectual Christianity is Socratic Christianity; its adherents gather around the first circle of hell, clinging to that first rung while trying to convince themselves that reason alone will keep them from falling deeper into the pit.

The liberals use the barrier of race to keep the intellectual Christians from approaching the living God. If white pietas is evil, if it is the unpardonable sin, then the Pauline Europeans who loved much were wrong. Then St. Paul was wrong about the wisdom of the circumcised heart, and Christ was wrong when He asked Peter, "Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?" He should have told Peter to "Go and think about God, get your act together intellectually, and come back to me then." The devils that went over the cliff with the swine knew who Christ was, and they feared and loathed Him. Likewise the liberals: they know in their satanic hearts that they must destroy the white race in order to attack Him whom they hate. White pietas, which leads the European to Christ, must die so that Satan can reign on earth as he reigns in hell. Standing against that hellish, reptilian vision of utopia is the European remnant, the people who believe as the antique Europeans believed, that His kingdom come lives in hearts that love much, and His will shall be done by those same loving hearts. +

---

## From Darkness to Light - November 17, 2018

Before I go whence I shall not return, even to the land of darkness and the shadow of death;  
A land of darkness, as darkness itself; and of the shadow of death, without any order, and where the light is as darkness. – Job 10: 21-22

---

The darkness deepens; Lord with me abide! – H. F. Lyte

---

There was a remarkable television show called Yancy Derringer that ran for one year from 1958-1959, remarkable because it depicted a Confederate soldier and his people in a positive light. The 1950s through the early 1960s were the golden years for Westerns. Sometimes all three television channels carried Westerns at the same time. But you need a belief in good and evil to enjoy Westerns. It is no coincidence that shows such as Cheyenne and The Rifleman passed out of existence in the mid-sixties when the Christian ethical hangover from the 19th century died out.

You could not technically call Yancy Derringer a Western, although it was a Western in ethos, because it was set in New Orleans, a few years after the Civil War. Let's call it a Southern. The title character is a former officer in the Confederate Army who has come home, only to discover that his plantation Waverly has been turned into a gambling casino. Standing on what he regards as sacred ground, the home of his father and his grandfather, Yancy says, "This is my home. I was born and raised here, my father and my grandfather lived here." Then in a magnificent moment, a white moment, Yancy explodes. He turns over the gambling tables while striking everyone who tries to stop him. By the end of the episode, the first one in the series and by far the best, Yancy has cleansed his home of the villains who desecrated it. The scene in which he overturns the gambling tables is reminiscent of Christ overturning the tables of the money lenders in the Temple, and

the final scene in which Yancy throws a dagger into the heart of the leader of the despoilers is reminiscent of Odysseus's cleansing of the great hall after his home was violated by the evil suitors. But Yancy, like all the magnificent men of the old South, is Christian, not pagan. His bloody defense of his home is necessary and proper.

I bring up a 'mere story' without any apologies, because we, the European people, are from the "dear, dear land of story books." The European people, like Yancy Derringer, have seen their racial home violated. But unlike Yancy Derringer, they have not driven the despoilers from their racial home. R. L. Dabney in his book, *A Defense of Virginia and the South*, written shortly after the Civil War, tells us that a man's racial hearth fire is his home and that "a people should rather contend for their rights upon their threshold than upon their hearthstone." All the Southern people's laws against racial amalgamation were necessary measures to defend their threshold which protected their racial hearthstone. The Jacobins of the North attacked the Southern threshold and violated the sanctity of the Southern people's racial home. But through the heroism of men like Nathan Bedford Forrest, the Southern people, during the infamous Deconstruction era of Southern history, falsely called the Reconstruction era, drove the Northern despoilers from their home. They fought for their racial hearth fire and maintained it until the 1950s when they became like unto the rest of the European people – a flock of white sheep led by maniacal Jacobins intent on sacrificing the white race to the less than tender mercies of the colored heathens. The code of the Virginians is the code of the white man. When we denounce the pre-Civil War Virginians and/or the apartheid South Africans, we denounce ourselves, we defile our souls, in order to curry favor with the devil and his minions.

But while we believe that "God made of one blood all nations of men to dwell under the whole heavens," we know that the African has become, according to a well-known law of natural history, by the manifold influences of the ages, a different, fixed species of the race, separated from the white man by traits bodily, mental and moral, almost as rigid and permanent as those of genus. Hence the offspring of an amalgamation must be a hybrid race, stamped with all the feebleness of the hybrid, and incapable of the career of civilization and glory as an independent race. And this apparently is the destiny which our conquerors have in view. If indeed they can mix the blood of the heroes of Manassas with this vile stream from the fens of Africa, then they will never again have occasion to tremble before the righteous resistance of Virginian freemen; but will have a race supple and vile enough to fill that position of political subjection, which they desire to fix on the South.

The Samuel Francis-type populists, who are obsessed with democratic solutions to a tragedy that was inflicted upon the European people through the democratic process, bid us look to Hungary and Poland as exemplars we should imitate. But that is a false reading of European history. The Eastern Europeans are in the position of defending their threshold against the colored heathens. Their racial hearthstone has yet to be violated. We, the whites of the Western European nations, cannot fight a battle in defense of our familial and racial threshold because that threshold has already been violated. The colored heathens are in our home. To blather on about restricting immigration is the equivalent of closing the barn door after the horses have already escaped from the barn. Yancy Derringer did not go to the threshold of his home and vet the new arrivals. Instead he did what we should do – he drove the despoilers from his home.

The European people are now in the position of the Southern people during the 'Reconstruction' era. Their Jacobin rulers have made all racial threshold laws illegal, and they have violated the sanctity of the European people's racial hearthstone. Our response should be like unto the response of the Southern people immediately after the war. Thus far the modern Europeans have not responded to the violation of their racial home as the fictional character Yancy Derringer and the real life Nathan Bedford Forrest responded. Why haven't they tried to drive the invaders from their racial home? Isn't it obvious? The modern Europeans do not share the same faith as the 19th century Southerners. Their faith is not the 'bred in the bone' faith of the antique Europeans. No European prior to the 20th century would have permitted the violation of his racial home without a fight. And that white pietas was not confined to just the Southerners of the 1860s. The Northern leadership was Jacobin, but the peasantry of the North was like unto the peasantry of the South, which is why the war had to be presented to the Northerners as a war to 'save the Union' rather than a war to deify the negro. My grandfather's grandfather (I know I repeat myself with this story) fought for the Union in the Civil War, survived the War, and lived into his late 90s. I got a chance, as an adult, to talk to my grandfather about his grandfather. The Union veteran had told my grandfather that he would never have fought for the Union had he known the Union intended to grant equal rights to the negro.

The deification of the colored heathens and the democratization of the white race came upon the people of the West incrementally, through democratic platitudes and universalist pap. But once the Europeans no longer had the faith which is bred in the bone, the Jacobins could proceed to accelerate the process of white genocide. They now, in the 21st century, the first century of the post-Christian era of European history, can dispense with the gradual destruction of the white race. They can kill, maim and destroy at an accelerated rate of speed, because the white Europeans have been morally neutered by intellectual Christianity and the democratic process. It is currently easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than it is for the white Europeans to put a halt to white genocide. How then can we be saved? "With God all things are possible."

A man can't be held morally culpable for being born in Satandom, but he can be held morally culpable if he accepts the rule of Satan as the natural state of man. Burke saw the various European powers rushing to make peace with the new Jacobin government once Robespierre had been eliminated. But every single member of the new Jacobin government had given their approval to the assassination of the King and Queen, and every man who dealt with them shared in their crime – they had the blood of the martyrs on their hands, for both the King and the Queen of France, whatever their faults, were most certainly martyrs for the Christian faith. We can't be expected to simply grab our guns and attack the citadels of Liberaldom head on. But we can be expected – it is our solemn duty – to refuse to give internal assent to the reign of Satan while we work with might and main to overthrow the men and women who rule in Satan's name. And when I speak of overthrowing the liberals, I am not speaking of voting for a Republican candidate over a Democratic candidate or a Conservative candidate over a Labour candidate. I am talking about a Christian counterrevolution designed to destroy the liberals' satanic system of government and its accompanying manners and customs. We need to replace their system of government and their manners and customs with a culture and government grounded in the heartfelt faith of the antique Europeans. The Christian government will follow when we replace the customs and manners of Satandom with the customs and manners of a Christian people. That is all in all.

At the time of the French Revolution the European people faced their moment on the heath. Would they give themselves over to liberalism and accept the religion of Satan, whose adherents cover up their bloodletting with cries of liberty, equality, and fraternity, or would they, like Banquo, fight against that Satanic temptation and pray for divine assistance: "Merciful powers, Restrain in me the cursed thoughts that nature, Gives way to in repose!" If we do not ask the God of mercy for the grace to resist the temptation to live comfortably in Satandom, we will be consumed by Satan and his ministering angels of destruction.

We can't sup with the devil. In my own anti-nation, the United Negro Republic of America, I have seen two courageous white men absolutely destroyed because they simply could not see that liberalism is from the devil. Trump has been demonized by mad-dog liberals and cut adrift by the conservative-liberals because he has tried to infuse a modicum of white pietas into a Satanic system of government that holds white pietas as the unpardonable sin. Likewise Tucker Carlson. His home was attacked because he too tried to inject an element of white pietas into a system that will not tolerate white pietas. "This is war!" the Antifaers screamed outside Carlson's home while his wife cowered alone and frightened in the recesses of her home. In the name of the God of mercy, let's give them war.

At the time of the Civil War in America, the leaders of the South were still bred-in-the-bone Christians, while the leadership in the North consisted of Unitarians, deists, and intellectual Christians. The Northern victory was not complete until the Southern leadership in church and state became one with the Jacobin North. Once there was that unity of thought and heart it was possible for the liberals to inoculate the peasantry, North and South, with the religion of liberalism. The same dechristianization process, the deblooding of the European people, took place in Europe. First the European intelligentsia answered Dostoevsky's question, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" with a 'no,' and then the European peasantry were gradually induced to accept the rule of Satan over Christ's reign of charity. Just as the infrastructures, the dams and the bridges, and disaster prevention measures against fires and floods, have become non-infrastructures and non-disaster prevention programs as states like California became colorized, so have the European people become a non-people now that they have permitted the colored invaders to desecrate their racial hearthstone. What can stop the desecration? It won't be stopped by voting.

In his *Letters on a Regicide Peace*, Burke makes the point that, "The nations of Europe have had the very same Christian religion, agreeing in fundamental parts, varying a little in the ceremonies and in the subordinate doctrines." Then he goes on to describe the Jacobins and their total break with Christian Europe:

It has not been, as has been falsely and insidiously represented, that these miscreants had only broke with their old Government. They made a schism with the whole universe; and that schism extended to almost every thing great and small. For one, I wish, since it is gone thus far, that the breach had been so compleat, as to make all intercourse impracticable; but, partly by accident, partly by design, partly from the resistance of the matter, enough is left to preserve intercourse, whilst amity is destroyed or corrupted in its principle.

Modern Europe has become Jacobin France; it is a total break with the customs, manners and traditions of our European ancestors who loved Christ and hated the devil. I, like Burke, wish that certain outward symbols of old Europe were not used by the liberals to make the white grazers believe they are living in something other than a commonwealth consecrated to the devil. However, if a man has anything within, he can see the world that he lives in. Is white pietas completely dead? It appears so. I come again to the camel and the needle's eye. Lord abide with us. +

---

Correction: Last week, the sentence about the Swiss guards who stayed at their posts during the French Revolution should not have included the Cossacks. It should have read – "The Cossacks who defended the Czar during the Russian Revolution suffered the same fate as the Swiss guards." I'm sure the Cossacks would have fought for Louis XVI, but of course they were not there.

---

## No Longer Under Their Dominion - November 10, 2018

They know, that he who fears God fears nothing else; and therefore they eradicate from the mind, through their Voltaire, their Helvetius, and the rest of that infamous gang, that only sort of fear which generates true courage. Their object is, that their fellow citizens may be under the dominion of no awe, but that of their committee of research, and of their lanterne. –Burke, *A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly*

---

And if it seem evil unto you to serve the Lord, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord. – Joshua 24: 15

---

Although I went out and voted straight Republican in the midterm elections, I did not vote because I believe it is a citizen's duty to participate in the democratic process. I voted to support a man who is fighting a courageous, rearguard defense of a white Christian army retreating from the battlefield after losing a war to an implacable, merciless foe who will not take any prisoners; they will kill all their enemies.

Trump is the best we'll ever get within the democratic process. His conversion to millennialist Christianity is sincere. That faith is not my faith, nor is it the faith of the antique Europeans, but it is closer in ethos to the Christian faith than liberalism. I don't believe anything good will come from within the democratic process, because the democratic process is from the devil, but when one courageous man is fighting a rearguard action that might save a few white lives, I think we should support him.

Having said all that in defense of Trump, I must add that I believe it is against the interest of white Europeans to place too much stock in elections. Despite the Orbáns and the Trumps, who are both anomalies soon to be supplanted by more thoroughgoing liberals, it is clear that the democratic process is a very effective weapon of the liberals, which they are using to destroy the white race. The formula is simple: The liberals come to power through the democratic process. Once in power, they try to make the white grazers dependent on them through government jobs and medical programs, but in the long run, the liberals plan to phase out the white grazers by replacing them with the colored heathens from abroad. That is a winning hand, because in a democracy all you need is an aggregate herd in order to justify your bloodletting. Once you achieve a majority, whatever you do has 'the sanction of law.'

It is already too late for whites in the United States and in the nations of Western Europe to save their nations, because even if they close their borders immediately, there are just too many colored heathens already in their countries. In Eastern Europe it is a different story. If the people in those nations learn from the mistakes of the Western European countries and repudiate democracy in favor of nationalist dictatorships, they might survive. However, the nations of Eastern Europe have universities, and where there are universities there are liberals. Only a complete repudiation of liberalism will save the people of Eastern Europe from being destroyed by the liberals' democratic formula, which is massive colored immigration under the sanction of the liberals' law.

Sadly, the white grazers who voted for Trump do not see him as a rearguard defender of a defeated people. They hope that somehow he can actually do something to help them against an enemy that seems, for reasons they cannot understand, to hate them. There is a great deal of white rage out there. If a non-democratic leader could direct that rage, the liberals and the colored barbarians could be defeated. A case in point – where I vote, there are not enough registered Democrats in the area to make it worthwhile to the Democrats to have someone at the polls. So, on election day there was only one Republican passing out literature, a man in his mid-sixties, wearing a hunting jacket and a NRA hat. Before and after voting I talked with him. He complained of the caravan and of the liberals' underhanded tactic of paying women and children to march in the caravan. He complained of the new wave of Mexican immigrants who had no intention of learning English or preserving "our way of life." He complained about the American schools, which are polluting young Americans, and he complained about our cities, which had become unlivable because of high crime rates the liberals seemed to be indifferent to. I let him talk, and when he was finished, I pointed out that all the ills he was talking about were not going to be changed by Republican victories. "You and I are a dying breed; when our generation passes, the liberals will have an overwhelming majority. They will impose their will on the white minority." He conceded the point and said he didn't know what else could be done. That is sad, because there is something else that can be done, but it is not democratic. We should follow Alfred, Havelock, and Forrest, who put the defense of their people above the democratic process.

The white males of the European nations might be very confused – how could it be otherwise when the leaders in the churches are like unto Francis the blasphemer and the leaders in most of the Western nations are like unto Angela



Merkel? But the white males do understand that the liberal elites hate them. They know that they have been marked for economic disenfranchisement, and they know that they are considered moral pariahs, not fit to live with decent liberals and the glorious colored races of the earth. So far their rage has been self-destructive – drugs, alcohol, and suicide. But what if that rage could be harnessed? (1) We, the white remnant, must raise nondemocratic leaders who think with their hearts, hearts committed to their people and their God.

The leadership of the white Europeans is currently leading the European people astray. Let's take Rush Limbaugh and the English Defence League as examples. Right before the midterm elections at a rally with the President, Limbaugh correctly stated that Trump was the best we were ever going to get, but then he went on to say that we had to defend our culture and the Constitution. That's not good enough. What is our culture? It is not '1776' and our 'democratic way of life.' All that is good in our culture comes from our white Christian heritage. If we are ever to become a nation instead of an aggregate herd, we must be white and Christian. We cannot tolerate liberals or colored heathens within our nations. And what about our Constitution? It is a meaningless piece of paper when it is referenced independent of our white Christian traditions –

Throw our paper platforms, preambles and resolutions, guaranties and constitutions, into the fire, and we should be none the worse off, provided we retained our institutions – and the necessities that begot and have, so far, continued them. –Fitzhugh, *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters*

Members of the English Defence League are like unto the Rush Limbaugh conservatives. They want a Britain that protects the people from terrorists, but their Britain is a multi-racial, multi-cultural Britain that provides a haven for the colored heathens and the Moslems. The white working class Britons, who are the true Britons, are taxed out of existence in order to support the non-white and therefore non-British element that wants to destroy the white Britons. You are not a defense league, you are not English – you are one with the liberals if you will not defend your own people and the God of your people. White people are currently being used to serve the colored races and their heathen gods. Is that our destiny? Are we not a people and do we not have our own God whom we should serve, while forsaking all other gods? It seems so obvious that I shouldn't have to say it – white people have a right to be a distinct people separate from the nonwhite races. It shouldn't be left up to the Dalai Lama to defend white people's right to exist.

While an undergraduate I attended a conference sponsored by the 'religion' department of the university, the topic was the decline of religion. At the conference a collection of priests, ministers, and religious experts decided that rationalism had killed the Christian faith, but they also concluded that there was no returning to the age of faith, because, "We are all Hegelian rationalists now." But are we, the people of Europe, all Hegelian rationalists? This is the issue upon which our destiny on this earth and through all eternity hinges. Is the Christian faith a philosophy that has been proven false by the rules of logic and reason? The intellectuals of the West, not excepting the intellectuals in the church, have conceded that the Christian faith is not true. And the European peasantry has been morally neutered because they have been educated to view life through the minds of the philosophers. It's a second fall of man, this descent into rationalism, and it has been the death knell of the European people. I must assert, against the intelligentsia of Western Europe, that there is a wisdom that transcends rationalism. I am not a Hegelian rationalist. There is more wisdom in Hank Williams' famous song, "I Saw the Light," in which he expresses his heartfelt faith in Jesus Christ than there is in all the tomes of philosophy ever written. Faith is not a philosophy, it is something beyond philosophy. When our people break the chains of rationalism they will see the light and they will be a people again: They will be the Christ Bearers.

When the Jacobin-organized mob gathered outside the Palace of Versailles with the clear intent of storming it, Louis XVI ordered his soldiers not to fire on the mob because there were women and children in their ranks. Was Louis acting the part of a Christian gentleman? No, he was not. He was acting the part of a man who had come to doubt the legitimacy of his position as the defender of the faith and the defender of his people. The philosophical speculators, the caustic wits, had planted doubt in Louis's mind. Maybe just a little bit of liberalism could appease the mob? But what kind of people use women and children as cannon fodder for their cause? Is it possible to deal kindly with such people? It was Louis's duty to protect his family and the families of the loyal French citizens, who, because of Louis's folly, were all massacred along with the loyal Swiss guards and Cossacks who never left their posts.

It seems as if, so long as the Europeans remain in thrall to the philosophical speculators in church, academia, and the media (the pamphleteers), that we are doomed to repeat over and over again the fatal mistake of Louis the XVI.

If we look at the caravan invasion of the United States, we can see the Jacobins at work. They are paying women and children to walk along with the invading army in the hope that Trump will either be unable to order his troops to fire on them or that he will order his troops to fire on them, thus giving the Jacobins a chance to label him a moral pariah. I do not think any of the European leaders have the will necessary to stop the caravan-type invasions of their nations. In fact, most of the European leaders, Putin, Trump, and Orbán excepted, are welcoming the invaders into their nations. Only a white Christian leader, a man imbued with pietas, will fight for his own people against the Jacobins and the colored heathens. The Christian does not fight against non-combatants, but if the enemy makes women and children into

combatants, then it is a Christian's duty to fight the enemy. It is a painful duty, but if there are no Europeans willing to defend their own, there will soon be no more Europeans.

The battle for Europe and its people was lost when the philosophical speculators such as Rousseau, Voltaire, and Shaw were allowed to attack the European people from Mt. Utopia. The European people were found wanting in every aspect of their lives, from the viewpoint of the self-anointed Olympians. We must do what is necessary to defend our people – yes, we must stockpile arms and develop our own militias – but all that will follow from the one thing that is needful. We need to reestablish our connection to our past. The antique Europeans were not moral pariahs, they were moral giants. They loved their own and they loved the stranger to the extent it was humanly possible to love the stranger. Why is it that the most demonized whites are the pre-Civil War Southerners and the pre-1990 South Africans? They were the only people in history who managed to elevate the black savage to a level above sheer bestiality, and yet they are demonized as racists. That continues to be the fate of all the European people who lived and died during the Christian centuries of Europe: They have been demonized and thrown into the dustbins of history. And now the modern Europeans are told that they can only survive if they denounce their ancestors and do homage to the liberals' colored gods. And the leaders of the West have complied with the liberals' edicts. From Merkel and Trudeau to Francis the blasphemer, it is the same litany – whites must die in atonement for... for what? The only thing the modern European needs to atone for is his acceptance of the liberals' attack on the antique Europeans. Our 'racist' ancestors knew the living God; if we embrace them we too shall know the living God. And then we will fight, not as the colored heathens and the liberals fight – they fight to eradicate all that is good and decent and Christian. We will fight as Alfred fought, in defense of what is good and decent and Christian. +

---

(1) The recent murders by and subsequent suicide of the white Marine is an example of the white rage that must be properly channeled. Maybe that man had that within him that was not amenable to nobler actions than indiscriminate killings. But possibly, had he lived in a Christian European culture instead of a liberal culture, he would have been a different man.

We should be clear about the nature of liberalism. The liberals are determined to destroy all white resistance to their regime. We cannot respond to the violence of the liberals with doctrinaire pacifism. Shedding blood for the sake of shedding blood is evil, but it is also a great evil to refuse to shed blood in defense of your own kith and kin. The recent assault on Tucker Carlson's home is just one more indication that you can't deal peacefully with liberals. They do not fear whites because they know whites will not meet liberal violence with a violence commensurate with the liberals' violence. In the name of the God of Mercy, we must defend our people against the liberal and the colored barbarians who have no mercy, because they hate Christ and love the devil.

---

## **The Reptiles - November 3, 2018**

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctious visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world. –Burke, *A Letter to a Noble Lord*

---

In my childhood I used to enjoy my family's trips to the local zoo. I enjoyed looking at all the animals, with one exception. I did not enjoy going into the reptile house: I hated the snakes and alligators. No, the word 'hate' does not adequately convey how I felt when I saw the reptiles. Something stirred inside, deeper than hatred. I now believe that I sensed the connection between the reptiles and the enemy of mankind. Didn't the devil assume the form of a reptile when he approached Adam and Eve in the Garden?

I bring this up from my past because the feeling inside me, deeper than hatred, that I had for the reptiles in the zoo, has returned. I feel the same way now about the liberals as I felt about those reptiles that I viewed in my childhood. I feel a hatred beyond hatred for the liberals, but I do not concede that my hatred beyond hatred for them is some sort of irrational, unwarranted phobia any more than I would concede that my loathing for the reptiles in the zoo was irrational and unwarranted. In fact, let me be blunt: I think there is something wrong, something terribly wrong, with any European man or woman who does not feel, when in the presence of a liberal, that they are in the presence of a horrific, reptilian monster of depravity.

In C. S. Lewis's book *Prince Caspian*, volume 4 of the *Chronicles of Narnia* series, Lucy states: "Wouldn't it be dreadful if some day in our own world, at home, men started going wild inside, like the animals here, and still looked like men, so that you'd never know which were which?" Lucy comes close to describing the descent of the European people into liberalism. But they have gone beyond "wild inside." That status belongs to the colored heathens, who have never left that state (men on the outside, beasts within) throughout all the Christian centuries of Europe. The Europeans chose a different path. They went from wild on the inside to Christian on the inside. When they fell, they were incapable of becoming mere beasts again like the colored heathens whom they worship; they became reptilian inside.

Our world has gone beyond the darkness of heathenism: the institutionalization of liberalism has given us hell on earth. Liberals have retained their biologically human exteriors, but inside they have become reptilian monsters. You can't have rational debates or come to some kind of compromise with a liberal, because rational debates and equitable compromises presuppose some kind of humanity in both parties. That is a fatal error. Liberals have no humanity; they are cold-blooded, heartless reptiles. The advice contained in the old children's ditty is apropos: "Never smile at a crocodile, Never tip your hat and stop to talk awhile." You wouldn't jump into a snake pit and expect to dialogue with the vipers, so why should you expect to dialogue with the liberals? The democratic process was only meant for Christian whites; it was never meant for Christians and colored heathens, nor was it meant for reptilian liberals and Christian whites.

When white people attempt to return to "wild inside" paganism they always go one step lower; they become Satanic. They still, by and large, maintain the outward semblance of human beings, but their outward form cloaks their demonic hearts. In Proverbs we are told that a beautiful woman who lacks discretion is like a golden ring in a pig's snout. The sage of Proverbs is referring, of course, to the promiscuous pagan female. The modern feminists make such females look wonderful by comparison. At least the pagan female has not given herself up to "that which is against nature." We expect something better from the Christian woman than mere paganism. But when the feminists rule, we see something worse than a golden ring in a pig's snout. We see feminist vipers who hate all things natural and all things Christian.

Unlike the white neo-pagan, the Christian European does not want to return to paganism. He has set his sights on Christ. But even if the white Christian wanted to apostatize, he could not go back. Every attempt to return to the ancient Greeks or to the Vikings ends up in a bloodless, rationalized piece of sophistry that leaves its proponents defenseless against the liberals' reptilian onslaught. Their hatred is grounded in the hatred of God and the hatred of the white race. And their faith is in the colored races and in their own cold, bloodless minds and hearts. How can the neo-pagan face down that religion with his non-religion? Wouldn't it be much better to invoke the God whom the pagan Greeks and the pagan Vikings bent their knee to?

You can't tell the liberals that no multi-racial, multi-cultural civilization has ever survived, because the past has no meaning to reptilian liberals. And you can't tell the liberals that there has never been a civilization based on the satanic principles of feminism that has flourished as a civilization, because the concept of 'civilization' is meaningless to the liberals. Their only concern is for the destruction of the white race. That is the summit of their aspirations. They are envenomed from top to toe with "direst cruelty." To dialogue with such creatures is suicide. Wilkie Collins, the Victorian author who specialized in mystery novels, used the drug laudanum to relive his pain from a recurrent illness. Over the years, as the pain increased, Collins took larger and larger doses of laudanum. One day his manservant for some reason, possibly to relive a headache or perhaps out of curiosity, took some of the laudanum, less than half the dose that Collins was taking regularly, and died as a result. The European people have adjusted to the deadly poison of liberalism as Collins adjusted to the laudanum. At times, the poison breaks out in its most virulent form – the French and Russian Revolutions – but the liberalism that has been institutionalized throughout the European nations has come upon the European people gradually. It had to come that way. If you could somehow transport a 19th century European, an everyman, to 21st century Europe, and show him a feminist coven, a gay marriage ceremony, a legalized abortion, or a black on white marriage, what would be his reaction? He would not believe that he was dealing with human beings. He would believe, and he would be correct, that he was dealing with creatures who were human on the outside, but who were in reality cold-blooded reptiles inside. If he was the timid sort, he would flee from such creatures. And if he was like unto a Walter Scott hero, he would take sword in hand and attack the inhuman spawn of Satan.

Of course there will be no attack on the citadels of Liberaldom, because the European people have been cut off from their past. The antique Europeans believed that history was moving toward one stupendous event – the return of Christ. The liberals have secularized that history; they believe mankind is progressing toward the kingdom of liberalkind on earth. That future does not include white people. And it is a pity – no, it is a tragedy – that the non-reptilian, church-going whites do not see what the liberals have in store for them. They see their clergymen as representatives of Christ who are helping them to see a Christ purified of the racism and sexism of the past. But is the 'purified' Christ the real Christ? Isn't he the false Aslan that C. S. Lewis writes about in *The Last Battle* and one of the false Christs that Christ warns us about in Matthew 24:24: "For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders: insomuch that if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect." Liberalism presents us with the wonder of progress, but is the accumulated knowledge of the material world really a great sign and wonder? The diabolist George Bernard Shaw listed

Pythagoras, Ptolemy, Kepler, Copernicus, Aristotle, Galileo, Newton, and Einstein as the greatest men of the world. Why? Because Shaw was a post-Christian European who worshipped the intellect of man abstracted from the heart of God. Christ did not leave us bereft when He left this earth. He left us the Holy Ghost to dwell in our hearts. But if we deny the Holy Ghost we will be left with the Bernard Shaws of the world, seeking signs and wonders from the men of philosophy and science.

Burke outed the liberals in his various writings on the French Revolution. He noted that it was the European intellectuals who could and did empty their hearts of all traces of humanity. This has been my experience as well. I have worked in academia and in blue collar jobs with the white grazers. The grazers are very depressing because they have been morally neutered; they are not full-blown reptilian liberals, but they do not see the evil of liberalism nor do they have any desire to reconnect with the Europe in which His word was made flesh. But it is in academia where a man, if he is still a man, finds the non-humans. There are no words I can write that can adequately convey the evil that exists in academia. And the ethos of academia rules the Western nations. Church, state, and society all have become part of academia. We all must be educated. We must learn to hate all things white and Christian. We must learn that reptilian hearts and liberal minds are the only hearts and minds fit to rule over us. Have my people learned all that? Yes, they have. But in the ungrammatical words of Badger in *The Wind in the Willows*: “It is time for us to learn them,” the liberals. The reptilian liberals will not stop ‘progressing’ until they have enveloped the European people in their coils and squeezed the lifeblood out of them. Resistance is only useless if whites refuse to be white. Our race is part of our spiritual essence; without that essence we will not have the spiritual backbone to resist the serpentine coils of the liberal leviathan.

Our kitchen stove currently has only one burner on which we can boil water. The other three burners can never quite reach the boiling point, even when we turn the temperature on high. Sadly, the white grazers are like unto our kitchen burners that are incapable of reaching the boiling point. They might get irritated with some aspect of liberalism, but they never reach the point of passionate hatred for the liberals that a truly European Christian should have for them. Why have they lost their hearts? Why don’t they love Him and the antique Europeans enough to hate the reptilian liberals? The cry of racism has been and continues to be one of the liberals’ most effective tactics. And perhaps the most effective tactic of all has been the appeal to the white grazers’ intellectual pride. The liberals have always presented themselves as the scientific, progressive truth-seekers while the antique Europeans have been and still are presented as moribund, unscientific, racist, sexist, and stupid. But all that having been said, we are still left with an apostasy from Him, our Lord and our Kinsman. I said that I didn’t have the words to describe the horror of liberalism, so I’ll turn to the Bard of Avon. His description of Lady Macbeth reveals the essence of liberalism. The liberals are at war with all things natural and Christian.<sup>(1)</sup> And in order to accomplish their “fell purpose” they must needs blend their reptilian souls with the devil:

Come, you spirits  
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here,  
And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full  
Of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood;  
Stop up th’ access and passage to remorse,  
That no compunctious visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
The effect and it! Come to my woman’s breasts,  
And take my milk for gall, your murd’ring ministers,  
Wherever in your sightless substances  
You wait on nature’s mischief! Come, thick night,  
And pall thee in the dunest smoke of hell  
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes  
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark  
To cry, “Hold, hold!”

The liberals hold the field because there are no longer any Europeans willing to enter the lists against them. Or so it seems. But the spirit of God still works in human hearts. Christ has not abandoned the European people – they have left Him. In Matthew 24:24 He seems to suggest that there will always be a faithful remnant. In that hope we live. +

---

(1) Feminism has ‘progressed’ beyond the condemnation of white males for the ‘abuse’ of women. They now condemn the white males – it is always the white males, never the males of color who are condemned – simply for being heterosexual white males. The condemnation of heterosexuality is in line with the liberals’ condemnation of all natural instincts, and the condemnation of white males only is in line with the liberals’ condemnation of all things Christian. We must remember that the white race is the Christ-bearing race. The white males’ apostasy from that role has not altered the liberals’ hatred of them.

---

For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

– Acts 28: 27-29

---

Lucio. Sir, I know him, and I love him.

Duke. Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

—*Measure for Measure*

---

When I got involved in what was called the pro-life movement in my mid-twenties, I thought that abortion was the issue that trumped all other issues. I was wrong. Legalized abortion is the result of the abortion of the white race from the mystical body of Christ: that is the issue that trumps all other issues. So long as that first abortion remains the institutionalized faith of the European people, such atrocities as legalized abortion and such blasphemies as negro worship and legalized sodomy will remain part of the fabric of our Western un-civilization.

Under the auspices of progress, democracy, and science, the post-Christian liberals broke the European people's incorporate union with Christ in order to form a covenant with the devil. Once that covenant became institutionalized, all protests, such as the pro-life movement, against just one aspect of liberalism were doomed to fail because the protestors sought redemption from the devil. Instead of fighting the devil, they tried to appease the devil. Pro-lifers and anti-immigration whites were and are polite, non-violent, and democratic when they protest. Are the liberals, who are Satan's minions, ever sympathetic to the protestors? No, they are not. The devil does not compromise.

It will always be thus. In the United States we are currently facing an invasion on the Mexican border that will be just as disastrous for the European Americans as the Moslem invasion has been for the people of Europe. However, the invasion will not be opposed by white Americans because the decision to abort the white race has already been made by the principalities and powers of Liberalism. What is needed to stop the invasion is a people who believe that they are a people. The white race is the Christ-bearing race. If they refuse that role, who and what are they as a people? They are nothing; they are a non-people. Neither the Moslem invasion of Europe nor the Mexican invasion of the United States is about jobs or compassion for the travelers on the road as in the parable of the Good Samaritan. The invasions are part and parcel of Satan's war against Christ. He thinks that if he destroys the Christ-bearing race, he will be able to cut mankind off from all contact with his antagonist, who is Christ the Lord.

Now that the Ganelons of liberalism have opened the flood gates of the European nations in order to let the colored heathens in to exterminate the white Europeans, who will say them nay? It will not be any member of organized Christian Jewry, nor will it be anyone from the ranks of the liberal illuminati. There will be no defense of the European people, because the European people have lost their identity as a people. Why should they oppose any invasion of their nations, be it Mexican, Moslem, or African if they do not believe they have a right to exist as a people?

From my perspective the European people have not only a right to defend themselves, they have a moral obligation to defend themselves. What is the reason for the dichotomy between my view of self-defense and the modern Europeans' view of self-defense, or should I say their view of self-destruction? The modern Europeans have accepted their leaders' credo – "White people have no right to defend themselves." I believe that the Word took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans, and the modern Europeans do not believe that the Word took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans. That is the difference between a man who thinks the European people should defend themselves against the onslaught of the colored heathens, and the modern Europeans who think they should cede everything, their wives, their children, and their lives, to the colored heathens, because they have no right to exist as a people.

The crisis of the modern Europeans, or should I say the tragedy of the modern Europeans, lies in their rejection of the Word who was made flesh. That rejection, which is now universal throughout the European nations, was ushered in by the theological studies of the Roman Catholic and Protestant theologians. Citing St. Peter's admonition that men should "sanctify the Lord God in your hearts and be ready to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you," they preceded to explain to the European people the attributes of God. But they failed miserably – in fact they became blasphemers – because they failed to heed St. Peter's advice. Knowledge of God comes from the heart – "Sanctify the Lord God in your hearts." If we don't speak from the heart, our words have no meaning. Did St. Paul talk

about God as the theologians talked about God? And did our Lord talk about Himself as the theologians talked about Him? Is the faith passed down from one generation to the next by faithful hearts who loved much, or is it passed down from one generation to the next by brilliant minds who know the magic, theological formulas? If the Faith is passed on by the latter method, then we are no better off than the pagans with their high priests and priestesses who passed on the divine secrets to the laity when the laity showed them the proper obsequiousness. But what happens, in such a system, to the human heart that longs for communion with the living God? It withers and dies.

In the Roman Empire the remote gods of the philosophers who could only be approached through the men of intellect were replaced by the gods of the mystery religions, the gods of sex and blood. Those gods were never replaced in the hearts of the colored heathens, but they were replaced in the hearts of the European people by Jesus Christ. Christ conquered the heathen gods, not by denouncing the passions emanating from the human heart, but by purifying those passions, by drawing us to Him, to His Sacred Heart. Did He really perform that miracle? The theologians tell us He did not. They refuse to acknowledge that the European people responded to Christ's passion with a passion of their own. And since, in their judgement, there has never been a Christian Europe, we are advised to return to the way of the pagans — we must look to the high priests of the intellect to tell us who and what God is. But if we go back to such a religion, we will be worse off than the pagan Greeks whose greatest poet told us it was better never to have been born than to live a life without a faith in a God above the nature gods. The European people are naked to their enemies, the colored heathens, because they have accepted the "Christian" theologians' paganized version of Christianity. "Through our intellects, and our intellects alone, you can approach the living God." Where is the heart in such a religion? Is it any wonder that the European people have surrendered to the colored heathens? Kill the heart, and faith withers and dies. And without faith the people perish.

Solomon built temples for his wives' heathen gods, and in doing so he destroyed the nation of Israel. The liberals have made the heathens of color their gods, and by doing so they have destroyed the European people, because they have aborted them from the mystical body of Christ. The devil wants us to believe that the mystical body of Christ consists of the members of the churches of organized Christian Jewry, but those churches are theological constructs. They are the great cleansing houses that wash all traces of humanity, all longing for the living God from the hearts of their followers. The real mystical body of Christ consists of those people who love Christ with faith, hope, and charity. And above all, charity. From whence comes the charity that believeth and hopeth all things? It comes from our love of home and hearth. If there are no breeding grounds for charity, how can we come to know the living God? The theologians did not and do not see the love that once was there at our European hearth fire, so they aborted the European people in order to purge the Christian faith of its impurities. But in doing so they denied the Word made flesh. They turned Christ into a Gnostic God of the philosophers and the European people into a non-people. "Can love be put in a golden bowl, and wisdom in a silver rod?" We, as a people, are facing extinction because we have followed the men who believed that God could be scientized.

The apostles who knew Christ when He walked the earth came to believe in His humanity before they believed in His divinity. It was only after His resurrection from the dead that they fully understood the link between His humanity and His divinity. St. Paul did not see the connection between Christ's humanity and His divinity until his encounter with Christ on the Road to Damascus. That is the uniqueness of the Christian faith, a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Greeks: Christ is true God and true Man. If we lose contact with His humanity we lose contact with His divinity. I submit that we lose contact with His humanity when we place His divine humanity in a golden bowl called theology and label everything outside that bowl as impure and irrelevant. George Fitzhugh, in his criticism of the thought processes of the Northern Unitarians, described the end result of the 'God in a golden bowl' theology:

Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity, which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

—*Cannibals All! Or Slaves without Masters*

The European people entered the 20th century with leaders in church and state who thought that the "cool calculations of the head" were a substitute for the unreliable instincts of the heart, but what have the cool calculations of the philosophers' and theologians' heads wrought? We now live in a world without light. We are surrounded by heathenism, the heathenism of the colored barbarians and the heathenism of the post-Christian liberals. Only the love that once was there can produce men and women who can defy the heathenism of the liberals and the colored barbarians.

The secular utopians and the "Christian" utopians have heaped an unrelenting stream of abuse on the antique Europeans. The end result of that abuse has been the demonization of the white race. If Christian Jewry and the liberals have got it right, if the white race has polluted the earth with racism and sexism and every other evil under the sun, then how can we countenance their continued existence on the face of the earth? "We can't," is the reply of the liberals and the moderate Christians. "We must look to the purer races to save us from whiteness." There is a malignant dualism in the liberals'

hatred of the white race. On the one hand the white race is accused of not being sufficiently Christian – “They committed adultery, they engaged in wars, they lusted after the riches of the world, etc.,” but then on the other hand they are deemed to be evil because they were Christian – “They believed that abortion was evil, the separation of the races was good, and that Jesus Christ was the Son of God.” And tragically the members of the churches of Christian Jewry have become an amen chorus for the secular liberals. They have denounced the antique Europeans for their sins of racism, sexism, and worldliness in order to blend their new, purer Gnostic Christianity with the liberals’ post-Christian heathenism.

The theologians followed the way of Martha and rejected the way of Mary, who loved much, when they made their theologies synonymous with the Christian faith. The key passage in the Scripture verse that they use to justify their rationalism is the passage that reveals the insufficiency of their rationalism: “Sanctify the Lord God in your hearts.” If our reason does not flow from our hearts, how can it bear good fruit? We are the people of the inn at Emmaus; we are not the people of the first circle of hell in which the great pagan philosophers sit around endlessly discussing the nature of God and existence. The apostles at the inn of Emmaus knew God because their hearts burned within them. That is our way to Christ as well.

A close relative of mine recently died after a long illness. She was a noble soul, struggling toward the light, but it was very depressing to see the great difficulty she had in understanding some of the most basic tenets of the Christian faith. She was constantly trying to find hidden meanings in passages of Scripture that if taken at face value would have given her great comfort. When I begged her to listen to her heart when reading Scripture, she replied that she didn’t know what was in her heart. That is tragic. Life is not something that should be left to the philosophers and theologians. When we spend a life in pursuit of their abstractions, we are left without the comforts of a Christian heart.

Flannery O’Connor once complained to a friend that the people who most consistently failed to understand her stories were the literary critics, the men and women who studied literature. The same thing happened within the Christian churches. The men who studied God, the theologians, were the men who most consistently failed to understand the Christ story. The Christian faith is a story about God’s relationship with His people. It is not a philosophy for those men and women who seek esoteric knowledge. It is not impossible to place ourselves back in the Christ story, but we need to first circumcise our hearts and ask Christ to enter therein. The road to Emmaus, which leads to the inn of Emmaus, leads us to the enlightenment that comes, not from the abstract intellect, but from a heart-to-heart communion with the Son of God. The demonized European hearth fire is the inn at Emmaus. We must return to that hearth fire and defend it against all the world. +

---

## **The Sign of Our Salvation - October 20, 2018**

Virtue might be rarer than vice, but it exists, especially in the hearts and souls of our European ancestors. Where the liberals see nothing but evil in our European ancestors, I see a roll of honor, a charity of honor. In the collective face of the European people of the days gone by, I see faith, hope, charity, and our Lord Jesus Christ. If we let “our ancient hearts” unite with theirs, we can be as they were, staunch in defense of our people and our God and unrelenting in our hatred of the liberals, who have loosed the dogs of color upon us and institutionalized blasphemy. It would be morally reprehensible to attempt to compromise with such creatures. Nor would it be realistic. Those people who have turned their hearts from the God of mercy will not be merciful to His people.

All seems cheerless, dark, and deadly on the European front. A sneering, satanic liberalism pervades what was once called Christendom. Living in Liberalism is like living with the death of a loved one: there is an agony in the heart that can only be eased by a contemplation of Him and His promise that nothing eternal dies. That is our hope. If ancient European hearts unite with Christ through His people, then the liberals will not prevail. Ancient Europe will triumph over modern Babylon, even more surely than the turning of the earth.  
— CWN

---

In Dostoyevsky’s novel *The Brothers Karamazov*, the Grand Inquisitor hurls a number of accusations at Christ. Among those accusations is the charge of desertion: “You said you would come back to earth, but you didn’t.” That is a serious charge. When a father deserts his children, he is not a good father. To his credit, Alyosha does not give a rational defense of God. He points to Christ and lets Ivan win the debate.

Why do I applaud Alyosha’s non-defense of God? Because Alyosha’s non-defense is the only proper defense. The rational defenses of Christ’s ‘failure’ to return to earth, along with the rational defenses of the suffering we must endure on this earth, always end up supporting the Ivan Karamazovs of the world: “Case closed: the Christian God has been found guilty. Let us look to another God.” That is precisely what happened in the 20th century. Christ was found guilty of desertion; He left his children to suffer and die alone while He went off to... Where did He go? And where is the Comforter He promised?

The colored heathen can say with pride that they, like the dwarves in C. S. Lewis's *Chronicles of Narnia*, were not taken in by Christ; they remained faithful to their heathen deities. And the small minority of colored heathens who adhered to the white man's code, the Gunga Dins who "were white, pure white inside"? They were and are regarded as traitors. The liberals' worship of the colored heathens does not include them, the Uncle Remuses of the heathen world who serve the white man and worship the white man's God.

The liberals' hatred of all things white and Christian stems from their belief that they were tricked. They gave up the fleshpots of Egypt to champion Christ, and He turned out to be a fairy tale. While the colored heathens were enjoying themselves, the white people suffered through centuries of sexual repression and cruelty because of their adherence to the will of the Christian God. The unshackling process that began in the 20th century and was completed by the 21st century has set the European people free from Christ. But what are they doing with their new-found freedom? They are recreating Heathendom. For what is liberalism in its essence? It is a synthesis of all the heathen faiths; feminism, Islam, and negro worship are reincarnations of the cruel nature religions that preceded the Christian religion. In his poem *Clarel, a Pilgrimage to the Holy Land*, Herman Melville tells us that science cannot umpire the feud between heathenism and Christianity. But the modern Europeans decided science could umpire that feud. And science decided in favor of nature and nature's gods. The colored heathens won the debate. They were real, they were pure, and they were natural, while the white man was not real, he was not pure, and he was not natural.

There is no appeal from the liberals' supreme court. The white man has been found guilty of foisting a false and unnatural religion on the world, the penalty for that crime is death. The church-going, white 'Christians' seek to avoid the death penalty by blending their Christianity with liberalism. "We are not racist, we are not sexist, we are not Europhiles." By betraying his race, the moderate white 'Christian' hopes to save himself and his church from the wrath of the liberals. But that will not work. Only the white illuminati, the whites who have transcended whiteness and the Christian faith will be allowed into the liberals' utopia.

When the apostles met the risen Lord on the road to Emmaus, they asked Him to, "Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent." And then – "When it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight." Our people knew Him, through the testimony of the apostles and the Holy Ghost who dwells in the human heart. Ah, there's the rub. Does the Holy Ghost reside in the human heart and did the apostles really see the risen Lord? Everything centers on one essential point: Do we see with the heart or with the head? The apostles on the road to Emmaus, after their encounter with the risen Lord, did not say, "Now we see things clearly, we understand the dialectic expounded by the wise man." No, they said they understood because their hearts burned within them. How do we test the veracity of the apostles' testimony? Is our heart drawn to the Christ story, does it make us say, "My life is like this tale, so I'll keep it for sympathy's sake"? Or do we reject it as unscientific? George Bernard Shaw, who, more than any other writer, painter, or composer, managed to take upon himself the attributes of the devil, used to point out with glee that it was science that had turned the European people into a non-people in search of a new faith. The incarnation of Christ and His resurrection were scientifically unverifiable, so they must be false. That simple  $2 + 2 = 4$  logic is correct from a purely scientific viewpoint. And since Christ never came back to earth to refute the scientists and the Shaws, it must mean, from the liberals' standpoint, that Christ be not risen. Liberalism could not have been built without the European peoples' tacit acceptance of Shaw's and the scientists' assertion that Christ be not risen.

God will judge the intent of the scholastic theologians, Catholic and Protestant, who attempted to scientize God, but we can judge the results. God cannot be scientized, He cannot be probed and dissected like a laboratory specimen. The end result of such a process will be the creation of a false, mind-forged God who does not make men's hearts burn within them. It's very easy to become a complete sceptic about Christianity when one wades through the various theological wars of the church men, each one trying to hand God to us in a golden, scientized bowl, but it is very hard to remain skeptical when one encounters the Word made flesh in the hearts of the men and women of Europe who loved Him. It is their testimony, the testimony of hearts that loved much, which we must cling to when the darkness of Liberalism makes us feel that God has forsaken us.

Cyrano de Bergerac, after discovering that his beloved Roxanne loves another, very eloquently expresses his complete defiance of the world. His friend cuts to the heart of the tirade: "Say this to all the world, then whisper to me, 'She loves me not.'" The scientizing of God in the churches has killed the European people. Unlike the colored heathens, the European people staked everything on Christ. They were not deterred by suffering or by His seeming desertion, because they had that which was essential: they had charity, the charity that hopeth all things and believeth all things. That charity is missing in our scientized world, because the 'pride of science' men, the scholastics of Christian Jewry, the Rousseaus, the Voltaires, the Darwinians, the Einsteins, and the Shaws placed a wedge between God and man by declaring that all thought stemming from the human heart was false while all thought stemming from the abstracted mind contemplating the natural world was true. When that scientized view of existence takes hold of a man's soul, he says, "Christ loves me not, I shall look for another God."



Christ is the cornerstone of our faith. If we lose Him, we lose everything. And where does He reside? He resides with the Master Humphreys of Europe, the men and women who see Christ through their kith and kin. Theirs is a continuum, a spiritual connection, between the apostles on the road to Emmaus and the European people when they were a people. If we take the scientized veil from the eyes of our heart and see the risen Lord as the apostles saw Him, as the first European tribesmen, the men who conquered Rome, saw Him, we can touch Him and we can know Him intimately through the charity that begins at home and ends with His heavenly home of many mansions. It is very easy to become unbalanced, to allow our analytical minds to overrule our hearts, and accept Ivan's Karamazov's indictment of God: "He lied to us, He did not return, and He permits us to suffer and die without hope." But I ask you, when the European Christ stands before us, the Christ of the Gospels, the Christ of St. Paul, the Christ of the European poets who expressed the heartfelt faith of their people, does not our heart burn within us?

In his autobiography, Francois Mauriac says that we all are given the chance to say what St. Peter would have liked to have said (and subsequently does say, even though it leads to his crucifixion) on the night of Christ's crucifixion. We can say, "Yes, I know that Man, He is Christ the Lord." The race war, which is so one-sided because the European people have lost the heart to fight, is about the Man of Sorrows. The liberals say that He was a fraud and a liar. They cannot punish Him directly, but they can attack Him through the people who championed Him. The grazers seek to avoid the liberals' wrath by claiming "We do not know that man!" That is what the statement, "I am not a racist," means. When a white European makes that statement, when he leaves his racial hearth fire, he is leaving the European Christ behind. Is there any other Christ? No, there is not. That Christ is the Christ who entered the circumcised hearts of the people of Europe. He piped to our ancestors' hearts and they responded. Now, once again, Christ has been dragged before the Sanhedrin and found guilty. When a white man washes his hands of the European people and tries to save Christianity by abandoning the European-centered vision of Christ, he is behaving like Pontius Pilate, who knew Christ was innocent but still consented to His crucifixion. And when a white man becomes a liberal, he is joining the Jews who screamed, "Crucify Him!" The race war is part of the eternal conflict between God and the devil. Satan currently holds the field; by appealing to the Europeans' pride of science, he has killed their hearts. All the rational apologetics ever conceived by the minds of men cannot restore the Europeans' faith in God if they haven't the heart for God. And without a racial hearth fire, they have no heart.

Whenever I think of the scientizing of the European people, a sad, lonely, despairing face appears before me. It is the face of a Roman Catholic priest I knew when I was an undergraduate. I had come, through the good offices of the European bards, to a trembling faith in the God-Man, Jesus Christ and thought that a course in the Gospels might help strengthen my faith. I chose Father \_\_\_\_\_'s course because I had read a book he wrote some twenty-five years before, which suggested that he believed in Jesus Christ. The first day of the class was quite a disappointment. Father \_\_\_\_\_ subjected God's word to the same scrutiny the literary critics subjected Shakespeare to. I found such critical scrutiny offensive when applied to Shakespeare and blasphemous when applied to the Gospels. And after class, in his office, I told Father \_\_\_\_\_ what I thought of his class. I also asked him about his faith, namely, what had happened to it. First, he defended his approach to the Gospels: "We can't presume that the Gospels are the word of God in an academic classroom." In response to my second question about his loss of faith, he said, "There are so few signs." That is when I saw the sadness, the loneliness, and the despair on his face that has stayed with me all through my life. It was the sadness and loneliness of a man who has lost contact with our Lord, and it was the despair of a man who had no idea how to reestablish that contact. How many souls have gone through the same tragedy, the tragedy of the scientized soul, and how many Europeans are currently living that tragedy? Needless to say, I dropped the course. I didn't want to go down Father \_\_\_\_\_'s lonesome road. A scientized faith is not a faith. It promises us paradise and gives us hell. Do we reject the devil and all his works? If our answer is, "Yes, I reject the devil and all his works," then we must reject the pride of science. Then, having circumcised our hearts, we will be able to see our Lord and Savior through the people who loved much. +

---

### **The Heart and the Hearth Fire - October 13, 2018**

Of my wretched uncles' religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zig-zags and parallels. – Le Fanu, *Uncle Silas*

---

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools. – Romans 1: 20-22

---

As Edgar tells of his own suffering his father's suffering, and King Lear's suffering, Albany finally has to end the chronicle of suffering:

If there be more, more woeful, hold it in;  
For I am almost ready to dissolve,  
Hearing of this.

I feel as Albany felt when I read about the various atrocities inflicted on the white race by the liberals and the colored heathens. There is a limit to how much I can absorb before I dissolve. C. S. Lewis advised us not to read newspapers, lest we become overly involved in events that we cannot control and as a consequence ignore certain matters close at hand over which we have some control. He makes a good point, but Lewis still lived under a Christian canopy. His right to live in his rooms at Oxford were taken as a given. He didn't have to worry about the Moslems and the colored heathens at his front door. They were over there – in other lands far afield from England. The one weakness of Lewis's Narnia, which is the greatest literary work of the godless 20th century, comes toward the end of *The Last Battle* when Lord Digory says, "It's all in Plato, it's all in Plato." No, it is not all in Plato. Our God has a local habitation and a name. His name is Jesus and His local habitation is the human heart. When our racial hearth fire is attacked, we are deeply and intimately involved in that attack, because the attack involves our God and our people. When our kith and kin bleed, we bleed. Without that sympathetic connection to our people, we are bereft, we are cut off, not only from our people, but also from our God, who comes to us through our kith and kin. We must, like Albany, know our limits, but we also must see that the race war, whether in South Africa or across the street, is local. The liberals and the colored heathen want our blood. Every white atrocity story is our story, because we are connected to our people and our God through our racial hearth fire. The bell tolls for us.

Why were all the early racial Universalists always atheists, while the 'racists' were Christians? It is no accident, because those people without a home, without a racial hearth fire, cannot know the God-Man of the Christian faith. Such creatures, the men without a people they can call their own, have no ties to humanity. They have left their humanity behind in order to become philosophical speculators, so they must live life second-hand through the colored heathens.

The whole thrust of Satan's attack on God has been directed at the white race, because the European people made Christ the God of their racial hearth fire. 'To be a white man' meant to be a Christian. In modern Europe, what does it mean 'to be a white man'? It means one must hate the white race and love the colored heathens. Why? Is it the Christian thing to do, to despise your own people? The romance of Christ's birth, death on the cross and resurrection from the dead has become as sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal to the European people. They have speculated that romance out of existence. Now the liberals who say there is no such thing as race worship the colored races. Men must worship something; if they do not worship the God-Man they will turn to the man-gods of nature. Pope Francis's rain forest gods are one with Rousseau's Noble Savage.

I've reached the time of life when a number of my friends and relatives have received that summons which we all dread. The sudden death of a loved one by heart attack or stroke is more of a shock to our spirit, but the long, slow death from cancer seems more terrible still. Sympathy for the loved one is paramount, but there is also a certain guilt: "How can I proceed with life as usual when he or she is going through such suffering?" And then there is the resentment: "Why should anyone, particularly someone I love, have to endure such suffering?" And finally there is our own fear of death: "Is this the promised end?" Neither the old paganism nor the new paganism, which is liberalism, gives us an answer to death. The Viking funeral service and the liberals' death-and-dying courses do not help us deal with our longing for "the touch of a vanished hand and the sound of a voice that is still." We can't go to the churches for an answer, because they cannot provide us with a heartfelt vision of the God-Man who conquered death. They can only put out an intellectual theory of a God who may or may not have risen from the dead. But they do tell us that we can hope that at some future date mankind will live in a racially harmonious world in which mankind will survive, even though all men will perish as individuals. What is missing in that scenario of the liberals? Personal immortality is missing. Why should I, or anyone, bother about utopia if everything ends with the grave?

The pagans face death by immersing themselves in the ecstatic moment. Their faith is in sex and blood. The liberals are trying to do likewise, but they are failing miserably. They are dying in despair and forcing the white grazers to die in despair as well, because they have destroyed the European hearth fire. At the hour of our deaths, we need Christ, the God of our ascending race. And He comes to us through our people. The dying always want their loved ones around them at their hour of death, but if their loved ones have forsaken their European hearth fire, or if they themselves have forsaken their people during their lifetime, they will lack that human conduit to the living God that we all, even if we fled from Christ during our lifetime, need at the hour of our death. Satan's attack, through his liberal minions, on our racial hearth fire has been successful. The Europeans have lost everything – they have lost their will to live, and they have lost His blessed assurance and comfort at the hour of their deaths. Why have they sold their souls to the devil? What will he tell us at the hour of our deaths? "Despair and die!"

The Enlightenment did not begin with Rousseau and the French Jacobins. You can trace the Enlightenment philosophy back to the great scholastic and then to its ultimate source – the enemy of mankind. But the idea of enlightened man-gods who could do without the God-Man became institutionalized in Europe at the time of the French Revolution. That is why Burke, who saw that the French Revolution marked the death knell of Christian Europe, was anathematized by the liberals. Satan did not want to be ‘outed’ at that point in history. Now that the ‘enlightened’ idea of God has become embodied throughout what was formerly called Christendom we are faced with a tragic irony: The people who once saw a great light are blind. The great era of Enlightenment is upon us and behold, “all is cheerless, dark and deadly.”

Utopian ‘Christians’ and the secular liberals always point to the Christian era of European history as a period of darkness, because the antique Europeans were racist, sexist, homophobic, and Islamophobic. In other words, they were unenlightened. They, according to the liberals and the theologians, were steeped in superstition and prejudice. But what were they prejudiced against? They were prejudiced against the darkness of heathenism, which the liberals have revived; a heathenism that leaves us without the Savior. St. Paul tells us, “That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in thine heart that God have raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.” Is that confession and that heartfelt faith such a little thing that we can trade it for the glories of liberalism?

The philosophical speculator can only delineate evil, he cannot delineate the good. Socrates could tell us that Zeus was not a god, but he could not tell us who God was, nor could Plato, nor any of the other philosophers who followed in his train. But St. Paul could define the good, not by way of the syllogism but by a heart to heart connection to the living God. It was the Europeans who followed St. Paul that carved out a realm of light in a world that had once been in total darkness, not the philosophical speculators. Our hope in this world and the next is not something we can see with our minds, but we can see Him with our hearts if we believe as St. Paul and the antique Europeans believed.

The liberals tell us that we are getting close to the kingdom of heaven on earth if we just would eliminate the last remnants of the white man’s Europe. But what is occurring is something quite different from what, according to the liberals, is supposed to be happening. The world has been plunged into darkness. There are degrees of darkness, to be sure, but all the nations of Europe are moving away from the light. As we move further and further away from our racial hearth fire, we move further away from His realm of charity. And it is only through that charity, engendered and nurtured in our European home, that we form a bond with the living God. It doesn’t matter how many church organizations survive if our racial hearth fire is destroyed. We must be part of His realm of charity in order to confess with our mouths and believe in our hearts. We need our home, if we intend to live and die connected to Him.

In a little known work of Dickens, called *Master Humphrey’s Clock*, Master Humphrey rejects the cosmic mysticism of the heathens for the European way, the way of charity, which begins at home and connects us to our people, living and dead, who are sustained by His divine charity.

What if I be? What if this fireside be tenantless, save for the presence of one weak old man? From my house-top I can look upon a hundred homes, in every one of which these social companions are matters of reality. In my daily walks I pass a thousand men whose cares are all forgotten, whose labours are made light, whose dull routine of work from day to day is cheered and brightened by their glimpses of domestic joy at home. Amid the struggles of this struggling town what cheerful sacrifices are made; what toil endured with readiness; what patience shown and fortitude displayed for the mere sake of home and its affections! Let me thank Heaven that I can people my fireside with shadows such as these; with shadows of bright objects that exist in crowds about me; and let me say, ‘I am alone no more.’

I never was less so—I write it with a grateful heart—than I am to-night. Recollections of the past and visions of the present come to bear me company; the meanest man to whom I have ever given alms appears, to add his mite of peace and comfort to my stock; and whenever the fire within me shall grow cold, to light my path upon this earth no more, I pray that it may be at such an hour as this, and when I love the world as well as I do now.

Our fight is not for a lighter shade of darkness, which the more conservative politicians offer us. Our quest is to find, once again, the light that shineth in darkness. We won’t find that light at the top of the pagan’s cosmic tree. We will find it in the visionary heart of Master Humphrey and his friends, who are gathered together by the European hearth fire. That hearth fire, so demeaned by the liberals in church and state, is the only hearth fire where there is the charity which never faileth. The European people have died as a people because they have accepted the darkness of liberalism. They no longer believe that there is a light that shineth in darkness, because they no longer have a heart for the Son of God. They have become as Le Fanu’s *Uncle Silas* – they have a certain intellectual desire to be godly, but they have lost the heart to love the living God. We must cling to our only hope – we must believe that His charity never faileth. At the hour of our death and in the face of the death of our people, we must stay with Master Humphrey and his friends who knew that Christ is the beginning and the end of the European story. +

## Liberalism is Hell - October 6, 2018

Hell is empty,  
And all the devils are here.

—The Tempest

---

Two days ago I read an account of yet another woman who had been sexually molested by Brett Kavanaugh. As I read the account I realized that the woman making the accusation was the granddaughter of a girl I once dated in high school! How could Kavanaugh have molested a girl before she was born? When I brought this up to the Senate Committee, I was told that white racists were very evil and devious people – they could even rape the unborn. “No,” I replied, “the rape, murder, and torture of the unborn is the particular delight of liberals, not men like Brett Kavanaugh.”

The Kavanaugh hearing is not about the liberals’ concern for the molestation of women. If they cared about the molestation of women, they would not love the Moslems and blacks who have made the rape of women a cornerstone of their cultures, or should I say their non-cultures? The Kavanaugh hearings are about abortion. The liberals fear that Kavanaugh’s appointment will leave the court one justice away from overturning *Roe v. Wade*. Naturally when you have attained absolute power, you don’t want to give up any of that power, but the liberals need not worry. Even if pro-life judges obtain a 5 to 4 majority on the Supreme Court, they will not be able to make abortion illegal in the United States of America. We are a liberal nation, committed to the ongoing march to Utopia. In a utopian state, it is essential that all powers reserved for God shall become the powers reserved for the liberals. Married procreative love must give way to licensed lust and infanticide, because men and women in Liberalism must be as God — they must be in charge of procreation. You cannot turn back on the road to Utopia. Legalized abortion, homosexual marriage, miscegenation, and every other evil under the sun were implicit in liberalism right from the start. And the liberals are committed to making that which was implicit in liberalism from the start, namely the devil’s will, explicit at the finish.

When a runner stands at the starting line of a race we assume he will keep running, barring a complete physical collapse, to the end of the race. His appearance at the start of the race causes us to make that assumption. Centuries ago the liberals announced, through men like Rousseau, that they intended to build the kingdom of heaven on earth. In order to achieve that goal they had to maniacally, with malice aforethought, chip away at the Christian foundations of Europe. They were not able in one generation, nor in two or three generations, to destroy the Christian fabric of Europe. But they have, in this, the 21st century, finally achieved their goal. In the 20th century the Christian faith succumbed to the liberals’ scientific attack, and now, in the 21st century, the Christian ethos has followed the Christian faith into the dustbins of history.

The incredible hatred the liberals have for Trump, which is a maniacal hatred that goes beyond any political invectives of the past, is the result of Trump’s attempt to go back, not to Christian Europe, but to a more moderate place on the road to Utopia, a place where white people are not demonized and babies are not slaughtered in their mothers’ wombs. But we cannot go back to that moderate place, because the devil is not a moderate. He will fight through his liberal minions to preserve his kingdom. Burke should forever be our guide on this crucial point: You cannot have just a little bit of liberalism; it is an all-devouring, reptilian monster that must consume every last vestige of Christian Europe. And of what does Christian Europe consist? It is not our democratic governments or our Greco-Roman-Judaic-Christian heritage that we must fight to preserve, it is the people of Europe, whose ancestors believed that heaven visited earth in the person of Jesus Christ, that we must defend and preserve.

Republican presidents prior to Trump wanted to go slower along the liberal road to Utopia, but they never tried to go backward on the utopian road. Reagan claimed to be committed to “pro-life principles” but he never backed it up with his court appointees because he was incapable of fighting an all-out war with the mad-dog liberals. How could he, when he was a classical liberal himself? Trump is also a classical liberal – there is nothing in his inaugural speech opposed to liberalism – but he has come along at a time when the mad-dog liberals will brook no opposition; they will not return to the Reagan years of liberalism. And then there is the human factor – Trump is a loose cannon in the mold of Andrew Jackson and Theodore Roosevelt. Even though his stated beliefs are well within the confines of American democratic principles, his non-liberal instincts, which were bred out of all our previous Republican presidents, occasionally surface and cause problems for the classical liberals and the mad-dog liberals. Nothing of long-lasting value can come out of the democratic process, but it is significant that Western leaders such as Trump, Orbán, and Putin earn the particular hatred of the liberals. Such men, who have not completely liberalized their souls, represent discordant notes in the liberals’ utopian kingdom of heaven on earth. To the liberals, abortion does not represent a discordant note, the Moslem invasion does not represent a discordant note, negro worship does not represent a discordant note, but a leader in any European nation who does not want the total extermination of the white race, because he has a remnant of white pietas in his soul, is a discordant note that must be silenced by whatever means necessary.

Liberal hate fests such as the Kavanaugh hearings should tell us something. You can't deal peacefully with liberals. They are only interested in the democratic process and the rule of law when those processes serve their ends. When they don't, they dismiss such processes and move on to another form of attack on the white race. And the timid white grazers in the "palpable night of their terrors" always think that if they are non-violent and polite, they will appease the liberals' wrath and win them over. The liberals' will not be won over; they have left their humanity behind them in order to enter the brave new world of Utopia. Nothing that stinks of humanity can move them. When the council woman from Cologne tells the German people that Germany will soon belong to the Moslems, it is clear what must be done in Germany. When Pope Francis the blasphemer wags his finger at the whites of Europe and tells them they must turn their nations over to colored heathens, it is clear what must be done in reaction to the Pope's obscene tirade against the European people. In every European nation it is the same. The liberals have decreed that the European people must submit to their own extermination at the hands of the colored heathens and the Moslems. Why must we submit to our own extermination? The France of Louis XVI was a microcosm of Christian Europe. The rulers' faith in the legitimacy of their regime weakened under the assault of the intellectuals:

An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will.

What happened first in France has happened throughout all the European nations over the last two centuries. Why do white men submit to the will of the liberals? I think it is because the devil, who was and is the first liberal, has the ability to be all things to all people. Life is a crucifixion. The devil offers each of us some kind of bargain so that we can obtain our desires without a crucifixion. He might offer riches to one man – "You can be Christian and a money grubber if you call yourself an entrepreneur." Thus the capitalist has a reason not to repudiate liberalism. He tells the Christian white woman that she can have a career and children providing that she accepts "the gains the feminists have made." I recall a Danish woman reporter lamenting the lack of chivalry in the white males of Cologne during the New Year's Eve Moslem rape fest a few years back. But she was adamant that she didn't want to go back to the bad old days of the Christian patriarchy; she just wanted white males to protect women when Moslems assaulted them. You can't have it both ways. You can't have the benefits that stem from a Christian culture while holding on to the liberal values that suit your selfish ends.

In Marlowe's *Dr. Faustus*, we see Faust at a crucial crossroads of his life. He has sold his soul to the devil, but he is wavering. He wants to break his deal with the devil. The devil then sends him Helen of Troy in order to keep him in the fold.

Was this the face that launch'd a thousand ships,  
And burnt the topless towers of Ilium—  
Sweet Helen, make me immortal with a kiss.—  
[Kisses her.]  
Her lips suck forth my soul: see, where it flies!—  
Come, Helen, come, give me my soul again.

As long as the European people think that liberalism can provide them with their Helen of Troy, whether it is riches, freedom from childbirth and motherhood, power and prestige, or freedom from the cross of Christ, they will continue to debate with liberals and discuss things with liberals rather than fight liberals to the death. They will refuse to see the obvious – that liberalism is from the devil – because there is always something that each individual European thinks he will lose if he steps outside of Liberaldom and attacks, not just one policy of the liberals, but liberalism itself.

My education, like that of all whites in the 20th century, consisted of horror tales about the white people of the undemocratic and non-liberal years of European history. The technological advances of the moderns were trumpeted as advances made possible by more enlightened views of God and man. But my upbringing was a lie – church, state, and society were not asking the right question: "What good does it do if a man gains the whole world if he loses his soul?" The antique Europeans pursued all the things of this world that the modern Europeans pursue, but there was a crucial difference between their Europe and modern Europe. The antique Europeans did not try to justify their sins by creating a new world in which sin was virtue and virtue sin. The pursuit of wealth for wealth's sake, à la Ebenezer Scrooge, was seen as evil. The murder of an infant in his mother's womb was considered murder. The woman who denounced motherhood and pursued a career outside the home was not seen as a paragon of femininity. A church man who suggested that the negro was more sacred than Christ was not allowed, if he was not lynched on the spot, to continue in his clerical profession. And the essence of liberalism, the desire to exterminate the white Christ-bearing race through race-mixing, was seen as the horror of all horrors.

At the hour of our death we need the world of the antique Europeans, a world in which sinners struggled toward the light. We do not want the liberals' world, no matter how wonderful the liberals claim it shall be once we get rid of the white racists. We cannot, if we have not pursued the light that shineth in darkness in our lifetime, suddenly turn on a light

switch at the hour of our death. Whether our death “be now, or whether it is to come,” we all pale and quake in the face of that dreadful monster. If we have never touched the living God during this life, the God who enters human hearts, we will have no real comfort during the trials of this life, and we will die without His divine comfort at the end of our lives.

Liberalism gives us hell. That is what the Kavanaugh hearings are all about – the continuing efforts to destroy every last vestige of Christian Europe by destroying the hearts of the European people. “Do we reject the devil and all his works?” If the answer is yes, then we must reject liberalism in its entirety. There must be no more discussions and polite debates with Satan’s minions. It is time to fight. That charity of honor demands that we do so. +

---

### **His Europe Shall Not Pass Away - September 29, 2018**

What can I give Him, poor as I am?  
If I were a shepherd, I would bring a lamb;  
If I were a Wise Man, I would do my part;  
Yet what I can I give Him: give my heart.

–Christina Rossetti

---

Dylan Thomas, the passionate, religiously irreligious poet, tells us that:

Though wise men at their end know dark is right,  
Because their words had forked no lightning they  
Do not go gentle into that good night.

I think any man, that but man is, wants, in his inmost heart, to bring heaven to earth through his life’s work. He wants God to smile on his work, and he wants his fellow men to see the face of God in his work. But if he fails, does that mean that he knows, “that dark is right”? I do not concede that point. If we have given Him, as Christina Rossetti says, our heart, have we failed?

I bring this up because I am one of those old men whose words have forked no lightning. Nevertheless, I feel compelled, by something inside of me stronger than reason, to offer up my work to God. Perhaps in my final hours I will see that I was wrong, but until that time I have to obey that instinct inside. Which brings me, for the second time (I dare not say final time, because I thought the last time was the final time) to the subject of questions – or perhaps they could best be described as attacks – that I have received over the years.

I don’t have a comment section on my blog because I have discovered that if someone doesn’t understand what I took great pains to make clear in an article, then they are not going to understand me any better in a reply that I do not spend as much time on. And since most of the comments are of a ‘hostile’ nature – ‘Why are you so hostile to my church?’ be it Catholic or Protestant, and, “Why are you a racist?” – I do not see much point in wasting my time responding. What I miss though, is a chance to come into contact with a kindred spirit. But then on the other hand I avoid being disappointed by finding out that there are no kindred spirits out there. But I do occasionally encounter (I won’t ‘out’ anyone) kindred spirits. I know a man in Canada who has kept the faith, a shotgunner from the Old South, a New Zealand farmer, and a Vanishing American who seem to be struggling to give Him their heart. I always keep such individuals in my prayers and any others that I hear about. I want the man who was referred to me by Shotgun Barrel Straight to know that I have kept him in my prayers. And then there is the woman who calls herself Denise. I have also kept her in my prayers. As for the others, whom I don’t know by name, I have kept them in my prayers as well, because I always pray for the unnamed Knights of Europe. Of what good are such prayers? I don’t know. Our faith is not something seen. Before leaving this subject, let me ask for prayers for the Vanishing American who was absent for some time and has returned to tell us that she is dealing with an illness. She is a woman in the mold of Christina Rossetti, God keep her.

In regards to the hostile attacks from the denominational Christians, I can only say that they are right: I am not in sync with the orthodox Roman Catholics or the doctrinal Protestants. But my faith is not – in that which is essential, or so it seems to me – incompatible with the faith of the European peasants, Protestant, and Catholic, who lived and died prior to the 20th century. What I write are public prayers, addressed to my God and my people; I hope that they reach the heart of God and the hearts of my fellow Europeans. If I fail on both counts, I still do not concede that dark is right.

John Sharp Williams, a U. S. Representative and a U. S. Senator, cut through all the blather about states’ rights when he articulated, in a speech delivered to the Confederate veterans on May 31, 1904, the real cause for which the South fought:

But there was something else, and even a greater cause than local self-government, for which we fought. Local self-government temporarily destroyed may be recovered and ultimately retained. The other thing for which we fought is so complex in its composition, so delicate in its breath, so incomparable in its symmetry, that, being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed. This other thing for which we fought was the supremacy of the white man's civilization in the country which he proudly claimed his own... Confederate Veterans, Volume 12

The term "white man's civilization" strikes us as something terribly unmodern. And it is certainly unmodern; no modern conservative would use such a term. He would talk about our democratic traditions and/or our Greco/Roman/Judeo/Christian heritage, but he would not under any circumstance talk about the "white man's civilization." That would be racist and we all know that racists are damned. And the liberals? They would pounce on that term, "the white man's civilization," and use it as proof positive that all white men, and Southern white men in particular, must be exterminated before the Brave New World, an enlightened world, can come to fruition.

The important point that Williams stresses is that the Southern people did not lose the Civil War. They lost on the battlefield, but they kept fighting after Appomattox to preserve the "white man's civilization," which was under assault by the Jacobins of the North. And at the time of Williams' speech, the Southern people were victorious; they had preserved the white man's Christian heritage.

History accords us many examples of people preserving their culture after defeats on the battlefield. The Saxons lost the Battle of Hastings, but it was their culture that remained the dominant culture in England, because they stubbornly remained faithful to their Saxon hearth fires despite the efforts of the Norman rulers to destroy them as a people. Likewise the Scots, who lost time and time again on the battlefield, but ultimately made England grant them the religious independence they sought. And unfortunately, the Aztecs also preserved their faith, despite the fact that the Spanish defeated them on the battlefield. They stubbornly refused to give anything other than outward adherence to the Christian faith, and now, when the strong European presence has disappeared not only in Mexico but throughout the Western world, the ancient Aztecs' faith has resurfaced in Mexico and the United States. The Mexican re-conquistadors represent the resurgence of the Aztecs who were beaten, but not destroyed, so many years ago by Cortez and his Spanish cavaliers.

What is that "incomparable" something that "being once destroyed, it is forever destroyed"? It is the faith that is "bred in the bone." For centuries the noblest men and women of Europe gave Christ their hearts, and their heartfelt, passionate faith carried the faint of heart and the lukewarm along in their train. But once the Christian faith was 'proven' to be incompatible with science and reason, the European leadership succumbed in the early 20th century, to an irreligious, ethical Christianity devoid of any real faith. And by the second half of the 20th century, the European people had only a fast-disappearing respect for the ethos of Christianity divorced from a faith in the source of that ethos. That is not enough to preserve a civilization, as we have witnessed. The 21st century is the first century since the European people bent their knee to Christ in which there is not only an absence of faith, but there is also an absence of any Christian ethos. And as a consequence of the Christian void in Europe, there are no longer any Europeans. What the Saxons, the Scots, and the Southerners preserved, the "white man's civilization," has been ceded on all the white ethnic fronts to the liberals and the colored heathens, who are Satan's minions.

Neo-pagans such as Kevin Strom look at the Aztecs, the Orientals, and the blacks and see that those people have maintained their identities during all the years of white dominance, and now they are strong in defense of their people while the whites are weak in defense of their people. And many whites, the liberals, have joined with the colored heathens to attack the white race. The neo-pagans then assume that the solution to white genocide is a return to the paganism of the Greeks and/or the Vikings. But that is a colossal misreading of European history. When the European people were Christian they ruled the world; when they ceased to be Christian they surrendered the world to the colored heathens. You can't judge the Christian character of a people by their church attendance, which may be just a carryover from the habits and traditions of their ancestors. You can judge a people's faith by their art work, their political structures, and their social organizations. By the 20th century a Christian artist was an anomaly, and secular democracies were all the rage. The bred-in-the-bone faith of the antique Europeans was no longer present in 20th century Europe, the century when the European people started on the road to oblivion.

You can't — and I repeat myself with this assertion — make yourself believe that Christ rose from the dead because such a faith would help your people beat back the colored onslaught on the European people. But you can take the neo-pagan blinders off your eyes and see that all that was good and pure and noble in old Europe stemmed from the European people's faith in Jesus Christ. And even if you can't believe in the Christian fairytale, you might want to examine why that story once inflamed the hearts of so many white men and women of Old Europe. Then, if you have a heart, you might begin to respect the hearts of your Christian forbearers more than the minds of the philosophers and the scientists. Organized Christian Jewry has given up on the incarnate Lord. Perhaps the neo-pagans, who seem to have some respect for their racial hearth fire, can trace white pietas to its source and become men again.

What happens when the white man's Christian culture has been destroyed? Is it true that we can never reclaim it? I don't think we should see our demise in that light. It is certain that the continuum of European culture, preserved during the Reconstruction Era by the Southern people, has been broken by Southern and Northern Europeans since the time in which Williams lived. But if that continuum has been broken, does that mean we must simply accept the new European civilization, which is a non-civilization consecrated to Satan? Almighty God, forbid it! Nothing is written. We can't re-create old Europe, but we can build a new Europe based on the faith of the antique Europeans. Individual people make up a nation. If it is possible for one individual to spiritually return to old Europe, then how can we say that our people cannot alter their headlong flight to the abyss?

Dylan Thomas was right to advise us to rage against the dying of the light, but his assertion that "dark is right" is an assertion stemming from a tortured heart defeated by the demons of modernity. The heart that loves much, the European heart, sees the light that shineth in darkness. We can't escape our destiny — either we are the Christ-bearers, the people who have seen a great light, or we are of all men most to be pitied. The mind-forged Europe of the great men of reason and science is a fraud; it is a trick of the devil. Christ's Europe, the Europe born of the union of His sacred heart with European hearts that loved much, is the real Europe that shall not pass away. +

---

### **The Beautiful Gate - September 22, 2018**

Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. — Acts 4: 25-26

---

There is a courageous wisdom: there is also a false reptile prudence, the result not of caution but of fear. Under misfortunes it often happens that the nerves of the understanding are so relaxed, the pressing peril of the hour so completely confounds all the faculties, that no future danger can be properly provided for, can be justly estimated, can be so much as fully seen. The eye of the mind is dazzled and vanquished. An abject distrust of ourselves, an extravagant admiration of the enemy, present us with no hope but in a compromise with his pride, by a submission to his will. This short plan of policy is the only counsel which will obtain a hearing. We plunge into a dark gulph with all the rash precipitation of fear. The nature of courage is, without a question, to be conversant with danger; but in the palpable night of their terrors, men under consternation suppose, not that it is the danger, which, by a sure instinct, calls out the courage to resist it, but that it is the courage which produces the danger. They therefore seek for a refuge from their fears in the fears themselves, and consider a temporizing meanness as the only source of safety. — Edmund Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

When I went to college in the early 1970s, which were culturally part of the late 1960s, the Dalai Lama was all the rage with the hippies and the leftists among the student body. I remember shocking a young female devotee of the Dalai Lama who was trying to get me to look at life from outside of Western culture, by taking the same stance vis-à-vis Western culture that Ratty took in regards to his River:

'I beg your pardon,' said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. 'You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So—this—is—a—River!'

'THE River,' corrected the Rat.

'And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!'

'By it and with it and on it and in it,' said the Rat. 'It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other.'

-Kenneth Grahame, *Wind in the Willow*

It is indeed a sad and tragic commentary on the spiritual decline of the European people when the current Dalai Lama, a purveyor of shallow Asian mysticism, is more conservative about the survival of the European people than any of the liberals or conservatives of European ancestry. That the European nations should be for the European people is now a heresy throughout the nations of Europe. How did we come to this pass? Why do white people think they have no right to exist as a distinct people?

Let's start at the end of the line and then go back to the beginning. The end of the line for white people was when the 20th century conservatives ran from the sound of the guns. The liberals, who are possessed by the devil, will always attack the white, Christ-bearing race. In every century prior to the 20th century there were men from the upper ranks of the European nobility and the European intelligentsia — Burke, Havelock, Metternich, Lee, etc. — who defended the white race against the onslaught of liberals and colored heathens. But in the 20th century the conservatives' resistance to liberalism ceased. Men who are now called paleo-conservatives, such as Richard Weaver and Russell Kirk, were not conservatives;



they took refuge in the idea of conservatism while denying the essence of European conservatism, which is pietas, the love of one's own kith and kin. The pre-repentant Jonah was the prototype for the 20th century conservatives. They hid on board ship, immersed in their universalist philosophies, while their people perished in the sea of liberalism. There were notable exceptions to the cowardice of the 20th century conservatives — Anthony Jacob stands above them all — but such exceptions were ignored by the respectable conservatives and demonized by the liberals. Charles Peguy once said that we shall never know just how many acts of cowardice were committed by men because they were afraid of not seeming sufficiently progressive. And what is the essence of progressiveness? It is the rejection of your own people in favor of the people of other races. If you won't defend your own people, because you are afraid of the racist label, you are not conservative, you are a traitor, who gives aid and comfort to the liberal enemy while trying to divorce yourself from the responsibility for your treachery by spouting universalist pap about "respecting our democratic traditions." To hell with our democratic traditions, they are the traditions of the devil. There is only one tradition I have any respect for, the tradition of my people who loved their own, in and through the Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

"Those are mighty harsh words for just a little infraction of the rules," Long John Silver tells Captain Smollet when he is told he must be tried for mutiny and murder. You could say the same thing about my polemic against the 20th century conservatives. But is the betrayal of your people to an implacable enemy devoid of mercy just a little infraction of the rules? Twentieth century conservatives allowed actual white people to be buried in the dust heap of history while they went merrily on their way defending a universalist ideal called "the people." A little infraction? It is a violation of that charity of honor which sets the Europeans apart from the colored heathens and the liberals.

Now that we have seen the end, let us go back to the beginning, to the Garden of Eden. Satan placed a wedge between God and His people by appealing to Adam and Eve's pride of intellect. He did not try to get them to deny God, instead he enticed them into denying pietas. They severed their filial relationship with God in order to place themselves in a position of intellectual equality with God. Hasn't that always been at the heart of the matter? When the great scholastic placed reason above revelation wasn't it done to place the human intellect on an equal basis with God? And hasn't that desire for intellectual equality with God always led to the elimination of the living God in favor of the nature gods that can be known by human reason? The noble savages of color have become the gods of the liberals, because those gods are compatible with human reason; they can be seen and touched. The European people have returned to Baal because they cannot bear a God who isn't there for them. Science, an offshoot of human reason, is a god who is there. And the great god Science points lovingly to the heathen Gods of nature. "I see nothing, yet all that there is I see," proclaims Hamlet's spiritually anesthetized mother. That is the liberals' mantra as well. They see nothing in Christian Europe but racism; they do not see the living God, yet they proclaim that they see everything there is. The Christ story has become a ghost story to the modern Europeans. It is an entertaining story on certain festive days when you want to hear such stories, but it is not part of the fabric of their lives, it is not a sustaining force like science, nor is it as real and as inspiring as the stories about Martin Luther King Jr. and Nelson Mandela, the true gods of the modern Europeans.

The history of the European people is quite different from the history of the non-European peoples. The colored heathens have remained with their pagan gods. Granted there are some Christian converts within the heathen cultures, but those minority groups have not been able to derail the pagan fabric of their heathen nations. In contrast to the colored heathens stand the Europeans. They rejected paganism for Christ and changed the course of European history. Any attempt to change the Christian center of European culture would be disastrous for the European people, because you cannot change your gods without destroying your people. Of course that is what has happened. Liberalism is the Europeans' attempt to return to Baal. Their worship of the colored heathens is a tragic repudiation of 2,000 years of European history. By labeling white pietas undemocratic and racist, the liberals have successfully stopped all conservative opposition to liberalism. The European people now live in a liberal theocracy where the worship of the colored heathen is mandated.

Kipling developed a hopeful myth about his beloved English people. He claimed they were slow to anger, but when they were aroused, "when the English began to hate," then the enemy was in trouble. But I think Kipling took years and years of Christianity for granted. It is the love of Christ, the Christ who took flesh amongst the European people, that gives a man the passion to hate those who attack his kith and kin. Without the love that once was there for the Son of God, the English and all the European people do not have the capacity to hate the devil and all his works. They can't do what they must, which is to drive the liberals and the colored heathens from the European nations. They must send the liberals to hell and the colored heathens back to heathendom.

Let me come back to the God whom the liberals claim is not there. When Moses went up to Mt. Sinai, his people returned to Baal. They did not have enough faith in the living God, who was more than nature, to forsake the nature gods. The same thing has happened in modern Europe. When the churchmen, under pressure from their bastard children, the mad-dog liberals, banished the God-in-man culture of the antique Europeans, the European people no longer had a God who was there, so they made new-old idols of the colored heathens. When we look at the modern European nations and their offshoots, such as the United States, we see in the mixture of the post-Christian liberals and colored heathens images of hell more gruesome and horrific than Dore's illustrations for Dante's Inferno. And still the work of the devil continues.

Our children are taught, in church and school, the catechism of liberalism – “And thou shalt love the sacred negro and the colored races with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt hate the white race with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. There is none other commandment greater than these.” The liberals’ gods are jealous gods; they shall have no other gods before them, and every last remnant of the antique European culture and the heirs of that culture must be eradicated from the face of the earth. That is the one great commandment of the rulers of Liberalism: “So it is written, so it shall be.”

Where is the diversity in liberalism? There is nothing diverse about heathenism. Whether it is the heathenism of the Moslems and the colored races or the heathenism of the technocratic liberals, it is all the same – the worship of sex, blood, and power. There can only be diversity when “the soul knows its worth.” When the European people took Christ into their hearts and made Him the cornerstone of their culture, they displayed a diversity of gifts. Certain traits were associated with the Swiss character, the English character, the Italian character, and so on. But all those diverse national traits were grounded in one unifying love, the love of Jesus Christ. Can we look at the vast panorama of European history prior to the 20th century and still proceed suicidally onward to the liberals’ hell on earth?

Throughout the Christian centuries there were always men like Julian the apostate, who wanted the European people to return to paganism. But the European people always resisted the apostate intellectuals of Europe in order to stay with the God-Man. Now, they too, the European peasants, have left Christ to join with the blasphemers: “If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself.” He did not save Himself; instead He saved us. How can we leave Him, once again, alone on that cross? Why have we forsaken Him for nature and nature’s Gods, the colored heathens? He will never compel us to love Him, not because He is too proud, but because He does not want the love of slaves. He wants us to love Him as our Lord and kinsman. The liberals’ “diversity” is the work of the devil. We should reject that world and champion eternal Europe, which is a “land of pure delight,” because our people and our Savior reside there. +

---

## **The Forgotten and Condemned Europeans - September 15, 2018**

Jasper was to have been tracked remorselessly to his death by the man whom he supposed he had slain. Risen from his grave, Drood was to have driven Jasper to his tomb, there to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt: but to find there instead, alive and implacable, the man whom he had doomed to a sudden and terrible death, and in whose dust he had come to seek for the dreaded evidence of his guilt.

– Richard A. Proctor, *Watched by the Dead: A Loving Study of Dickens Half-Told Tale*

---

Let me begin with C. S. Lewis’s description of the effects that the preaching of a false Christianity has on the belief in the one true God:

Tirian had never dreamed that one of the results of an Ape’s setting up a false Aslan would be to stop people from believing in the real one. He had felt quite sure that the Dwarfs would rally to his side the moment he showed them how they had been deceived. And then next night he would have led them to Stable Hill and shown Puzzle to all the creatures and everyone would have turned against the Ape and, perhaps after a scuffle with the Calormenes, the whole thing would have been over. But now, it seemed, he could count on nothing. How many other Narnians might turn the same way as the Dwarfs?

The organized Christian churches set before us a process which was called Christianity, but that process was put in motion by a demonic intellect far greater than the theologians. In the Roman Catholic Church, the Christian Everyman was told he could only obtain access to God through a complicated system of checkpoints and interrogations. At each checkpoint, the religious devotee is examined to determine if he has truly emptied his heart of all passions so that his brain is ready to receive the faith from the men of reason. But what if the living God does not choose to enter human minds? What if He chooses to come to mankind through the human heart? The laity yearn for intimacy with Christ; that is why there are litanies to His Sacred Heart. But the laity also have an intense fear of intimacy with the living God, which is why they permit the clergy to rationalize the mystery of His Sacred Heart. “We give you a rationalized Christ and you check your passions for intimacy with the living God, and for intimacy with your kith and kin at the door of the church.”

The Protestant theologians repeated the Roman Catholic theologians’ process. They made the Bible a mere rubber stamp for their theology, rather than the living testimony of the Son of God. In point of fact, the Protestant churches that were founded on “Biblical principles” have united to deny that the Word became enfleshed in the hearts of men. For what is the denial of the European hearth fire but a denial that His word can be made flesh?

The race war is a war of faith. The church men claim they have abandoned the Christ of the European hearth fire in order to give us a new and better Christ, a Christ shorn of the racist trappings of old Europe. But is there a better Christ than

Rembrandt's Christ? Did the European people get it right? Was Christ, the Son of the living God, at the heart of their culture? If He was, then it is to that church, which consists of hearts united to His heart through their kith and kin, we must look to for salvation.

I made a determination in my early twenties that I lived in Satandom. When you make such a determination early in life, the economic problem always looms large. In order to make a living, you must go among them. How do you make a living without becoming 'of them'? God will judge how well I managed the balancing act, but even now, in my old age, I have to be careful that I do not go among them too often, lest I become of them. The problem is not with the hardcore or mad-dog liberals, whom I avoid, to coin an old phrase, like the plague. The problem I have, in maintaining my guard against the powers of hell, is with the European enablers of the mad-dog liberals: the neo-pagans and the Judaized Christians of organized Christianity. The people in those camps retain some of the old Christian European virtues but mix those virtues with something hideously liberal. I am drawn to the old virtues and revolted by the liberalism.

Let's start with the neo-pagans. No man is an island; we all need communion with our fellow men. But if it is not communion, if we are not one at heart, is it not better to remain alone? I recently viewed a video by someone who brilliantly dissected the insane white-hating policies of the mad-dog liberals and exposed those policies as the policies of sick, demented individuals. My heart soared – here was a kindred spirit. But then the speaker concluded with an apologia for the blood faith of the pagan Europeans. "Oh, what a falling off was here." I try to be understanding – "Isn't this the effects of the constant blasphemous preaching of organized Christian Jewry? Haven't they given us an image of the false Aslan?" Yes, they have, but still, hasn't He planted a desire for truth, a desire to know the living God, in our hearts? The sheer moral beauty of old Europe and her people has been buried by the modern Europeans, but isn't it still there for the noble souls who seek that beauty? It is a fatal blindness, the blindness of intellectual pride, which keeps the neo-pagan from embracing the antique Europeans and their God. One thinks of St. Paul's statement about the Athenian philosophers, "To the Greeks foolishness." When your disgust with the mad-dog liberals stems from your disgust with their thought processes and not their rejection of Christ, you are only in love with your own mind, not your own people. Such a love will not conquer the mad-dog liberals.

The 'Christians' of organized Jewry are the other side of the neo-pagan/Christian Jewry coin. The neo-pagans see the European fairy tale as foolishness while the Christian-Jews see the European fairy tale as a stumbling block. They don't believe that the European Christ, the Christ of the Gospels and St. Paul, was the Son of the living God; that Christ was racist, Islamophobic, sexist, and an anti-Semite. So they give us a new Christ, a Christ who can be blended with liberalism. Such Christians might break with the mad-dog liberals on the subject of Islam, but they will stay in the fold because of negro worship. They do not believe the Word was made flesh in old Europe. But if He wasn't made flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans, then is it really possible to know Him? If their testimony is wrong, then who is right? Is it to church councils and Bible experts we should look or is it to the people who loved much?

What unites the neo-pagan and the Christian-Jew? They are united in their rejection of the human heart as an organ of sight. They both cling to their intellects as protection against Lear's wheel of fire. But our reason will not save us from the wheel of fire. In fact it is our reason, divorced from our heart, that will place us on the wheel of fire. Our Lord enjoined us to enter into the romance of the Cross, forsaking the philosophical systems of the Greeks and the theological systems of the Jews. "So be it," said the antique Europeans. "We will follow the poetic of the Star of Bethlehem even if that star leads us to the Cross." How can we refuse to see the moral beauty of those people and their God?

The devil has drawn the neo-pagans and the Christian-Jews into his world in order to envelop them in his reptilian coils of abstract reason, which is what he excels at. And they, the neo-pagans and the Christian-Jews, are not great reasoners even though they consider themselves to be godlike in their reason. Their world is a world we dare not enter, lest we be enveloped in Satan's coils. Is this the promised end?

There is one, and only one, option for the European people. They must reject Satan's world, the world of science and the dialectic, and return to Christ's Europe, the Europe of Walter Scott, Handel, Rembrandt, and the people who loved much. But they can't return without a human conduit; someone from old Europe must draw them back. I call upon the remnant band to enter Satan's world, not in the spirit of compromise, not with the intention of dialoging with the devil and his minions, but sword in hand, determined to conquer in the name of the Christ of old Europe. But you must believe in that Christ and His world before you enter therein. If you waver in your faith, you will be devoured by the devil.

In 1887 Richard A. Proctor wrote a book called *Watched by the Dead: A Loving Study of Dickens Half-Told Tale*. It is indeed a loving study, the only type of study that should be written about authors who gave us their heart's blood. In the book, Proctor tells us how he thinks Dickens intended to finish his unfinished novel, *The Mystery of Edwin Drood*. I agree with Proctor's vision of the completed novel, but that is not what I want to focus on. I want to pick up on a point Proctor makes about Dickens. He points out that in most of Dickens' novels there is a character, seemingly dead, as is the case in *Edwin Drood* and in *Our Mutual Friend*, who is not really dead; or there is a character, such as Wilkins Micawber in

*David Copperfield*, seemingly on the periphery of society and of no consequence. But before these novels end, the seemingly dead characters and/or the seemingly inconsequential characters step out of the shadows and defeat the evil antagonists. Proctor is mainly concerned about the novels of Dickens, but he also points out that the same process is in effect in the novels of Walter Scott. As a lifelong devotee of both authors, I can attest to the truth of Proctor's observation. I would add that the same thing he observes in the works of Scott and Dickens is present in Shakespeare's plays. Edgar, thought to be dead, turns the tables on his evil brother Edmund, and the inconsequential, simple-minded Dogberry defeats the evil machinations of Don John the bastard and his henchman, Borachio: "What your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light..."

Now, let me go into territory where Proctor does not go. I think all great European poets – and Shakespeare, Scott, and Dickens are three of the greatest – weave the Gospel of Christ into the fabric of their stories. They do not do this in a rational, planned, didactic manner, they do it because the Christ story has entered their hearts. When they write from the heart, His story comes alive before the eyes of our heart. So let me repeat, all great European poets depict Christ interacting with His people, the Europeans. Christ is the inconsequential character, thought to be dead, thought to be a simpleton, who enters human history and defeats the enemy of mankind, the archangel Satan. St. John tells us even before he knew the Scripture that Christ must rise again from the dead, that "he saw and believed." Why did he see and believe? Because he, the apostle whom Christ loved, laid his head on Christ's sacred heart at the last supper. And so did they, our people, lay their heads upon His Sacred Heart. They saw and believed, and so shall we, if we follow their way, and not the way of the prophets of reason, science, and Christian Jewry. We who are about to die demand a miracle. We cannot exorcise the demons of liberalism from Europe unless we go within. The liberals have a local habitation and a name. They inhabit modern Europe and their name is legion. We must look to our God, who also has a local habitation and a name. He lives in hearts of flesh and His name is Jesus. The European people will only survive as a people if they love Him in and through the forgotten and condemned white people of old Europe. +

---

### **Our Hope and Our Faith September 8, 2018**

I call a commonwealth Regicide, which lays it down as a fixed law of nature, and a fundamental right of man, that all government, not being a democracy, is an usurpation; that all Kings, as such, are usurpers, and for being Kings, may and ought to be put to death, with their wives, families, and adherents. The commonwealth which acts uniformly upon those principles; and which after abolishing every festival of religion, chooses the most flagrant act of a murderous Regicide treason for a feast of eternal commemoration, and which forces all her people to observe it—this I call Regicide by establishment. —Edmund Burke, *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. —John 13: 1

---

Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault at all. But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews? Then cried they all again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber. — John 19: 38-40

---

No French king, not even Louis the XIV, was as bloodthirsty or tyrannical as Robespierre. No Russian Czar was anywhere near as bloodthirsty and tyrannical as Lenin and Stalin. No British monarch ever taxed the American people like the native-grown democratic government taxed them. No war in the non-democratic age of Europe was ever as bloody and terrible as the American Civil War and World Wars I and II. And no white South African president ever called for the liquidation of the blacks of South Africa, nor did the white South Africans allow blacks to slaughter other blacks as well as whites. But the liberals of the West wanted democracy in South Africa. Then, and only then, did we witness bloody barbarism on an epic scale. Democracy is Satan's form of government. Through that system of government he has imposed his will on the European people. What is Satan's will? His will is that the European people shall be eradicated from the face of the earth. And his will shall prevail unless the white grazers have a crisis of faith and cease to believe in democracy.

All evils under the sun have been and still are sanctioned under the guise of democracy. To put it simply – democracy means the majority can tyrannize over the minority. In reality, under our modern system of elections, a majority of a tiny segment of voters end up tyrannizing over the majority of non-voters. But even if everyone voted, the immorality of democracy would remain – the majority decide what is right, and they inflict their decision on the minority. And when the majority is liberal – and that is the reality in the Western European nations – or when the majority are black, as in South Africa, the ruling majority imposes a satanic rule on the minority. Prior to their approval of the 1992 referendum ending apartheid, the South African whites had the last European government, in that it was not democratic, on the face of the earth.

Why is democracy coupled with Christianity when there has never been a Christian democracy? Democracy gives a quasi-divinity to the rule of Satan, which renders white grazers, who have been stripped of their Christian faith, morally anesthetized, completely incapable of resisting any edict stemming from a democratically elected government. The democratically elected government of South Africa announces that it is going to confiscate the land and – let's state the obvious – kill the white South Africans. And no one in the West objects. In fact, Theresa May says it is fine so long as it is done lawfully. What does she mean by lawfully? She means democratically, which translates to “We must do what Satan wills.” No, we must not do what Satan wills, we must do what Christ wills. And Christ does not will that we should cede the world to Satan even if Satan wins every election in the world. Fitzhugh warns us that a government is only beneficial when the government body is conservative. (1) When liberals and/or negroes govern, white Christians should rebel, because the government is not conserving that which is essential to conserve — the white, Christ-bearing race. Leaders such as Angela Merkel and that German councilwoman who openly countenance the Islamification of white Germany would not be tolerated for one second if the German people, like all of the European people, were not under the thrall of democracy. “Fit to govern? Not fit to live!” should be the white Christian's response to liberal leaders such as Merkel and May.

I often hear that we should look to Russia or to Hungary as exemplars of democracies that work. No, no, a thousand times, no! What is good in modern Russia and modern Hungary is that their leaders are still mindful of their nations' non-democratic Christian past. When Putin opposes homosexual marriage and agrees to take in white South African farmers, he is doing what Nicholas II would have done. He is acting like a non-democratic Christian leader. When Orbán resists the Islamization of Hungary, he too is acting like a Christian ruler from old Hungary. But if the Russians and the Hungarians continue on the democratic road they too will end up in the slough of despair, which is where all who follow the democratic way end up.

We must never forget that the Jews (“Give us Barabbas!”) democratically voted to crucify Christ. Nothing has changed since that exercise in democracy. Whenever democracy is the ruling faith, the Christ-bearing people are crucified, and Christ, who suffers with His people, is crucified anew. In Jacobin France, communist Russia, democratic Europe, and the democratic United States, it was the implementation of democratic principles that led to the dethronement of Christ and the destruction of the European people. Once you institute ‘one man, one vote,’ you have given Satan the power to govern, because the colored heathens, who outnumber the whites, will always support that which is anti-Christian and anti-white. This is why the liberals in the European nations will never place any restrictions on colored immigration. They shall not rest till there are no whites, except themselves, left in the formerly white nations. They too will perish as the colored heathens do not love the liberals as the liberals think they do, but before the liberal de Klerks perish, the white grazers will already have been led to the slaughter by their democratic leaders.

Democracy is always ushered in with the cry of liberty, equality, and fraternity, but what democracy brings is tyranny. None of the ties that bind us to humanity, and through our humanity to the humane God, can survive when they are democratized. Our family ties cannot be democratized and still survive, nor can we permit our white Christian culture to be democratized out of existence because the colored heathens and the liberals have no use for it.

And that is the crux of the whole matter. Are we going to consent to the murder of the European people and the destruction of every last vestige of Christian Europe because the liberals have decided to destroy them “lawfully” and democratically? Democracy as practiced by the demon whites of modern Europe has its roots in Christian theology. First the Roman Catholic theologians and then the Protestant theologians felt it was easier to advance the cause of Christ if He, our Lord and Savior, was placed in a closed box that men could only obtain access to through a complicated system. The system became the important thing while Christ faded away. The systematizing of God in the churches led to the systematizing of man in society, through the democratic process. At the time of the French Revolution, the French clergy did not care if their charges were atheists so long as they didn't become Protestants. That lack of concern for what is inside of a man, so long as he adheres to the rules of the system, always leads to the dissolution of real faith and leaves a man open to treasons, stratagems, and spoils.

Some years back when John Paul II was spewing out blasphemies from the Papal throne, I received a letter from a Catholic apologist who was trying to win Roman Catholics who had converted to Protestant fundamentalism back to the fold. Wouldn't I help him win those fundamentalists back to the true faith? I sent a letter to the zealous apologist stating that what I wanted to see were more Christians in the world, and it seemed to me that the converts to fundamentalism had more of the real Christianity in them than John Paul II or any of my fellow Roman Catholics. Needless to say I never heard back from that gentleman. I do not want to enter into partisan religious controversies here. The point is that our Lord sent us a Comforter, the Holy Ghost, and St. Paul enjoined us to circumcise our hearts so that we could come to know the Savior. Why then do Christians cling to their systems about God rather than the living God who enters human hearts?

Secular democracy is a logical consequence of intellectual Christianity which gives us a system instead of Christ the Lord. I can only conclude that it is the cross of Christ that has made systems, religious and secular, more appealing to the European people than the Christ-centered faith of St. Paul and the antique Europeans, because the systems promise us Christianity without the cross. But the systems in the church have failed, and the democratic governments have failed. Isn't it time to look back to old Europe and see what they saw when they accepted their cross and loved Christ in and through their kith and kin?

Twentieth century conservatives were not conservative, because they did not want to conserve the European people and their ancient faith. They wanted to conserve the democratic system which is the other side of the Marxist coin. Hegel saw the thesis and the anti-thesis going on forever, but Marx put an amen to that process. Once 'the people' came into their own, history was at an end. You can't oppose a government of the people, because 'the people' are the government; they are the end of the thesis and anti-thesis process. That is the Jacobin, Marxist, democratic system. By the late 20th century and through the 21st century, the liberals have clung to that view of 'the people,' with one significant change. Now 'the people' are the colored races only; whites cannot be 'the people.' That ideology has turned the liberals into mystics. They are currently, en masse, involved in a Gnostic leap of faith. They believe that they can transfer their minds into the bodies of the colored heathens and live their lives through the colored races. If you look at the passion with which the liberals involve themselves with the non-white races, particularly the black race, you can see the Gnostic transformation at work. The white grazer does not believe in the Gnostic transformation with the passion of the mad dog liberal, but he does believe in democracy, which the liberals invoke whenever the grazer starts to question the negro-worshipping premises of liberalism. Which brings us back to the question that will determine the destiny of the white race. Will the European people ever have a crisis of faith, will they ever cease to believe in democracy?

It doesn't appear that the European people will forsake democracy. The church organizations, which are hostile to Christ and the European people, keep telling the European people that democracy and Christianity are one. (When John Paul II went to South America back when Pinochet ruled in Chile, he visited all the left-leaning democracies but refused to visit Pinochet's non-democratic, Christian dictatorship.) Possibly when the Western democracies can no longer deliver the material goods, the white grazers will lose faith in the democratic system. But I do not put much store in movements that stem from mere materialism. Without a spiritual impetus such revolts become mere anarchy, everyman's hand against everyman. The European people must look at the fruits of democracy – abortion, homosexual marriage, and negro worship – all bound together by a merciless cruelty, and then they must have an internal conversion to the Light of the World. Is that likely? No, it is not. I certainly don't see any signs that the Europeans are going to break their democratic chains. But we are not going to be vouchsafed a material sign. Christ still seeks to enter human hearts, He is the sign that a European clings to in the democratic era, which is the satanic era of the European people's history. Satan's era shall not be the last era – that is our hope and our faith. Our Lord speaks to us still even in the darkness of the 21st century: "These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation; but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world." +

---

(1) All government proceeds ab extra. Neither individuals nor societies can govern themselves, any more than the mouse can live in the exhausted receiver, or the clown lift himself by the lapel of his pantaloons. The South is governed by the necessity of keeping its negroes in order, which preserves a healthy conservative public opinion. Had the negroes votes, the necessity would be removed, because the interest of the governing class would cease to be conservative. –George Fitzhugh, *Cannibals All! Or Slaves Without Masters*

---

## **For God So Loved the World - September 1, 2018**

"Wondrous was the cross of victory." – *The Dream of the Rood*

---

Liberalism is from the devil. That is so obvious it seems rather unnecessary to say it, but we must say it over and over again for the simple reason that the modern Europeans do not see that liberalism is from the devil. They are morally blind, because they have rejected the light of the world in order to return to nature and nature's gods.

Our faith is determined by what we see. When the Europeans saw with their hearts, as St. Paul enjoined them to do, the European people saw Christ clearly: He was their Lord and Savior. And they saw the devil clearly: he was Christ's mortal enemy who prowled about the world, seeking the ruin of souls. When the cord is cut, when the love that once was there, at our racial hearth fire, is replaced by the intelligence that is out there, in nature, we become as tinkling cymbals and sounding brass, we become unmen in search of a God.

The modern Europeans do not see liberalism as the work of the devil, because they no longer see that our God, “our Jesus,” is more than nature. The devil no longer has to slink around and hide in the holes and corners of Christendom with the intent of ruining souls. Now he merely goes on inspection tours of his kingdom, because Satanism is the ruling ethos of the European nations. Satan has a little checklist that he takes with him on his tours.

“Are the abortion mills running at full speed?” he asks his junior devils.

“Yes,” the junior devils reply.

“How about the organized Christian churches – are they still blending negro worship, Judaism, and Islam with Christianity?”

The junior devils reply, “Yes, the nature religions have more than a foothold in the Christian churches, they dominate them. Your enemy, Jesus Christ, has become a non-entity, a mere figurehead who is called upon to bless nature and nature’s gods, the sacred negro being the primary god.”

“How about the schools?”

The junior devils reply, “Ah, that is our greatest triumph. The liberals, inspired by your satanic hatred of Jesus Christ, relentlessly pound home the same Christ-hating, white-hating message in preschool, elementary school, the secondary schools, the colleges, and the graduate schools.”

“I am pleased, but you must never forget that the attack on Jesus Christ must always be linked to an attack on the European people. If they, the Europeans, have a change of heart and return to old Europe, to His Europe, millions and millions of souls who belong to me will go to Him.”

“No worries, mate, we will always center our attack on the European people.”

Satan frowns. “Don’t address me as ‘mate’.”

“I’m sorry, your exalted and magnificent one.”

“That’s better. You are doing well, but let me stress that eternal vigilance is necessary. We cannot rest until Christendom becomes Satandom.”

“But Christendom is Satandom, your excellency. You have done it!”

“Truly?”

“Yes, Christendom is now Satandom – or Liberaldom – they both amount to the same thing.”

“Then we must not rest until we make heaven itself part of Satandom!”

“That, your exalted majesty, will be hard. We couldn’t break Him on the cross. He forgave those miserable humans in the midst of mortal pain.”

“Yes, but that is His weakness. He loves those miserable wretches. We will break Him through His love for them. Once they all turn from Him, rejecting His sacrifice on the cross, He will despair, and I will supplant Him.”

“Your cause is our cause, your Majesty.”

The unknown Saxon poet who wrote *The Dream of the Rood* saw the Cross of Christ as a “wondrous” sign of our salvation. He didn’t see the Cross as the unnatural, sick creation of a degenerate people. His faith was the faith of St. Paul; it was grounded in the vision of his heart. The great and tragic transformation from St. Paul’s faith and the great Saxon poet’s faith, both of which were centered on Jesus Christ, to a faith in Christianity as a nature-based philosophy has made the European people a soulless aggregate herd without a human identity. The Pope Francis and the Angela Merkels try desperately to find their identity, their spiritual core, by worshipping the colored heathens. Such worship does give them something to live for, but can that kind of devotion ever result in anything but spiritual death? Of course it can’t. But that is the end result of the revolt against the cross of Christ.

It is the utmost folly to think that the European people can survive as a people without destroying the breeding grounds of liberalism, the churches and the schools. In church and school the hatred of white people, past and present, is preached and taught with an unrelenting, singular, all-encompassing hatred. I recently saw an American literature anthology that is being used in some of our schools. There were 'true life' accounts of black slaves, supposedly written in the 19th century but obviously written in the 21st century, all sorts of poems by red Indians and radical feminists, and then a few selections from 'dead white males' in which the editor explained why the white male authors were evil. I think I would prefer a complete ban on white male authors, as the Brits do, rather than see them pilloried by liberal editors. But in either case the central point is the same – our people and our heritage are demonized at every educational level while we dutifully send our children, young and old, off to have their minds and souls dirtied with the stink of liberalism.

If the organized Christian churches were actually Christian, they would constitute a bulwark against liberalism. But this is not the case. The churches are one with the educational establishment. In many instances, certainly as regards the extermination of the white race, the liberal clergy have exceeded the secular liberals. They want to avoid accusations of racism, so they zealously support the liberals with a devotion that leaves them, they hope, above reproach. When the secular liberals, such as Theresa May and Angela Merkel, support the confiscation of the land of the white farmers in South Africa, the church men shout even louder for confiscation. When the secular liberals demand an end to the white race, the church men demand that end at a faster rate. The Academy, in all its tentacles, and organized, Christian Jewry are one; they have set up a vast network of unmen who continually attack the European Christ and His people.

The reasonable, moderate Christians always roll their eyes and change the subject when you use terms such as Satandom to describe modern Europe. They do not want to acknowledge the fact that liberalism is from the devil, because they are in love with the superficiality of dialogue and democracy. If they keep things superficial, if they maintain that liberals are reasonable people that you can work with, without recourse to extreme measures, they can continue to hold elections and talk endlessly about getting the right candidate into office. How can any candidate for any office make a dent in liberalism if he is not permitted to eradicate the breeding grounds of liberalism? There I go again – asserting that liberalism is from the devil, but is it not from the devil? Is Angela Merkel open to pity for the German people whom she has gleefully turned over to Moslem rapists and murderers? Does Theresa May feel remorse for her support of the land-grab and murder of white South African farmers? Does Pope Francis feel any guilt over his relentless campaign against the white race and his blasphemous attacks on Jesus Christ? We are dealing with the devil when we deal with liberals, and we must deal with them as Alfred dealt with the heathen Danes. We must defeat them. And then, if they are truly repentant, we can extend mercy. But we can't dialogue with them while they are at the head of a demonic horde of colored heathens who feed on the blood of white people.

Whenever classical liberals such as Paul Joseph Watson or Alex Jones are taken off the air by the mad-dog liberals, there is always a cry of 'unfair!' amongst the classical liberals. Of course it is unfair. The liberals say they are for free speech and then they suppress free speech. But free speech, democracy, liberty, equality, and all the other 'god' words that the liberals use are mere verbal subterfuges. The liberals have only one rule. They must prevail, because they are the godded men and women who rule in the name of their colored gods. White racists must be eliminated. Anything that aids that cause is not only permitted, it is laudatory. Such is the liberals' creed, a satanic creed that can only be defeated by men who have embraced the cross of Christ and are determined to fight the devil and all his works without recourse to democracy, dialogue, and compromise.

Let me refer to a short story, or, more accurately, a short parable written by Robert Louis Stevenson. In the parable there is a scholar, a priest, and a Germanic everyman. The parable is set in pre-Christian times when Odin was god and king. The scholar proves to the priest that Odin is not god, and the priest decides he will find another god. Then the priest and the scholar ask the Germanic everyman what he thinks of their intellectual findings about Odin. The German replies, "I must go and die with him."

Our commitment to our people and our God cannot be conditional, depending on what new theory our educational establishments and our clerical organizations come up with. There is one God, and there is only one people who took that God into the heart of their civilization. We can't become part of another civilization that is completely opposed to our people and our God. The little brown church in the vale and the country school house might have been good things once when the Dream of the Rood was preached in the churches and all things taught in the schools pointed to that dream. But now that the little brown church in the vale and the little country school house have become the breeding grounds for Satanism, we must destroy those breeding grounds and return to the hinterlands of Europe where we can regroup and come back against the liberals as Christian Europeans instead of weak, vacillating unmen who are neither Christian nor pagan.

It's quite easy to go through European history and find nothing but evil. After all, the European people were all sons of Adam and daughters of Eve; they were not without sin. But the antique Europeans declared their belief in "the best of dreams," the dream of "a wondrous tree rising aloft, encompassed with light." That light was our Lord and Savior Jesus



Christ. What is the liberals' dream? They dream of a glorious breed of man-gods who are without sin, who will destroy the evil whites while allowing them, the whites who have transcended whiteness, to share their kingdom of heaven on earth. Needless to say, the liberals' kingdom of heaven on earth is hell on earth. We see their new kingdom of hell all round us. If we love the European people and the Christ of old Europe enough to oppose the liberals with our whole heart, mind, and soul, He will not forsake us in the day of battle. He will vouchsafe us a dream of the Rood that will sustain us till the ending of the world.

It is certainly not a discernable scientific fact that Christ will be with us in the day of battle against the liberals. Our belief that He will be with us comes from a very unscientific organ of sight, the human heart. "We are such stuff as dreams are made on," is only a depressing thought if we equate all dreams as emanating from nothingness, from unreality. But if we view the dream as the reality, the dream of Christ crucified, Christ risen, we will see that it is Satan who rules Liberaldom, and we will know that Christ will not abandon us in our battle against Satan and his liberal minions. But we must fight liberalism in His name, not in the name of democracy, philosophy, or racial equality. +

---

### **The Gift of Sight - August 25, 2018**

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth. – John 9: 35-41

---

The liberal couple who went on a bike trip through the Middle East to show us that "evil is a make-believe concept" were the product of one hundred years of liberal indoctrination. Their liberalism got them killed. That is sad, but not tragic. The real tragedy is when non-liberal whites are killed as a result of liberalism. At least the two bike-riding liberals got to die for their faith. But why should the non-liberal whites have to die for the liberals' faith?

Andre Gide, the French novelist who championed decadence and nihilism, once said that he didn't believe in the devil but that was precisely what the devil wanted, for him to deny his existence. The liberals of the Western world are in thrall to the devil, even though they do not believe in the devil. The devil manipulates them through the colored races. The liberals' worship of the colored savages is devil worship. Just as the antique Europeans worshipped Christ in and through their people, so do the liberals worship Satan in and through the colored races. All things evil, such as rape and murder, can be sanctioned if they are done by the colored minions of Satan. It is virtually illegal now to arrest a black man in America or a Moslem in Europe, because they are the godded men, whom the liberals revere and worship.

Satan prefers to let the liberals worship him through the colored races, because if the liberals were to openly profess a belief in the biblical devil, they would be vulnerable to a belief in the devil's biblical antagonist. But of course the liberals who reject a personal devil do believe that the white race is demonic. Always excepting their exalted selves, the liberals maintain that the evil white race must be purged so that the good, the colored races, can endure while the evil whites perish.

Unfortunately for the liberal bike riders, the Moslems and the other heathens of color do not always distinguish the good whites, the Atticus Finch whites who have gone beyond whiteness, from the run of the mill whites who are responsible for all the evils on earth. But even if some liberal bike riders die, the liberals will hold to their faith. They will trust in their gods to the end, because the colored heathens provide the liberals with an alternative faith, a faith that keeps the Son of God away from them. Liberals talk and write about love more than their non-liberal, European ancestors, but they have an incredible fear of the Divine Love that engenders all human love. Outside of His love there is no love. The liberals, despite their rhetoric, have created a world without love, because they have cut all ties to the God of love. "Nearer my God to me" has become, "Nearer the colored races to me."

Shakespeare got to the heart of the matter when he told us that Christ was the grave where "buried love doth live." The liberals do not believe that, so they have placed a 'do not enter' sign on the European hearth fire in an effort to dam up the channels of grace that lead us to the Divine Love. At the heart of the liberals' worship of the colored heathen is a desire to avoid the crucifixion that accompanies all true love, because all those who truly love suffer with their loved ones in life and death. If our love of Christ brings only a crucifixion without the resurrection it is unbearable. "Let us put Christ in a nursing home and euthanize Him," is the liberals' demand. "He is no longer serviceable." And His people must follow Him to that great liberal nursing home where they, because they once knew His name, must be euthanized as well.

We will always believe a lie when we use the liberals' own terminology to combat liberalism. Liberals such as the two freeze-dried hippie bike riders murdered by Moslems do not have a death wish. They have a Utopian fantasy of the noble non-white savages and an egotistical desire to pontificate to the world about their heightened consciousness, which allows them to see beyond white pietas to a universalist vision of mankind. Their exalted intellects see the world as a Coke commercial. Such thinking is suicidal, but it does not spring from a death wish as defined by psychology. There is nothing in the realm of psychology that can explain liberalism. We need to turn to the Gospels if we are going to understand the evil of liberalism.

The Gospels as a whole tell us a remarkable, strange, and fantastical fairy tale. But it is a fairy tale that our people, when they were young at heart, believed in. Let me turn to a small segment of that marvelous fairy tale, which deals with a man's blindness, the restoration of his sight, and his subsequent defense of Christ against the scribes and Pharisees. In John 9, Christ passed by and "saw a man which was blind from his birth." His disciples ask Him whether the man was blind because of his own sins or the sins of his parents. Jesus replies,

Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

Christ bids the blind man wash in the pool of Siloam, and he is cured of his blindness. He can see! That is the first great miracle. But there are two more miracles to come. The second miracle is that this man born blind, this Jewish Everyman – his modern equivalent would be a white grazer – has the courage to defend Christ against the scribes and Pharisees. The formerly blind man's parents refuse to give a name to the man who restored their son's sight:

And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

Sound familiar? Our modern churchmen will not name the European Christ for fear that they will be called racist and be put out of the liberals' synagogue.

Then the scribes and Pharisees try to browbeat and intimidate the man born blind. But he will not back down.

Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

Then comes the third miracle, the greatest one of all. The man born blind believes in the fairy tale of the Son of God.

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

The European people when they were a Christian people were the blind man. Christ gave them sight. In the midst of darkness, He came into the world in order that the blind might see. And when our people saw the light, they responded to Him. They defended Him against the scribes and the Pharisees who claimed He was a blasphemer and a charlatan. They clung to the fairy tale throughout all the Christian centuries of Europe. Now, it is the scribes and Pharisees, the men of reason, science, and negro worship who have won out. Is there not one man left, a man crying in the wilderness, who will proclaim his belief in the Son of God, the crowned King of Old Europe?

Let us go back to the modern hippie on the bike. "Evil is a make-believe concept." Yes, the concept of evil, as defined by Western man, is contained in the fairy tale of Christ. It was the fairy tale that formed the white man's civilization. And the

liberals' new anti-European fairy tale, in which the virtuous liberals fight the evil white racists in the name of their colored gods is presented to us as the true fairy tale, which we should cling to with all our heart, mind, and soul. Can we blend the two fairy tales as the moderate Christians urge us to do? They take a strong dose of negro worship, science, and reason, mix it with the Christ story, and presto-chango, you have... What do you have? You have nothing at all. Or can we create an entirely new fairy tale, a neo-pagan fairy tale that rejects European Christianity and modern liberalism?

Neither moderate Christianity nor neo-paganism is an option for the European. The moderate Christian, the classical liberal, will be absorbed by the mad-dog liberal because the mad-dog liberal has all the power of hell to aid him while the moderate Christian has only his own abstracted mind to aid him. Why doesn't he call on his God? Because rational, moderate Christians do not tilt at windmills and climb glass mountains, they form think tanks and dialogue with mad-dog liberals. That is the rational way to reconcile Christ and the devil.

The neo-pagans cannot be taken seriously because they do not take the white man's history seriously. You can't create a new religion for the white man that is neither Christian nor liberal. For almost two thousand years, white people lived and died in the name of Jesus Christ. You can hold fast to that belief, or you can create a hybrid religion in complete opposition to Christianity. But the hybrid religion will feed off the spiritual capital of Christianity. There will still be a savior, but he will be the Noble Savage; there will still be original sin, but it will be invested in the white race. Everything Christian will survive, but in a twisted and perverted form. The neo-pagan who tries to create something apart from the Europeans' Christian history will find himself overwhelmed by the mad-dog liberals and the moderate Christians, who always unite with the mad-dog liberals. The reason the neo-pagans are so fond of Hitler is because he tried to create a new option for the European people that was neither liberal nor Christian. His plight will be the same plight as any European who ignores the Europeans' Christian past.

Whether the liberal goes biking through the Mideast in order to prove that evil is a make-believe concept or whether he stays home and supports negro worship and the Moslem invasion of Europe, it all amounts to the same thing. The liberal has decided that the white Christian fairy tale is a lie, so he must flee from whiteness. Aided by his reason and his science, the liberal must find salvation in the people of color. Needless to say, he will not find salvation in the people of color. He will, in some instances, find physical death, as the hippie bikers did, but in every instance he will find spiritual death. There is no avoiding our destiny. We can't escape to Crete. Either the Christian European fairy tale is true or it is not. The liberals are acting according to their unbelief. They are fighting for their un-faith. We can't be moderate and rational in defense of The Faith. Was He moderate and rational when He bore our griefs and carried our sorrows?

I love the man born blind who defied the scribes and Pharisees of Jewry and then fell to his knees and worshipped Christ as the Son of God. The fairy tale is true – we must reject the scribes and Pharisees of Liberalism and kneel beside the man born blind. That is what it means to be a European. +

---

### **Who Follows in Their Train? - August 18, 2018**

Home I return across the sea,  
And go to bed with backward looks  
At my dear land of story-books.

-Robert Louis Stevenson

---

The late John Tyndall of Britain and the late Samuel Francis of the American South were two of the last pundits with some kind of official status, the one the founder of a political party, and the other a journalist for a Washington-based paper, who defended white people's right to maintain their own culture separate and distinct from the people of color. That doesn't seem like too much to ask for, but it was too much for the liberals. Tyndall was jailed for an offhand remark about Moslems and Samuel Francis was fired from his job at the Washington Times for writing that there was no evidence the white man's culture could be maintained by the blacks. Tyndall and Francis were condemned and punished even though they were always democratic – they never advocated fighting liberalism outside the parameters of democracy. But should white people start looking outside the parameters of democracy? Of course they should, but at present they won't.

There is a tragic flaw in the democratic populism of Tyndall and Francis. Let me state it bluntly: Both Tyndall and Francis treated the issue of the empty tomb as a side issue, when in fact it is the main issue. When Dostoyevsky said that the whole issue facing the European was, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" he was placing the European peoples' dilemma squarely before our eyes. People act according to their religious vision. The liberals believe in the unholy trinity of the abstracted intellect, the negro, and science. The blacks believe in the power and might of black

barbarism, the Moslems believe in Allah, and on it goes through the entire pantheon of heathen gods and their colored devotees.

What all the colored races have in common is that their religious faith determines their actions. And since every heathen faith is opposed to the Christian faith, every colored heathen hates the white man. The liberals' post-Christian heathenism is in one accord with the colored heathens' faith on that one central issue – the hatred of the white Christ-bearing race. Even when a white man wins an election in that milieu (the Trump victory is cited as a victory for Samuel Francis-populism), the victory is quickly turned into a defeat, because it is only a delaying action and does not significantly alter the ongoing liberal attack on the white race.

Whites cannot go up against liberals and colored heathens, who have a religion, without a religion beyond some vague belief in democracy and the rule of law. Democracy is an anti-Christian heresy, and the rule of law is liberal law, which is codified hatred of the white race and the Christian God. The liberals' reign has never been opposed by the European people, because the European people no longer take their strength and inspiration from the Europeans who firmly believed that Christ rose from the dead.

In my freshman year in college, I repeatedly sought out a teacher who shared my interest in English literature. The teacher's particular favorite author was Herman Melville, who, as even a casual reader of Melville can grasp, was obsessed with the Dostoyevsky issue, "Can an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ?" Since that was my obsession as well as Melville's obsession, and since my teacher was a great devotee of Melville, I thought that he would share my obsession. He did not. He was completely indifferent to something that was mine and Melville's primary concern. How can you be a Melville scholar and be indifferent to Billy Budd's question, "Sentry, are you there?" and Clarel's quest:

Then keep thy heart, though yet but ill-resigned—  
Clarel, thy heart, the issues there but mind;  
That like the crocus budding through the snow—  
That like a swimmer rising from the deep—  
That like a burning secret which doth go  
Even from the bosom that would hoard and keep;  
Emerge thou mayst from the last whelming sea,  
And prove that death but routs life into victory.

And how can you be a white populist and treat the antique Europeans' belief in Christ's resurrection from the dead as a 'side issue'?

Granted, that quarrels between Christian denominations have caused wars, granted, that Christians fought Christians during the Christian era of Europe, which has led many theologians to deny that there ever was a Christian Europe, but total war came in the post-Christian era of the Europeans' history. Before that, when Christians fought Christians, there were some limits placed on the ravages of war. The better men on both sides had some feeling for their foe, who was, despite their differences in political alliances, their brother. When his Indian allies violated the terms of the surrender and massacred British prisoners during the French and Indian Wars, the French general told the British commander that he would have sooner lost the battle than have been responsible, through his Indian allies, for that breach of honor. It's easy to sneer at such contradictions – trying to kill your enemy on the battlefield and then showing mercy when they have surrendered – but such contradictions bore witness to a people who were still trying to respond to the Light. Now the struggle is over. There is no honor, no chivalry, there is only an ignoble surrender to death-in-life liberalism. We are no longer involved in wars, we are engaged in a surrender that is worse than a war. The European people have declared themselves a non-people who can only exist through the life-blood of the colored heathens: "You live to serve the colored heathens, serve them well, and you shall live," is the dictate of the liberal tribunal.

It is good to kneel in prayer to the living God, but it is a terrible thing, a blasphemy, to kneel before the liberals and their colored gods. Is this the promised end for the white man? Must he live a monk-like existence in prayer and penance for the sin of whiteness? "Through my fault, through my fault, through my most grievous fault, I have sinned against the colored races. Mea culpa, mea culpa, mea maxima culpa." Mere populism is an insufficient response to liberalism, because it doesn't fill the void in the white man's soul. In the absence of faith, a real faith as distinct from an intellectual faith, the white Everyman will always be defeated by the liberals, who do have faith. They believe in the unholy trinity.

When Christ tells Nicodemus that he must be born again in order to obtain eternal life, Nicodemus is confused:

Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

We, the European people, must be born again. We must return to our European childhood in much the same way that Nicodemus returned to his childhood of prophecies and miracles and as Robert Louis Stevenson returned to his childhood in his *A Child's Garden of Verses*. Stevenson knew that he was falling victim to the spiritual ennui that comes upon a man who has lost faith in the God who bids us believe "like unto a little child." He restored his faith by reconnecting with his European hearth fire.

It is not an easy thing to do, to believe as a little child, but it is the only way for the European people to regain their souls. We are not like the other races. We cannot believe in our race if we don't believe that our race and our faith are one. If we are not the Christ-bearing race, what are we? We can't be like unto the colored heathens, because we are white. We can be post-Christian liberals who worship Satan in and through the colored races, we can be un-men who graze in the liberals' pastures while waiting for our turn to be slaughtered, or we can be Europeans again and live according to the Word that was made flesh. That really is what is at the heart of the cultural wars. The antique Europeans made the Son of God their touchstone of reality. What was perfect, what was good, came from Him. And what was wrong and what was evil was opposed to His word. We cannot make common cause with post-Christian liberals who believe that everything opposed to the faith of the antique Europeans is good and everything connected to our ancient faith is evil.

I frequently hear classical liberals expressing their astonishment at the mad-dog liberals of the European nations. "Can't they see that massive immigration is killing their nations?" No, they do not see. They are religious zealots who see everything through the eyes of their faith. They believe in their triune god — the abstract intellect, the sacred negro, and science — that will deliver them from the unholy night of Christian Europe and usher them into a new and glorious world freed from the bonds of whiteness and Christianity. It all sounds quite fantastical, doesn't it? But that is what liberals believe and that is the faith they will fight to defend.

On the surface it seems like the new faith of liberalism that replaced Christianity started in the mid-1960s, but that is not the case. The 1960s marked the beginning of the final stage of the liberals' revolt against Christ and the Christ-bearing race. In the final stage, the liberals institutionalized the satanic values they had been preaching in the universities and the churches for the past 50 years. Now, in the 21st century, there are no traces left of old Europe and the people who saw a great Light. St. John tells us that Christ "came unto His own, and His own received Him not." What must have been Christ's reaction when the modern Europeans whose ancestors made Christ their own, rejected Him? His sorrow and pain is infinitely greater than ours, the rejected and despised Europeans, because His humanity is infinitely greater than ours.

When I went to college, every course in the humanities, no matter whether it was literature, religion, or history, always turned out to be a course about the evils of Western culture and the glories of the non-white cultures. In comparative religion courses, for instance, the heathen religions of the colored races were always presented as infinitely superior to European Christianity. This was the mind and soul dirtying of the white race that Anthony Jacob wrote about in *White Man, Think Again*. And it is an effective tactic. The response of the church men to the attack on European Christianity was to denounce European Christianity and blend Christianity with the natural religions of the colored heathens. Pope Francis the blasphemer's adulation of the people of the Amazon rain forest is the end result of the synthesis of Christianity and the nature religions of the pure and noble savages of color.

There is something satanically clever in the liberals' incorporation of the noble savage into their trinity. Satan, who hates humanity, knows that man needs human conduits to his gods. So he has induced the men of reason and science to bring the heathens of color into his unholy trinity as the saviors, who will act as conduits to Satan and his kingdom of everlasting night. The clear-thinking classical liberals, the conservatives, always lose in their contests with the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals have a human conduit to their god, who is Satan, while the conservatives have only reason and science. They have the father and the holy ghost, but they do not have the savior. I recently heard Tucker Carlson asking why liberals, who are supposed to believe in reason and science, do not see that Third World immigration is destroying the West. They do not see that reality because they have a different religious vision from Tucker Carlson. They believe in the noble savage. The colored races are their messiah. You can't counter that belief with abstract reason and science. You can only defeat that faith with a belief in the Christ of old Europe. The tragic flaw of the conservative populists is that they do not believe in the divinity of Christ so they cannot go into battle with the armor of Christ as their European ancestors did.

In my own case, the mind and soul dirtying tactics of the liberals did not work. The study of the heathen faiths filled me with disgust and gave me a greater appreciation for the faith of my European ancestors. I still do not understand, from within, the appeal of the noble savage and the religions of nature. I can only conclude that the spiritual ennui caused by reason and science has made the European people susceptible to any religion with blood in it, even if it is heathen blood.

But a man must go with his own vision. I must assert, against the mad-dog liberals, that there is no love, no honor, no charity, and no truth in their noble savage religion. And I must assert, against the classical liberals, that abstract reason is a whore and science is a poor substitute for the real Holy Ghost who proceeds from the Father and the Son. I refuse to

believe that my people are irredeemable. If we, the white remnant, stand by the antique Europeans, others will follow in our train. +

---

## Democracy – The White Man’s Covenant with Death - August 11, 2018

So we are still at a loss to explain the White retreat, and always will be at a loss to explain it if we look for the explanation among the non-Whites. No, only too obviously we are being defeated from within; by the High Finance which with the help of its running dogs, the Liberals, organises the systematic brain-dirtying of the Western voting masses and university students, and either appoints its own puppet politicians or exerts enormous pressure against the ‘unappointed’ ones. It is a vast power of hatred, destructiveness and megalomaniac ambition spreading among us, its victims, the seeds of despair, futility, disorientation and even acceptance. It is a new ‘religion’ (or perhaps a very ancient one); and the majority of us cannot fight it because we are weak in love and, owing to the censorship of other than Leftist views, even weaker in understanding. The result is that those few among us who can fight it and do fight it are instantly attacked, not even so much by the ‘Liberals’ themselves as by those of us who cannot and dare not fight it — by the Empty Men, the men of parrot mind and parrot conviction.

-A. Jacob in *White Man, Think Again!*

---

And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth. – Revelations 6: 8

---

In *Witness*, Whittaker Chambers noted that the courts in the Soviet Union were filled with reams and reams of paperwork for every single court case that came up. He concluded that the more illegitimate a government was, the more paper work they put out in order to cover up the fact that their government was illegitimate. This is certainly the case in all the nations of the West. They attempt to cover up for their totalitarian regimes by a mountain of legalese. The Tommy Robinson case in Britain is an example. His crime was a non-crime, an invented crime by an illegitimate, totalitarian government. Tommy Robinson wanted, in the true spirit of a British patriot, to prevent the Islamization of his nation. He followed all the democratic rules of peaceful protest, and he made the obligatory condemnation of racism — “Most of my friends are black” – but still the British government sent him to prison where he was tortured and deprived of uncontaminated food and water. He is currently out on bail, but he is not out of the woods by any means. He has become a person of interest to the state; the smallest infraction against the totalitarian British state will send Tommy Robinson back to jail.

What happened to Tommy Robinson was horrific, but not unusual; it was not an aberration of a normally humane British government. His case is the norm in liberal Britain. This is what Britons and all the European people must come to terms with. The liberals are devoid of all humanity. They have only one desire, they must destroy all white resistance to their totalitarian regimes. They will not be deterred by votes, petitions, protest marches, or public appeals to their humanity. They have no humanity. The European people cannot comprehend that the liberals want their blood, because they have not thrown off the mind-forged shackles of liberalism. The whites who are appalled by the cruel treatment of Tommy Robinson and others like him are classical liberals. They believe in rationality, equality under the law, and the democratic process. Some of those classical liberals, such as Tucker Carlson, are very courageous in their outspoken defense of classic liberalism. But classical liberals, who are now called conservatives, do not understand the liberal dynamic. It is a continually evolving ideology. Evolving toward what? The liberals claim they are moving toward heaven on earth, but it is quite apparent, from a Christian perspective, that the liberals are heading for the deepest pit of hell. Will they be satisfied when they get there? Of course not, but they will have reached their final destination.

The question that every white man should ask himself is, “Do I want to follow the liberals’ democratic process all the way to hell or do I want to fight back?” Currently the European people have steadfastly refused to step away from liberalism. No matter what the mad-dog liberals do, the conservatives respond with, “We must have faith in the democratic process, we must keep up the pressure on our elected officials, and slowly but surely we will win out.” When has faith in the democratic process ever resulted in anything good for white people?

In the democratic era of our history we have seen total war, the war “to make the world safe for democracy,” and now, under the mantle of the democratic ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity, we are witnessing the extermination of the white race. What has been the conservatives’ response to the attack on the white race? They tell us that we need more democracy! Instead of rejecting the devil and all his works, the conservatives bid us seek redemption from the devil. In the book of Revelations, Christ warns us, through St. John, that faith in Him cannot be blended with paganism, Judaism, or any other –ism. He, and He alone, is the beginning and the end. The blending of Christianity and democracy produces leaders such as Angela Merkel and Pope Francis the blasphemer, who are determined to attack God by destroying His

image in man. When those two monsters of immorality meet to discuss “the problem of populism,” they are meeting to discuss how they can kill the last remaining remnants of white pietas, which is our only link to the living God.

The devil wins when we accept his either/or: “Either you must be a mad-dog liberal or a classical liberal.” That is no choice at all, because either way we will be in the clutches of the devil. The classical liberals are quite different from true conservatives such as Edmund Burke and Anthony Jacob. Burke and Jacob wanted to conserve a particular people and their particular faith in a personal God. Burke and Jacob hated universals such as “the people” because they realized that such abstractions were used to destroy their own kith and kin in the name of an aggregate herd called “the people.” But the conservatives of the 20th century were quite willing to give up on their kith and kin and transfer their allegiance to a universal idea of mankind. They did this because they were and are Gnostics. All of life is an abstraction to the classical liberals. So long as you support the idea of Christianity, the idea of the family, and the idea of humanity, you will be on the right track. But a disembodied idea is nothing at all. It is mere air. The modern conservative thinks that once you vote or protest against an atrocity of the mad-dog liberals you have done your Gnostic duty. But it is not abstract ideas that are being tortured, raped, and murdered, it is individual white people, people who used to be called, in the non-Gnostic age of Europe, the conservatives’ kith and kin. There is something terribly wrong when we respond to the horrors inflicted on our people with democratic rationality. Men who love their own in Him and through Him do not – I repeat – they do not respond to the rape, torture, and murder of their people with a Thomistic-Buddhistic pacifism. They become Goths.

Mad-dog liberals such as Angela Merkel and the German councilwoman openly tell their own people they will be replaced by colored heathens. They taunt white people, fully confident that white people will not act against them in retaliation. Some whites might protest Gnostically, through marches or petitions, but Gnostic protests can be dealt with quite easily. Would Angela Merkel or any of the mad-dog liberals throughout the West ever tell any non-white race of people they were planning to exterminate them? Of course not, they would be in fear of their lives. But white people have been carefully trained to consent to their own extermination. Why must they consent? That is the given, it is supposed to be self-evident: “We hold this truth to be self-evident, that all whites are evil — except those liberals who have transcended whiteness — and must be eradicated from the face of the earth.”

The neo-pagans who blame Christianity for the decline of the white race are correct. But they are wrong when they fail to distinguish faith in Christ from the intellectual system called Christianity. The apostles’ hearts did not burn within them on the road to Emmaus because they encountered a Jewish Socrates who unfolded to them a philosophical system. Their hearts burned within them because they had encountered the living God. Our people, as a people, also encountered our Lord on the European road to Emmaus. We became one with the apostles, St. Paul, and Him.

The classical liberals want to Socratize Christ: “He left us a good system.” But Christianity as a philosophy is no defense against mad-dog liberalism. The mad-dog liberals hate Christ and the white race. How can a tepid belief in rationality and fair play counter the demonic fury of the liberals? It can’t. The moderate philosophical Christianity of the classical liberals ultimately becomes the enabling system that keeps mad-dog liberalism alive and well, because it encourages white people to stay within the confines of liberalism. They are told ad nauseum that good, polite Europeans submit to the rule of law, even though their leaders have told them they are going to be lawfully exterminated. And they are told ad nauseum by their church men that Christianity and democracy are one and the same. Where does that leave white people? It leaves them in the lions’ den. But instead of placing their faith in the living God to keep them safe, the modern Europeans look to the liberals who threw them into the lions’ den, to somehow, if they petition, vote, march, and plead, let them out of the lions’ den.

There are no white people left alive who have not grown up under the shadow of liberalism. Some of the oldest have known a few decades of classical liberalism, but every single white person alive today has been brought up to honor and respect the liberal faith. In church that means all whites must accept the blending of Christianity with the heathen faiths. Christ is not, we are told, the beginning and the end. He is the God who must give way to the heathen gods of color who are greater than Him. And in society adherence to the liberal faith means that the white race must give way to the black race, because the white race is evil. All revolutions succeed when the powers that be doubt their right to rule. The people who had seen a great light, the people who walked on water because they believed in the Son of God, lost their faith in Him and fled to the heathen gods of color and to rational, science-based systems for comfort. Now the liberals rule. The Europeans will come to their own again when they believe in their ancestral God, the God who enters human hearts, more than the liberals believe in their satanic faith. It is truly horrific to see what is happening to white people in what used to be called Christendom. And it is doubly sad and horrific to see white people respond to the liberals’ jihad with the Gnostic verbiage of liberalism. The Christian Europeans, our honored dead, speak to us from across the great divide and bid us fight. “We can’t fight,” is the modern Europeans’ response, “We can’t fight, because there is a huge chasm between our Europe and your Europe.” But then we hear our Savior’s voice: “The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.” Men who believe as the ancient European people believed do not permit their nations to become white slaughterhouses. Something within them, something called “that charity of honor” makes them rebel against the rule of the liberals. Until that something within becomes a burning passion in the hearts of the European people, the Tommy

Robinsons, the Jonathan Fosters, and the entire white race will be offered up on the sacrificial alters of the liberals. The democratic process is, in all its essentials, the liberals' satanic religious rite. We must break away from that covenant with Satan and renew our covenant with the Son of God. +

---

## As You Would Oppose the Devil - August 4, 2018

Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation. – Luke 20: 46-47

---

Liberalism is a religion. It has its own set of rituals and rules that must be adhered to if one is to remain in good standing and free from persecution by the liberals. But like the Jewish Pharisees who preceded them, the liberals are hypocrites. They do not really believe what they profess. And the root cause of the liberals' hypocrisy is the same as that of the Pharisees of Judaism. They cannot bear the light of truth, because that light would destroy their Christ-denying, satanic world that they have set up to satisfy their own illicit desire to be as God. A list of all the liberal hypocrisies would fill an encyclopedia from A to Z. Let me list a few that are particularly blatant and striking.

### I. The Russian Hypocrisy

I remember, in my elementary school days, the atom bomb drills that we would go through. The school principal would sound an alarm, and our teacher would then instruct us to get our coats, go into the hallway, and sit up against the wall with our coats over our heads. I never asked my teacher what was the use of putting our coats over our heads, because like most children of that era I trusted adults. They knew what they were doing. As we age we begin to doubt that adults really know what they are doing. And then when we become adults we know that adults do not know what they are doing, because we are now adults and we don't know what we are doing.

During the Cold War when Russia was Communist, the liberals told us we had to get along with Russians for two reasons. The first reason was a utilitarian reason: "If we don't get along with them, everything will go ka-boom!" Movies such as *Dr. Strangelove* and *Fail Safe* pounded home that theme. And the second reason we were supposed to get along with the Russians was that Russian communists and the Americans were all alike. Movies like *The Russians Are Coming* emphasized that theme. And unfortunately that was true: American democracy and Russian communism have the same anti-Christian Jacobin roots.

Let's fast forward to the 21st century where now we are not supposed to get along with the Russians. Why is that? Because (we are told) they have committed human rights violations and they try to influence our elections. Really? Whatever human rights violations might be occurring in modern Russia, they pale in comparison to the human rights violations that took place under the communists. But wait – we were supposed to love the communists, because they were just like us. And they were just like the liberals. They were Jacobins.

There are more human rights violations in the United States and Canada today than in Russia. But of course the liberals of North America do not look on the extermination of the white race and legalized infanticide as human rights violations. The real reason the liberals hate Putin and the Russians is because Russia is still a sovereign state that has not made the commitment to exterminate its white citizens and replace them with colored heathens. They very well could do that in the future if they stay on the democratic path, but they have not yet made that commitment. The Russians still cling to certain aspects of Christianity, such as an abhorrence of sodomy and a respect for the family unit. Liberals of the West find such views offensive. So the great hypocrites who used to tell us to get along with the Russians to prevent nuclear war now tell us we should go to war with them in the name of human rights, which translates to liberalism.

### II. The Feminist Hypocrisy

Tennyson was correct when he described the differences between men and women in *Idylls of the King*:

For men at most differ as heaven and earth,  
But women, worst and best, as heaven and hell.

Once a society has gone to the devil, it is the demonic women who rule, because they have the sustained demonic energy that evil men can only muster up in dribs and drabs. This is why the most epic hypocrisy in all of Liberaldom is the feminist hypocrisy. Only one man, William Shakespeare in his play *Macbeth*, ever depicted the depth of evil to which a woman, totally given over to her own will, could descend.



The feminists started out saying they didn't mean to diminish motherhood: "That's all right for some women." They just didn't want a woman to be relegated to being "just a wife and mother." Of course, that was a lie. Motherhood was demeaned, and our whole society was turned upside down (*Miss Julie* style) (1) in order to accommodate Lady Macbeths such as Betty Friedan and Susan Brownmiller who hated God and all mankind, including female mankind. How can you claim to be for women while you treat femininity as something to be cured by pills, diaphragms, and abortions? "But the feminists have taught us not to abuse women!" Have they? Haven't the feminists welcomed the Moslem invaders? Have the feminists ever condemned the blacks who rape white women at will? And what society is condemned by the feminists? The pre-20th century white, Christian, patriarchal society, which condemned the rape and abuse of women. Of all the liberal hypocrisies, the feminist hypocrisy is the worst — it stinks to high heaven and plunges the nations who promote it into the deepest pit of hell.

### III. The Equality Hypocrisy

The liberals profess to believe in the equality of all races, yet under the banner of racial equality they have elevated the black race to the status of a deity. Race is not supposed to matter because we are all equal, yet everything a liberal does is determined by race. The white race must be exterminated so the black race can thrive. Anthony Jacobs wrote *White Man, Think Again!* before the fall of South Africa, so it was to Kenya he turned to as a warning to the European people:

Kenya, we must understand, is a microcosm of the entire West. Therefore let us ask ourselves, What would have been our general White position today if the world had consisted only of Kenya, with no other place for us to go to and no other form of government for us to live under? What then? We, the White race, would already have been obliterated or reduced to everlasting serfdom, would we not? Yet however fanciful it might still seem to the white peoples of the northern American states and occupied Europe, the world today does in the most vital sense consist only of Kenya, for we cannot keep on being racially overruled and uprooted and moved on. Wherever we are now we are in effect in Kenya; for certainly the operations of the anti-White conspiracies, the techniques of the Communists, Liberals and One-Worlders, remain significantly identical whether they be applied in Kenya or Alabama.

Those words can and should be applied to modern South Africa. All whites of the West are in the same position as the whites in South Africa. The colored barbarians seek our blood. And with the aid of liberal cabals throughout the West they will get their wish, unless the white man repudiates the "all are equal but some are more equal" hypocrisy of the liberals. It's difficult to know to what extent the white South Africans are fighting back, because news of the white genocide and of white resistance in South Africa is suppressed, but I hope and pray that the rumors of white resistance are true. They are us, they are our people.

### IV. The Humane-Compassionate Hypocrisy

I grew up hearing, in school and church, that liberals were compassionate. Their hearts bled for all humanity. 'Tis not so. I discovered, during a lifetime among them, but hopefully not of them, that the liberals have no compassion for any human being on the face of the earth. You cannot harden yourself against the Light of the World and still retain the humanity that comes from the Light of the World. Individual human beings mean nothing to the liberals because like their mentor, Satan, they hate everything that stinks of humanity. They hate procreative love, they hate the natural ties between parent and child, and they hate all ties a man feels toward his kith and kin, because such ties are human links to the humane God.

Under the guises of compassion for the negro, the liberals have set out to destroy the white race, because mercy and compassion, the divine mercy and compassion, became incarnate in the culture of the white race. The negro must be championed, not because the liberals have any compassion or love for the negro, but because the black race, as an aggregate herd, can be utilized to destroy the white race, which once bore witness to the God whose love and compassion for humanity is a sign of contradiction to the liberals' hatred of humanity. The compassionate liberals have the same relationship to humanity as the wolf has to the lamb. He needs the lamb in order to feed on him, but he does not have any compassion for the lamb as he devours him.

### V. The Non-Violent Hypocrisy

The liberals abhor violence, yet they are mass murderers. Their model is Robespierre. Before taking office as Le Suprême of France, he was a passionate advocate for the abolition of capital punishment. He remained a passionate opponent of capital punishment after he became head of France. How could he justify such hypocrisy? It was easy. Before there could be a world where capital punishment was unnecessary, evil had to be purged from the world. Robespierre was not allowed to complete his purge before he was purged, but the liberals are still trying to complete his work. "The world must be made safe for democracy," Woodrow Wilson declared as he plunged his nation into war on the side of the assassins. The Russian communists were always our allies because they believed in purging millions upon millions of people for the sake of an egalitarian ideal, just as we believe in purges for the sake of an egalitarian ideal. All unwanted babies must be killed so we can have a world where all babies are wanted and cared for. All white people must be purged so that the liberals who have

transcended whiteness and the natural and noble savages of color can live in peace and harmony on the earth. And that peace and harmony is always in the future; in the here and now there must be bloodletting – a whole lot of bloodletting.

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thorough-bred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the Principle of Evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls the “compunctious visitings of nature” will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved : they only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon, and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians and the chemists bring — the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces — dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes which are the supports of the moral world.

The only violence the liberals oppose is violence against their bloodletting reign of terror. The rules of Liberaldom state that violence against the people — and the people are the liberals and their colored minions — is morally reprehensible. Such violence will be met with violence. The reason black murderers go free and Paul Hill was executed is because blacks are the people, while Paul Hill was a non-person striking back against “the people” who were engaged in the business of purging Liberaldom of its unwanted scum. That is the essence of the liberals’ nonviolent heresy. The unclean, the unwanted must be violently dealt with in the name of liberal purity. When the liberals don’t do the purging directly, they do it indirectly like Pope Francis the blasphemer. He, like Robespierre, is against capital punishment for criminals who rape and murder, but he is not against the capital punishment of the European people at the hands of the Moslems and the colored heathen. Nor was the “good” Pope John against the torture, rape and murder of white nuns and priests at the hands of colored barbarians. He was against any violent retaliation against the black barbarians. That is the modified Christian version of the nonviolent, liberal hypocrisy. Which brings us to the sixth liberal hypocrisy.

## VI. The Christian Hypocrisy

The liberals use Christianity to serve their needs. When they want to condemn capital punishment for black murderers, they tell us that Christ is against taking human life. When they want to slaughter millions of babies in their mothers’ wombs, they tell us Christ is compassionate and does not want women to suffer through the pangs of an unwanted pregnancy. When they want to support massive colored immigration in the white nations, they cite the parable of the Good Samaritan, but when dealing with the sin of sodomy they shift gears and tell us that St. Paul’s strictures against the sin are no longer valid in an evolving world. No one ever challenges the liberals’ right to invoke Christianity whenever it suits their purpose. But they must be challenged. By what right do the liberals, who do not believe in the Son of God, invoke Christ’s name in support of their satanic blasphemies? And that is the key to all the liberals’ hypocrisies: Their hypocrisies are cloaks for their Pharisaical hatred of the Light of the World. We should not be deceived by the liberal scribes and Pharisees, we should oppose them with our whole heart, mind, and soul. +

---

(1) “You only talk like that – and besides, my secrets are known to everybody. You see, my mother was not of noble birth, but came of quite plain people. She was brought up in the ideas of her time about equality and woman’s independence, and that kind of thing. And she had a decided aversion to marriage. Therefore, when my father proposed to her, she said she wouldn’t marry him—and then she did it just the same. I came into the world — against my mother’s wish, I have come to think. Then my mother wanted to bring me up in a perfectly natural state, and at the same time I was to learn everything that a boy is taught, so that I might prove that a woman is just as good as a man. I was dressed as a boy, and was taught how to handle a horse, but could have nothing to do with the cows. I had to groom and harness and go hunting on horseback. I was even forced to learn something about agriculture. And all over the estate men were set to do women’s work, and women to do men’s—with the result that everything went to pieces and we became the laughing stock of the whole neighbourhood.” – *Miss Julie* by August Strindberg

---

## In His Name - July 28, 2018

As to Mr. Mounier and Mr. Lally, I have always wished to do justice to their parts, and their eloquence, and the general purity of their motives. Indeed I saw very well from the beginning, the mischiefs which, with all these talents and good intentions, they would do to their country, through their confidence in systems. – Edmund Burke, *A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly*

---

Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. – Psalm 91: 14

---

The historian Norman Cantor claimed in his book *The Meaning of the Middle Ages* that the much maligned Middle Ages gave birth to the modern age. On the face of it, Cantor's assertion seems preposterous. How can the Middle Ages, the age of monarchy, superstition, and irrationality be compared to our modern age of democracy, science, and reason? But Cantor's point is a valid one. It was the Middle Ages that gave birth to scholasticism, which is the poison that killed the European people. Men cannot live by reason alone. When they try, they end up putting their faith in a manmade system, and they sever their connection to the living God who is the source of all true knowledge.

The devil is a coward; he refused to meet the European people in open combat. Instead he went through the back door of the church and placed a wedge between God and mankind by telling men that they could only know God through mind-forged systems. The great appeal of this approach to religious truth is that it eliminated the irrational and problematic intricacies of the human heart. To put it bluntly – human beings are messy. They have all sorts of illicit passions that can foul up the perfect systems of the rationalists. In his novel *The Underground Man* Dostoyevsky's protagonist asks his liberal audience what would happen if they built their perfect glass palace and he decides to smash it just because he wants to smash it. Precisely. And then there is the excellent point made by Owl in (the real) Walt Disney's *Winnie the Pooh*. The gopher thinks he can solve the problem of Winnie the Pooh, stuck in the doorway of Rabbit's house, if someone will just remove the bear. "Got to get rid of the bear, he is gumming up the whole works!" Owl replies, "Dash it all, the bear is the problem!" When we look to systems, even when those systems are systems about God, we lose God and we lose man.

Richard Weaver, in his *Visions of Order*, defends the state in the trial of Socrates, who was charged with undermining the Athenian society through his attacks on the gods. This defense of the state goes against the modern belief that Socrates was a martyr for the truth. Who was closer to the truth? The pagan Greeks did not know the one true God, but their reverence for Zeus and other divine-human gods indicated a racial memory of the one true God. What could Socrates offer as a replacement? He offered abstract reason, which leaves a man alone with himself contemplating the nothingness of existence. Melville tells us, in *The Confidence Man*, that the love of God and the love of man are co-ordinate:

"I do not jumble them; they are co-ordinates. For misanthropy, springing from the same root with disbelief of religion, is twin with that. It springs from the same root, I say; for, set aside materialism and what is an atheist, but one who does not, or will not, see in the universe a ruling principle of love; and what a misanthrope, but one who does not, or will not, see in man a ruling principle of kindness?"

"Yes, all that may be true," the reasoning man replies, "A lack of faith in Divine Providence leads to a lack of faith in man, but if our reason tells us that we cannot know with certainty that there is a loving God at the center of existence, hadn't we better rely on some rational system instead of the irrational faith of men who believe in a mythic God?" We can't respond to the rationalist with the five scholastic proofs for the existence of God, because those proofs are only valid for false gods. They are not valid proofs for the existence of the one true God. But we can tell the rationalist that there is a way we can know God. We can eschew the purely rational 'two plus two equals four' logic and proceed on a journey through the labyrinth of the human heart. The scholastics placed a 'do not enter' sign at the entrance way of the human heart, which read, like Dante's sign at the beginning of hell, "Abandon all hope ye who enter here." But isn't that our only hope? If Christ is truly the Son of God, where can He be found if not in the human heart? This is what the race war is all about. The liberals have decreed that the Europeans must have no hearts, they must be committed to a scientific, utopian world based on abstract reason. That world can only stand so long as the Europeans remain outside of themselves, outside of their own history and their own hearth fire. They must be devoid of all humanity lest they fall prey, from the liberals' satanic viewpoint, to the siren call of the God who comes to human hearts.

Every institution throughout the European nations has been set up to encourage the colored heathens to heed the call of the blood and to encourage the Europeans to repudiate the call of the blood. And isn't it obvious why the liberals have institutionalized the deblooding of the European people? Left to reason alone, they are only partially human. The worst of the whites have become rationalized beasts of prey; they have become liberals. And the best have become moderate Christians who cannot be used in defense of the right, because they have no heartfelt passions, but who can be used as an undergirding for the wickedness of the liberals. Satan can use moderate, rational Christians for whatever purpose he wants, because the moderate Christians, the Christians without a racial hearth fire where a love for their kith and kin is nurtured, have only one issue – the one issue they are permitted – they must sing continual hymns and anthems to diversity and diversity's god, the sacred negro. The man of passion loves once and forever. The moderate Christian loves moderately so long as it is reasonable to do so. It is no longer reasonable to love the God-Man in and through our own people, because such a love sets a man against the principalities and powers of the world. So now we are enjoined to love first the negro, and all other things of the liberal world will be added unto us.

The things of this world are the carrots on the stick the liberals hold out to us. We have only to declare, like Caiaphas, that the Lord God is a product of a man-made system designed to keep order in a rationalized pagan world. But will whites ever be allowed to be part of that system? No, they won't. Burke, in his *Further Reflections on the Revolution in France*, makes

reference to two French statesmen, Mounier and Lally, who thought there could be a kinder, gentler system of Jacobinism. Both men ended up fleeing France. The white Europeans will not be so lucky. There is no longer any place to run to. The great utopia has arrived, but there is no place for whites in the brave new world. Why should we desire a place in that world? We can hear our Lord asking, “What good does it do to gain the whole world if a man loseth his soul?”

In the novels of Joseph Conrad we can see the beginning of the European people’s transfer from a culture founded on the love of the God-Man to a utopian-based culture in which the white man lives on a few platitudes based on the theories of God. Such a man has lost himself and must wander about the world trying to lap up the blood of the pagans of color in order to feel alive again. The nobler whites in Conrad’s novels still try to be white. They try to live up to the European honor code, despite the fact that they can no longer trace the code back to its source. Tom Lingard, in Conrad’s *The Rescue*, is such a man. “I am a white man inside and out; I won’t let inoffensive people – and a woman, too – come to harm if I can help it.” Lingard has that which we have lost, “that charity of honor,” which was the sole possession of the people who made the ethos of 1st Corinthians 13 their *raison d’être*. The transition-stage novels of Conrad make for very painful reading. When I read them in my youth I was drawn to the Tom Lingard and *Lord Jim* type heroes, but I longed for just one of those heroes to trace the white man’s honor code to its source. They never did, and therein lies the tragedy of Western man. Without a human connection to the God-Man, our honor has faded away into the dark night of liberalism where there is no honor, no love, and no light. We have returned, through the good offices of the scholastics who deified reason divorced from the human heart, to heathenism.

The result of Hardy’s management was that Tom made a clean breast of it, telling everything, down to his night at the ragged school, and what an effect his chance opening of the Apology had had on him. Here for the first time Hardy came in with his usual dry, keen voice, “You needn’t have gone so far back as Plato for that lesson.”

“I don’t understand,” said Tom.

“Well, there’s something about an indwelling spirit which guideth every man, in St. Paul, isn’t there?”

“Yes, a great deal,” Tom answered, after a pause; “but it isn’t the same thing.”

“Why not the same thing?”

“Oh, surely, you must feel it. It would be almost blasphemy in us now to talk as St. Paul talked. It is much easier to face the notion, or the fact, of a demon or spirit such as Socrates felt to be in him, than to face what St. Paul seems to be meaning.”

“Yes, much easier. The only question is whether we will be heathen or not.”

“How do you mean?” said Tom.

“Why, a spirit was speaking to Socrates, and guiding him. He obeyed the guidance, but knew not whence it came. A spirit is striving with us too, and trying to guide us—we feel that just as much as he did. Do we know what spirit it is? Whence it comes? Will we obey it? If we can’t name it—we are in no better position than he—in fact, heathens.”

– *Tom Brown at Oxford*

The only question left in the minds of the Europeans is whether they will become Socratic heathens, like the conservative liberals, or whether they will become negro-worshipping heathens, like the mad-dog liberals. The mad-dog liberals currently have the upper hand, and they are not likely to lose it, because liberalism is an ever-evolving, all-devouring succubus; it will not stop and reverse its forward progress. Trump is a small pebble in the path of the liberal succubus that the liberals eventually will rid themselves of. But even if we could return to Socratic liberalism, the liberalism of reasonable debate and discussions, would that be desirable? It certainly would be preferable to mad-dog liberalism, but that type of liberalism is still poison to the European’s soul. We were not born to discuss and debate God’s existence, we were born to champion the Savior against all the heathen world.

After our Lord healed the ten lepers and bid them go tell the priests, one leper returned to give thanks. Christ praises the man for returning to give thanks. Then the Pharisees demand to know when the kingdom of God will come. Christ tells them, “The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or, lo there! for, behold, the Kingdom of God is within you.” If God has not placed something of Himself within us, why does Christ tell us that the Kingdom of God is within us? The liberals have taken one aspect of Aquinas, his deification of human reason, and one aspect of John Calvin, his insistence on the total depravity of man, and forged a soulless heathenism out of those two perversions of Christianity. In Liberaldom, all white men are totally depraved except the godded white men, the liberals who have used their exalted reason to transcend their whiteness. So long as they stay elevated, above the totally depraved racist whites, they will find salvation through their mind-forged vision of the sacred negro.

Chandler was right about the hero: “Down these mean streets a man must go, who is not himself mean, who is neither tarnished nor afraid.” But in whose name does the hero go forth? The mean streets are the streets of Liberaldom. And we go forth in His name to restore His reign of charity in a world that has no place for charity. Liberalism has not reduced human suffering, it has increased it one-thousand fold, because now the Europeans suffer without the comfort of the Savior. The old fairy tales are right: We can only venture forth, like the Third Dumb Brother, and trust that a passionate love for our people and our Savior can defeat the satanic liberals’ system that holds our people in bondage. +

---

### **Most Barbarous, Most Degenerate Liberalism! - July 21, 2018**

It will come  
Humanity must perforce prey on itself  
Like monsters of the deep.

—King Lear

---

We state the obvious when we say that the liberals’ feigned outrage over Trump’s meeting with Putin is simply another manifestation of their hatred of Trump. But this clash between Trump and the liberals is not a clash of opposing ideologies, it is internecine warfare. Mad-dog liberalism is the malevolent offspring of classical liberalism. The mad-dog liberals view Trump, the classical liberal, as the parent who is trying to take them back to the bad old days when they had to ask for the car keys and return home by a specified time. Such restraints are unbearable, — they must have no restraints. And since they are malevolent offspring, they will stop at nothing, not even murder, in order to avoid any restraints on their appetites.

The reason Trump feels closer to leaders such as Putin and Orbán is that those leaders represent nations much higher up on the slippery slope of liberalism. Those nations will descend into mad-dog liberalism if they do not reject democracy, but they are currently at the first stage of the democratic cancer, the stage when the inner ugliness cannot be seen by the outward eye. Our society, which is in the final stage, can be seen in all its inner ugliness; there is no longer a healthy looking outward veneer.

It must be said of Trump that he is a better man than all his Republican predecessors. He has kept his word on the abortion issue, and he is trying to keep his word on open borders. But the liberals needn’t worry – you can’t return to classical liberalism once you have made the descent into mad-dog liberalism. Our entire culture is one vast indoctrination network for mad-dog liberalism. The mad-dog liberals control the schools, the churches, and the media. How can anything good, by which I mean Christian, come to fruition in such a culture? Nothing good will come out of any culture conceived and born of liberalism. It is not only mad-dog liberalism that we must oppose, we must also reject classical liberalism despite the fact that classical liberalism seems benign, just as cancer in its early stages seems benign, because classical liberalism leads to mad-dog liberalism.

The people of Europe have never come to terms with liberalism, which was revealed in its purest form during the French Revolution. The mad-dog liberals such as Priestly, Price, and later, men like Belloc, accepted and lauded the French Revolution in its most horrific manifestation under Robespierre. The classical liberals rejected Robespierres’ Jacobinism for a modified Jacobinism, a liberal mixture of the old world and the new utopian world. But there can be no compromise with liberalism. It is a devouring, reptilian monster that must prey on humanity like a monster from the deep. And it will devour even its own children. Robespierre devoured his fellow Jacobins, just as the modern European Jacobins are devouring each other.

Even great Christ-haters like Voltaire and Shaw understood that you could not discuss any important issue having to do with the European people without reference to Christianity. Albeit the likes of Shaw and Voltaire knew Christianity had to be discussed in order to purge it from the face of the earth, but they did know it had to be dealt with. ‘Tis not so with the modern Europeans. Even professed Christians act like everything of importance can be handled without reference to Christianity. This cannot be – we are all born of Christian Europe. All the good that is left in modern Europe, and there is very little good left, comes from Christian Europe. And all that is bad in modern Europe, which is practically everything, stems from the European peoples’ acceptance of a false Christianity opposed to European Christianity.

In *Miracle on 34th Street*, Fred Gailey, the intrepid, kind-hearted defender of Kris Kringle, states that he intends to prove that Kris Kringle is the one and only Santa Claus. It is my contention, and shall always be my contention, that at the poetical core of the European people is the one, true God, our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. I cannot present mathematical proof of my contention, but I do not regard mathematical proof as genuine proof in spiritual matters. I ask you to look through, not with, the eye and see life as the physically blind, but not morally blind Gloucester sees life: “I see it feelingly.”

All great hearts can see the European silken thread that leads to the Savior. But we must have the desire to follow that thread to its source, rejecting all other false threads that lead us astray.

I would use the term ‘mystical’ to describe the European thread that leads to Christ, but the term ‘mystical’ has been mightily abused. It has been and still is used to describe rational systems of thought stemming from the minds of Buddhist monks and Christian theologians. So let me substitute the term ‘poetic’ for ‘mystical’. Once having cleared that hurdle, we can proceed with the defense of European Christianity.

The demise of the European people has come about because theological Christianity, which always was a fierce rival of poetical Christianity, has completely routed poetical Christianity. Martha, who “was careful and troubled about many things,” was not gently rebuked because she was doing kitchen work, she was rebuked because she had lost sight of what all work, including kitchen work, was for. The theological man, the man tinctured with the pride of science, puts God in a box, ‘out there’ – He is a geometrical given – and then proceeds to get down to business. But if God is not in human hearts, if we cannot know Him through that organ, which St. Paul and the European poets insist is the organ of sight, then how can we know our business? How can we know the living God? Suppose a child is brought up in a home in which the mother and father separated at the child’s birth, and the mother has custody of the child while the father has no visitation rights. What will be the child’s conception of the father? It might be a good one if the mother chooses to portray the father in a good light, but it is more than likely the mother will portray the father in a bad light. But good or bad, the child’s conception of the father will be only an intellectual construct. He will not have any intimate, heart-to-heart contact with his father. That is what we get when we embrace theological Christianity. We have no contact with the heart of God, we only know Him through an intellectual process, which may lead us to think kindly of God, as the classical liberals do, or it may lead us to hate God, as the mad-dog liberals do, but in both forms of liberalism there is no contact with the living God, the God who enters human hearts.

The first liberal was the devil; he successfully got Adam and Eve to break their ties to a loving, personal God in order to establish a business relationship with an impersonal, natural force that was above and beyond God. They believed in Albert Einstein’s cosmic religion billions of years before the great Einstein ‘discovered’ it. Christ delivered us from the bondage of the devil’s cosmic religion through His death on the cross, but the price of our deliverance was and is that we take up our cross and follow Christ. St. Paul stresses that we must share in Christ’s crucifixion if we are to share in His resurrection. And that Pauline assertion, that the fruits of Christ’s resurrection can only be gained by sharing in His crucifixion, was the weapon Satan used to bring the Europeans back to a cosmic nature religion, which places them in the devil’s fold.

Through the medium of theology, the devil got the European people back to nature and to nature’s gods. He used the medium of theology at the beginning of his attack, because he saw that a frontal attack was hopeless. If we look at the work of St. Thomas Aquinas, for instance, we do not see a denial of the Christian God. Far from it, we see an intellectual affirmation of the triune God. But is that God the same God the apostles encountered on the road to Emmaus, the God who made their hearts burn within them? Is it the same God that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus? No, it is not. Aquinas placed God outside of man; He was to be found by reason’s contemplation of the natural world. Aquinas is generally considered the optimist and Calvin the pessimist, because Calvin insisted on the doctrine of total depravity while Aquinas claimed that our reason was untainted by original sin. But what both theologians have in common is that they rejected the poetic core of the Christian faith. St. Paul insisted that there was an indwelling spirit in the human heart through which a man could develop an intimacy with Christ. And that intimacy was not an ecstatic union with a pagan deity, it was a moral union of hearts. The European people followed St. Paul’s injunction to circumcise their hearts, and by doing so they joined their hearts to His sacred heart. This was the miracle of European culture, that the European people responded to God’s grace. Only a Christian who thinks dogmatic theology and religious faith are one and the same would allow the external history of the European people – their wars, their lusts, and their quests for the treasures of this world only – to blind him to the incredible moral beauty of Christian Europe. Why is Christian Europe and her people judged by her trash bins and not by her poetic essence?

The European bards such as Shakespeare, Scott, and Dickens, are one with the apostles in their vision of the European inn at Emmaus. It is there that our hearts burn within us in the presence of the risen Lord. And even the atheist poets, the Byrons and the Shelleys, knew who the enemy of their beloved cosmic religion was. It was the men and women with hearts of flesh who rejected the gods of nature for the God above nature.

The wheel has come full circle; the European people have returned to nature and nature’s gods. They could not live with a rational God who disdained to enter human hearts, the God of the rationalist theologians and the classical liberals. It is not possible to defeat the mad-dog liberals by referring to classical liberalism: “Let me show you how irrational your policies are.” That doesn’t work. The mad-dog liberals are being rational – they use their reason to destroy what they hate, white Christian Europe. The Tucker Carlsons and the Paul Joseph Watsons, the classical liberals, can point out the hypocrisy and irrationality of the liberals from now to doomsday, but they will never deflect the mad-dog liberals from

their maniacal assault on the white race. Nor will the white grazers ever pick up the mantle of white Christian Europe and fight for England, Harry, and St. George. They will continue to appease the mad-dog liberals by declaring, from under their beds, that they are not racist. Is that the sum total of the white man's existence in the 21st century? Yes, it is. Does it have to be? No, it doesn't. There is that poetical-mystical connection to God that St. Paul writes about in 1 Corinthians 13. If our apostle, St. Paul, was right then we can reconnect with the living God through white pietas. And once that reconnection is made, Europe will become Europe again and her people will no longer plead for a small corner in Liberaldom. They will demand that Christ be reinstated as the King of the European people. Certainly, it is not written that the European people will return to the poetic-mystic faith of St. Paul. But it is not written that they won't. Christian Europe was a miracle of God's grace; it serves as a sign of contradiction to those who tell us that God does not enter human hearts. He can and He will come to us, if we come to Him with hearts of flesh warmed and nurtured at our racial hearth fire. +

---

## **The Young Drummer and the Good Samaritan - July 14, 2018**

Yet this in no wise alters the fact that those who form no more than a part of a universal mish-mash, of a homeless multitude of faceless 'un-men', will never have any pride of place or sense of belonging, nor will ever know the Christian virtues of charity and love. Love like charity not only begins at home but perishes without one.

-Anthony Jacob in *White Man, Think Again!*

---

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests, and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand, had hewn their way straight to the goal of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

-Thomas Nelson Page in *Under the Crust*

---

Pope Francis the blasphemer has been up to his usual hijinks again. This time he has blasphemed by invoking the parable of the Good Samaritan in order to attack white pietas. He tells us that the Good Samaritan "did not ask for documents" before helping the man who had been beaten by thieves. Of course he is placing the Moslems and colored invaders in the position of the "certain man" who was beaten and robbed on the way to Jerusalem. And he is placing white people in the position of the priest and the Levite who "passed by on the other side."

I think it is best, from a prudential standpoint, to confine your intense hatreds to men and/or women who are already dead. That way you stay out of jail, because it's not illegal to strangle, in your imagination, an enemy who is already dead. And for many years I have hated dead men more than any living man. At the top of my list is George Bernard Shaw. He will probably always be at the top of my list, but in recent years two rivals for the top spot have appeared. One is Angela Merkel and the other is Pope Francis the blasphemer. I'm sure there are others, a legion of others, who share the same views as the Merkel Monster and Francis the blasphemer, but those two have used their positions of authority to attack the living God by destroying His image in man. And I hate them for it, with all my heart, mind, and soul. Let me now turn these blog pages over to the Young Drummer from Grimm's fairy tales. What follows is an interview he did this week with the Good Samaritan.

---

Young Drummer: Your name has been invoked a lot lately, invoked as a justification for what I consider to be vicious attacks on the body of Christ. What do you think of the people who have invoked your name for liberal causes?

Good Samaritan: I hate them. Attacks on the dead, and these people who willfully distort my story for their own selfish ends are attacking me, are usually successful because the dead are not there to defend themselves.

YD: I'm here to allow you to defend yourself.

GS: I thank you. When our Lord told my story, He was responding to a lawyer who "tempted Him." The lawyer wanted to know what he had to do to inherit eternal life. Of course we realize that the lawyer really didn't think Christ could teach him, a lawyer, anything. After all, Christ was merely a carpenter's son, and the lawyer was a doctor of the law. But Christ responded to the lawyer for the sake of others who were listening. Let me quote the whole sequence of events:

And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all

thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

What ensues next is my story. I needn't quote it again; I'm sure all your readers are familiar with it.

YD: That's not always true in this, the 21st century. So let me tell your story:

And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

GS: Now that the stage is set, let me quote from the great Bard of Avon:

Mark you this, Bassanio,  
The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose.  
An evil soul producing holy witness  
Is like a villain with a smiling cheek,  
A goodly apple rotten at the heart.  
O, what a goodly outside falsehood hath!

In my judgement Francis the blasphemer is quoting Holy Scripture in order to facilitate the reign of Satan and destroy Christ's reign of charity. Let me explain. First, our Lord was telling us, through my story, that our neighbor is our fellow man. We are not to extend charity exclusively to those who live next door to us or exclusively to our kin. But where in the parable does our Lord tell us to invite strangers into our homes and our nations, strangers who have demonstrated murderous and licentious appetites, in order to prey upon our wives, our children, and our people?

Secondly, I did not take the stranger who was beaten on the road into my home. I took him to an inn. I had no reason to believe that the stranger on the road was a rapist or a murderer. Had I thought he was, I would have turned him over to the law, I would not have taken him to an inn. The so-called men of God who give sanctuary to Moslem, Mexican, and black criminals are defending the robbers who assaulted the traveler on the road, which is the complete opposite of what I did. The white people being beaten, raped, and murdered by Merkel's and Pope Francis's noble savages are the travelers on the road who need someone to show charity toward them. Merkel the Levite and Francis the Priest "have passed by on the other side" in order to cozy up to the Prince of Darkness by helping his minions destroy the white race.

YD: The devil's assault on our Lord has centered on the destruction of the European hearth fire, because it was there that the European people came to love Him in and through their own people.

GS: Precisely. "Love, like charity, begins at home, but perishes without one." I only extended charity to the traveler on the road because I learned charity at home, amongst my kith and kin. If I had no kith and kin, if my heart were dead to all feelings of filial devotion and love of my own people, then I would have killed the stranger on the road.

TD: Amen to that. This constant assault on white pietas can only lead all mankind to the fiery pit.

GS: That's right. But there is another reality that neither Angela Merkel nor Pope Francis know of. There is the reality of the Christian European hearth fire. It is there that hearts of flesh encounter the same Lord and Savior that the apostles encountered on the Road to Emmaus. Christ will always be with us so long as we stay by our European hearth fire.

YD: God keep you, my Good Samaritan friend.

GS: And God keep you.

Post Script from the Young Drummer:

I do not look on modern Europe from an Olympian height, because I am not an Olympian. I am born of Europe; when Europe bleeds, I bleed. And Europe is bleeding now, because the European people have lost their prophetic vision that came to them when they made Christ Jesus the sovereign King of Europe. Now, when Christ has been placed in a Gnostic



box outside of Europe, when He no longer occupies a place at the Europeans' hearth fire, the European people have become mere recorders that can be played upon by Satan. The European people desperately need to reclaim their souls by reconnecting with my Europe, which is the Europe of faith, hope, and charity. It is not given to me to know the day and hour of His return. But He has given me a vision of a love that passeth the understanding of the rational mind. That vision is the sacred heritage of the European people. They have forsaken that heritage. Why? "Once more unto the breach, dear friends, once more" until Liberalism is dust.

---

The two entities, the eternal Europe of the Young Drummer, and the Gospel of Christ in which we learn of the Good Samaritan, became one incorporate union during the Christian era of the European people's history. It was the task of the secular utopians, such as Robespierre, Marx, Trotsky, and Jefferson, to destroy that incorporate union in the name of a glorious new future for mankind, devoid of the evils and imperfections of Christian Europe. And it was the task of Christian utopians such as Hilaire Belloc, Teilhard de Chardin, and Pope Francis to join with the liberals in the destruction of Christian Europe. And what does the new Europe, purged of the imperfections of the antique Europeans, look like? It looks like hell. We no longer see men and women trying to unite their passion to His passion. Instead we see men and women who have nothing inside them but a passionate hatred for their own people and a passionate hatred for the Christ of old Europe.

If Christ be not risen then we most certainly should not make Him the cornerstone of our civilization. But if Christ rose from the dead on the third day, shouldn't we, in all the essentials, want to follow Him in the footsteps of the people who believed in the risen Lord? The liberals have built Liberalism on the premise that Christ did not rise from the dead, that He was a fraud. We are facing a spiritual Rubicon. Either we stay on the European side of the river with the Europeans from long ago, or we must cross over to the liberals' side of the river with Angela Merkel and Pope Francis and denounce our 'racist' ancestors, while doing penance for our irredeemable whiteness.

The great majority of Europeans are trying to survive the liberals' onslaught on the white race by denouncing the antique Europeans and agreeing to do penance for the sin of whiteness. Witness all the 'white privilege' courses that are being taught at the European and American universities. But if the passion of men united to Christ through white pietas is replaced by the 'wisdom' of philosophers determined to build a utopian world based on the doctrine that everything from white Christian Europe was evil and everything opposed to white Christian Europe is good, then the European people will cease to exist, because we cannot live without the vision that they, the condemned and despised antique Europeans, bequeathed to us. Noble hearts do not forget their dead, especially when their honored dead left them with a memory more precious than gold. "If I forget thee, O Jerusalem" is how we must feel about Christian Europe. We shall keep the memory alive because He lives there, He does not dwell in Liberalism.

For me, the whole conflict between the Young Drummer-Good Samaritan world and the Angela Merkel-Pope Francis world is summed up in Luke:

While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole. And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise. And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat. And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

The key passage is, "And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead." The Rousseaus, the Voltaires, the Shaws, the Einsteins, and all the anti-European legion of European intellectuals who worship science and the noble savage treat Christ with scorn. "The dead do not rise," is their constant refrain. And the Merckels and the Pope Francises have joined the mockers rather than take a stand with the 'racist' Europeans. As for me and my house, we will stand with the antique Europeans who did not mock Christ. They believed that Christ delivered Jairus's daughter from the bonds of death just as He will deliver us from death at the appointed time. How can any European ever, having been vouchsafed a vision of the living God, settle for the liberals' 'potage-of-lentils' culture of diversity? We can't and we won't. +

---

## **The Great Mystery - July 7, 2018**

Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.— 1 Corinthians 15: 51-52

---

More often than not the movie version of a novel is not as good as the original novel. But there are exceptions. Walt Disney's movie *Mary Poppins* (1964) is better than the books, Disney's *Swiss Family Robinson* (1960) is better than the book, and Disney's retelling of the *Pinocchio* story (1940) is infinitely superior to the book. Are there other movies, outside of the Walt Disney canon, that are superior to the novel on which they were based? Yes, there are. John Ford's *The Searchers* is superior to the novel of the same name. And John Ford's *How Green Was My Valley* is superior to the novel. It is on the latter movie-novel that I want to dwell.

I first saw the movie *How Green Was My Valley* in my late teens. Later in my mid-twenties, I read the novel it was based on. I loved the movie, and I hated the book. Why? I loved the movie because Ford placed the emphasis on the Christian father of the family and left out the atheistic, existential rants of the author-narrator that permeated the book. In one telling incident in the book, the narrator informs us that Christ's crucifixion can only have significance if Christ was not God, because if He was God His suffering on the cross was not real. Isn't that the overlooked heresy of our age, the denial of the humanity of God? If God was truly God and truly man, wasn't His suffering on the cross infinitely greater than ours? He could have stopped His suffering at any time, but He didn't. Why didn't He stop it? The mockers told Him to come down off the cross and they would believe. And that is precisely what Christ did not want. He did not want the fear and respect of sycophants who only bow down to power and might. He wanted the freely given love of men who believed in a God of charity and mercy.

To deny the humanity of Christ is to deny His divinity as well, because Christ is the God-Man; His humanity is an inseparable part of His divinity. Intellectuals such as Einstein, who were legion in the 20th century, said there were three categories of religion. The first category was that of the primitive religions of totem and superstition, the second was of the more ethical religions of monotheism, which still retained some elements of the primitive religions, and the third was the cosmic religion of exceptional men such as Einstein himself. But Einstein and his liberal brethren were wrong. Einstein's 'higher cosmic religion' was in reality a return to the primitive religions of totem, superstition, and magic. And the tragedy of 20th and 21st century Christianity was and is that the churchmen, under the scientistic influence of men like Einstein, Shaw, and Teilhard de Chardin, blended Christianity with cosmic nature worship. And that blending of cosmic naturalism and Christianity made modern Christianity more compatible with Islam, Judaism, Liberalism, and all the nature religions than it did with the Christian faith of the antique Europeans. How could it be otherwise? Adherents of rationalized nature religions cannot understand the religion of the God-Man, because God-Manhood can only be understood by the poetic heart, it cannot be understood by the science/magic-oriented mind.

The men of Europe must come to see that their science-based culture is not an advance, it is a regression to the primitive religions of nature. The African witch doctor and the white scientist are one in spirit just as the Russian communist and the American capitalist are one in spirit. The capitalist can deliver more of the economic goods than the communist, just as the white scientist can more efficiently deal with natural diseases, but the white scientists and the black witch doctor are of the same nature/magic-based faith. All faiths, save one, are nature/magic-based faiths. Islam and Judaism are no different in kind from the more primitive type of snake-charmer religions.

Now we come to the 'save one' faith. The God-Manhood of Christ defies nature. Christ's magic is not derived from nature. His magic is of the spirit; it consists of His divine humanity. The love that surpasses the understanding of the natural mind has been discarded by the scientized men and women of the 21st century. If love cannot be put in a scientized golden bowl, then it does not exist: That is the conclusion of our science/magic-based culture.

After over a century of listening to the Christian theologians' new version of the naturalized Christianity, the Europeans have lost their filial love for their Lord and kinsmen. Is it possible we have forgotten what He did and what His God-Manhood means? Ponder, just for a moment, the faith that Christ had in His people. He came to His people, not as a conquering God of power and might, but as the suffering servant who was destined to face an ignominious death on the cross. How could a rational God expect a rational-minded people to accept a God who acted thus as their Savior? It was the bold, audacious act of a madman, it could not be the act of a God. Or could it? The bulk of mankind has told us that it was not the act of a God. Only one people, as a people, said that the Man on the cross was the Son of God. They believed in His God-Manhood. And because of their belief in His God-Manhood, they believed in themselves as a people. If He comes to us through His divine humanity, then it must mean we come to Him through our humanity. In the cosmic nature religion of the liberals, our stubborn fidelity to our kith and kin marks us as heretics, because nature is one, holy, and universal; it does not recognize the individual person who loves a particular people and a particular God that are not derivatives of nature.

The socialist hard left in the United States is currently at odds with the socialist 'soft' left; they differ in degree, not in kind. The hard left in Jacobin France wanted to kill Louis XVI immediately, while the more pragmatic left wanted to keep him around as a puppet king in order to give the people time to get used to the idea of the execution of their king and the destruction of Christian France. So it is with the disputes among the left in this country today. The hard left wants the death of everything white and Christian immediately, while the soft left wants to go a little slower. And in America there is

no right-wing that wants to destroy the left, there are only the Republicans who want to go a little slower still than the soft left. Is there any elected official in any European country that has even suggested, let alone actually tried to act on that suggestion, that we criminalize liberalism and return to the faith-based cultures that existed in Europe prior to the American Revolution, the French Revolution, and the democratic revolutions of the mid-1800s? No, there isn't.

We must see ourselves as in a perpetual state of war against the culture of democracy, even if it is called a Christian democracy, because at the core of democracy is Satan's kingdom of eternal night. At first his sneering face is camouflaged in patriotic platitudes about the people and their freedoms, but once the people have been separated from the 'Dream of the Rood'-culture of old Europe for a long period of time, the camouflage can be dispensed with and Satan can walk the streets of Europe undisguised. The German councilwoman who flat out told her co-legislators that Germany would be a Moslem country in twenty years represents the moral essence of the new Europe, the Satanic Europe, that must be opposed with our whole heart, mind, and soul. It's not a pleasant thing to be in a constant state of war, but it is certainly better than being in a constant state of peace with the people who have eradicated our culture, blasphemed against our God, and seek the life-blood of our kith and kin. Of course if you believe that the antique Europeans were evil racists, that their God was a false God, and that there is no such thing as white pietas, then you will not make war against the liberals. You will play politics with them and try to get them to see that you have been redeemed — you are not racist like those hideous creatures from long ago.

Dostoevsky's Underground Man said that a man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key. Hamlet told Rosencrantz and Guildenstern that he was not a mere recorder on which they could play in order to pluck out his mystery. The liberals, who have rejected the God-Man and made the man-god, the natural savage, their god, believe that a man can be played upon as if he were a piano key or a recorder. They, the magic-nature men, tell us that they have solved the mystery of man. Man is a glorious ape subject to the laws of the natural world. The God-Manhood of Christ is a myth, but the deified ape is a reality. But a post-Christian people will always retain some elements of Christianity; that is why all apes are not equal. The white apes are not equal to the colored apes because they are from the devil; and that is the contradiction at the heart of liberalism. How can white racists be from the devil if there is no spiritual significance connected to skin color and no such thing as the devil?

The pagan Greek philosophers went as far as the human mind could go by the contemplation of nature. And what was their verdict? Sophocles rendered the verdict in his masterpiece, Oedipus Rex: "Better not to have been born." If we are mere products of the natural world, if that is our mystery, then it is better not to have been born, and Christians who believe in the God-Man who rose from the dead, "are of all men most miserable." The modern European has forsaken his mysterious human relationships with his kith and kin and his relationship with the God-Man in order to find comfort with the nature gods — with the negro, with the natural pagan religions of Judaism, Islam, and Hinduism or an ecumenical combination of all the 'natural' religions. There is no real mystery to any of those religions. Just go to any graveyard and stare at a human skull, as Hamlet did. But what if there is a greater mystery in death than the liberals can conceive of? What if Christ is "the grave where buried love doth live"? What the philosophers could not conceive of in their contemplation of the natural world, that the God-Man would deliver mankind from the bondage of death through His death on the Holy Rood, was and is the true mystery of existence that our people, the people who loved much, bore witness to. We will be forever in the thralldom of nature worship if we do not seek the God-Man in and through our kith and kin. Christ's humanity does not diminish His divinity, just as our connection to our kith and kin does not diminish our humanity; it deepens it and allows us to understand, in our hearts, the mystery of Christ's God-Manhood. +

---

## **Where Two or Three Are Gathered Together - June 30, 2018**

"No, I suppose that other world must be all a dream."

"There never was such a world," said the Witch.

"No," said Jill and Scrubb, "never was such a world."

"There never was any world but mine," said the Witch.

"There never was any world but yours," said they.

Puddleglum was still fighting hard. "I don't know rightly what you all mean by a world," he said, talking like a man who hasn't enough air. "But you can play that fiddle till your fingers drop off, and still you won't make me forget Narnia; and the whole Overworld too. We'll never see it again, I shouldn't wonder. You may have blotted it out and turned it dark like this, for all I know. Nothing more likely. But I know I was there once. I've seen the sky full of stars. I've seen the sun coming up out of the sea of a morning and sinking behind the mountains at night. And I've seen him up in the midday sky when I couldn't look at him for brightness."

Puddleglum's words had a very rousing effect. The other three all breathed again and looked at one another like people newly awaked.

“Why, there it is!” cried the Prince. “Of course! The blessing of Aslan upon this honest Marshwiggle. We have all been dreaming, these last few minutes. How could we have forgotten it? Of course we’ve all seen the sun.”

–*The Silver Chair*

---

In order for a revolution to succeed, there must be a certain degree of passivity in the governing body responsible for preventing revolutions. The French Revolution was the classic example. The popular press, the pamphleteers, had made an impression upon Louis XVI; he thought that he could concede a few points to the Jacobins. But you can never cede anything to the devil. The king’s failure to see that the Jacobins were from the devil made him compromise when he should have stood firm.

The indulgence of a sort of undefined hope, an obscure confidence, that some lurking remains of virtue, some degree of shame, might exist in the breasts of the oppressors of France, has been among the causes which have helped to bring on the common ruin of king and people. There is no safety for honest men, but by believing all possible evil of evil men, and by acting with promptitude, decision, and steadiness on that belief. I well remember, at every epocha of this wonderful history, in every scene of this tragic business, that when your sophistic usurpers were laying down mischievous principles, and even applying them in direct resolutions, it was the fashion to say, that they never intended to execute those declarations in their rigour. This made men cautious to their opposition, and remiss in early precaution. By holding out this fallacious hope, the impostors deluded sometimes one description of men, and sometimes another, so that no means of resistance were provided against them, when they came to execute in cruelty what they had planned in fraud.

– Burke in *A Letter to a Member of the National Assembly*

Louis XVI’s failure has been the failure of the West: We have failed to see the devil’s sneering face behind the façade of liberalism. And the primary cover of the devil’s agenda has been ‘racism.’ Trotsky coined the concept to neutralize the white race, and that terrible bogeyman has kept the white race in perpetual fear and self-loathing for over a century. Whites are willingly going to the liberals’ guillotine because they have come to believe that racism is the only unpardonable sin. They believe their ancestors were guilty of that unpardonable sin and they must atone for it. But how can you atone for an unpardonable sin? You can’t, but you can damn your ancestors. You can vow to have nothing to do with their legacy and you can spend your entire life as a sign of contradiction to old Europe. You can propitiate the colored gods by following the dictates of the high priests of the revolutionary tribunal. What gives the liberals the right to rule? Are they not white ‘racists’ just like thee and me? The liberals rule because they are the non-racist elect; they have made a Gnostic transformation and become pure spirit. And as Gnostic supermen they have decreed that everything that the racist Europeans thought was evil – sodomy, abortion, blasphemy – are really virtues that must be given state sanction. If you oppose any of those evils, you will be damned, because any opposition to liberalism is racist and racists are damned. So it is written, so it shall be.

The 20th century conservatives failed to put a dent in the liberals’ armor because they caved in to the liberals on the major issue, which was and still is, white pietas. The conservatives talked about defending our democratic traditions, and they wrote solemn tomes about defending our Greco-Roman-Christian heritage, but they never wrote about defending the people from whom we received our sacred heritage. If we do not have the same spirit as the antique Europeans we cannot preserve the civilization they bequeathed to us. That is fine with the liberals, because they believe the people of old Europe and the civilization they created were evil. But what about the conservatives who claim they want to preserve Western civilization while demonizing white pietas? It’s not possible. A man cannot conserve Western values while denouncing the people who created those values. You must either be a racist, a white man who loves his kith and kin, or you must be a liberal. There is no in between. By the 21st century, all conservatives were liberals, because they were afraid to be called racists.

In many ways, all bad, the new definition of sin suits the conservatives. They no longer have to worry about the old European honor code which required men to defend their women against the barbarians of color. That type of honor code died when racism emerged as the unpardonable sin. They no longer have to maintain any of the so-called pillars of society, such as the sanctity of life in the womb or the sanctity of Christian marriage. All things stemming from that charity of honor culture of old Europe can be done away with, allowing the conservatives time to work on what is really important – getting a non-racist white into office who will lower taxes and/or support our troops. But why are the troops “our troops”? Aren’t “our troops” members of the same military that Eisenhower sent to Little Rock, Arkansas to enforce integration at the point of a bayonet? And aren’t “our troops” the same troops that will be used against us should we dare to rise up and purge the black barbarians from our cities?

We are required, in this, the satanic phase of the Europeans' history, to acquiesce passively to every form of liberal evil because to oppose liberalism is racist. That is quite a convenient formulation of the liberals. If all white people adhere to it, the liberals can reign until they die out from the black plague they created.

The act of kneeling is not intrinsically evil. In fact, to kneel in prayer to the Son of God is a great good. But should we kneel before the liberals and the liberals' gods? The men who knelt in prayer to Christ, the 'racist' Europeans, would not have permitted the Moslem invasion of Europe, the daily rape and murder of whites at the hands of negro savages, the slaughter of the innocents, and the legalization of every form of sexual perversion. They would have felt honor bound to stop all the aforementioned practices. But that is the tragedy of the European people. They have rejected the honor code of old Europe because the antique Europeans were, according to the liberals, racist. If we continue to live without honor, we will surely perish.

It certainly seems rather hopeless for white people. They seem completely cowed by their fear of the racist label. The turning point came when the organized churches, first the Roman Catholic Church, and then the Protestant churches, went over to the worship of a universal idea of God rather than the worship of Christ the Savior. That resulted in the identification of the old European honor code with the 'unpardonable sin' code of the liberals.

There is an unbridgeable divide between the "Dream of the Rood" Christianity and modern Christianity. The former celebrates Christ our Savior, Christ our kinsman, while the later celebrates the God of the universal mind. The love of the Christ depicted in the "Dream of the Rood" creates a people who love their own in and through the Savior. A philosophical commitment to a generic, philosophical God creates a tepid, weak 'love' for all mankind, which leaves a void in the souls of men that can only be filled by the devil. "See how they love one another," is the sign of the "Dream of the Rood" Christianity. "See how they hate their own," is the sign of the liberal Christianity of the satanic, modern day, anti-Christian, Christian churches. There is no love, no honor, no God in those churches. Until the complete rejection of Satan's new Christless, non-racist Christianity becomes the main thrust of the Europeans' counterrevolution, there will be no salvation in this world or the next for the white Europeans, because the man who condemns his own in the name of a universal love for a non-existent, abstract people has no soul to call his own. "Breathes there a man with soul so dead..." Yes, the European people who fear the racist label have souls so dead.

We know what would make the European people whole again, but we do not know how that can happen. The European people need to love their own in and through the Savior. So long as they hate the 'racist' people who loved much, the European people will be estranged from God. Satan always attacks God through His people. If "the love that once was there" is no longer there, there can be no European restoration no matter who gets elected to political office.

Mark Antony's speech to the Romans speaks to us as well, not as regards Caesar, but as regards our relationship to Christ:

You all did love him once, not without cause;  
What cause withholds you then to mourn for him?

Our people once loved Christ, for what cause do we now regard Him as a lesser god in a pantheon of nature gods? Why do we regard Him as part of an "ecumenical jihad," as the non-incarnate God of the nation state of Israel or as a special assistant to Nelson Mandela or to the people of the Amazon rain forest? We have relegated Christ to the status of a lesser nature god because there is no room in a man's heart for the love of the living God if he is full of self-love. An overweening pride of intellect has consumed the European people and made them incapable of loving where they should love, and hating where they should hate. They should love the antique Europeans and the incarnate God with all their heart, mind, and soul. And they should hate the liberals and their god, the fallen archangel Satan, with all their heart, mind and soul.

After a century of indoctrination in school and church, the European people have descended to a state of post-Christian barbarism that makes mere pagan barbarism seem mild in comparison. The liberals can subject those who used to be their own people, before their Gnostic transformation, to torture, rape, and murder without the slightest "compunctious visitings" of conscience. There is no room for charity or mercy in men and women who are surfeit-swelled with self-love. How can anyone with a remnant of grace, the unbought grace of life, not vow to fight the liberals to the knife and drive them off the face of the earth?

St. Paul never talks about the enlightened mind, but he does talk constantly of the circumcised heart. The man who knew the dangers of the scientized intellect spent his life imploring people to open up their hearts to the Savior. Our people, the antique Europeans, did as St. Paul enjoined them. That civilization, the Europe of Christ incarnate, has passed away as a place on the map. But it still exists in the blood of the Europeans who, for the love of Him who died on the cross, have left the 'pride of intellect' civilization of the new Europe for the 'hearth fire' civilization of the old Europe. We are in the position of Puddleglum in C. S. Lewis' book, *The Silver Chair*. Despite the fact that the Witch denies the existence of Narnia and his friends doubt the existence of Narnia, he asserts that there was and is a Narnia. So we must assert that

there was and is a Christian Europe where men and women view life from His perspective. And we must defend that world, even if the apostate Europeans outnumber us by a million to one. If we look at life from the standpoint of pure math we are surely doomed. But when did the European hero ever take numbers into account? There is a realm of honor, that charity of honor, that sprang up from the hearts of the European people. That realm is not time bound nor is its reemergence among us dependent on a democratic majority. It depends on hearts that love their own in and through Him. Such things do not happen in a science-based culture, but they do happen when two or three European hearts are gathered together in His name. +

---

### He Hath Bourne Our Grievs - June 23, 2018

Lo! I will declare the best of dreams which I dreamt in the middle of the night, when human creatures lay at rest. It seemed to me that I saw a wondrous tree rising aloft, encompassed with light, the brightest of crosses. All that sign was overlaid with gold; fair jewels were set at the surface of the earth; there were also five upon the cross-beam. All the angels of God, fair by creation, looked on there; verily that was no malefactor's cross, but holy spirits gazed on Him there, men upon earth and all this glorious universe. – *The Dream of the Rood*

---

I hate Shelley, Keats, and Byron with all my heart, mind, and soul. I hate them because they were anti-poets with a gift for words. They used their verbal skills to attack the poetical heart of existence. Keats spoke for the satanic triumvirate of anti-poets when he wrote, "Beauty is truth, truth beauty; — That is all, Ye know on earth, and all ye need to know." Yes, there is an element of truth in Keats' statement. But we must remember Banquo's warning to Macbeth after both men faced the witches on the heath.

But 'tis strange;  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,  
Win us with honest trifles, to betray's  
In deepest consequence.

The honest trifle contained in Keats' credo is that truth and beauty are connected. The lie at the center of Keats' formulation is that beauty, and therefore truth, consists of the outward show. Keats and his fellow diabolists, Shelley and Byron, chose the same caskets of gold and silver that Bassanio rejected:

So may the outward shows be least themselves;  
The world is still deceiv'd with ornament...  
The seeming truth which cunning times put on  
To entrap the wisest. Therefore, thou gaudy gold,  
Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee;  
Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge  
'Tween man and man; but thou, thou meagre lead,  
Which rather threaten'st than dost promise aught,  
Thy plainness moves me more than eloquence,  
And here choose I. Joy be the consequence!

—*Merchant of Venice*

The problem with Keats, Shelley, and Byron is that they were mesmerized by the natural world. They made that world all in all. But the natural world only has significance as an outer symbol of the spiritual world within. The antique Europeans stood before the cross of Christ, the leaden casket of existence, and they saw that the inner substance was pure gold. The great Anglo Saxon poem, "The Dream of the Rood," speaks to us still:

Wondrous was the cross of victory, and I, stained with sins, stricken with foulness;  
I saw the glorious tree joyfully gleaming, adorned with garments, decked with gold; jewels had fitly covered the tree of the Lord.  
Yet through that gold I could perceive the former strife of wretched men, that it had once bled on the right side.  
I was all troubled with sorrows; I was full of fear at the fair sight.  
I saw the changeful sign alter in garments and colours; at times it was bedewed with moisture, stained with the flowing of blood, at times adorned with treasure. (1)

Who saw that the bloody cross was also "adorned with garments, decked with gold?" Our people saw such a vision. That vision was and is the epitome of beauty and truth. It was the task of the great despoilers, the Shelleys, Keats, Byrons, Voltaires, and Rosseaus, to create a new beauty and a new truth. In the beginning of the onslaught, Satan's minions were excellent counterfeiters. The anti-poetic triumvirate wrote well, and Voltaire and Rousseau could turn a clever phrase. But there is an incredible moral ugliness at the core of the anti-poetical poets such as Keats, Shelley, and Byron and the anti-

Christian philosophers such as Voltaire and Rousseau. Subsequent generations of anti-poetical wordsmiths and anti-Christian philosophers have followed in their train, but they lack the verbal gifts and the cleverness of their satanic predecessors. Of course they no longer need verbal gifts or clever repartee any more. First evil is opposed, then when the evil doers will not go away without a fight, evil is tolerated. Then, over time, evil is embraced and becomes intertwined with the good until the good is blended out of existence like weeds blend the good fruits of the earth out of existence.

The European people live in Satan's unweeded garden because they no longer see beauty and truth in the cross of Christ. They have been blinded by the glittering façade of modernity while failing to look behind the façade to the superficial rotten core of liberalism. What Karl Barth said of Feuerbach we must say of the liberals: We have heard them speak, and we have heard something that is disgustingly, nauseatingly trivial. We will always be the captives of the honest trifles, the disgustingly, nauseatingly evil trivialities of the devil, when we fail to see the cross of Christ as the penultimate of beauty and truth.

You can now get a Ph.D. without being able to write a complete sentence. And the average person speaks like Alfred Jingle, who spoke in broken phrases. Still, outside the black community, the general public is literate. They can read their cell phones and write in computer Jingle-ese. But there is a huge literacy crisis throughout the European nations. The European people have become culturally illiterate. They have lost all contact with the culture that was grounded in the cross of Christ. A few weeks ago I brought home a book purchased in one of the last remaining book stores in this area. The book was printed in 1911, and when I opened the book I found a program from a 1911 grammar school graduation ceremony tucked within the pages. The program revealed the incredible culture gap between us, the modern Europeans, and them, the antique Europeans. The grammar school grads wrote original poems:

|                     |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| May Foster –        | Queen June's Arrival    |
| Ruth Anderson –     | To the Daisies          |
| Joel Rosenthal –    | Nature's Art            |
| Helen Soden –       | The Robin               |
| Sylvan Marco –      | Lincoln                 |
| Bertha Abendroth –  | To a Meadow Lark        |
| Pearl Smith –       | In the Forest           |
| Jack Doron –        | Man's Handiwork         |
| Florence Campbell – | Farewell to Forestville |

They performed a German play:

#### *Die Doppelüberraschung*

|              |                  |
|--------------|------------------|
| Herr Ewing – | George Lederer   |
| Fra Ewing –  | Marion Beveridge |
| Hertha –     | Naomi Proudfit   |
| Bertha –     | Leona Proudfit   |
| Bella –      | Florence Seibert |
| Wanda –      | Annie Petersen   |

And they ended the graduation (obviously it was a German suburb) with a German folksong. All this from 8th graders! Three years after that 1911 graduation, the European people were destined to leave ancient Europe behind and start on the new road mapped out by the anti-European revolutionaries such as Shelley, Keats, Byron, and Rousseau. Now that we have had over one hundred years of that new European world, what is our judgement of it?

From the Christian standpoint there can be only one judgement of 20th and 21st century Europe. It must be condemned and rejected as we condemn and reject Satan. And yet the churchmen tell us that we must become one with the new Europe, the Europe that rejects the antique Europeans and their God. The Pope Francis-type Christians claim they are simply rejecting the racist past of the antique Europeans, they are not rejecting Christ. But that is a lie. Let us suppose that a rose can only grow in one type of soil. If you go throughout the world destroying that soil, haven't you killed the rose? The European people were the good soil, in which the Christian rose, our Lord and Savior, came to fruition. What grows in the unweeded garden of Satan? Feminism, negro worship, abortion, sodomy, and blasphemy grow and flourish in Satan's 'Eden.'

The late Samuel Francis and John Tyndall were heroic men who wanted their kith and kin to survive in the white hating world. But they always saw white people as a changeless aggregate called white people. They did not see the Christian dynamic at work in the European people's past and they did not see the anti-Christian dynamic at work in modern Europe. They kept saying that there was still time to democratically save the European people if they could be persuaded to vote white. Such logic does not take into account the fact that a liberal will never vote white. He will always side with the

colored races because the colored races hate the white Christ-bearing race almost as much as the liberal hates the Christ-bearing race. And even if a white candidate wins an election (the Trump victory was perceived as a white populist victory as envisioned by Samuel Francis), if he does not look on his victory as the beginning of a return to old Europe, then the victory is a delaying action, it is not a victory. What are we as a people if we are not the people who dream of the Rood planted in the midst of Europe? There can be no blending of the two civilizations. In ancient Europe our people saw that the inner core of the bloody cross on which our Savior died was bedecked with jewels. In modern Europe, the liberals see a glittering casket of silver and gold, but when we open up that casket we behold the rotting corpse of Europe. The antique Europeans made much of that which was within; the modern Europeans worship the outer show that covers up the sickness within.

We cannot survive as a people unless we love our people when they were a people, a people who lived, loved, and hated within the shadow of the Holy Rood. What does it avail us if we wage democratic battles with the liberals in order to secure a place in Liberaldom? We can only win such battles by relinquishing our white souls; we must become white-hating liberals in order to enter Liberaldom. And what good is it to gain admittance to that world, the liberals' world, if we must forfeit our souls to gain that world?

The two European worlds, the pre-20th century Europe and the 20th and 21st century Europe, are as different as heaven and hell. I frequently meet older grazers – my parents were two such grazers – who lament the passing of some European custom, such as Christian marriage, in which they believed. But the moment you tell such grazers that what they dislike is not an aberration of the democratic process, but is instead the natural consequence of the democratic process, you lose the grazers. They dismiss such wild-eyed attacks on the democratic way and go on complaining about the 'aberrations' while still worshipping democracy.

There are things being done in the name of democracy and diversity throughout the European nations that cry out to heaven for vengeance. No plea for mercy will stop the liberals from their merciless killing spree. Babies will continue to be aborted, and whites will continue to be slaughtered until white men decide to replant the Holy Rood of Christ in Europe's green and pleasant land. Certainly whites should stockpile guns, but guns are useless without the will to use them in defense of what a man holds closest to his heart. What do we hold closest to our heart? I see the same vision as the author of "The Dream of the Rood":

Then the young Hero – He was God almighty – firm and unflinching, stripped Himself;  
He mounted on the high cross, brave in the sight of many, when He was minded to redeem mankind. Then I trembled when the Hero clasped me; yet I durst not bow to the earth, fall to the level of the ground, but I must needs stand firm. (1)

And we must needs stand firm. We won't be part of the anti-civilization that exalts a man to the extent that he betrays Christ and His people. The foolishness of Christ, who was wounded for our transgressions and bruised for our iniquities, must once again become our foolishness. We shall never die as individuals or as a people so long as our hearts remain with Him who died on the Holy Rood. +

---

#### (1) The Dream of the Rood

Lo! I will declare the best of dreams which I dreamt in the middle of the night, when human creatures lay at rest.  
It seemed to me that I saw a wondrous tree rising aloft, encompassed with light, the brightest of crosses.  
All that sign was overlaid with gold; fair jewels were set at the surface of the earth; there were also five upon the cross-beam.

All the angels of God, fair by creation, looked on there; verily that was no malefactor's cross, but holy spirits gazed on Him there, men upon earth and all this glorious universe.  
Wondrous was the cross of victory, and I, stained with sins, stricken with foulness;  
I saw the glorious tree joyfully gleaming, adorned with garments, decked with gold; jewels had fitly covered the tree of the Lord.

Yet through that gold I could perceive the former strife of wretched men, that it had once bled on the right side.  
I was all troubled with sorrows; I was full of fear at the fair sight.  
I saw the changeful sign alter in garments and colours; at times it was bedewed with moisture, stained with the flowing of blood, at times adorned with treasure.  
Yet I, lying there a long space, beheld in sorrow the Saviour's cross, till I heard it speak.  
Then the most excellent tree began to utter words:

'Long ago was it – I still remember it – that I was cut down at the edge of the forest, moved from my trunk.  
Strong foes took me there, fashioned me to be a spectacle for them, bade me raise up their felons.  
Men bore me on their shoulders there, till they set me on a hill; many foes made me fast there.  
I saw then the Lord of mankind hasten with great zeal that He might be raised upon me.  
Then I durst not there bow or break against the Lord's behest, when I saw the surface of the earth shake;  
I could have felled all the foes, yet I stood firm.



'Then the young Hero – He was God almighty – firm and unflinching, stripped Himself;  
He mounted on the high cross, brave in the sight of many, when He was minded to redeem mankind. Then I trembled when the Hero  
clasped me; yet I durst not bow to the earth, fall to the level of the ground, but I must needs stand firm.

'As a rood was I raised up; I bore aloft the mighty King, the Lord of heaven; I durst not stoop.  
They pierced me with dark nails; the wounds are still plain to view in me, gaping gashes of malice;  
I durst not do hurt to any of them. They bemoaned us both together.  
I was all bedewed with blood, shed from the Man's side, after He had sent forth His Spirit.  
I have endured many stern trials on the hill; I saw the God of hosts violently stretched out; darkness with its clouds had covered the  
Lord's corpse, the fair radiance; a shadow went forth, dark beneath the clouds.  
All creation wept, lamented the King's death; Christ was on the cross.

'Yet eager ones came there from afar to the Prince; I beheld all that.  
I was grievously troubled with sorrows, yet I bowed to the hands of men in humbleness with great zeal. There they took Almighty God,  
lifted Him from the heavy torment; the warriors left me standing, covered with blood; I was all stricken with shafts.  
Then they laid Him down, weary of limb; stood at His body's head; there they looked on the Lord of heaven; and He rested there for a  
space, tired after the mighty strife.  
Then in sight of the slayers men began to fashion Him a tomb; they hewed it out of bright stone; they placed therein the Lord of  
victories.  
Then, unhappy in the eventide, they began to sing a dirge, when they were about to depart in their sorrow from the glorious Prince; He  
rested there alone.

'Now, my loved man, thou mayest hear that I have endured bitter anguish, grievous sorrows.  
Now the time has come when far and wide over the earth and all this splendid creation, men do me honour; they worship this sign.  
On me the Son of God suffered for a space; wherefore now I rise glorious beneath the heavens, and I can heal all who fear me.

'Long ago I became the severest of torments, most hateful to men, before I opened to mankind the true path of life.  
Lo! The Prince of glory, the Lord of heaven honoured me then beyond the trees of the forest, even as Almighty God also honoured his  
mother Mary herself above the whole race of women.

'Now I bid thee, my loved man, to declare this vision unto men; reveal in words that it is the glorious tree on which Almighty God  
suffered for the many sins of mankind and the old deeds of Adam.

'There He tasted death; yet God rose up again with His mighty power to help man.  
Then He ascended to heaven; hither again will the Lord Himself make His way to this world to seek mankind on the day of judgment,  
Almighty God and His angels with Him, when He who has power of judgment will judge each one according as he merits in this fleeting  
life.  
No one can be without fear there at the word the Lord says: He will ask before the multitude where the man is who for God's sake would  
taste bitter death, as He aforetime did on the cross; but then they will be afraid, and think little of what they begin to say to Christ.  
No one need be terrified there who erstwhile bears in his breast the best of signs, but each soul which desires to dwell with the Lord  
must through the cross seek the kingdom which is far from earth.'

Then glad at heart I worshipped the cross with great zeal, where I was alone with none to bear me company.  
My soul was eager to depart; I felt many yearnings within me.  
Now I have joy of life that I can seek the triumphant cross alone more often than all men, do it full honour.  
Great is the desire for that in my heart, and to the cross I turn for help.  
I have not many powerful friends on earth, but they have gone away hence from the joys of the world, have sought the King of heaven,  
live now in heaven with God the Father, dwell in glory; and each day I look for the time when the Lord's cross, which erstwhile I saw  
here on earth, will fetch me from this fleeting life, and bring me then where there is great gladness, joy in heaven, where God's people  
are placed at the feast, where there is bliss unending; and will set me then where I may thereafter dwell in glory, enjoy happiness fully  
with the saints.  
May the Lord, who here on earth suffered aforetime on the cross for the sins of men, be a friend unto me; He has redeemed us and has  
given us life, a heavenly home.

Hope was born anew with blessedness and joy for those who before endured the burning.  
The Son was triumphant on His journey, mighty and successful, when He, the Master almighty, came with the throng, the company of  
spirits, into God's kingdom – to gladness of the angels and all the saints who before dwelt in heaven in glory, when their Lord, Almighty  
God, came where his home was.

---

## **Even Unto the End of the World - June 16, 2018**

For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?  
Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man  
be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. – Mark 8: 36-38

The de-emphasis of the incarnation of Christ in the Christian churches and the denial of the incarnation of Christ in secular Europe is the reason that the European race is fast disappearing from the face of the earth. What binds Judaism, Islam, and liberalism together? All three religions deny the incarnation of the Son of God. The hatred of the white race exhibited by those religious bodies and the other sects of colored heathens is motivated by Satan's deep-seated hatred of the antique Europeans, the people who made Christ incarnate in their culture. Satan wants the incarnation of the Son of God to be an idea, he does not want the Word of God to be made flesh, because he can always win a debate, but he cannot win a war against men with hearts of flesh consecrated to the incarnate God.

I recently read a tract, and such tracts are legion, by a religious expert who claimed there was no difference between pagan Europe and Christian Europe, because both periods of European history produced murders, adulteries, wars, and sexual perversions. Is it really necessary to point out the incredible differences between pagan Europe and Christian Europe? A theologian who makes the 'no difference' claim is not interested in the truth. He is only interested in his own utopian fantasies. If mankind will only follow his twenty-point plan he will make men like unto God. But if we eschew Christian utopianism, which is a plea to reenact Adam's and Eve's original sin, "Ye shall be as Gods," we can see that there was an incarnational culture. The European people made Christ the moral essence of their culture. He was more than an idea to them, He was their heart and soul. The difference between an idea religion and a hearth-fire religion is the difference between heaven and hell. As soon as Christ's incarnation becomes an idea in men's minds rather than the burning passionate belief of their heart, Satan can shift men's focus away from God and make them view his satanic vision of life in a new and pleasant light.

The race war is a religious war because our God is an incarnate God. If Christ was not really true God and true man, if the flesh cannot be sanctified, then all men are universals, they are part of an aggregate herd called 'mankind.' But if the spirit can take on flesh, then the skin color of the people who circumcised their hearts and took Christ into their racial hearth fire has eternal significance. The European people set themselves apart from the other races because they gave us a glimpse — actually it was more than a glimpse, it was a vision — of the living God.

All efforts to restore Western civilization will fail unless those efforts are focused on inspiring white people to return to their racial hearth fire and defend it. We can't go on as an Undine race, the people who have no souls, and still continue as a race. Of course that is what the liberals desire. They have already decreed, and they are acting on that decree, that the white race is a non-human race that should be exterminated. The Christian churches serve as the great anesthetizers. It is in the churches that the desoulment takes place. St. Paul told us that Christ's church consisted of those men and women who had taken Christ into their hearts. "Not so," say the churchmen. "The church of God is an organization built on an idea of God — our idea of God." But an idea is shifting sand, it lacks a local habitation in the human heart. The organized Christian churches are fusing with organized Islam and organized Jewry because they no longer diverge from those religions; having abandoned their racial hearth fire, the European churchmen have lost their vision of the incarnate God of Europe. Without that vision they are Undines, in search of a soul, in the forests of Brazil, in the nation state of Israel, or through their worship of the sacred negro. They refuse to look for their God at the hearth fire of the European people, because they fear the racist label.

If fear of the living God is the beginning of wisdom, then what are we to make of a people who fear Satan's racist label, which he places on all white men who love their own in and through the Savior? Sadly, we can make nothing of them, because they have willed themselves into a deathlike sleep; they are walking shadows who fret and strut their hour upon the stage of life without the passion to love their God and their people enough to fight for them. Life is only a tale told by an idiot to those who have severed the ties of blood that connect them to the living God.

The liberals, who are legion, believe in incarnational politics; they will settle for nothing less than the incarnation of Satan in the nations that formerly constituted Christendom. The reason leaders such as Orbán of Hungary and Trump in America enrage the liberals is because their politics represent compromise; they want a place for white Christians within Liberalism. That compromise is an anathema to the liberals. And it should be an anathema to the white Christian as well. We cannot compromise with liberals. They want the blood of the white man, there is nothing that he can say or do to appease the liberals. He must willingly take his place on the sacrificial altar so that the liberals can propitiate their colored gods. The only effective resistance to liberalism is incarnational Christianity. Christ cannot be one democratic option among the Satanic -isms, for the simple reason that in a straight democracy Christ always loses — "Give us Barabbas!" The heathen will always rage against the light of the world. It is up to the Europeans, the Christ-bearers, to drive the heathens from the white lands along with the liberal Ganelons.

Ever since the time of the French Revolution the Europeans have been playing a game called "compromise with the liberals." And the liberals always win. They have destroyed, in the name of liberty, equality, and fraternity, every vestige of incarnational Europe. Burke warned the West that the Jacobin snake did not die with Robespierre, it was alive and well, and its venom was called democracy. Under the guise of democracy every evil under the sun has been institutionalized.

During the American Civil War the abolitionists insisted that the Civil War was not a war in support of miscegenation; they said it was a war for negro enfranchisement. But negro enfranchisement did mean miscegenation. Once that barrier was broken, the liberals did not apologize for breaking their word, they simply moved on to the next hurdle. The emancipation of women, for instance, was not presented as the destruction of Christian marriage, it was presented as simple democratic enfranchisement. Now that the Christian patriarchal family has been destroyed and white Christian masculinity proscribed, do we hear anyone crying foul? No, we do not. Every channel of grace flowing from white Christian Europe has been destroyed by the liberals. And the churchmen have helped the liberals damn up those channels of grace. The Welsh minstrel tells us that, "Nothing can compare to the love that once was there." What love was there? The love that a man has for his own kith and kin, which is sanctified by His presence and His blessing. The liberals sing a different tune. They sing of the hatred of all things white and Christian and bid us look to a future without white people and without Christ. And that future has arrived. We still have some white grazers left, but we have very few white people, whites who are willing to love their own kind, in and through the Savior without fear of the racist label and without any apologies.

The Grand Inquisitor in Dostoevsky's novel *The Brothers Karamazov* hurls a serious accusation at Christ. He tells Him, "You said you would return and you didn't." And since Christ failed to return, the Grand Inquisitor felt it was incumbent upon him to recreate a church in his image rather than in Christ's image. Isn't that precisely what has happened in the European nations? The scribes and the Pharisees have stepped in to fill the void left by Christ's 'broken' promise. But doesn't that leave the Holy Ghost out of the picture? Christ said He would leave us a Comforter until His return. Did He lie? It only appears so to those who have forsaken the Holy Ghost, who resides in hearts of flesh. If you must see an external sign, the type of sign that science and scientized theology provide, you will feel abandoned by God. Our churches have institutionalized that feeling of abandonment and turned their people over to the heathen gods. The prayer to our Father who art in Heaven has become a prayer to nature and nature's gods – the sacred negro, the Moslem zealot, the Hindu holy man, and the nation state of Israel. If we don't believe that Christ was incarnate in old Europe and vow to stay by the hearth fire of the antique Europeans, we will become part of the new Europe. And in the new Europe Satan reigns supreme. He is the incarnate ruler of Liberalism.

Satan had to impose his will on the European people incrementally. He had to undermine the Christian foundations before he could launch a frontal attack. Now that white pietas has become the new 'original sin,' the European people are without a Comforter, because the Holy Ghost only resides in the circumcised heart, a heart ready to receive the incarnate God. Lady Macbeth asks the devil to

...stop up the' access and passage to remorse,  
That no compunctious visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
Th' effect and it.

That is the ethos of the liberals. It is impossible to fight that satanic ethos without a belief in the whole Christian fairy tale – that Christ became flesh, was crucified, died and was buried, and on the third day He rose from the dead. And then, when He ascended into heaven, He left us a Comforter so that we could know that He was with us always. It sounds like such an impossible tale. We cannot wrap our minds around it, because it's so unmodern and unscientific. I would submit that the Christian fairy tale seems remote to the modern Europeans because they have chosen to reenact the original sin: They have scientized God and made His word subject to the laws of nature. But He is not out there in Satan's natural world, His world is the fairy kingdom where loving hearts seek Him still. He tells the scribes and Pharisees that there shall be no sign, because He is the sign. When we completely reject the world of the scribes and Pharisees, the world ruled by Satan, we will enter the real world, which is His world, a world of faith, hope, and charity. The passage to that world starts at home, by our European hearth fire. +

---

### One Particular God - June 9, 2018

And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them: Insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel. –Matthew 15: 29-31

---

No appeal to white self-interest will work, because liberals have no race or faith. Only a man who believes that his race is an element of his personality which is connected to his God cares about the extinction of his race. The white race did not conquer the world because individual whites were smarter, swifter, or stronger than the people of other races. They conquered because they loved their God while those of other races only propitiated their gods. The summons of the fiery cross will only be answered by men with hearts of fire. One

particular, personal God, and only that God, is capable of setting hearts on fire. No matter how small the white remnant, and no matter how numerous the foe, the men with the hearts of fire will keep Satan at bay until He comes to lead the final charge. – CWN Y

---

The white people protesting Tommy Robinson's imprisonment for opposing the Moslem rapists must have some remnant of Christianity left in them or else they would not be protesting. But are protests by white people against liberal cruelty and injustice ever effective? No, they are not. Protests are part of the democratic process, and the democratic process is an invention of the devil to destroy the Christ-bearing race. You can't seek redemption from the devil. The only protests that are successful in a democratic system are those that help Satan tighten his stranglehold on the European people. The civil rights protests were successful because the rulers of the Western world wanted to encourage miscegenation. Gandhi's protests were successful because the British government wanted an excuse to throw off the white man's burden.

In contrast to those satanically inspired, successful protests, the prolife movement was a colossal failure, because the liberals did not want to provide legal protection to the infants in the womb. If white Christians really want to do something about the liberals' reign of cruelty, they must leave the democratic process, which includes peaceful protests, behind and make the great return: They must return to the blood and soil faith of their European ancestors. And I am not referring to our pagan ancestors, I am referring to the followers of Odin who bent their knees to Christ without sacrificing any of the fighting spirit that inspired them to fight for Odin. The Christian Europeans such as Alfred did not become lesser men when they took on the mantle of Christ, they became greater men, because the measure of a man is what he fights for. How can there be anything greater than His reign of charity?

The white men who want to halt legalized abortion and the persecution of innocent whites, such as Jayda Fransen and Tommy Robinson, must decide which master they shall serve. If they continue to "protest" evil within the confines of a system that exists for one purpose only, to destroy the good and perpetuate evil, then they have decided to serve Satan. If they decide to make the Christ of old Europe their master, they will not seek redemption from the devil. They will leave the democratic process behind and fight evil the way Europeans used to fight evil before they became entwined within the coils of the democratic process.

In Walt Disney's *Zorro* (the real Walt Disney), Don Diego comes home from Spain and hears a tale of horror from his father. The commandante is cruel, merciless, unjust, etc. What is Don Diego's response? He tells his father he is going to sit down and write a letter to the Viceroy. Of course his father is disgusted with him. Letter-writing is not going to stop the evil commandante. Don Diego knows that. During the day he is a fop who fights evil with letter-writing, but during the night he is Zorro, who fights evil with his good sword. "Ah, but men like Zorro and William Tell only exist in story books. You cannot act like that in the modern world!" the democracy-loving protester tells me. European men did once act like Zorro and William Tell. Were the evil comandantes and the Gessler prevented from doing evil because of protest movements? Of course they weren't. Why then do we expect the liberals, who are much more evil than the petty tyrants of yesteryear, to stop doing evil because of a few protest marches?

White foppery in the form of a protest movement is not the proper response to the evil of liberalism. It accomplishes nothing and may do a great deal of harm, in that it allows whites to think they are 'doing something' when in reality they are doing nothing. The Tommy Robinson arrest is a case in point. If he serves any length of time in jail, it could well be a death sentence for him. Will it help him if white people protest after his murder? Wouldn't it be better if white people let it be known that any judge who sentences Tommy Robinson to prison will die?

The white protests designed to convert the devil are a sad reenactment of the so-called prolife movement. For 45 years the proliferers have been protesting legalized abortion, and for 45 years they have gotten no results. Yet they never look at the obvious reason why the liberals keep winning the abortion wars. The liberals keep winning because they have no fear of white Christians. Whenever a white Christian actually does what is necessary and kills an abortion doctor, the 'proliferers' run and hide under their beds while screaming, "I am against violence." That is precisely why you, Mr. Prolifer, should be in favor of killing abortion doctors and burning down the abortuaries. The liberals have taken violence to a new level. They burn, slice, and stab young babies in the womb. Is that not violence? Can people who do such violence be made to stop their murderous spree by gentle persuasion? Only fear of death, their own, will make liberals stop doing evil, whether it is the murder of infants or the slaughter of the white race.

The Christian Europeans walked on water because they took the Son of God into their hearts. If you deny the reality of Christian Europe, if you claim the antique Europeans did not know Christ because they were racist, homophobic, and sexist, in contrast to the modern Christians who are not racist, homophobic, or sexist, you must tell me why the antique Europeans, who were supposed to be so evil, gave us a glimpse of the living God while the modern anti-European liberals have given us a glimpse of hell? There is no avoiding the ancient Europeans' connection to Christ. When Christ dwelt by the Europeans' hearth fire, the European people knew how to respond to the devil and his minions. When Christ was

Gnosticized, when He became the end product of a syllogism instead of the God of our ascending race, we were left foundering in the seas of liberalism. Protest movements are the white, Gnosticized Christians' pleas to the liberals to save them from drowning. But the liberals want the white Christians to drown, and the sea is the sea and drowning men will drown unless... They will drown unless they learn to walk on water again. Having once fixed our eyes on Christ we cannot falter or we will drown in the sea of liberalism. The vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen was bred in the bone and nurtured in the hearts of the antique Europeans. Without that breeding and that nurturing we cannot respond to the wickedness and snares of the devil as Christian men should respond. We will be forever chained to the democratic rock without any hope of being delivered from our bondage.

As incarnational Europe fades from the memory of modern Europeans, let me raise one voice in defense of Christian Europe. We cannot be fully human unless we revere His divine humanity. The antique Europeans were not perfect, they were not gods, but they revered His sacred humanity and in doing so they showed us the glory of a Christ-centered humanity. What do the modern Europeans show us? They show us nothing of God. We only see all that is unholy and blasphemous in the pigsties of modern Europe.

The purpose of institutionalized liberalism is to eradicate every last trace of humanity from the face of the earth. The liberals' focus has been and will continue to be on the white race, because the antique Europeans were the most Christ-centered and therefore the most fully human people who ever walked the earth. And any member of a non-white race who shows even a glimmer of respect for the ancient faith of the European people, a Gunga Din, will be exterminated as well. Despite their claim, "We love humanity," the liberals hate humanity just as their master, the devil, hates humanity. R. L. Stevenson captures the essence of liberalism in his short fable titled, "The Four Reformers":

Four reformers met under a bramble-bush. They were all agreed the world must be changed. "We must abolish property," said one.

"We must abolish marriage," said the second.

"We must abolish God," said the third.

"I wish we could abolish work," said the fourth.

"Do not let us get beyond practical politics," said the first. "The first thing is to reduce men to a common level."

"The first thing," said the second, "is to give freedom to the sexes."

"The first thing," said the third, "is to find out how to do it."

"The first step," said the first, "is to abolish the Bible."

"The first thing," said the second, "is to abolish the laws."

"The first thing," said the third, "is to abolish mankind."

Have I gone too far afield from the plight of Tommy Robinson and the countless other white victims of liberal cruelty and colored savagery? No, I haven't. If we don't see liberalism in all its guises as from the devil, we will not be able to defend our people, such as Tommy Robinson, against the liberals' satanic onslaught. We need the full armor of Christ in order to do battle with the devil. We cannot arm ourselves with the democratic weapons of the devil in order to combat the devil. Once the European people believe that liberalism is Satanic, they will no longer oppose liberal evil with foppery, they will fight as integral men fight for what they love; they will fight with all their heart, mind, and soul.

The marriage between the European people and Christ was a blessed union, a blessed union that Satan was determined to end. He succeeded because he turned a marriage based on love into a marriage of convenience. When the Europeans ceased to see the moral beauty of Christ's crucifixion and resurrection, they ceased to love Christ. It is still convenient for them to refer to Christ now when they need a spokesman for racial equality or some other social problem, but the love match is over. Christ has been trivialized out of Europe because the Europeans can no longer understand a God of depth. When they abandoned their racial hearth fire, the European people became incapable of maintaining their blessed union with Christ. They have become spiritually neutered. The living God comes to human hearts, He does not come to us through a series of philosophical incantations or the nation state of Israel. If we settle for a formulaic, superficial Christ we will stay in the land of the Undines, the land of the men and women who have no souls.

Burke reminds us that a nation is a moral essence, not a geographical entity. The moral essence of old Europe was Christ. We cannot graft Christ onto a nation, the nation of Liberalism, with an amoral satanic essence. The great tragedy of the 21st century is that professed Christians as well as mad dog liberals vilify and spit on the moral essence of old Europe. We live in Biblical times. We need to believe that our Lord will not leave us naked to our enemies. It's difficult to believe in the

7,000, but that is what Satan wants: “Despair and die.” If we set the modern world against the moral essence of old Europe and see what the liberals, at Satan’s behest, have destroyed, we will not go quietly into the dark night of liberalism. The 91st Psalm is forever relevant, but it is most particularly relevant for an antique European living in Liberaldom:

Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name.

It all begins and ends with the great refusal – We shall not abandon our Jesus, the Christ of old Europe. +

---

### **The Liberals’ Metamorphosis - June 2, 2018**

Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour. –1 Peter 5: 8

---

Pope Francis the blasphemer is always very forthright and uncompromising when he condemns white pietas, which he calls racism. But when he approaches the liberals’ sacred cows, he is very understanding. For instance, he can’t really say that homosexuality is wrong. Why can’t he say that it is wrong? It was always considered wrong by Protestants and Catholics for over a thousand years. So again, what is so difficult about standing up for the age old Christianity of the European people? It is difficult to stand up for Christian morality when you don’t really believe that Christ was the Son of God. The modern Catholic church is like unto the Disney corporation. The corporate executives have to retain many of the symbols and trappings of their founder, because it was his vision that created the Disney empire, but they do not share the same vision as Walt Disney. In point of fact, their beliefs are in direct contrast to Walt Disney’s beliefs. But they need to feed off his poetic vision, so they retain the Disney name while espousing values that are in direct conflict with Walt Disney’s values.

So it is with the Roman Catholic executives. They still keep Christ as the symbolic head of their corporation, but they have denied Him in their hearts. They no longer believe that He is the Son of the living God, so they no longer feel the need to adhere to the moral code that stems from a belief in the Son of God. They keep Christ as a figure head, because they earn their living by posing as Christians, but their hearts belong to the liberals.

The devil is not a poet. He is, as the poet Walter Scott pointed out, a strict formalist:

Once upon a time this old hag is said to have crossed the moor, driving before her a flock of geese, which she proposed to sell to advantage at a neighbouring fair;—for it is well known that the fiend, however liberal in imparting his powers of doing mischief, ungenerously leaves his allies under the necessity of performing the meanest rustic labours for subsistence. The day was far advanced, and her chance of obtaining a good price depended on her being first at the market. But the geese, which had hitherto preceded her in a pretty orderly manner, when they came to this wide common, interspersed with marshes and pools of water, scattered in every direction, to plunge into the element in which they delighted. Incensed at the obstinacy with which they defied all her efforts to collect them, and not remembering the precise terms of the contract by which the fiend was bound to obey her commands for a certain space, the sorceress exclaimed, “Deevil, that neither I nor they ever stir from this spot more!” The words were hardly uttered, when, by a metamorphosis as sudden as any in Ovid, the hag and her refractory flock were converted into stone, the angel whom she served, being a strict formalist, grasping eagerly at an opportunity of completing the ruin of her body and soul by a literal obedience to her orders.

#### *The Black Dwarf*

Using the forms of Christianity, the devil is able to ape the good in order to advance his satanic agenda. The miracle of married love which produces a child is turned into the sacrificial rite of “free choice,” in which an infant child is sacrificed on the altars of liberalism. Every perversion under the sun is given an inverted Christian sanction. Pope Francis’s support of sodomy, which is given a Christian meaning by applying the ‘judge not that ye be judged’ label on the sin, in a complete distortion of the text, is another example of the satanic inversion of Christianity. Pope John XXIII gave us another sample of the new, satanic Christianity when he had “loving forgiveness” for the black Satanists who tortured, raped, and murdered nuns and priests of his own race and his own church. All such perversions and barbarities, and the list of the perversions and barbarities is endless, are done under the formal mantle of a hellish, twisted Christianity in which false prophets, the prophets of liberalism, bid us follow the false messiahs of reason, science, and the ‘noble black savage.’

At the turn of the 19th century the people of Europe could not absorb undiluted Satanism. So Satan came to them in a diluted form. He kept the outward forms of Christianity alive while changing the inmost heart and soul of European culture. Our culture was consecrated to Christ; it is now consecrated to Satan. In order to make that change, it was necessary to plant the idea in men’s minds that God was to be found out there, in nature, and God was to be worshipped, not in spirit and truth, but in formal rites devoid of their spiritual center, which was and is, Christ the Lord.

It's impossible not to see that in the 21st century the Satanism of the liberals is less diluted. Whether this is a tactical error of Satan or a tactical error of the liberals which Satan cannot control, or a tactical master stroke is more than we know. But it is clear the liberals feel less of a need to cloak their evil intentions. They never debate any more, they just refuse a hearing to any dissenters and/or jail them, as was the case with Tommy Robinson and Jayda Fransen. They also openly talk about the extermination of the white race, which was not something that they espoused so openly in the 20th century. Shouldn't the liberals be afraid of a white backlash? It doesn't seem like they have anything to be afraid of. The European people will only fight if they believe that Christ is the Son of God and they are the Christ-bearing race. So long as they believe that whiteness is the original sin and the liberals' nature religion of the black Messiah is the one true faith, they will not fight for their own people or for the restoration of Christian Europe, which are really one and the same thing.

Satan cannot understand the poetic of Christ crucified, Christ risen, because he is completely devoid of poetic sentiments. But he does possess mathematical intelligence, and he uses that intelligence to maintain the outer forms of the Christian poetic, which he uses for his own satanic purposes. Starting from a mathematical base, Satan proceeded to prove to the Europeans that man was nothing more than a by-product of the natural world. He failed time and time again in his quest to place a wedge between the European people and Christ but finally he succeeded in his efforts. He placed the natural world, the world of '2 plus 2 makes 4,' before the European people's eyes and bid them study that world ad nauseam until they saw nothing else but that world. Once that metamorphosis was complete, once the Europeans saw with and not through their eyes, the devil's triumph was complete. But of course it is not in the devil's nature to rest contented. He must push onward and downward, until the image of God in man is completely eradicated from the face of the earth. Then, when the earth has become hell, the devil hopes that he can be free of God and never have to look on the Divine Countenance again. That is his desire and that is the desire of his minions, the apostate liberals who worship darkness and reject the light.

In Michelangelo's painting on the Sistine Chapel ceiling, he depicts the hand of God reaching out to the hand of man. If I had the artistic ability I would paint a picture of Satan, immersed in the pit of hell, reaching out to the modern Europeans. They would not be resisting Satan. They would be flocking to him in order to be part of his kingdom of everlasting night. On their faces would be looks of sheer terror, but they would not be terrified of hell. They would be looking behind them for fear that He might still be seeking them out in order to prevent their glorious marriage to Satan.

The modern white wants to obliterate his whiteness in the arms of the devil. On this earth, the colored heathens serve as the strong arms of the devil. Now the liberals see the devil darkly through the colored races, but once they have achieved hell, they will see the demon whom they worshipped on earth face to face.

Whiteness is not the original sin. The Christ-bearing race championed the God of mercy in a world devoid of mercy. Then they abandoned the God of mercy and sought out the savage gods of color. That is their sin and it is not original. It is the sin of all the colored races who preferred the gods of sacrifice to the God of Mercy. Where is mercy to be found now that the liberals have joined with the colored heathens to eradicate mercy from the face of the earth? It's to be found in Christ's church, which was never an organization of corporate executives; it was and is the union of hearts of flesh, hearts that love Christ in spirit and in truth. I believe in the people with the hearts of flesh, I believe that they knew the one true God, and I believe I can know that God in this world and be with Him in the next world if I do not sever my connection to the antique Europeans. They touched the heart of God, and through them I touch the heart of God.

In 1st Corinthians St. Paul speaks of a mystery:

Behold I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

The liberals do not believe in that mystery, but they do believe, because they accept all of Satan's inversions of Christianity, in the mystery of liberal metamorphosis. They believe they can transcend their whiteness, their original sin, through the love of the noble black savage. And their love of the black savior is maintained by the Father, which is the abstract intellect, and the Holy Ghost, which is science. We can never save our people by appealing to the liberals' self-interest – "You too are white," – because they have made a Gnostic transformation. They have left their whiteness behind. Nor can you appeal to the liberals' mercy – "You can't murder a whole race of people." Yes, the liberals can and will murder a whole race of people. They have killed the white pietas in their own hearts, so they must kill the white pietas in every white heart.

When God took flesh and dwelt among us, He joined His divine humanity with our humanity. What a blessed union! The liberals have done just the opposite. They have joined with the colored savages to form an unholy union devoid of mercy. Their union has produced nothing but cruelty. It's as if Dotheboys Hall, that terrible boarding school in Dickens' novel Nicholas Nickleby, in which merciless cruelty is the norm, has become the world. And that world, which is Satan's world,

will not be brought down by voting or pleas for mercy. It will be brought down by Christian men with hearts of flesh who strike home in defense of the helpless.

Squeers caught the boy firmly in his grip; one desperate cut had fallen on his body—he was wincing from the lash and uttering a scream of pain—it was raised again, and again about to fall—when Nicholas Nickleby, suddenly starting up, cried ‘Stop!’ in a voice that made the rafters ring.

‘Who cried stop?’ said Squeers, turning savagely round.

‘I,’ said Nicholas, stepping forward. ‘This must not go on.’

‘Must not go on!’ cried Squeers, almost in a shriek.

‘No!’ thundered Nicholas.

Aghast and stupefied by the boldness of the interference, Squeers released his hold of Smike, and, falling back a pace or two, gazed upon Nicholas with looks that were positively frightful.

‘I say must not,’ repeated Nicholas, nothing daunted; ‘shall not. I will prevent it.’

Squeers continued to gaze upon him, with his eyes starting out of his head; but astonishment had actually, for the moment, bereft him of speech.

‘You have disregarded all my quiet interference in the miserable lad’s behalf,’ said Nicholas; ‘you have returned no answer to the letter in which I begged forgiveness for him, and offered to be responsible that he would remain quietly here. Don’t blame me for this public interference. You have brought it upon yourself; not I.’

‘Sit down, beggar!’ screamed Squeers, almost beside himself with rage, and seizing Smike as he spoke.

‘Wretch,’ rejoined Nicholas, fiercely, ‘touch him at your peril! I will not stand by, and see it done. My blood is up, and I have the strength of ten such men as you. Look to yourself, for by Heaven I will not spare you, if you drive me on!’

‘Stand back,’ cried Squeers, brandishing his weapon.

‘I have a long series of insults to avenge,’ said Nicholas, flushed with passion; ‘and my indignation is aggravated by the dastardly cruelties practised on helpless infancy in this foul den. Have a care; for if you do raise the devil within me, the consequences shall fall heavily upon your own head!’

He had scarcely spoken, when Squeers, in a violent outbreak of wrath, and with a cry like the howl of a wild beast, spat upon him, and struck him a blow across the face with his instrument of torture, which raised up a bar of livid flesh as it was inflicted. Smarting with the agony of the blow, and concentrating into that one moment all his feelings of rage, scorn, and indignation, Nicholas sprang upon him, wrested the weapon from his hand, and pinning him by the throat, beat the ruffian till he roared for mercy.

I repeat, our world, the European world, is ruled by a cabal of cruel, merciless vipers who rejoice in the degradation, torture, rape, and murder of white people. Their merciless reign must be stopped. But it can only be stopped by white men whose hearts burn within them from an encounter with the risen Lord, our Jesus, the God of our racial hearth fire. +

---

### **The One Great Mystery - May 26, 2018**

And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord’s Christ.

And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word: For mine eyes have seen thy salvation, Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people; A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him. And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against; (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed. –Luke 2: 25-35



In W. H. Mallock's novel *The New Paul and Virginia* (1878), Mallock sets out to destroy the New Age modernists in state and church by depicting what would happen if their ideas were actually acted upon. In order to prove to the reader that he is not making up the insane philosophers cited by his characters, he places quotes from the actual authors of the insanity in the back of the book. Such modern lights as Huxley, Tyndall, and W. K. Clifford are quoted often. The following quote from W. K. Clifford's book *Cosmic Emotion* pretty much sums up the religious viewpoints of all the modernists who are held up to ridicule in Mallock's novel:

The two kinds of cosmic emotion run together and become one. The microcosm is viewed only in relation to human action; nature is presented to the emotions as the guide and teacher of humanity. And the microcosm is viewed only as tending to complete correspondence with the external; human conduct is subject for reverence only in so far as it is consonant to the demiurgic law, in harmony with the teaching of divine Nature. – Professor Clifford

What was a fringe movement in the 19th century, the return to Baal, became an acceptable alternative to Christianity, in sugar-coated language, in the first half of the 20th century. And in the second half of the 20th century, the religion of the insane, sophistic, pagan Europeans such as Clifford, Huxley, and Tyndall, became the religion of the European people.

Mallock's depiction of the liberals' brave new world of the future is remarkably accurate, but there was a limit to the depravities that Mallock could envision if the new "enlightened" views of the cosmic liberals of his time were put into practice. After all, Mallock was an honorable, Victorian Christian. How could he possibly foresee the extent of the evil that liberalism, once it became institutionalized, would bring upon Western man? We, of the 21st century, can now see the extent of the evil, but paradoxically the 21st century Europeans, having plummeted to an intellectualized state of unparalleled barbarism, have no sense of their own depravity. And that is the worst state of depravity, to wallow in the pigsties of liberalism without even knowing one is in a pigsty. Even Kurtz, in Conrad's *Heart of Darkness*, was able to see his depravity: "The horror, the horror," but the modern European wallows in the horror and loves it.

Liberalism is a uniquely European phenomenon, because the essence of liberalism is a rejection of Christ in order to return to Baal. The people of color did not have to reject Christ, for the simple reason that they never made Christ the lodestar of their culture. Nor did they have to return to Baal, because they never left Baal. Because of the European people's Christian past, their return to Baal had to be couched in Christian language. In France, the Jacobins screamed 'Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity' in order to justify their bloodletting, and the Russian communists used similar 'God' words. But in both cases, the French and the Russian, the 'return to Baal' revolutionaries went too fast. The European people, in the main, were not yet ready for that kind of unmitigated liberal savagery. The French liberals shifted to the gradual Americanized return to Baal, while Russia, after a longer reign of terror than France, also shifted to the American way, a longer, slower return to Baal. The reason the formerly communist countries of Eastern Europe show more signs of life than the countries of Western Europe is because the direct, Robespierre-type approach steels a people's resolve to resist more than the seductive approach of the democratic way does. If you had the money to flee Western Europe, any of the Eastern European countries would be preferable to the countries of Western Europe. But the nations of Eastern Europe are still under the shroud of liberalism. I cringe when I hear their leaders talking about Christian democracies. There can be no such thing. Democracy is a God word the liberals use to disguise the horror of the Europeans' return to Baal; it should never be coupled with Christianity.

Metternich's warning – "Every time I hear the word 'democracy' I know a blood bath is coming" – should be taken to heart by every European, especially now when we can see the terrible devastation wrought during the democratic era of the European people's history. Life is tragic; we all must suffer and die in the flesh. But do we have to suffer and die without hope in the Redeemer? "Yes," the liberals tell us, "we are all part of a universal democracy, consisting of millions upon millions of walking dead men, born of nature and destined to return to nature." Where then is our hope? "We can hope that mankind will be happy some two hundred years hence when white people have been eliminated, and all mankind, minus white mankind, can cavort around the throne of the sacred negro."

The conservative-liberals spent all their efforts after World War II combating communism. But the conservatives completely ignored the democratic heresy, the other side of the utopian, universalist coin. Democracy, like communism, celebrates the triumph of the aggregate herd over the individual human soul. There is no room for the spirit in democracy, because the spirit of man cannot be democratized. There is a hierarchy of value in the spiritual realm. The savage races of color are not equal to the white Christ-bearing race, and within the white race the criminals and the Satanic liberals are not equal to the non-liberal, law-abiding whites. But in the natural realm, the doctrine of 'all are equal, but some are more equal' becomes the rule. Spiritual values are ignored in favor of bestial values. The colored savage is elevated to a God-like status while the white Christian is demonized. And the criminally insane liberals are given seats of power and influence. The true order of society is shattered and chaos and savagery reign supreme. Shakespeare describes this state of affairs in his play *Troilus and Cressida*:

In evil mixture to disorder wander,

What plagues and what portents! what mutiny!  
 What raging of the sea! shaking of earth!  
 Commotion in the winds! Frights, changes, horrors,  
 Divert and crack, rend and deracinate,  
 The unity and married calm of states  
 Quite from their fixture! O, when degree is shak'd,  
 Which is the ladder of all high designs,  
 The enterprise is sick! How could communities,  
 Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods in cities,  
 Peaceful commerce from dividable shores,  
 The primogenitive and due of birth,  
 Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
 But by degree, stand in authentic place?  
 Take but degree away, untune that string,  
 And hark what discord follows! Each thing meets  
 In mere oppugnancy. The bounded waters  
 Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,  
 And make a sop of all this solid globe.  
 Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
 And the rude son should strike his father dead.  
 Force should be right; or, rather, right and wrong,  
 Between whose endless jar justice resides,  
 Should lose their names, and so should justice too.  
 Then everything includes itself in power,  
 Power into will, will into appetite;  
 And appetite, an universal wolf,  
 So doubly seconded with will and power,  
 Must make perforce an universal prey,  
 And last eat up himself.

The democratized people of Europe and the other European satellite countries such as the United States need to look within at their inhumane, anti-Christian, democratic systems. A far greater threat to the European people than communism abroad is the European people's infatuated, blind devotion to democracy, a system of tyranny invented by the devil to destroy everything connected to His realm, the realm of the spirit. So long as that moral blindness prevails, so long as the European people treasure modern democratic Europe more than Christian Europe, the colored heathens, the Moslems, and the liberals will continue to rule the European nations. And they will continue to have one overriding, ruling principle: The white race must be eliminated.

Writers such as Kipling, Mallock, and Orwell, who warned the European people of the coming dystopias of liberalism, did not foresee just how pivotal the worship of the negro would be in those dystopias. Edmund Burke was remarkably aware of it, because he kept the entire French Revolution before his eyes. He saw what happened in Haiti as well as France. When democratic equality rather than Christian charity governs a nation, the savagery of the negro becomes a great good, and everything white and Christian becomes a great evil:

It will be an affront to your sagacity, to pursue this matter into all its details; suffice it to say, that if this Convention for analogous domestick Government is made, it immediately gives a right for the residence of a Consul (in all likelihood some Negro or Man of Colour) in every one of your Islands; a Regicide Ambassador in London will be at all your meetings of West India Merchants and Planters, and, in effect, in all our Colonial Councils...

How must we feel, if the pride and flower of the English Nobility and Gentry, who might escape the pestilential clime, and the devouring sword, should, if taken prisoners, be delivered over as rebel subjects, to be condemned as rebels, as traitors, as the vilest of all criminals, by tribunals formed of Maroon negro slaves, covered over with the blood of their masters, who were made free and organized into judges, for their robberies and murders?

-Burke in *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

How must we, the European people, feel? If we are Christian Europeans, we feel our hearts burn within us, and we vow to fight the satanic liberals and their murderous colored allies to the knife. If we are liberals, we feel a religious ecstasy when we see white blood shed by negro murderers. The blood bath of democracy will go on until the ending of the world unless the European remnant cries halt and fights for a non-democratic Europe dedicated to Christ the King.

The democratic way is so much more than elections. It is science, feminism, legalized abortion, sexual depravity, and negro worship. Above all it is negro worship. That is the lynchpin holding the whole naturalized world of democracy together. Once the negro was made the lodestar of democracy, the liberals were able to demonize anyone who attacked their democratic reign of terror. This is why halfway-house Christians, who want to criticize some aspect of liberalism,

such as legalized abortion, always make sure that they pay homage to the liberals' gods: "Abortion is bad because it hurts black people." They have a similar response to the Islamic invasion: "We are not racists, we simply oppose terrorism." On into the dark night of liberalism go the halfway-house Christians. "Thou shall have no other gods before me." Can you worship the democratic process, in which everything evil under the sun is countenanced, simply because the democratic process has been consecrated to the negro?

In the early stages of the democratic cancer, with the exceptions of Jacobin France and communist Russia, the European people's return to Baal occurred incrementally, but now the cancer is spreading rapidly. On a daily basis the condition of the European patient worsens. Our people have returned to Baal without a backward look, not even a wistful glance, at their Christian past. Dystopia is here and now; like the Philistines, it has come upon us. But at least Samson knew he had been seduced into a betrayal of his God and his people. He didn't think he had 'evolved' to a higher state of existence.

Recently on her birthday, my wife asked to see the movie *A Canterbury Tale* (1944). The movie, only tangentially connected to Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, is a lyrical masterpiece that connects us to the past, Britain's Christian past. I inwardly cringed when she asked to see the movie, because viewing a movie like that is the same as contemplating the life of your loved one immediately after their death. It is so painful. Over time the pain is lessened by the hope in the loved one's resurrection from the dead, but that initial encounter with that unwelcome visitor is unbelievably painful. So it is with the death of Christian Europe. I can't always endure the pain of Europe's demise. But we viewed the movie as a family, and I was glad we did. There was intense sorrow in seeing that which was lost, but in the movie itself there is the hope for the resurrection of the dead. If Christian Europe was once a reality, then Christian Europe still lives. Nothing connected to His realm, the realm of the spirit, ever dies. The Christ of the antique Europeans is our Christ. And our Christ, our Jesus, is the "grave where buried love doth live."

When I was a freshman in college, there was a student across the hallway in the dorm who worshipped the scientist Nicholas Tesla; his room was a memorial to Tesla. It was his contention that the government had suppressed Tesla's work because Tesla had discovered the secrets of the universe. I think Tesla still has his devoted band of followers who believe he knew the secrets of the universe. Isn't the devotion of that student, who of course was a white man, symptomatic of the decline of the European people? They have placed their faith in intelligence divorced from the heart of God. Is there any mystery greater than the mystery of the incarnation of the Son of God? That God should take on human form in order to reach human hearts is a mystery that makes all other mysteries mere dross. But we have left that mystery behind for our systems, built on the abstract theories of men who have rejected Christ. If we cling to that one great mystery and love Him, in and through those "dear old folk of long ago," He will vouchsafe to us a vision of His sacred Heart. That vision and that vision alone shall sustain us in our battle against the Babylonian armies of the liberals. +

---

### **In the Lion's Den - May 19, 2018**

My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before him innocency was found in me; and also before thee, O king, have I done no hurt.

Then was the king exceeding glad for him, and commanded that they should take Daniel up out of the den. So Daniel was taken up out of the den, and no manner of hurt was found upon him, because he believed in his God. —Daniel 6: 22-23

---

The liberals' tactical plan is crystal clear: Destroy the breeding ground for the plague and you kill the plague. And what is the plague? The plague is Christianity. The liberals, under Satan's guidance, have adopted a very effective policy; the attack on the European hearth fire has wiped out the Christian plague. The liberals' successful campaign against the Christian plague was aided by the Gnosticism of the 20th century conservatives. Those less-than-conservative conservatives were like unto a doctor that examines a patient who has the beginnings of gangrene and needs an operation to prevent the gangrene from spreading. But instead of operating, the doctor goes home and writes a scholarly paper about the dangers of gangrene, which he submits to a medical journal. Then the same doctor takes three weeks off from his duties to attend a vitally important conference where all sorts of important medical men meet to discuss the dangers of gangrene. Meanwhile, back on the farm, or in this case, back at the hospital, the patient dies.

The Christian faith is the patient who died, and he died because the Son of Man had no place to rest His head. In the name of an abstract, universalist God named 'diversity,' the liberals destroyed the breeding grounds of the Christian faith. That is the tragedy of Europe in the 20th and 21st centuries.

The mad-dog liberals destroyed the European hearth fire while the conservative-Gnostics held conferences. And the white grazers? They acquiesced to liberalism, because the leaders of their churches told them that liberalism was a natural

development of Christianity. By the time it had become glaringly apparent that liberalism was not compatible with Christianity, the European people had no heart left for Christ. He had been absent from their hearth fires for too long. Now, wither do they go? When the lost traveler stops his car and asks the farmer how to get to (fill in a generic town name), the farmer replies, "If I was going to \_\_\_\_\_, I wouldn't start from here." But we are here. We live in a brave new world – we live in Liberaldom. It is a world of unsurpassed evil whose rulers are determined to plunge us even deeper into the depths of hell. We can't continue on the path that our rulers in church and state have mapped out for us, because that path leads to the fiery pit. We can already smell the sulfur all around us. I suggest that we stop our descent and look up. At the top, outside that hellish pit is our racial hearth fire where He abides. We must fight the satanic principalities and powers of this world in order to return to our racial hearth fire. Is it so terrible to fight the principalities and powers of this world? I suppose it is so terrible if we cannot see the vision of Christ crucified, Christ risen that sustained our European ancestors in the day of battle. What would it take for the modern Europeans to see what they, the antique Europeans, saw? It would take a miracle. We find ourselves in the position of the rich man in the Gospel of Matthew: "And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of God." The apostles ask Christ, "Who then can be saved?" His reply: "With man this is impossible; but with God all things are possible."

The modern, scientized European has revised the Gospel parable: "It is necessary to place wealth in the hands of men like George Soros so they can create the Kingdom of God on earth."

"Who then can be saved?"

"All those who are smart enough to reject the Christian fairy tale and support nature and nature's God, the noble savage."

The shroud of liberalism has descended over the people of Europe. Our resurrection will come when we love our own again, in and through the Savior, who is Christ the Lord. Dostoyevsky, in the Grand Inquisitor scene from *The Brothers Karamazov*, confronts modern man's problem with God directly. The Grand Inquisitor accuses Christ of leaving man alone with his freedom. Christ promised to return, and He didn't return, which made it necessary for the Grand Inquisitor to set up a Church based on sounder and wiser principles than those bequeathed to us by Christ. In the new Christless Christianity, there would be no quixotic ravings from St. Paul: "The foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men." There will only be the good, solid, practical wisdom of this-world-only in the new church. But hasn't this new, rational church, propped up by the accumulated weight of scientific facts, been a disaster? Did Christ really leave us alone? He said He would leave us a Comforter. Perhaps it is the European people who have left Christ alone. The Comforter resides in hearts of flesh. When we left our European hearth fire to go whoring after foreign gods and clever systems, we lost the Comforter. And I do not think it is possible to make the Comforter return by diversifying our affections. I do think He will come to us if we love our own people with a greater passion than the passion of the liberals, who hate the white race with a satanic hatred that eventually will turn in upon them and destroy them. The ultimate end for the liberals will be the same as the end for Maleficent in Disney's *Sleeping Beauty*. The sword of truth will pierce their hearts, and they will join the devil in hell.

There is a common theme running through all the great stories of Christian Europe. Perhaps it is best exemplified in the opera *Hansel and Gretel* by Engelbert Humperdinck. At the last trump, in the twinkling of the eye, when Hansel and Gretel are about to be killed by the wicked witch, the witch herself is killed. The Father tells us after the destruction of the witch, "When hope seems nearly gone, God's relief to us is surely won." Don't all the classic stories of the West reenact Christ's crucifixion and His resurrection? It seemed, when the Roman soldiers nailed Christ to the cross, that Satan had triumphed over Christ. How could anyone looking at Him on the cross believe He was the victor and Satan the loser? But Christ was the victor – He rose from the dead on the third day! How could Satan have foreseen that? He knows all about the seven deadly sins, but can His satanic mind, devoid of a human heart, ever comprehend the charity of a God who would allow Himself to be crucified because of His love for His people? No, he cannot comprehend that miracle. But he can hate what he doesn't understand. And he has sought, through all the centuries, to instill his hatred of Christ into the minds and hearts of all mankind.

A pagan tries to propitiate his gods with sacrifice. A Christian loves Christ because He became the sacrificial lamb in order to free His people from sin and death. That is the incredible difference between our faith in Christ and the liberals' faith in the heathen gods of color. We must recognize what the liberals have done: They have returned to heathen gods who must be propitiated with human sacrifice. And they have chosen to offer up the white race for sacrifice to their colored gods. For how long will white people consent to be the sacrificial victims on the altars consecrated to the liberals' heathen gods?

The liberals' unremitting attack on the white race must be met with an unremitting attack on the liberals. Their merciless religion of sacrifice without mercy can no longer be countenanced. The slaughter of the babies still in the womb, the murder of handicapped children such as Alfie Evans, the ongoing slaughter of white people, the demonization of

everything white and Christian, the legalization of sexual depravity, and the worship of the sacred negro instead of the living God are all part and parcel of the liberals' religion.

Why has there been no white resistance to liberalism? There has been no resistance because Europeans do not believe the Christian fairy tale any longer. Because they are too smart to believe in fairy tales, they doubt Christ's resurrection from the dead. And if Christ be not risen, then Satan triumphed over Christ, and a man should be cognizant of that fact when he makes any decisions contrary to the principalities and powers of this world. It's all right to adhere to Christianity when the powers of this world adhere to it, but when the powers of this world adhere to the anti-gospel of Satan, it is best to follow the anti-gospel of Satan. That is the logic of men and women who have lost their faith in Christ. "Let us be accommodating, let us be practical, let us obey the powers that be; so it is written, so it shall be."

South Africa is a microcosm of our world; it is our past and our future. The white South Africans walked on water because of their faith in Jesus Christ. They created, in the midst of Babylon, a civilization worthy of the best nations in Europe. But as their faith died, they sank into the sea of diversity. Now they are being systematically exterminated, and the rulers of the Western nations, who know what is happening, ignore the slaughter, because the white South Africans must be punished for the original sin of their ancestors. And what was their original sin? They championed Christ in the midst of heathendom and brought mercy and charity to a world that was devoid of charity and mercy. For this reason they are being slaughtered. And for that reason, and that reason alone, every white male, in every white nation has been marked for death. The white females may escape death if they consent to be the concubines of the heathens of color.

Charity does indeed begin at home. But I would qualify that statement. There is no charity outside of a European home, because it is only the European people who took Christ, the source of all true charity, into their homes. No plea for mercy will pierce the liberals' hearts. They must destroy the breeding grounds for the Christian plague, which is and always shall be the European hearth fire. In the absence of a faith in Him who has conquered the world, the white grazers will continue to appease the liberals by propitiating the liberals' gods. But this will not save the white grazers. Only faith, the faith of Daniel and St. Paul, can stop the slaughter of the white race. If we return to our European hearth fire and defend it, we will bring the wrath of the liberals down upon us. But the liberals' wrath is not an invincible force. It only appears invincible to men and women who have lost their faith. Jonah discovered, after spending three days and nights in the belly of the whale, that it was better to do God's will than to live a craven, cowardly life hiding from God. If we continue to propitiate the liberals and their gods, we will discover that no sacrifice is enough. The liberals and their colored gods cannot be propitiated: The white race is guilty, no sacrifice will ever cleanse them of the sin of whiteness. Let us return home to our European hearth fire, where the one true God resides, the God who was "wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed." +

---

### **The Precious Cornerstone - May 12, 2018**

Wherefore hear the word of the LORD, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place. -Isaiah 28: 14-17

---

During World War II, Coventry suffered the greatest damage from the German bombing in England. The pictures of the city right after the war ended are a depressing sight, just as the pictures of London during the war are a depressing sight. But in both cases, Coventry after the war and London during the war, one does not feel a sense of despair when viewing the bombed out cities. Far from it – one feels spiritually fortified, because amidst the rubble, the British people, the white British people, were going about the business of rebuilding their nation, which at that time was still a nation bound together by the British people's common faith and their common race. If you look at the major cities of Britain now you see cities much more devastated than the war-torn cities of the 1940s; you see cities inhabited by people who have lost their souls, because they have no racial or religious identity. And the two are linked. You cannot despise your own kind in the name of a universal love for all mankind, and still maintain the heart and soul that makes a man a human being rather than an inhuman caricature of a human being. And you can't love a God who enters human hearts if you have decided to deny your humanity by renouncing all ties to your kith and kin. Men without a racial hearth fire must eschew Christ the Lord and embrace a cosmic universalist Christ who can only be revealed to men through mind-forged theories about God. But such a God, a man-made abstraction, is not God. Men can no more love a theory of God than they can love a theory of family. They must love their own, their fathers and mothers, their sisters and brothers, and their wives and children. Those are the 'mysterious human relationships' that connect us to the living God, and all those relationships are part of our racial identity, which the liberals have systematically set out to destroy.

The conservatives of the 20th century, men such as Weaver and Kirk, who are now called paleo-conservatives, were not conservatives. They were not conservative because they did not want to conserve that which was essential to conserve, their own people, the white Christ-bearing race. There is no doubt that Weaver's and Kirk's theories about government were superior to the theories of their more liberal contemporaries, but still their 'conservatism' is insufficient. If life is all theory, things go a lot more smoothly for the intellectual. He merely pulls an abstraction called 'the people' out of the air and then proceeds to show how his theory can serve 'the people' better than another man's theory. But what if there is no such thing as a generic people? What if people are individuals whose souls are connected to their racial identities? If that is the case, the conservatives' systems are thin air, they are the insubstantial pageant that Prospero spoke of.

Trump recently gave a speech about Iran, in which he delineated the reasons why he was canceling Obama's treaty with Iran. I have no problem with the cancellation of the treaty; however, nothing of any value will come from the cancellation, because Trump is proceeding according to a false premise. He is presuming that the United States is a nation. If we were a nation, it would follow that our President should protect our nation, but a nation is faith and race. Is there any American official who has proposed that we deal with our internal enemies, the barbarians of color and the liberals, before we deal with our alleged enemies on foreign soil? We should be a nation first, then we should act to protect our nation. Why should I, or any white European, want to fight Iranians over there if my government refuses to expel Moslems, blacks, Mexicans, and liberals over here?

No liberal is ever going to consent to do what is necessary to protect the European people, because what is necessary is the expulsion of the colored races from the white lands. Such a policy runs counter to what the liberals passionately hope for – the destruction of the white race and the triumph of the colored heathen. The conservatives of the 20th century could not halt the destruction of the white race, because they refused to admit that a man's race is part of his soul; it gives his soul strength and substance and prevents him from fading into spiritual oblivion. The triumph of the mad-dog liberals and the colored barbarians in the 21st century has shown us the tragedy of replacing white pietas with theories, both liberal and conservative, about the generic people.

The mad-dog liberal is separated from the conservative-liberal on one point: The mad-dog liberal wants white people excluded from the utopian future while the conservative-liberal wants white people, providing they are not racist, to be part of the great future in store for the human race. In practical terms the modern conservatives and the mad-dog liberals are one, because if you deprive white people of their pietas you have spiritually murdered them, regardless of your theoretical support for their survival as members of the generic human race.

The 20th century produced very few genuine conservatives, men who were not ashamed to fight for the survival of their own kith and kin. Enoch Powell and Anthony Jacob were notable exceptions to the wholesale treachery of the rest of the white intelligentsia. And it was treachery, because it was not, as Jacob pointed out, the advance of the colored heathens that was destroying the white race, it was the white liberals' determination to permit the colored encroachment into the white lands that was destroying the white race:

It is remarkable how the invincible African Giant quakes in his big bare feet at the prospect of meeting with a dose of his own medicine. It is no wonder that Sir Roy dismissed this supposed African invincibility in one contemptuous word – Poppycok! But it is thought in the West that loud noises and large-scale hooliganism denote powerfulness. Because African chaos is widespread it is therefore irresistible. Because Englishmen hate scenes and Africans cannot go for five minutes without scenes, therefore the Africans are irresistibly strong in their convictions. Yet we might well ask what Africans have ever done in a positive sense, apart from killing and destroying and disrupting. They cannot make a Federation but they can break one up. They cannot make motorcars but they can throw stones at them. They cannot make railways but they can pull up the lines. They cannot construct industries but they can paralyse them with strikes. They cannot erect buildings but they can set fire to them. They cannot frame constitutions but they can tear them up. Precisely because they cannot make anything at all apart from a rumpus, they have to prove how "terrible" a people they are by smashing everything in sight. The white man's marvels of constructive ingenuity are a constant affront to their self-esteem. Yet it is to these sub-people that the West is surrendering – nay, has surrendered. Their mental derangement is made all the worse, their paranoia all the more intensified, by the ludicrous ease with which they are triumphing over advanced white peoples at every juncture. How can we hope to earn their respect, or their fear (the words mean the same in their languages), when we are propounding the Communist philosophy that we are no better than they? How, in other words, can we earn their necessary respect when we have been taught to lose respect for ourselves – to despise ourselves and simperingly reject the necessity of our being the masters? How, indeed, can we sink any lower than we are except by obligingly going six feet under? – *White Man, Think Again!*

Before you simply cry 'racism' after reading that last statement, stop for a moment and tell me what is untruthful in the statement. What do blacks bring to white civilization but violence and mayhem? Is London a better city now that it is dominated by the colored heathen? Is any city in Europe, the United States, Australia, New Zealand, or Canada better off now that they are diverse? And yet the rush for diversity is the passion driving the ruling elites of the European nations. Those are indeed prophetic words of Sir Anthony Jacob (I have designated him a Knight of the Realm): "How indeed, can we sink any lower than we are except by obligingly going six feet under?" It has become abundantly clear, 53 years after

those prophetic words were written, that that is exactly what the liberals intended to do, to put the entire white race six feet under.

I do not blame a non-liberal white person who has money if he moves to another section of his own country or to another country entirely in order to avoid diversity. I do blame a rich white liberal, however, who moves away from the colored heathens. The liberals should be forced to face the consequences of their own treachery. Of course they never are, because they are the rulers of Liberaldom. But the blood-red tide of color has been loosed on the European people, and no European nation is safe so long as the European people are under the influence of a false Aslan who tells us that the love of God and the love of the colored heathen are one and the same thing.

Some conservative-liberals within the confines of Western Europe have been willing to make some tepid, negative remarks about the Moslem invasion. And some government officials in Eastern Europe have opposed the Moslem invasion of their nations. But a critique of Islam is not enough. No European leader, West or East, has been willing to state unequivocally that Europe must be white and Christian. Some Europeans have been willing to criticize Islam because they can justify their criticism with the statement, "I am not racist – Islam is not a race, it is a religion." But the liberals who call European opponents of Islam racist are fundamentally correct. Islam is a religion formed for the dark races to give structure and purpose to their onslaught on the white Christ-bearing race. Some apostate whites have embraced Islam, but is Islam really the faith of the European people? Can Islam ever be the faith of any people other than the people of the darker races who prefer sacrifice to mercy? The colored heathen fights so he can conquer and be merciless. The Christian white fights for mercy's sake and then he extends mercy. But mercy is only seen as strength to another white man. When Alfred conquered the Danes and extended mercy to them, their leader, Guthrum, was so impressed that he converted to the Christian faith. (1) And the Christian faith, in those "dark ages," meant something. A pagan warrior such as Scott's Harold the Dauntless, who bent his knee to Christ, remained a man still, but his love of kith and kin was purified, because it was consecrated to the Savior, who is at once our Lord and our kinsman.

God decided to "destroy man" when He saw that the daughters of men were sleeping with demonic angels. We can dismiss God's obsession with bloodlines in two ways. First, we can dismiss the Old Testament stories as mere fairy tales. Secondly, we can say that bloodlines were only important until Christ became man; after that we all became one universal race of mankind. The second reason might hold some weight if the Gospel of Christ were passed down from mind to mind. Then the great idea of a universal people with one universal abstract God would hold sway. Is, and was, the faith passed on in that way? The various churchmen have said so, but the Gospels tell us a different story. Faith in Christ was passed on from heart to heart. It was the apostles who loved much who told us of Christ. The Word was made flesh in loving hearts and passed on from one generation to the next. Which brings us back to our racial hearth fire. Can we love God without a deep and abiding love for our own kind? We can't love in the abstract, we must love a particular people and a particular God. Why, if bloodlines mean nothing, are the liberals, who are Satan's minions, so obsessed with destroying the Europeans' bloodlines? Why are they obsessed with creating a mongrel race of inhuman savages without faith, hope, and charity?

Much more is at stake in the race war than was ever at stake in any of the previous European wars. Bombed out cities can be replaced, but the people who built those cities cannot be replaced. Robert E. Lee refused the command of the Union troops because he refused to place his sword at the service of the enemies of his own people. That is the spirit that needs to be rekindled in the European people. If we don't love our own, how can we love the God who enters human hearts? We can't. And that is the underlying reason for the liberals' betrayal of their own people. They have hardened their hearts against the light of the world, so they must kill that light in the hearts of others. "Destroy the European hearth fire and the light will die," is the liberals' credo. I can only speak for myself. I will stay by the European hearth fire, because outside of that hearth fire there is no warmth, no love, no honor, no God. +

---

(1) "The ceremony of baptism was performed at Wedmore, a royal residence which had probably escaped the fate of Chippenham, and still contained a church. Here Guthrum and his thirty nobles were sworn in, the soldiers of a greater than Woden, and the white linen cloth, the sign of their new faith, was bound round their heads. Alfred himself was godfather to the Viking, giving him the Christian name of Athelstan; and the chrism-loosing, or unbinding of the sacramental cloths, was performed on the eighth day by Ethelnoth, the faithful Alderman of Somersetshire." – *Life of Alfred the Great* by Thomas Hughes

Of course the key to Guthrum's conversion was his white soul. He was able to see moral goodness in a great warrior who extended mercy. Alfred was a human link to the God of all true heroes.

---

## **The Demons of Europe - May 5, 2018**

And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many

swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts. – Matthew 8: 28-34

---

Hell is empty, And all the devils are here. – *The Tempest*

---

Christ cast out the devils from the two demonically possessed men, and the people of the Gergesenes asked Him to depart from their coasts. Apparently they preferred to live with demons rather than Christ, but we can't single out the people of the Gergesenes as a demonic people separate from the rest of mankind. We can't do that because Christ was not only rejected by His own people and the Gergesenes, He was also rejected by the people of every nation of the world. Many individuals saw with their hearts and believed, but most, in the main, raged against the light of the world and clung to their Babylonian night.

There was one exception to the general curse. This is something we must come to terms with. Standing on Mt. Utopia, you may condemn them for their sins, which are undeniably scarlet, but after all the condemnations are made, there still remains one startling, magnificent, unalterable truth – the European people, and only the European people, created a civilization based on their love of the God-Man, Jesus Christ.

Tragically, we must also come to grips with a second unalterable truth – the European people, with a few exceptions, have returned to the Babylon night of paganism. By the term 'unalterable truth' I mean we cannot alter the fact that the Europeans have returned to Baal. I do not say that their return is necessarily permanent; it is not written that we must remain chained to the rock of Prometheus with the demonic minions of Satan pecking at our entrails. If we grasp the two truths, that the European people created a civilization with Jesus Christ at its center and that they have now abandoned that Christ-centered civilization, we can climb out of hell and see His cross before our eyes instead of Satan's kingdom of eternal night.

Satan, in a perverse imitation of the parable of the lost sheep, does not concern himself with the colored races. They are not lost, he has them in his fold. But he is very concerned about the European people. For years they were 'lost'; they belonged to the Good Shepherd. Of course in Satan's eyes, the Good Shepherd is not the good shepherd, He is evil. In order to separate the Europeans from Christ, Satan had to use the same subtlety he used in the Garden of Eden. He had to appeal to the Europeans' intelligence. He didn't bid them deny Christ, instead he told them to adjust their thinking about God. He asked them to be more intellectual.

The devil tells us we can know God by the contemplation of the natural world. And when we know the natural world we will know God, we will have become righteous. But the Europeans' newly acquired righteousness, acquired during the last century, is not the righteousness of faith; it does not come from the love of the Suffering Servant, it comes from the father of lies who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

The righteousness that is grounded in the law of a man-made god is the essence of modern Europe. There always were individuals such as the fanatical Covenanter John Balfour of Burley, depicted in Scott's *Old Mortality*, who tried to impose their Christless faith on the European people, but they were not successful until the 20th century. The distant drummers, the men with the righteousness of Satan, are no longer distant drummers, they are the rulers of Liberalism. We now live in a world dominated by a righteous liberalism separated from the love of Christ as true God and true man. That post-Christian zeal is the dynamic driving the liberals. Every evil under the sun is given divine sanction under the guise of liberal righteousness, but it is the righteousness of Satan.

The Me Too movement is a recent example of how the devil works his will on the European people who have scientized Christ out of existence. Ostensibly the movement is about protecting women from sexual assault, but that is not the real reason for the movement. The intent of the movement is to destroy the last vestiges of the Christian family by solidifying the rule of the Lady Macbeths of feminism. How can a movement grounded in feminism, the most demonic ideology ever conceived, really accomplish anything to the good? Are the women in control of the movement really concerned about the sexual assault of women? Of course not. If they were, they would resist the colorization and the Islamization of the Western world because in those cultures rape is meritorious. Instead the feminists' focus is on white males and outmoded black males, such as Cosby, who dally with women who want to be on television and in motion pictures. (1) Clearly there is something sinister about a movement that does the exact opposite of what its proponents claim is the movements' purpose. The feminists' unrelenting attack on the white male, which is what the Me Too movement is really about, will help ensure that the only civilization on the face of the earth that actually did protect women from sexual assault will never



rise again. The white male should be encouraged to pick up the chivalrous mantle of his European ancestors, but instead, Church and State have joined with the feminists to stamp out the last remaining remnants of white chivalry.

Any movement, such as the feminist movement, which starts out with a 'this world only,' materialist view of man is from the devil no matter how high-flown the rhetoric used in support of the movement. The French Revolution was supposed to be about liberty, equality, and fraternity while in reality it was about the destruction of Christian Europe. So it was with the American experiment in democracy and Russian communism. Despite their 'rights of man' rhetoric, those revolutions were revolutions celebrating the demise of Christian Europe. And in the 20th century the Civil Rights movement became a tool of the Rousseauian liberals. Under the guise of the 'equality and universal brotherhood of mankind' the liberals dethroned Christ and set up the noble savage as Lord of Europe.

In all of his anti-European gambits, the devil has been very careful to cloak his demonism with some covering from the Christian era of the European people, because of their Christian past. They have lost the righteousness that stems from faith in Christ, but they have retained the desire to be righteous as a kind of hangover from their Christian past, and this is why the Christian churches that celebrate righteousness without faith have become so important as a prop and support of liberalism. They allow the European people to profess Christianity while severing all ties to the Son of God. It's quite significant that the Book of Revelation is used by the modern Christians as an astrology chart revealing the secret of the ending of the world. It is viewed that way despite our Lord's statement: "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the father."

What Christ does stress in the Book of Revelation is that faith in Christ cannot be, it must not be, blended with any other faith. We live in the most demonic era in history because we, as a people, have blended Christ with liberalism. Which means a European can worship the negro and still be a Christian, he can support the feminists and still be a Christian, he can support the Moslems and still be a Christian, and he can support the deification of the unrepentant, unconverted Jew and still be a Christian. The only thing the modern European cannot be is a Christian who believes that Christ is "the beginning and the end, the first and the last."

When I was a freshman in college, I read Karl Jung's book *Modern Man in Search of a Soul*. I started reading the book with great hopes, because I was a modern man in search of a soul. But when I completed the book, I was filled with rage. There was nothing in the book that a man could take hold of and say, "By this faith I shall live and die." Jungian psychology is representative of modern Christianity: it is all things to all people, but a faith that is all things to all people is not a faith. Christ is either the Son of God who redeemed us from sin and death or else He is nothing at all. He can't be the black Christ, the cosmic Christ, or any other Christ but the Christ whom the European people once embraced as their Lord and Savior.

Is it impossible to rekindle the faith that motivated the Europeans who saw, in Christ, a greater God than Odin? Greater because He had Odin's courage and something else – He had charity, that undefinable essence that is the first and finest attribute of God. And we, as His people, show ourselves "most like God" when we have that charity of honor. Is it not treasonable, is it not unconscionable that the people who once believed in the Suffering Servant, whose divine charity sustains the world, have renounced Him and embraced the gods of liberalism? The modern intellectualized Europeans proudly proclaim that they are too smart to bend their knees to the fairy tale, provincial God of old Europe. But every man bends his knee to some god. If not the European Christ, it will be the negro, or Allah, or science, or some combination of all the nature gods. We will have all, we will have the European Christ, or we will have nothing. The shadow of liberalism, which is the shade of spiritual oblivion, can be lifted from Europe. But it cannot be lifted by the democratic process or any other process stemming from liberalism. We need a miracle, we need the type of miracle that took place when the followers of Odin bent their knees to Christ. Are we greater than they were? Only if knowledge of what can be seen in a microscope constitutes greatness. But if moral vision, the intuitive grasp of things unseen by the material eye, is greatness, then the modern Europeans are spiritual dwarfs and the first European Christians were giants. We will not regret it if we turn from the dwarfs of modern Europe and follow in the train of the spiritual giants of old Europe. But we will regret it for all eternity if we stay with the spiritual dwarfs of modern Europe. "Thus is our faith tested." +

---

(1) Cosby is not being tried for sexually assaulting women. The liberals do not care about the sexual assault of or the murder of white women. Ask Channon Christian about that. Cosby was tried and convicted because liberals prey upon each other like monsters from the deep. Cosby didn't "evolve"; he represented the old liberalism which stated the black man was just a pigmented white man. That image of the black man, which is a lie, comforted white people. It was a religious duty of white middle class Christians of the 1960s to listen to Cosby's albums and later to watch him on television. But the new image of the black man is not that of a pigmented white man, he is now the deified black who must be welcomed as the god who will destroy whiteness. Cosby outlived his time and has been discarded by the new advanced liberals presiding over Babylonian Europe. Ever onward to hell, is their battle cry.

---

## The Stone Which the Builders Rejected - April 28, 2018

Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. – Matthew 21: 42-44

---

"I beg your pardon," said the Mole, pulling himself together with an effort. "You must think me very rude; but all this is so new to me. So—this—is—a—River!"

"The River," corrected the Rat.

"And you really live by the river? What a jolly life!"

"By it and with it and on it and in it," said the Rat. "It's brother and sister to me, and aunts, and company, and food and drink, and (naturally) washing. It's my world, and I don't want any other. What it hasn't got is not worth having, and what it doesn't know is not worth knowing.

– *The Wind in the Willows*

---

There are two utopian branches of liberalism at work in the European nations. The first is the utopianism of the Christian theologians, both clerical and lay. They claim that the antique Europeans were insufficiently Christian, therefore it is necessary to denounce them and build a new Christian world devoid of the racism, sexism, and the general un-Christian behavior of the antique Europeans. The Christian utopians are constantly referencing the sins of the antique Europeans, while ignoring the sins of the liberals who they are allied with in their condemnation of the antique Europeans. Hilaire Belloc is representative of the utopian Christians. He supported the Jacobins because, in his judgement, the French aristocrats were insufficiently Catholic, therefore they needed to be purged. But were the Jacobins worthy representatives of the new purer Christianity? So it always is with the utopian Christians. They condemn the impure, imperfect Christianity of their ancestors while calling for a new and better Christianity of the future. Does that future ever come? The 'impure' Europe of the past seems like paradise compared to the new Europe that the utopian Christians and their secular counterparts have built.

The other branch of utopianism is the secular branch, the Robespierre liberals. They want to do away with Christianity entirely and create a new world based on nature and nature's god, the noble savage. At present the secular utopians have more power than the Christian utopians. No Christian utopian has any power independent of his secular masters. When he speaks in support of secular utopians, he is allowed to speak without condemnation. In fact, he is highly praised. Both Eleanor Clift and Al Gore speak of Pope Francis in laudatory terms. There are disagreements between the Christian utopians and the secular utopians when the Christian utopian speaks out against a liberal sacred cow, such as legalized abortion – he is lumped in with the older, bad Europeans of the past. But despite disagreements about what constitutes utopia, the Christian utopian always sides with the secular liberals against the non-utopian Europeans, because his heart belongs to liberalism.

It is clear that the Christian utopian has lost his faith in Christ as the Son of God, just as the secular utopian has lost his faith in Christ as the Son of God. They only disagree about the club-ability of Christ. The Christian utopians believe He can become a lesser god in a pantheon of nature gods, while the secular utopians would prefer to do without Him. They are of one accord though on that which is essential – they both have no faith in the Christ whom the antique Europeans believed in. The Christian utopians do not think that is anything to worry about, because they will give us a new, cosmic Christ, shorn of all the time-bound and culture-bound European trappings. But the new, non-European Christ seems to be a very pedestrian, liberal fellow, a combination of Gandhi and Nelson Mandela. Is the new Christ our Lord and Savior? Of course not, the Christian utopians tell us, He is something much better than Christ the Lord, He is Christ the Facilitator, who teaches us to protect the environment and to revere the noble savages of color.

The secular utopian also tells us that we needn't worry about losing our faith in the Christ of old Europe. Now that the European fairy tale is dead, we can conquer racism, sexism, and every other prejudice stemming from the Christian faith, in order to build heaven on earth. "We have got to get back to the garden." But what garden are the utopians taking us to? It is the garden after the fall, a garden poisoned by Satan and infected with the stink of death. Christ redeemed that garden with His blood. We can't be redeemed by the secular utopians or their 'Christian' fellow travelers on the road to utopia. That road leads to hell.

There is no sadder, tragic scene in the letters of St. Paul than that in which he writes about in Romans' chapter 9. He loves his people, but he is faced with the fact that despite the prophets, despite Christ's life, death, and resurrection, they have no faith.

And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha. What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith. But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone; As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence; and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. –Romans 9: 29-33

Haven't we, the European people, become like unto the Jews who followed after the righteousness of the law without faith in Him who is the source of all righteous law? Throughout organized Christian Jewry, the various churches have enthroned either one Caiaphas, or a cabal of Caiaphases, to hand out the laws of righteousness without regard for faith in Christ. It is better, the Christian Caiaphases tell us, that our faith in Christ the Lord should perish so that the new faith and the new people can flourish. But the new faith is a very old faith; it is faith in Baal with its accompanying celebration of the image of the beast in man and the denial of the image of God in man. Can we live with such a faith? No, we cannot. And modern Europe is the proof that we cannot. Moslems and black heathens rape and murder with impunity. The slaughter of the innocents has been given state sanction, and every perversion condemned in Christian Europe has the protection of our law courts. Is this utopia? The European people's faith in a particular God, one Jesus Christ, sustained them for centuries prior to the advent of the new utopian faith of the purveyors of modernity. I ask the same question that St. Paul asked: Why, after hearing the testimony of the prophets, the apostles, St. Paul, and our European ancestors concerning the miracle of Christ crucified and Christ risen, have we rejected Christ and returned to the worship of nature and nature's gods?

The prophets, Christ, St. Paul, and the European poets are of one accord regarding the reason that one individual or a whole people reject the grace of God: It is the hardened heart. The intellectuals in church and state hardened their hearts against the living God, and the European people have followed in their train. The constant, unremitting condemnation of white racism is the devil's way of keeping his kingdom in order. So long as white people regard their natural affection for their kith and kin as something evil, they will not have the heart to respond to the God who enters human hearts. And a people without a heartfelt faith are not a people, they are a herd of grazing cattle waiting to be slaughtered.

Chateaubriand was a dilettante, a philosophical speculator, before the French Revolution, but when the Jacobins murdered his family he returned to his royalist and Christian roots. As he described it: "I wept and I believed." Chateaubriand still had a heart of flesh. His white pietas brought him back. Is it now too late for the European people? Do they no longer, like LeFanu's Uncle Silas, have the heart for the religion of the God-Man?

Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zigzags and parallels. The idea of marrying me to his son by fair means, then by foul, and, when that wicked chance was gone, then the design of seizing all by murder, supervened. I dare say that Uncle Silas thought for a while that he was a righteous man. He wished to have heaven and to escape hell, if there were such places. But there were other things whose existence was not speculative, of which some he coveted, and some he dreaded more, and temptation came. 'Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble, every man's work shall be made manifest; for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.' There comes with old age a time when the heart is no longer fusible or malleable, and must retain the form in which it has cooled down. 'He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; he which is filthy, let him be filthy still.' – *Uncle Silas*

The European people have embraced the religion of Uncle Silas, which is the religion of the hardened heart, the same religion as Caiaphas and his followers who sought righteousness without faith. Unless we consciously go back to our Christian childhood, because our hearts yearn for that which is lost – our filial connection to the living God – we will not only die out as a distinct people, but we will also fail to regain our 'eternal jewel.' Can a people or an individual function without a soul? The modern utopians tell us we can, but again, I bid you look at modern Europe. Is there anything in this beast-in-man culture that can sustain life?

If the European people are to reclaim their souls, they cannot have anything to do with the Christian utopians or the secular utopians, because both branches of the utopian railway lead to a future devoid of faith, hope, and charity. Is there any indication that the Europeans desire to leave the flesh pots of Babylon for old Europe? No, there is not, but when people have been raised in darkness without ever seeing any light, how can they choose the light over the darkness?

Spiritual virility, the type of spiritual virility that believeth all things and hopeth all things, comes from a love that is enkindled at our racial hearth fire. Without a racial hearth fire, there can be no spiritual virility, there can only be sterile

utopian systems that lead to darkness. Robert Louis Stevenson made a conscious attempt to recapture his soul by making a spiritual return to his white, Christian childhood. He was successful. In the midst of mortal pain, seconds away from death, he penned the last verses of his masterpiece:

The world is so full of a number of things,  
I'm sure we should all be as happy as kings.

Throughout *A Child's Garden of Verses*, Stevenson celebrates the poetic of the European hearth fire, a hearth fire that was unique, because it was connected to Christ, the God with the heart of flesh. It is not a little thing to have once been connected, through your racial hearth fire, to the living God. And it was not a little thing, it was a tragedy, when that connection was severed so the European people could become part of the new Babylon, a kingdom of hell on earth devoid of the faith that makes life on this earth bearable.

I do not acknowledge the new Europe. I admit that it exists, but I do not acknowledge any aspect of the new Europe as a part of Europe. Only eternal Europe is real. If the European people acknowledge any part of the new Europe, they have ceased to be Europeans. It is far better to live as an isolated, marginalized, antique European than to live in the darkness of Babylonian Europe. The love that passeth the understanding of the utopian mind can still enter human hearts gathered around a European hearth fire. It is our task, we few, we Europeans, to stay true to the European hearth fire so the righteousness that stems from faith in Christ shall not perish from the earth. We shall not be ashamed of the European Christ. He is not a stumbling block – far from it – He is our only hope. +

---

### **In the Land of the Stranger - April 21, 2018**

And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers, Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. –Acts 28: 25-27

---

It was not the Greeks en masse who mocked Paul and called him a babblers. Many of the Greeks outside of Athens and even some Athenians (Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them) also “clave unto St. Paul” and believed. But on the whole the Athenians could not accept St. Paul’s belief in Christ’s resurrection from the dead. And in the Acts of the Apostles is written the whole history of the European people, their rise and their fall.

When St. Paul went to Athens, his mortal enemies, the Jews, followed him there. Their hatred of him stemmed from his uncompromising, unremitting preaching of Christ crucified, Christ risen:

And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks. And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ. And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles. -Acts 18: 4-6

The Athenians who rejected St. Paul’s faith in Christ did not hate him as the Jews hated him. They, after all, were philosophers – they neither loved nor hated, they simply liked to sit around and indulge their intellectual curiosity. “For all the Athenians and strangers which were there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.” Paul got nowhere with those philosophical speculators.

As we look at our people’s history we see those two forces, the Jews who hate the Savior, and the philosophical speculators who love debate, continually at work undermining the European people’s faith in Christ. When the Europeans kept those two forces in check (for you can never completely eliminate them), they were a people who bore witness to the light of the world. Now that the Jews, who hate the light, and the philosophical speculators hold sway, there is no light in Europe, and the European people have become Undines – they have lost their souls.

The philosophical speculators in the church, the theologians who wanted to make Christianity into a respectable philosophy they needn’t be ashamed of, spawned the philosophical speculators in society, the Voltaires and the Rousseaus. When that spirit of philosophical speculation takes hold, when those who believe in the resurrection of the dead are seen as babblers and purveyors of fairy tales, the people doubt Christ and start to become like unto the Jews who hate Him. This is the dramatic transformation that took place in Europe. When the scoffers, the Voltaires, the Shaws, and the Rousseaus, made Christianity a thing of ridicule, the formerly Christian people became like unto the Jews. They began to hate Christ and his followers. If Christ be not risen then the Christian religion is a sin against nature. Flying the flag of the

natural savage, the Judaized European, the liberal, attacks the European people with a religious zeal that is grounded in the hatred of the living God, who is Christ the Lord. The white race will always be the object of the Judaized liberals' hatred because the white race formed a covenant with the Suffering Servant. They can announce to the world that they have broken that covenant, they can claim that Christianity and liberalism are one, but that will avail them nothing. Nothing can change the fact that the white race saw beauty on the cross and made the Christ story their story. They simply can't be trusted, so they must be destroyed.

The neo-pagans who have made the exterior Jew the main problem do not understand the European people's journey from darkness to light and then back to darkness. Satan was the great scoffer, he debunked the fairy tale of God's filial connection to Adam and Eve. He told Adam and Eve that the stupid story of the forbidden fruit was just that – a stupid story: "Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods..." But who was the liar, Satan or the Lord God? The devil will always tell us honest trifles to betray us in deepest consequence. Death came into the world when Adam and Eve took the devil's word over God's word. And we have reenacted that original sin by allowing the Athenians, the Voltaires, and the Rousseaus ("Mock on, Voltaire, Rousseau, Mock on!") to place St. Paul's vision of the risen Lord in the unscientific world of unreality, while placing the Rousseauian vision of a natural world cleansed of unnatural Christian Europeans at the center of Europe. The "naturalism" of the philosophical speculators always metamorphoses into the hatred of the light. The Christian believes that Christ restored us to our true natures; we were not born to die. But if Christ be not risen, as the philosophical speculators tell us, then He is the great destroyer, He is the one great obstacle to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. We can't dance around the throne of the noble black savage if Christ, not nature, is the one true God. That is the real war we are fighting, or should I say that is the war the Europeans should be fighting? We should take up the discarded sword of the European people, which is the cross of Christ, and assert the truth of His story over the mocking ridicule of the philosophers and the zealous hatred of the liberals. And let us not be deceived by the internecine warfare between various camps of liberals, whether they are neo-pagans who mock "gentle Jesus," Christian fusionists who worship Israel, Roman Catholics who worship the natural savage, or mad-dog liberals who hate with the passion of Shylock, they are all of one accord on that which is essential: They hate the antique Europeans who placed Christ at the center of their culture. How can we be a people again if we deny our parentage? We, the European people, were born of Him. Everything else the European people did prior to their acceptance of Christ was only significant to the extent it helped prepare them to receive their King.

And they were prepared, because they, unlike the philosophers and the Jews, were able to love a God of mercy who did not come in the form of an earthly king but in the form of a suffering servant. When the judgment of nations takes place, it is the Europeans' espousal of the God who asked for mercy rather than sacrifice that will distinguish them from all the other nations. Why do the modern Undines, the soulless Europeans, stand with the heathen gods who require sacrifice and have no place for mercy?

Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. - Psalms 2: 1-3

They stand with them, because they believe the lies of the devil who tells us that the natural world, the world we can see and touch, is the whole world. We need only turn to the gods of the natural world in order to find the peace and fulfillment that we could never find with the Christ of old Europe. That is the liberals' party line.

Christ the Lord is no longer a living reality to the people of Europe. He is no longer the God above nature who redeems us from sin and death, He is the great facilitator of the nature gods. He helps us to fight racism, which is white pietas, and enjoins us to think of Him as the God of liberalism. But is our Lord the lap dog of the liberals? No, He is not. Nor should we be the lap dogs of the liberals just because we are afraid of being called racist, sexist, or Islamophobic. So long as we are only concerned with showing the liberals that faith in Christ is compatible with liberalism, we are sounding brass and tinkling cymbals. We are nothing at all.

To live in exile estranged from your people and your homeland is a terrible thing. But it is far more terrible to make peace with the invaders who have killed your people and despoiled your homeland. And that is precisely what the modern anti-Europeans such as Pope Francis and Angela Merkel have done. They have renounced their people and made peace with the invaders. Better to live in exile within the confines of the new Babylon, than to make peace with those who have made the hatred of the white, Christ-bearing race their sole religion.

In grade school we used to sing a song that was inspired by a piece of poetry by Davey Crockett. One line in that poem has stayed with me my entire life: "In the land of the stranger, I rise or I fall." The Europeans who conquered the Roman empire did so in the name of their gods who fought beside them in battle and presided over their racial hearth fire. When they heard the Christ story, they saw, with their hearts, the same God that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus. His vision became their vision. And in the land of the stranger, which consisted of all the colored races, they rose, because

they had no truck with the philosophical speculators. But what of their heirs? What happened to the European people? Satan conquered the European people through philosophical speculation and made their faith a subject of ridicule. Now the European people are naked to their enemies – the colored heathens and the Judaized liberals.

I do not say it will happen, because no man can know such things, but I do say that the world of the antique Europeans, which they built in the midst of heathendom and in spite of the forces of liberalism arrayed against them, was and is the real world. It is His world. And it will only return if we reject the world of the stranger, the world of apostate church men, colored heathens, and Judaized liberals. That world is not the world for a European.

Kent enjoins Lear to “see better” so that he will know who his real daughter is, the daughter who loves him. We must see with our European hearts so that we can know the living God, the God who loves us. He does not reside in the minds of the philosophical speculators nor in the unhallowed churches of diversity and hatred; He resides with the people with hearts of flesh. White pietas will sustain us in the day of battle, because it is white pietas that allows us to see and know the savior. We shall rise if we cleave unto the vision of St. Paul and the antique Europeans. We shall remain a fallen people, under the yoke of the stranger, so long as we reject the antique Europeans’ vision and cleave unto the gods of liberalism. +

---

### **The Vision of His Europe and His People - April 14, 2018**

Could great men thunder  
As Jove himself does, Jove would ne’er be quiet;  
For every pelting, petty officer  
Would use his heaven for thunder,  
Nothing but thunder. Merciful Heaven,  
Thou rather with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt,  
Splits the unwedgeable and gnarled oak  
Than the soft myrtle. But man, proud man,  
Dress’d in a little brief authority,  
Most ignorant of what he’s most assur’d,  
His glassy essence, like an angry ape,  
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven  
As makes the angels weep; who, with our spleens,  
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

–*Measure for Measure*

---

I wrote at the time of Trump’s electoral victory that his victory constituted a rearguard action. I said that white people had lost a war, and Trump’s election could forestall the massacre of the retreating whites. Nothing has happened since the election to make me change my opinion about the nature of Trump’s victory. But I seem to be in a minority of one. A whole host of ‘conservatives,’ such as Ann Coulter, expected all sorts of miracles from Trump. When, in their opinion, he didn’t deliver the miracles, they condemned him and started looking for another miracle man who would follow their advice. But there will never be an elected official in the United States who is better than Donald Trump. As was the case with Andrew Jackson and Theodore Roosevelt, Trump only partly believes in American exceptionalism. That non-American element in his soul gives Trump, as it also gave TR and Jackson, the courage to occasionally act according to the instincts of a white man rather than the theories of the experts. Such a man is the only type of man who can do any good for white people. Granted, a rearguard movement will not provide white people with victories, but to look for victories within the democratic process is to seek redemption from the devil. Who is foolish enough to seek redemption from the devil? Apparently Ann Coulter and the legions of conservative pundits are foolish enough to seek redemption from the devil.

Oliver Goldsmith is oft ridiculed for stating that everything new was bad and everything old was good, but Goldsmith was right. When he said that everything new was bad, he was not referring to indoor plumbing or something else of a material nature, he was referring to the spiritual ordering of society. Society must always, Goldsmith maintained, be grounded in the Christian faith of the European people. New systems of government which placed God off to the side in preference for manmade theories of government were to be shunned. Scott was of the same opinion as Goldsmith:

An established system is not to be tried by those tests which may with perfect correctness be applied to a new theory. A civilized nation, long in possession of a code of law, under which, with all its inconveniences, they have found means to flourish, is not to be regarded as an infant colony, on which experiments in legislation may, without much danger of presumption, be hazarded. A philosopher is not entitled to investigate such a system by those ideas which he has fixed in his own mind as the standard of possible excellence. The only unerring test of every old establishment is the effect it has actually produced, for that must be held to be good, from whence good is derived. The people have, by degrees, moulded their habits to the law they are compelled to obey; for some of its imperfections remedies

have been found, to others they have reconciled themselves; till, at last, they have, from various causes, attained the object which the most sanguine visionary could promise to himself from his own perfect unembodied system.

– from Scott’s “Essay on Judicial Reform,” quoted in John Gibson Lockhart’s *Memoirs of the Life of Scott*

The American and the French Jacobin experiments in democracy were both experiments in philosophical presumption. The presumption was that Unitarians, deists, and atheists could come up with a government that could beat the tradition-laden, code-of-chivalry governments of old Europe hands-down. And what has been the result of the philosophical presumption of the great utopian theorists? To say the result has been a disaster would be a gross understatement. The American Civil War, the First World War, the Second World War, and the incredible displacement of the peoples of Europe after the Second World War were all the result of utopian theories of liberal government triumphing over the traditional, time-tested governments of old Europe. And the modern displacement of the European people in preference for the colored heathen from the swamps and bogs of heathendom is the result of the rise of a utopian elite that wants nothing to do with anything from old Europe – which means the exclusion of the white race and the Christian God from the new utopian nations of Europe.

Burke did much to dissuade Europeans from following the Jacobins, but there still followed in the wake of that revolution a whole host of liberal conservatives, men such as Macaulay, Toqueville, Weaver, and later, lesser lights such as William F. Buckley Jr., who thought democratic ideals were not incompatible with conservatism. Those ‘enlightened’ liberal conservatives did battle with the mad-dog liberals throughout most of the 20th century before they finally succumbed in the latter half of that century. There are now only pathetic remnants of liberal conservatives who play with abstract theories of government while all the forces of hell govern the country. What was missing back in the 20th century when there were two utopian camps – the mad-dog liberals and the conservative liberals – was the poor, unaccommodated, common man. Everything was done in his name, but he was a mere abstraction. The common man does not get his knowledge of life through old books and documents, he gets his knowledge of life through the traditions and prejudices of his people. If you cut the common man off from the traditions and prejudices of his ancestors you have left that common man at the mercy of the purveyors of modernity. He has no touchstone of reality, but that of an ever-changing present which tells him of the evil of his past and the bleakness of his future. So to whom can he turn? He can’t turn to God, because the liberal elite has placed God within the confines of liberalism. So the question remains – whither goes the white man?

All the liberal-conservatives in one form or another acknowledge the wisdom of Burke. And yet they reject the insight that is at the heart of all his thought. He believed, with St. Paul, that the folly of God was wiser than the wisdom of man. He did not believe in the double revelation theory of the scholastics, that there was one type of revelation for the thinking, reasoning man and another type of revelation for the unthinking, irrational, common man. We are all common; we need the wisdom that is passed on from heart to heart, because that instinctual wisdom of the blood connects us to Christ. We cannot go it alone with the powers of our intellect. Burke, whose intellect was certainly as great as any of his contemporaries, did not think he could walk away from the wisdom of his ancestors and still retain his Christian faith. He had that charity of honor which compelled him to reject the wide gate of pure reason in order to enter in the narrow gate of instinct, prejudice, and revelation. The modern liberal conservatives have taken the path of reason. They want to show the mad-dog liberals that they are the smart ones. But the mad-dog liberals will never be convinced by reason because we are not governed by reason, we use reason to support our passions.

In every doctrine which wins men over to it, the sophistry it contains is less potent than the promises it makes; its power over them is greater through their sensibility than through their intelligence; for if the heart is often the dupe of the head, the latter is much more frequently the dupe of the former. We do not accept a system because we deem it a true one, but because the truth we find in it suites us. Political or religious fanaticism, any theological or philosophical channel in which truth flows, always has its source in some ardent longing, some secret passion, some accumulation of intense, painful desire to which a theory affords an outlet...

–*The French Revolution* by Hippolyte Taine

And what passion governs a people who have cut themselves off from instinct, prejudice, and revelation? The same passion that animated Adam and Eve – “Ye shall be as gods.” Which is the same passion as Robespierre’s passion:

Hence, far from looking upon himself as an usurper or a tyrant, he considers himself the natural mandatory of a veritable people, the authorised executor of the common will. Marching along in the procession formed for him by this imaginary crowd, sustained by millions of metaphysical wills created by himself in his own image, he has their unanimous assent, and, like a chorus of triumphant shouts, he will fill the outward world with the inward echo of his own voice. –Taine

The common man — and I am not talking about the common man as in proletariat or some other abstract entity, I am talking about the unaccommodated common man that Lear discovers his kinship with in that stable:

Poor naked wretches, wheresoe'er you are,  
That bide the pelting of this pitiless storm,  
How shall your houseless heads and unfed sides,  
Your loop'd and window'd raggedness, defend you  
From seasons such as these? O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them  
And show the heavens more just.

*-The Tragedy of King Lear*

The European Everyman, the common man, is not separated from the poets of his race. His faith is one with Shakespeare, with Burke, and with St. Paul. They see with blinding sight and articulate the vision, but the vision is not unlike the vision that is in the Everyman's heart. But there is a great divide, an impassable divide, between the European Everyman and the Gnostics of mad-dog liberalism and conservative-liberalism. The Gnostics of both camps have built their own Towers of Babel from which they hurl thunderbolts at the other tower. Both groups of Gnostic Babylonians enjoin the people to enter their camp, but no matter which camp the European Everyman enters he gives up that which makes him a man – his blood connection to the living God in and through his kith and kin. Look at the wasteland of 20th century conservatism. Is there any room for Anthony Jacob's heartfelt plea for the survival of his people, the Christ-bearing race? No, there is not. All we see are proposals to protect democracy and/or our Greco-Roman-Judeo Christian traditions. But our people are not a democratic abstraction, nor is our God a mathematical abstraction, He is a God of spirit and blood, He is "our Jesus."

There is nothing that can excuse a European who goes over to Gnosticism. He cannot plead that he was not given the intellect to understand the higher things, because God does not ask us to understand with our minds. He asks us to understand with our hearts, and we all are given the heart to understand Him. If we choose to reject the wisdom of our hearts, in order to illuminate our minds, we will create our own little kingdom of hell on earth from which we can spew venom at all the other little kingdoms of hell on earth. Each man is a universe, and he is either a universe connected to the living God or he is a universe connected to Satan.

What then is the war that the white man lost? The white man lost the war against the principalities and powers of this world, because he listened to the siren call of the pride of science. "You can create God in your image, the image of the new, rational man, and then you can have the world as well as God." But what does it take to scientize the world? It takes men who have scientized their souls. In order for the Gnostics' rule to take hold, the white Everyman had to be Gnosticized, he had to believe that life was a problem in mathematics that could be solved by the proper mathematical authorities. He had to believe in the 'piano key' logic of existence and reject the blood wisdom of his European ancestors. The end result of that great Gnostic revolution is that Europe is governed by thoroughbred metaphysicians who rule in the name of the demonic angel who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

Nothing can be conceived more hard than the heart of a thoroughbred metaphysician. It comes nearer to the cold malignity of a wicked spirit than to the frailty and passion of a man. It is like that of the principle of evil himself, incorporeal, pure, unmixed, dephlegmated, defecated evil. It is no easy operation to eradicate humanity from the human breast. What Shakespeare calls "the compunctious visitings of nature" will sometimes knock at their hearts, and protest against their murderous speculations. But they have a means of compounding with their nature. Their humanity is not dissolved. They only give it a long prorogation. They are ready to declare, that they do not think two thousand years too long a period for the good that they pursue. It is remarkable, that they never see any way to their projected good but by the road of some evil. Their imagination is not fatigued with the contemplation of human suffering through the wild waste of centuries added to centuries of misery and desolation. Their humanity is at their horizon—and, like the horizon, it always flies before them. The geometricians, and the chemists, bring, the one from the dry bones of their diagrams, and the other from the soot of their furnaces, dispositions that make them worse than indifferent about those feelings and habitudes, which are the support of the moral world.

*-Letters to a Noble Lord by Edmund Burke*

Conservative Gnostics often bring up the forms of the past such as the Latin rite or the democratic process to counter the new Gnostics who look to newer systems. But the Christian European does not worship forms. He worships the living God. And the living God can only be known through the human heart. It is human hearts, the hearts of our people who loved much, with which we must reconnect. And how can we do that when their world, the world in which He resides, has a 'Do not enter' sign on it and is zealously guarded by a Gnostic army of Satan's minions? The European past is all around us, but it is treated like something that is dead and buried. If it was seen for what it was and still is, the place where our Jesus lives in the hearts of His people, the European story could once again become part of His story. We cannot get from here, which is Gnostic Europe, to there, which is Christian Europe, without a miracle. But wasn't Christian Europe a miracle? There is a living God who can set hearts on fire. Our task is to destroy the images of the beast-in-man god of the Gnostics



and place our Jesus at the center of Europe. The counterrevolution starts at our familial and racial hearth fire. “As for me and my house, we shall serve the Lord.” +

---

## **Be Not Afraid - April 7, 2018**

But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid. –John 6: 20

---

The Pope’s recent denial of the immortality of the soul and the existence of hell was not particularly shocking to anyone familiar with the present Pope’s desire to be a good liberal. Such sentiments are perfectly in keeping with liberal orthodoxy. And that is what being a good Catholic consists of — keeping on good terms with liberals. That is also what constitutes being a good Protestant. When the survival of your church organization becomes, in your mind, synonymous with the survival of the Christian faith, you will do anything – you will even sup with the devil – in order to keep your church organization afloat.

Let us be clear about the consequence of placing the survival of the organized churches above the survival of the word of God, which took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans. The consequence is that we are now ruled by a merciless cabal of Shylockian liberals, who hate the white race, the Christ-bearing race, with a religious zeal that is fueled by Satan. When the Duke of Venice asks Shylock to extend mercy to Antonio, the merchant, Shylock refuses: “by our holy Sabbath have I sworn, To have the due and forfeit of my bond.” That explains liberalism: It is institutionalized hatred. The neo-pagans, who like to stay on the material surface of life, sum up the decline of the European people with one proclamation: “The Jews!” But the decline of the West has deeper roots. The spiritual malady of the Jewish people, in the main, was that they rejected their prophets and succumbed to an organizational vision of God that obscured their vision of the true God. But we cannot just scream ‘Jew’ and hope to reverse the decline of the European people. We cannot do that for the obvious reason that the Christian Europeans have become spiritual Jews. They have placed organizational Christianity, which is a return to pharisaical Judaism, above the faith of the antique Europeans who took Him, of whom the prophets spoke, into their hearts.

When an entire people makes hate the primary focus of their faith, they become a very dangerous people. Caiaphas and his followers hated Christ so much that they crucified Him, despite Pilate’s failure to find any fault in Christ. We must see that the secular liberal and the Pope-Francis-organizational Christian have picked up Caiaphas’s mantle of hatred. What kind of religion is it that has the hatred of the Light of the world at its source? A Christian European hates the devil and his works, and the liberals are the work of the devil, but that is not the basis of his religion. The basis of his religion is the love of Christ. As we have lost the intimacy with Christ that the European people once enjoyed, so have we lost the ability to distinguish good from evil. The liberals persecute the white race under the mantle of anti-racism, and the downtrodden whites accept that hatred as their due. Their only hope is that somehow they can expiate their racist sins and become part of Liberaldom. But that shall never be. The Shylockian liberals will have their pound of flesh. Who will say them nay?

There will be no opposition to liberalism from within the ranks of democracy because modern democracy is rooted in Jacobinism. Jacobinism was the first attempt by post-Christian Europeans to institutionalize the hatred of the Light, which was already the religion of the Jews who rejected the Savior. The death of Robespierre did not end Jacobinism. Far from it. All of the Western democracies are Jacobin states whose people have lost the intimacy with Christ that is necessary to combat the devil and his minions. If He does not dwell within, from whence comes our strength in the day of battle? The European people have no strength to resist liberalism, because they do not believe that liberalism is from the devil. How could liberalism be from the devil when liberalism preaches the great universalisms, such as racial and sexual equality? It is from the devil precisely because it preaches racial and sexual equality. The racial equality gambit is a subterfuge for a return to the worship of Baal, and the sexual equality gambit is a ruse for the destruction of the Christian patriarchal family.

The reason a liberal churchman such as Pope Francis can play fast and loose with revealed truth is because he has lost that intimacy with Christ, which can only come to a people who have made His word a part of their soul. If we read through the European bards, who are the true chroniclers of the European people, we are struck with the deep spiritual connection between the European people and Christ. The written testimony of the bards and the Gospel of Christ are so interwoven that one is often hard-pressed to see where the separation is. And that is how it should be with a truly Christian people. His word should be so engrained in the hearts of His people that they instinctively refer all questions of moment to Him who is at the center of their culture. Do you think Pope Francis would deny the existence of hell and the immortality of the soul if the Word had taken flesh in his heart? Christ, in the Gospels, is very explicit about the existence of hell and the immortality of the soul. Only a man thoroughly unconcerned with the Word which was made flesh could possibly hold opinions so much in conflict with God’s word. But that is the case with all the modern sacred cows of liberalism. There is

no place for negro worship, feminism, or Jacobinism in the Gospels, but there is a place for all three in Christ-hating Liberaldom.

Modern conservatives, who are not conservative in the Burkean sense, always try to combat mad-dog liberalism by showing the liberals that such things as the Islamification of the West and/or the complete colorization of the West go against their self-interest. What the conservatives fail to grasp is the religious dynamic behind all the seemingly suicidal policies of the liberals. If you can only feel alive when you are attacking the object of your hate, then all people who hate what you hate are welcome allies. That poor young British woman, Jayda Fransen, is currently in jail in Britain because she assumed that liberals would want to know about and take action against the Moslem rapists in their midst. But instead of taking action against the Moslem rapists, the liberals took action against Jayda Fransen. How could it be otherwise? The Moslems are the liberals' co-religionists; they both hate the white Christ-bearing race.

If you seek to co-exist with liberals, or worse yet, if you become a liberal, you will not love where you should love and hate where you should hate. You will not love the people who gave the world a vision of the living God and you will not hate all those who try to destroy His image in man. When Wackford Squeers proceeds to beat the poor disabled SMIKE, Nicholas Nickleby cries, "Stop! This must not go on!" Then Nicholas proceeds to beat Wackford Squeers. There is no demand of "Stop, this must not go on" from the European people, because they have no heart for the suffering servant; He no longer appeals to them. Liberalism has, in its many different guises, become not only the faith of the passionate upper echelon of Liberaldom, it has become the faith of the masses.

Yeats, who saw that Western man had lost his Christian moorings, asked,

And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,  
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?

The rough beast did not turn out to be the genial Irish paganism of Yeats' fantasies, nor did it become the happy land of multi-culturalism. The rough beast turned out to be Satan, who now rules the Western nations with a hatred that will brook no opposition. Should resistance come, it will come from Europeans who have taken the Word of God into their hearts. But at present the men and women of Europe have erected altars consecrated to the image of the beast in man. We can't maintain those altars and our faith in Christ. So long as churchmen such as Pope Francis espouse an intellectual faith in a theoretical God while worshipping at the altars consecrated to the image of the beast in man, whether that beast takes the form of a rain forest savage or Nelson Mandela, the European people will continue to live in a Europe diametrically opposed to all things bright and beautiful. Where there was light now there is darkness, where there was Christ now there are heathen gods.

Liberaldom consists of a vast network of organizations both large and small that exist to serve and protect Liberaldom. Our schools, our universities, our churches, our military, and the various news organizations all help to maintain Liberaldom. There is no organized resistance to Liberaldom within Liberaldom. How about the unorganized resistance? That is the key. The liberals and their followers, men like Pope Francis, have decided to go it alone without the Christ who enters human hearts. And to insure that such a God will never enter human hearts again they have made war on the white hearth fire. There is nothing Christian about negro worship. It is a convenient tool of the great haters, the Shylockian liberals. Every time a white man with a heart of flesh attacks Liberaldom in the name of Christian Europe, he is branded a racist and dealt with. And it is generally the church men who are the first to cast stones because they are scared to death of standing contra mundum vis-à-vis Liberaldom. But is it really so terrible to stand alone against Liberaldom? Yes, it is terrible if we are truly alone. But if Christ dwells within us, and the testimony of our European ancestors tells us that He will come to us if we call on Him by name, then we are not alone.

Pope Francis is not some isolated monstrosity. He is modern man. One moment he might say something positive about Christ and the next moment he'll be back in the slime pits of liberalism uttering blasphemy. His faith is a hop-toad intellectual faith, which is no faith at all. The man's heart belongs to liberalism. And the liberal's heart has room only for that which feeds his hatred for all things white and Christian. When facing such a hatred, we have only one hope. I quoted John Donne on Easter because I loved the way he described the Savior as "Our Jesus." Yes, let us make this a personal matter between those who believe that He abides with us by our racial hearth fire and those who have placed God in a cosmic box to be brought out of mothballs every other month in order to condemn racism, sexism, homophobia, and national boundaries. Our Jesus shall prevail against all the armies of the night arrayed against us. We need only remember that He does not live in the abstract intellect. He lives in hearts of flesh. +

---

**And the Trumpet Shall Sound - March 31, 2018**

But if the whole space to the firmament were filled with sand, and we had before us Clavius number, how many thousands would be; If all that space were filled with water, and so joyned the waters above with the waters below the Firmament, and we had the number of all those drops of water; And then had every single sand, and every single drop multiplied by the whole number of both, we were still short of numbering the benefits of God, as God; But then, of God in Christ, infinitely, super-infinitely short. To have been once nothing, and to be now co-heire with the Son of God, is such a Circle, such a Compasse, as that no revolutions in this world, to rise from the lowest to the highest, or to fall from the highest to the lowest, can be called or thought any Segment, any Arch, any Point in respect of this Circle; To have once been nothing, and now to be co-heires with the Son of God: That Son of God, who if there had been but one soule to have been saved, would have died for that; nay, if all souls had been to be saved, but one, and that that onely had sinned, he would not have contented himselfe with all the rest, but would have died for that. And there is the goodnesse, the liberality of our King, our God, our Christ, our Jesus. —John Donne

---

When I went to college in the 1970's, the study of comparative religions was all the rage. And the conclusion of the assortment of anthropologists, psychologists, philosophers, and scientists who presided over the study of religion was that all religions were the same, except for one. That one exception was Christianity. But it was not considered exceptional because it was true, it was considered exceptional because it was unnatural and sick. Every other religion was natural, and therefore healthy, but Christianity was unnatural and therefore unhealthy. Its adherents were sick. I had a professor who faced the issue head on. "Take away the empty tomb, and Christianity can be a nature religion."

Ah, there's the rub. We can't take away the empty tomb because Christ did rise from the dead on the third day. How do we know this? Because the Son of God took flesh and dwelt among us. And when He left this world after rising from the dead, He left us a Comforter. That Comforter, who lives in hearts of flesh, is our blessed assurance that Christ is with us always, even unto the ending of the world. If we look at the historical record, we can see that the European people once believed in the Christ who enters human hearts. Now, in our 'enlightened' age, the European people are divided between a ruling class that rejects the unnatural religion of the Suffering Servant and a clerical class that asserts (because they want to retain their jobs) that Christianity is compatible with the nature religions. They tell us that Baal and Christ are one. This is why the European churchmen welcome Moslems and colored heathens into the churches but reject the Europeans who cling to the faith of their non-diverse European ancestors. But if we reject our ancestors' Christian faith, do we have faith? Baal cannot resurrect the dead. There are so many heathen faiths we can turn to in modern Liberalism. And the blended Christian-Heathenism of the clerical apostates is the worst. We can't be saved by a rain-forest god. There is only one Savior; He is the Christ of old Europe. He is the King of Kings and Lord of Lords. We are one with Handel, who always, so long as there are Christian Europeans, shall be the true voice of Easter. Christ is Risen! +

---

### **Like Unto That of a Little Child - March 24, 2018**

And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. — John 1: 5

---

I believe that I've mentioned the travelogues of James A. Fitzpatrick before. He was a reporter who traveled around the world on behalf of the MGM movie studios to film short 10-15 minute vignettes of various countries of the world, over a 20 year span between 1930 and 1950. The short films then appeared before the main feature of the MGM movies. Fitzpatrick is not the best public speaker — he mispronounces many important names and places — nor is he a man who could be accused of having right-wing views, but nevertheless the films will soon be banned because they give us glimpses ('a picture is worth a thousand words') of European nations that were non-diverse and infinitely superior to the modern diversified European nations. I can't watch too many of the films at one time, lest I weep because they are a reminder of that which we have lost.

What is glaringly apparent when we view the Fitzpatrick vignettes is that diversity does not work. It is unnatural to expect birds of different feather to flock together, and it is also, more importantly, un-Christian to destroy the Christ-bearing race by coloring their civilization. There is no one with a heart that still lives who could prefer modern Europe to the Europe we see in the Fitzpatrick travelogues. And yet somebody did prefer a diverse Europe to a non-diverse Europe, because that is the Europe we now have.

The Europe that Fitzpatrick presents is a Europe about to crumble, but the accumulated Christian capital that was still present in those European nations is on glorious display in all of the shorts. South Africa is shown as a bastion of civilization in the Dark Continent. Australia is depicted as a shining testimonial to the white race. And the scenes of rural England, Denmark, Holland and the rest of the European nations provide us with a wonderful view of non-diverse Europe. Is it paradise? No, of course not; only in comparison to modern, diverse Europe was old Europe paradise. But somebody, a whole lot of somebodies, decided that non-diverse Europe, a white Europe, was undesirable. Who were those somebodies? They were and are called liberals.

Liberals are Undines; outwardly they appear to be human, but they have nothing inside of them, they have no souls. And every liberal has sworn the same oath as the Red Knight who opposed King Arthur:

I have founded my Round Table in the North,  
And whatsoever his own knights have sworn  
My knights have sworn the counter to it...

Everything good, everything decent is now countered by the liberals with all that is evil and vile. The Christian, patriarchal family has been replaced by a cruel feminist matriarchy, the sanctity of life in the womb has been violated by the institutionalized murder of the innocents, and the worship of the God-Man, Jesus Christ, has been replaced by the worship of the man-god, the noble black savage. The dark night of liberalism has enveloped all of the European nations, whose people once followed the way of the cross. Now, in the name of a utopian future devoid of all things white and Christian, the Europeans have returned to the worship of Baal.

Fitzpatrick certainly didn't realize it at the time, but what he was presenting in those European panoramas was a last look at Christian Europe. The unbought grace of life that had sustained the European people for centuries was spent. The liberals, armed with cruel hate, were about to replace the image-of-God-in-man culture of the European people with an image-of-the-beast-in-man culture. But the liberals' coup could not have succeeded without the passive neutrality of the European Everyman. The liberal Undines had the passionate intensity to impose their will, which was Satan's will, on the lukewarm Europeans who no longer had the will to defend their culture, because they no longer had the same faith as the European men and women who had built Christendom in the midst of heathendom. When I was young, I used to think the servant in the Gospel parable, who simply saved his master's money and didn't invest it, was treated harshly by his master. But now I can see the meaning of that parable. We need to respond to God's grace; we must respond to His passion with our passion. "Yet what can I give Him? Give my heart." That is what has been lost. The Europeans once loved much; when their love for Christ became a mere intellectual affirmation of the idea of God, they were unable to sustain the civilization that was grounded in the love of the living God.

The liberals sought to destroy Christian Europe because they wanted to destroy the image of God in man. They succeeded because the European leadership in church and state reacted to the assault by affirming the rationality of their theological and political abstractions over the liberals' theological and political abstractions. The traditionalist Roman Catholic affirmed the superiority of Thomism and the Latin rite over the Novus Ordo rite and Hans Kung. The believing Protestants affirmed the superiority of their Jewish-Christian theology over the new 'Christ as social worker' theology of the mad-dog liberals. And the political conservatives kept asserting the superiority of our 'democratic traditions' over the new mobocracy. What was and is lacking in all the reactions to mad-dog liberalism is passion. Only those who love Christ, as the repentant sinner Mary Magdalen loved Christ, can stop the liberals' reign of terror. How could it be otherwise? The liberals hate with a passionate intensity that defies logic; we can only understand it when we view existence on a level deeper than logic. The passionate hatred of the devil's minions can only be countered by the passion of men and women who follow the God who defied logic. Was it logical to die on the cross in atonement for the sins of others? Was it logical to expect men to worship a God who suffered an ignominious death on the cross? And as a final absurdity, was it logical or rational to expect us to believe that Jesus Christ rose from the dead on Easter morning? The answer to all three questions is – "No, it was not." Yet Christ did and does ask us to look past what is logical and rational so that we can respond to His passion with a passion of our own. The conservatives' leadership in the 20th century, in church and state, were concerned with showing the liberals that Christianity was compatible with logic and reason. The Christian, the conservatives assert, can be part of Liberalism. That is a falsehood. Christianity is not compatible with rationality as defined by the academics of Liberalism. Nor should our leaders tell us to make terms with the liberals. We should be enjoined to love much and never let the sword drop from our hands. Hearts that love simply do not permit the slaughter of the innocents and the extermination of their people even if the slaughter and the extermination were 'voted' on and decreed by the principalities and powers of Liberalism. Why should the Christian European ever take lessons in morality from mad-dog liberals who have chosen to worship the beast in man while destroying the people who championed the image of God in man?

In *The Lion, the Witch, and the Wardrobe* Aslan talks about the magic that is deeper than the deep magic. And in Tennyson's *Idylls of the King*, Guinevere learns, after it is too late to save Camelot, that there is something more to Christian love than mere courtly love:

Ah my God,  
What might I not have made of thy fair world,  
Had I but loved thy highest creature here?  
It was my duty to have loved the highest;  
It surely was my profit had I known;  
It would have been my pleasure had I seen,  
We needs must love the highest when we see it,  
Not Lancelot, nor another.

The bards of old Europe were more articulate, more gifted, than the rest of the European people. But they were one in faith with their people. And the bards' vision was a vision of the God whose love passeth the understanding of logic and reason. Handel's Messiah is a paean to the God whose magic is deeper than the deep magic of a formulaic, intellectual Christianity. Our people loved Christ because they saw, in His divine humanity, the highest form of love. And shouldn't we love the highest when we see it? "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." Shouldn't we treasure the people who gave us a vision of the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world? Or should we treasure the Undines of Liberalism, who have shown us, in diversity, a vision of hell? Just as we should keep Christmas in our hearts all the days of the year, so we should keep Easter in our hearts for 365 days of the year. Let us love the highest, the Christ of old, non-diverse Europe, who rose from the dead on the third day. And as the darkness deepens, let us return to the faith of our people when they were young, the faith that is like unto a little child facing the darkness of the night.+

When the bright lamp is carried in,  
The sunless hours again begin;  
O'er all without, in field and lane,  
The haunted night returns again.

Now we behold the embers flee  
About the firelit hearth; and see  
Our faces painted as we pass,  
Like pictures, on the window glass.

Must we to bed indeed? Well then,  
Let us arise and go like men,  
And face with an undaunted tread  
The long black passage up to bed.

Farewell, O brother, sister, sire!  
O pleasant party round the fire!  
The songs you sing, the tales you tell,  
Till far to-morrow, fare you well!

---

### **Our Faith is Our Destiny - March 17, 2018**

The original purpose of poetry is either religious or historical, or, as most frequently happens, a mixture of both. – Sir Walter Scott

---

Prior to the 20th century, the European bards wrote about the trials and travails of a Christian people, but when we come to the 20th century of the European people's history, the bards suddenly started telling a different story. It was like unto reading Tennyson's *Idylls of the King*, and just as we reached the chapter called "The Holy Grail" we found ourselves reading chapters from Samuel Beckett's *Endgame*. What happened to the chapters on the last tournament and the passing of Arthur?

From the 20th century on, there ceased to be Christian bards who came from the heart of Europe, for the simple reason that the European people no longer had hearts strong enough to defeat the intellectual onslaught of science, which proclaimed the death of the Christian God. Henceforth the only Christian bards were those men, such as C. S. Lewis, who rejected the new scientific faith of the 20th century Europeans in order to return to the faith of the pre-20th century Europeans. As it was with the European bards, so it was and is with the European Everyman. Only the man who makes a conscious decision to place himself in the spiritual culture of the pre-20th century Europeans can retain the Christian faith of the antique Europeans.

Certainly the scientific onslaught did not begin in the 20th century; it was an ever-present danger throughout the Christian centuries of the Europeans' history. But it was in the 20th century that the liberals, armed with an accumulated weight of scientific knowledge, the knowledge of 'this world only,' succeeded in destroying the filial relationship between Christ and the European people. A second fall of man became institutionalized in church and state. And I stress in church as well as in state. We would not be reading *Endgame* instead of "The Passing of Arthur" if the churchmen had not tried to graft Christianity onto liberalism. That break from a filial relationship with God to a 'hedge your bets' compromise with liberalism was the equivalent of a marriage to the devil. Granted the churchmen got the devil to sign a pre-nuptial agreement about respecting the rights of the church, but when has the devil ever dealt honestly with the sons of Adam and the daughters of Eve? He told Adam and Eve honest trifles only to deceive them in deepest consequence. And that is what he did with the churchmen – he allowed them to hold onto their organizational, intellectual concept of the church, but he made them give up their connection to Christ. He has been so successful with the church gambit that he is now very disappointed whenever he sees church membership is decreasing. Nothing good will ever happen to the European people

as a people until they become like unto the antique Europeans who made Christ the heart and soul of their civilization. And there cannot be a return to that truly European (because it was truly Christian) culture until the fusionist churches of organized Christian Jewry are seen for what they are – the bulwarks of Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth.

Instead of focusing on getting white candidates elected to office who want to slow down the extermination of white people, we need to clean the Augean Stables, the Christian churches, so that the mystery of God’s grace interacting with man’s free will can once again become part of the lay of the European minstrels. In order to do that we must see the connection between the European people’s loss of their racial identity and the loss of their Christian faith. When our racial identity is not viewed as part of our spiritual identity, if the flesh cannot be sanctified, what becomes of our belief in the incarnation of Christ? Christ’s entire life – His birth, crucifixion, and bodily resurrection – becomes a mere idea, an abstract concept that can mean all things to all people. The tyranny of biology, which Christ freed us from, once again becomes our master. And that is why the natural savage plays such an important role in the Christless Christian churches. If our pride of science tells us that nature is all, then we must look to the nature gods, the people of color, to lead us to the kingdom of heaven on earth. In that kingdom, the liberals tell us, there shall be no more pain and suffering, because pain and suffering are products of the Christian civilization of the demonic white race. Thus the liberals, who do not believe in the devil, demonize the white European hearth fire where Christ, the devil’s antagonist, resides.

The effects of the demonization of the white Christ-bearing race were not apparent in the first 60 years of the 20th century, because a Christian ethos – but not a Christian faith – still survived in the white cultures. It struck me when watching an old 1950s documentary that showed the viewer where Hans Christian Andersen lived and worked, that the Denmark of 1950 had not changed much in the 500 years preceding 1950. But in the fifty years that followed, from 1950 to the year 2000, the change in the people’s lives was a thousand times greater than any change in their five-hundred year history prior to 1950. By the year 2000, all the constants were gone. Faith in Christ and the love of kith and kin, which had been at the core of Denmark’s civilization, were now gone. And in their place? Throughout all of the European nations, it is the same as in Denmark. There is no Christian presence, there are only post-Christian liberals, Moslems, and colored heathens battling for supremacy in a cesspool of iniquity that makes the Biblical cesspools of Babel and Sodom and Gomorrah seem tame by comparison.

If a man does not look at modern Europe and proclaim, “The Horror, the Horror,” and consciously return to old Europe, he will either become part of the horror or he will be annihilated by the horror, because having lost his faith he has no spiritual spine to resist the horror. Liberalism is an ever-evolving organism of destruction. A sixties liberal who remains a sixties liberal is now a conservative in the eyes of the modern liberals. And it will always be thus with liberals. They will consume each other in a satanic feeding frenzy: “It will come, humanity must perforce prey on itself like monsters from the deep.”

As the liberals take liberalism to its logical conclusion, which is the destruction of everything white and Christian, we can see a remarkable change in society. There was still, when the liberals of the 1960s had not completely abandoned the Christian ethos of old Europe, some possibility of interaction, on certain issues, between a European of the old school and a liberal. But now there is no such possibility. Liberalism has permeated our culture from top to bottom, making it impossible to communicate on any level with the creatures who now inhabit the land masses of the European nations. It is impossible to exaggerate the extent of the decline of the European people. I am in agreement with Gratiano who, when confronted with the merciless cruelty of Shylock, proclaimed,

Thou almost mak’st me waver in my faith,  
To hold opinion with Pythagoras  
That souls of animals infuse themselves  
Into the trunks of men. Thy currish spirit  
Govern’d a wolf who, hang’d for human slaughter,  
Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet,  
And, whilst thou lay’st in thy unhallow’d dam,  
Infus’d itself in thee; for thy desires  
Are wolfish, bloody, starv’d and ravenous.

*The Merchant of Venice*

Yes, the liberals’ desires are wolfish, bloody, starved, and ravenous. Their appetite for white blood can never be satisfied because that appetite is fueled by Satan, the ravenous wolf who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. There can be no compromise with the people fueled with Satan’s cruel hate. And their hatred is no longer the abstract hate of a sixties liberal, it is a very real, tangible, venomous hatred that manifests itself in daily acts of merciless cruelty against the white race in general and against white males in particular. No force on earth, except the spiritual force that comes from a Christian European, can put a stop to the cruel merciless reign of the liberals.

The 1950s and early 1960s were the final years in which a Christian ethos still survived. Television shows such as Robin Hood and William Tell still depicted the heroes of Christian Europe in a favorable light, and liberals such as Ralph Nader still had some genuine concern for the poor and disenfranchised. But now the logic of liberalism has taken us into a realm of darkness devoid of light. And as a result of the liberals' triumph in church and state, there are no longer any Christian voices raised in opposition to the liberals' merciless cruelty. Spiritually, the liberals have become like unto Shylock. They hate everything white and Christian; without that hate they would have nothing left to live for.

I have an acquaintance in the neo-pagan camp who still deems to talk with me because we both oppose the colorization of the European nations. But he has grown increasingly intolerant of my refusal to get off my Quixotic, romanticized view of Christian Europe. From his standpoint Christianity has been the death knell of Europe. But there are two assumptions there that should be dealt with before we can put an amen to my "romanticized" view of Christian Europe. The first assumption is that the apostles' account of Christ's birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead is false. Certainly, if Christ be not risen I should stop perpetuating such a myth. But what if I believe, along with the pre-20th century Europeans, that Christ is risen? Then it simply doesn't matter whether that belief is good or bad as a practical plan to preserve the white race. We must seek His Kingdom Come no matter what the cost. Dostoyevsky said that the most important question was, "Can a rational, civilized European believe in the divinity of Christ?" My neo-pagan acquaintance and the modern Europeans have given their answer. They have built a new Europe based on the assumption that Christ did not rise from the dead on the third day.

The second assumption of the practical, realistic neo-pagan is that faith in Christ as the Son of the living God has been a detriment to the white race. The historical record shows that the reverse is true. The white race thrived in the European nations and in the colored nations during the historical epoch when they believed that Christ was the Son of the living God. We cannot invoke Christ, as the vagabond Jews did in Acts, Chapter 19, verses 13 through 16, for the sake of material gain, but it is important to note that our God is not as cruel as the neo-pagans make Him out. He wants us to seek Him first without a thought for the material gain, but He has not been unmindful of our material needs. "Seek ye first the kingdom of heaven and all these things I will add unto thee." As a people, not every individual, we thrived when we believed.

In our second fall from grace, when we institutionalized the pride of science, we lost the inner harmony, our integrality, which Christ restored to us through His death on the cross. We can't restore the European people unless we restore that which is lost, the inner harmony of a people connected to the living God through their familial and racial hearth fire. No political program from within the framework of 'pride of science' liberalism can save the European people. It doesn't take a liberal village, it takes a European hearth fire and a Savior, who is Christ the Lord. +

---

### **The Tragedy of Scientized Superficiality - March 10, 2018**

A man lives his whole life to prove he is not a piano key. – Fyodor Dostoyevsky

---

Sigmund Freud, founder of the science of psychiatry, started with the assumption that man was an ape whose problems could be solved by rational analysis. Which is a bit of a contradiction right from the start, as one does not see any apes in the real world sitting around discussing their childhood traumas, organizing community blood banks, or going on talk shows to inform a breathless audience of their fellow apes about their next appearance on screen: "You must see Toby Tyler at the Circus. I give a magnificent performance as Mr. Stubbs – it's worth the price of admission, which I believe is two ripe bananas and one coconut."

Ignoring the inherent contradictions in his new theory, Freud plowed ahead and created a science of man that made man a recorder to be played upon just as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern played upon Hamlet. And Freud's failure was just as great as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern's failure. It's remarkable that Freud's basic assumption, that man is a glorified ape, still holds sway throughout the Western world, despite the failure of psychiatry to cure the problems that plague men so.

Freud, as a thinker, was second rate, but he was infinitely superior to the third and fourth rate psychiatric witch doctors who followed in his train. The second wave of psychiatrists accepted Freud's basic assumption while rejecting all his theories stemming from that assumption. After they failed, as Freud failed, to solve the problems of man by simplifying man with the silver rod of rational analysis, psychiatry descended to the practice of pill-pushing. "We can't solve the problem of man by rational analysis, so let's just use drugs on him to alter his behavior." And yet, despite the colossal failure of psychiatry, the modern Europeans, with no exceptions, continue, in one form or another, to accept the validity of the scientized, simplified, psychiatric view of mankind. Even those Christian sects that have rejected Darwinian evolution still kowtow to science by using the "insights" of psychiatry as a tool in their understanding of man. But is such a

simplification of man possible? If we simplify man, if we make him into a piano key or a recorder that can be played upon, won't we then simplify God? Yes, we will. And in point of fact, we have already done it.

This simplification of man is not a little thing. It is a tragedy. In fact it is the central tragedy of the 20th and 21st century. The science of psychiatry was presented to the European as a benevolent, scientific means of treating the disorder of the mind. It was always, in reality, a tool of the devil. Under the guise of scientific benevolence Satan was able to convince the European that he was better off if he viewed himself as a creature of nature rather than as a man created in the image of God. A man that comes from nature is much easier to "help" than a man who comes from God. The biological man has only to free himself from the God above nature in order to be happy on this earth, while the non-biological man, the Christian European, must deal with all the Shakespearean complexities that plague the man of feeling and depth. Thus does the devil work his will through the superficiality of psychiatry.

The antique European culture that has been discarded by the conservatives and the liberals in church and state was a culture of Shakespearean depths; it was a culture of tragedy, comedy, and romance. The modern European culture is a culture without tragedy, comedy, or romance. How can the death of a collection of atoms be tragic? How can there be laughter when there is no animating spirit within? And how can there be romance when God is nature and man is a piano key? When superficiality is institutionalized, and it has been institutionalized throughout the European nations, the people of those nations turn to the sex and blood cults of the barbarian races in order to escape the spiritual ennui of scientific superficiality.

In my undergraduate days I saw a rather dramatic example of the transformation that takes place when a man transfers from the culture of depth to the culture of scientific superficiality. I had a teacher for English literature who actually had some feeling for the literature he taught. This is usually not the case. Most of the teachers of English literature are too immersed in literacy criticism to understand literature. Flannery O'Connor was quite serious when she told a friend that the professors of literature could not understand her stories. But this particular teacher was an exception; he actually read literature to try and understand what the author was saying. The very unmodern assumption of a man who reads literature for that purpose is that there is some meaning in life that can be discovered if we plunge below the surface of life.

I took a course in the humanities and later a course in Shakespeare from Dr. \_\_\_\_\_. I enjoyed both courses for the reason stated above: Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ was a true student of literature. I often had long conversations with him about Shakespeare and Spencer, his favorite authors, in his office, and I should emphasize that Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ was not, at that time, into the psychological study of literature. Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ was in his mid-thirties, married, with two children. Now comes the tragic decline into superficiality. During the summer of my junior year, Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ came out of the closet. I at that time had only vague notions of the existence of homosexuals. When Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ came out of the closet, I saw that such mutations were very real. He left his wife and children and plunged into a homosexual lifestyle. When he came back in the fall, his Shakespeare class was no longer about Shakespeare, it was about psychology. Every line in Shakespeare was an example of some kind of psychosexual principle that could only be understood by reference to psychology and/or structural anthropology. Thus Ophelia's tragic cry of, "We know what we are, but we know not what we can be," became the symbol of a woman who wants to be a man and/or the man who wants to be a woman. Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ had Ophelia's quote taped to the door of his office. I was forced to apologize to a friend of mine, a science major, who was required to take only two courses in the humanities, for recommending the course. "He wasn't like this last year," I told him.

"With the exception of Shakespeare and Kipling, I don't really care for literature. I didn't have to take this course; it's not my major. Now instead of Shakespeare, I'm getting this bull\_\_\_\_," was his reply.

What could I say other than, "I'm sorry"?

Late in the course my friend made a very perceptive statement about the course and Dr. \_\_\_\_\_.

"I'd like to go into his office and knock his own personal teeth out of his own personal head." I stress the word personal because he stressed it. That was one of the most perceptive remarks about, and the most correct reaction to, the impersonal, psychological approach to life and literature that I have ever heard. Truly, the friend to whom I gave bad advice had wise blood.

After the course was over I saw Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ one more time. It was about two and a half years after my graduation. I was in a restaurant with a young woman, and he was at a table across the restaurant with a young black male. I don't think he was discussing Shakespeare or Spencer with his adolescent companion. All this was slightly before the AIDs epidemic struck the homosexual community. But if Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ continued his descent into the superficiality of psychological debauchery, I'm sure he died of AIDs. I hope he didn't, I hope he returned to the culture of depth, but I don't suppose that is likely. He was on the right path when I first met him. 'Tis more than a pity, it is a tragedy that he took the wide gate instead of the narrow



gate. But from the liberals' standpoint there is no such thing as the tragedy of a human soul choosing the devil over Christ; there is only the tragedy of racism and the tragedy of global warming.

Dr. \_\_\_\_'s transformation has been our people's transformation. We have gone from the people who lived with the tragedy and hope of the cross of Christ to the people of a post-Christian culture of scientized superficiality. The men and women in such a culture, having given up their personal humanity, can only experience life secondhand through the barbarians of color and/or the people of the non-Christian faiths. Thus the scientized Evangelicals seek out the Jews and the negroes while the more syncretic Roman Catholics seek out the Moslems, the Jews, the negroes, the Indians, and on and on they go. But the one people that the modern European, be he "Christian" or secular, will not follow is the people who looked to the cross of Christ for their salvation. This scientized blending of Christ is not Christianity, it is a return to Baal.

Why do the evangelical Protestants look to the 'this world only' theology of an apostate Anglican clergyman from the early 1800s? And why do the Roman Catholics look to a system which blends Christ with the nature gods of the colored races? It is because they seek the comfort of scientized superficiality. Life is more manageable if the mystery of both man and God can be revealed in a simple five-point plan from a doctor of scientized theology. The self-help craze in religious circles and in secular society stems from modern man's flight from the culture of depth, the culture of the cross of Christ. Why do bad things happen to good people? Dr. Theological-Psychological Mumbo-Jumbo will tell you. Why are there no signs from God and why are our prayers not answered? Preacher Bob will tell us that it is because we don't give him enough money. We must plant our seed, which is money, in Preacher Bob's hands if we expect to hear from God. All such hideous, blasphemous simplifications of our blessed Savior are inspired by the devil who can and does use false images of God to ruin the souls of men. Christ came to us through our humanity. And we must come to Him through our humanity. If we refuse to plunge to the depths of our humanity, how can we know Christ? There is no self-help book or scientized system that can save us at the hour of our death. Look to the cross of Christ and to the people who made His cross their all in all. Their way is not by the wide and simple scientized gate of the modern Europeans. They all went by the narrow-gated path, which starts in the depths of the human heart and ends with the loving embrace of our Savior. That was and is the faith of the European people. If we shun that faith and those people we will surfeit and die in the scientized superficiality of our modern Babylonian Europe. +

---

### **Reclaiming the Lost Children of Europe - March 3, 2018**

... And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. –Matthew 15: 14

---

I have dwelt 'neath southern skies  
Where the summer never dies  
But my heart is in the mountains of my home.-

Welsh song

---

I recently viewed a video by Paul Joseph Watson, the self-professed classical liberal, in which he described the tragic Islamization of Germany. Watson concluded the video with the comment that a people who will not defend their culture will be replaced by a people who are willing to impose their will on those who will not defend their people. That is undeniably true. Germany is closer to annihilation than most of the other European nations, but all the European nations are in the process of abandoning their culture and ceding their nations to the Moslems and the colored heathens.

Watson is one of the best of the classical liberals. His commentaries are accurate and insightful, but is classical liberalism the antidote for the poison that has gone into the soul of the European people? No, it is not, because classical liberalism is still liberalism. It is a cancer in its early stages, in contrast to mad-dog liberalism, which is the advanced stage of the cancer, but it is still a cancer. Why is it a cancer? Because it is not enough to refer to our culture or our traditions without reference to Christ, who is the all in all of our culture and our traditions. Classical liberals acknowledge the debt our European culture owes to Christianity, and the greater debt, in the eyes of the classical liberals, that we owe to pagan Greece and Rome. But that type of respect is without depth, it is without passion, and unfortunately, it is without the faith that is necessary to defend European culture from the onslaught of the heathens without and the mad-dog liberals from within. It's not enough to invoke Christ as an important symbol of the Greco-Roman, Christian tradition. He must be more than that to us. The European people, when they were a people, looked to Christ as their Savior. He was a God who loved them. In life and death, He loved them. "Well, of course, now, let's get on to the real issue – how can rational men, men who do not believe in fairy tales, save the European people?" That is the problem – the rational, classical liberal does not really believe in the fairy tale of Christ the Lord. But our ancestors did believe. They staked their lives on Christ, and they fought for the culture that stemmed from their faith in Christ. Only that type of faith, faith in Him as distinct from faith in the Church, can provide the promethean fire to save the European people.

In Acts 19, St. Luke describes a group of vagabond Jews who tried to invoke Jesus's name without having a passionate, heartfelt faith in Christ as the Son of the living God:

Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. –Acts 19: 13-16

The classical liberals, who are the modern day conservatives, will always be defeated by the mad-dog liberals because the mad-dog liberals are possessed by the devil, who passionately hates Christ and His people. How can the rational, clear-thinking conservative combat that hate? He can't overcome such a hatred with rational analysis. He can only defeat it if he is possessed by a passionate love for the devil's antagonist. But the rational conservative eschews such extremes. And that is the tragic flaw of the modern conservatives, they are heirs of the medieval scholastics who saw no limits to rational analysis.

Richard Weaver ends his brilliant book *Ideas Have Consequences* with the recommendation that we take our stand against liberalism by defending the last metaphysical right that is left – the right of private property. Therein lies the weakness of classical, democratic liberalism. We cannot take our stand on a metaphysical right, independent of the spiritual fount of that metaphysical right. All the metaphysical rights of the European people were rooted in Christ. It's not possible to sever ourselves from Him and still expect to maintain any of those rights. The whole concept of 'rights' is a derivation of the European people's faith in Jesus Christ. We have the right, given to us by the Savior, to regard ourselves as human beings created in His image. If we reject Him, then we have no rights except those accorded to us by the devil. He has given us the right to live like beasts and die in despair.

Conservatives often make reference to the cultural war between themselves, who defend classical liberalism, and the mad-dog liberals who want to take classical liberalism to its logical conclusion. The conservatives never seem to understand why they always lose every battle in the cultural war. They lose because you cannot have just a little bit of liberalism. If we believe, with Burke, that the first liberal was the devil, then how can we allow the devil to have a place, even if it is just a small place in the corner, in our culture? Let me reference a debate William F. Buckley Jr., the classical liberal, had with the feminist Germaine Greer. Buckley made it clear from the onset that it was not women's rights he was against, he was disputing Greer's assertion that a revolution was necessary to obtain "women's rights." But a true conservative, a Burkean conservative, would have disputed the premise that a woman has any rights outside of the rights she is entitled to as a woman living in a Christian society. And that is the right to bear children and to raise them. There is no right to indulge in politics or any other activity that is contrary to the duties and obligations of a woman who is part of a Christian commonwealth.

Once God is viewed as pure intellect, we are back with the pagan Greeks who mocked St. Paul when he told them of the resurrection of the dead. Intellectual Christianity destroys the Christian faith. This is why we must never go up against the mad-dog liberals with the papier-mâché armor of classical liberalism. One well-placed arrow from the bow of a mad-dog liberal can demolish classical liberalism, which is why the culture war between the classical liberals and the mad-dog liberals is over. The mad-dog liberals have won. The outcome was inevitable once the European intelligentsia became too smart to believe in a God who enters human hearts.

The culture war that is not yet over is the war between the mad-dog liberals and the colored heathens. Whether the colored heathens are Moslem or some other variety of heathenism, the battle is the same. The post-Christian, mad-dog liberal thinks he can convert the Moslems and the colored heathens to liberalism. The classical liberals, such as Geert Wilders in Holland, keep telling the mad-dog liberals that the Moslems cannot be converted to liberalism. But the Wilders-type conservatives never include blacks in their 'cannot be converted' scenarios, nor do they equate the West with Christianity. When they say 'Western values' they are talking about the democratic traditions of a kinder, enlightened Jacobinism. Such reasoning shows us that the classical liberals are just as delusional as the mad-dog liberals. There cannot be an enlightened, kinder Jacobinism any more than there can be an enlightened, kinder Islam.

The mad-dog liberals will lose the cultural war with the colored heathens because liberalism is not a sustainable faith. But liberalism is not a death wish; we will always believe a lie when we use the science of liberalism to diagnose the ills of liberalism. Let us look at liberalism through the eyes of a Christian. The liberals are like unto the swine in the Gospel. They must, at all costs, flee from Jesus Christ. And they will join with any force that is opposed to Jesus Christ. Certainly this will lead to the liberals' destruction, but that is not what they hope for. They see themselves, in defiance of reality, as Atticus Finch leading a group of devoted blacks, Moslems, or some other tribe of colored heathens into the enlightened paradise of liberalism. The photo opps with Angela Merkel hugging adoring Moslems show us the liberals' fantasy of what

their brave new world will be like. Nothing will convince them that the reality will be quite different, because their hatred of the light blinds them to all reality.

The classical liberals led the European people into the ditch of mad-dog liberalism because they were blinded by their love of their God-given reason. When any gift of God is elevated above God, Satan enters in. The same classical liberal vs. mad-dog liberal scenario has been acted out in the organized Christian churches. In the Roman Catholic Church, for instance, the traditionalists, who are the classical liberals, want to restore the Catholic faith by restoring an older Latin rite. But they are blind to the fact that the rite is not a substitute for faith in Christ. When Pope Francis scolded the people who talked about Christ instead of the Church, he showed his affinity with the traditionalists at the deepest level. Their differences over rites is of no consequence compared to their agreement on the central issue – faith in Christ or faith in an organized, rational system called ‘the Church.’ The mini-Romes of organized Protestantism have followed the same path as the Roman Catholics; they have made a God of the system called the church and left Christ outside of that church. (1)

The age of prophecy is dead; there is no need for new prophets since He of whom the prophets spoke has come. But what has happened to the prophets’ vision of a God who enters human hearts? Has that vision died with the prophets? It was St. Paul’s mission to keep the prophetic vision before our eyes. Faith in Christ comes to us through, and is sustained by, the vision of our hearts. The circumcised heart, not the enlightened brain, unites us to God. If we ignore that vision, we deny the mystic vision of our people who saw that the living God was not a by-product of man’s reason, He was the beginning and the end of our heart’s desire for a God of mercy and love.

After a life spent in fear and trembling, under the merciless reign of Wackford Squeers of Dotheboys Hall, Smike is rescued by Nicholas Nickleby, the only man that ever showed him kindness and mercy. As they begin their lives in exile, Smike tells Nicholas that, “You are my home.” The European people took upon themselves the mantle of the prophets and said to Christ, “You are our home.” That intimate connection to God that is derided by the mad-dog liberals and dismissed as sentimental mush by the classical liberals is what is missing in the modern culture wars. It is the task of the Christian European to bring that intimacy with Christ, that vision of the love which passeth the understanding of the mind, back into the Europeans’ story.

The liberals, mad-dog and classical, believe that our home is a philosophical abstraction without a local habitation or name. That abstract home is missing our Savior, whom we know through the love that is engendered at our familial and racial hearth fire. As the darkness deepens, we can better appreciate the light. In order to share the prophets’ vision of the living God we must live in exile from our people; we must be among them but not of them until they leave the Babylonian night and return home. If we stay with St. Paul’s vision, which is the poetic vision of the antique Europeans, we can be a sign of contradiction to the Babylonian Europeans and a sign of hope for the wayward and lost children of Europe. +

---

(1) Caiaphas wanted Christ to die so that the system of organized Jewry, of which he was the head, could live. The clergy men of modern Christian Jewry have followed the same road as Caiaphas. They must kill the image of Christ in the hearts of His people so that their organizations can survive.

---

## **The Folly of God - February 24, 2018**

’Twas the hour when rites unholy  
Call’d each Paynim voice to prayer  
And the star that faded slowly  
Left to dews the freshen’d air

Day his sultry fires had wasted,  
Calm and cool the moonbeams shone,  
To the Vizier’s lofty palace  
One bold Christian came alone.

-Walter Scott

---

In a very moving farewell, a farewell that every school child of my father’s generation used to learn by heart, a repentant Cardinal Wolsey, the villain and the hero in Shakespeare’s Henry VIII, has this to say about the providence of God:

Had I but serv’d my God with half the zeal  
I serv’d my King, He would not in mine age

Have left me naked to mine enemies.

The sentiment becomes him – he is speaking from a heart overflowing with remorse for a life that has been spent pursuing Wolsey's will in preference to God's will. But is it true that God would not have left him naked to his enemies if he had followed God's will instead of his own will? Wolsey himself seems to have some awareness that the grace of God is not as simple as his concluding words suggest:

Corruption wins not more than honesty.  
Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace  
To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear not;  
Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's,  
Thy God's, and truth's; then, if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,  
Thou fall'st a blessed martyr!

Corruption does win more often than honesty, and the true Christian is often left naked to his enemies. Unless – and the 'unless' is all in all – this world is but a shadow of another world. Then we see God's special providence in a different light. He has not left us naked to the greatest enemy, which is Death. But nothing is to be gained by lying to ourselves about our prospects for success in this world if we follow the way of the cross. We will be hated by the rulers of the world in direct proportion to the extent that the world has rejected the Light of the world. There has never been a time since the Light of the world first took flesh and dwelt among us in which the hatred of the Light has been so intense. Naked to our enemies? Of course we are naked to our enemies. We might know that we should "endure our going hence even as we are coming hither" intellectually, but can our faith in the next world survive without some hope of God's protection and favor in this world? Only if we feel that God's favor and protection consists of spiritual gifts. If we believe that the vision He has vouchsafed us of His birth, crucifixion, and resurrection is worth all the kingdoms of this world then we will never feel naked to our enemies, because all such enemies – the apostate church men, the colored barbarians, and the liberals – represent the archangel Satan who was dealt a mortal blow by our Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

Hamlet asks what he should do while he is struggling between heaven and earth. And so it is with the antique European, the Christian European, struggling to maintain his faith while living in modern Europe, which belongs to Satan. How does he survive in Satandom without becoming part of Satandom? That is the question. Satan built his kingdom on this earth by working in and through the Christian churches. Once he got the European people to see God with the mind's eye rather than the heart's eye, he was able to make organizational Christianity the lodestar of the European people. When the dialectic becomes synonymous with Christianity, faith in Christ the Savior becomes an antiquated fable that mature science-minded men and women have left behind. Under the tyranny of the dialectic, the focus in the churches shifted away from Christ, the God above nature, to nature and the God within nature, the natural savage. There is a direct line between the dialectic theology of the great medieval scholastic and Pope Francis's assertion that the savages of the Amazon rain forest constitute the "heart of the church." There has never been a time, since Satan first entered human affairs, in which he has had a greater moral ascendancy over mankind than in our present age. And he has achieved that moral ascendancy by the age old temptation, the pride of intellect, disguised in the form of virtuous theologians, philosophers, scientists, and psychologists, all united in their utopian vision of mankind, whether it is called Jacobinism, communism, or democracy.

King Alfred, on his death bed, told his sons to keep the law. But Alfred was talking about the law based on the Gospel of Christ, the law that he had spread throughout the kingdom of Britain. He was not telling his sons to defend some abstract principle of the law, independent of its Christian roots. But that is precisely what we are commanded to do in modern Europe; we are commanded to obey an abstract law that has no Christian foundation. When we obey the law of the modern democracies we are obeying Satan's law. There is no road in our modern democratic utopian world that does not lead to hell. Can we vote the devil out of office? How is that possible when Satan runs the elections? Can we get rid of the devil by getting signatures on a petition? How is that possible when Satan is the one who will receive the petition? The devil will not depose himself. When we attack the devil through the democratic process we are seeking the impossible: we are seeking redemption from the devil.

All the leaders of the modern democracies say that their power comes from the people. Who are the people who have given them power? They are a universal people, a people without a racial or religious identity. They are an aggregate herd devoid of that which is essential to distinguish human beings from cattle. They are without pietas, that special bond that connects us to a particular people and a particular God. This is the danger of working within the democratic process. You can only enter that process if you leave your humanity and the humane God behind.

Look at the pro-life movement. The pro-lifers appealed to the murderers through the same process that the murderers used to slaughter the innocents. Then look at the anti-Moslem initiative of the Britain First party. They did not launch their attack in the name of white Christian Britain, they launched their attack in the name of an abstract universalist Britain. And such abstract, universalist appeals always result in the application of the "all are equal, but some are more

equal” doctrine of the Jacobins. The pro-lifers, seeking to oppose the liberals, always make sure they equate abortion with slavery. And Tommy Robinson, the British anti-Moslem activist, never tires of telling the liberals that most of his friends are black. Do such appeals work? No, they don’t. The liberals do not have to accept half a loaf when they already have the whole loaf. They have a universalist kingdom of hell on earth, why should they allow a tiny remnant of what was once Christian Europe to survive?

Satan got Adam and Eve to sever their filial relationship with God by appealing to their pride of science. When Christ restored our humanity on the cross, He re-established that filial bond between God and man that was severed by Adam and Eve’s sin. It has not been easy for Satan, but he has managed, over the centuries, to establish his ascendancy over man by establishing the superiority of the scientized mind over the heart that loves. St. Paul’s assertion that the folly of God is wiser than the wisdom of men has been countermanded by Satan. His credo, that “the wisdom of the scientized mind is greater than the foolishness of God,” has been accepted by the modern European. And the democratic process is the mechanism that Satan uses to spread his doctrine and maintain it. We must always be going forward in democracy, forward to a “some are more equal than others” black state, forward to a universalist religion which bans Christ, and forward to a universalist, democratic state of liberty, fraternity, and equality, which has no room for pietas.

The conservatives always tell us if we abandon the democratic process we will cease to be civilized people, because in their mind’s eye democracy and civilization are synonymous. Is that true? Is the democratic way the civilized way? What has democracy brought us? It has brought us the worship of the noble black savage, the slaughter of the innocents, the legitimization of sexual perversion, and the criminalization of pietas under the blanket condemnation of “racism.” It seems to me that democracy has nothing to do with civilization, but it has everything to do with the evil one who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

If we abandon democracy, aren’t we giving up? No, we are simply waking up to the fact that we cannot seek redemption from the devil. If a violent counter-revolution is not possible, it does not follow that there is nothing left for the white Christian but a passive acquiescence to his own extermination. To recognize one’s helplessness in the face of a satanic, malevolent foe is the beginning of the wisdom that comes from the vision of a Christian heart. If we see existence with the interior eye of the heart we will have the folly of God in our hearts, which is the only wisdom worth having. Christ, on the cross, asked God why He had forsaken Him. But He didn’t stop believing in His heavenly father. He fought through the God-forsakenness of this world and commended His spirit to God. I do not think any man, that but man is, can fail to feel God-forsaken in modern Satandom. But that is what Satan wants. He has made white pietas the original sin, and he has built a democratic citadel of evil to protect his theocratic empire of darkness. Is there a European who will walk into that citadel alone, still believing, despite the seemingly God-forsakenness of the night, that Christ will walk beside him? The wisdom of this world only tells us that we shall never see that type of man again. But the folly of God tells us something different. In life and death, O Lord, abide with us. +

---

## Christian Leaven- February 17, 2018

We are such stuff as dreams are made on. – *The Tempest*

---

In my junior and senior high school days I subscribed to a magazine called *Strength and Health*, which was published by Bob Hoffman, the founder of the York Barbell Company. I once tried, without consulting my mother, to bake a loaf of “muscle bread,” using the ingredients suggested in a recipe from the magazine. Some of the ingredients, if I remember correctly, were wheat germ, rice polishings, black strap molasses, brewer’s yeast, and whole wheat flour. Yum, yum! I put all the ingredients together, poured the mixture into a bread pan, and then placed it into the oven to bake at the recommended temperature. The result was a disaster. I had left out one essential ingredient – I had neglected to add yeast. The bread came out as a non-bread, resembling a slab of mud.

Now, other than revealing that I was just as stupid as a young man as I am now as an old man, what was the point of that story? Where am I going with it? I’m going to our modern conservatives who think that you can have a sound, functioning democracy without Christian leaven. To the extent that any of the European democracies worked, prior to the 20th century, they worked because the European people still were the Christian leaven that kept Europe from descending into the Babylonian night of paganism. But without the Christian leaven there can be no democratic governments like the ones that most Europeans of the 20th century, who were living off the leftover Christian leaven of the 19th century, grew up with. Let’s look at some obvious contrasts between our current society, which has no Christian leaven, and a European society of some 60 or 70 years past that still possessed a modicum of Christian leaven held over from the 19th century. First, in the Christian Leaven age the arguments over abortion were about how to punish those performing abortions and how to prevent women from having them. That is something that a Christian people (the leaven) can debate. But can you

have democratic debates with non-humans who think the right to murder babies in their mothers' wombs is a sacred right? Of course you can't.

A second example is the illegal immigration issue. In times past, the debate was over how strict a punishment was to be meted out to illegals and how to best protect our borders. Now there are no restrictions on illegal aliens, and all those who try to impose restrictions are stopped dead in their tracks. So again we must ask – can you have a democratic debate with people who are determined to make common cause with your enemies?

Let us proceed to a third example – in the past if a sodomite was caught on a school campus trying to persuade school children to adopt a homosexual lifestyle, the debate would have been over the punishment for the sodomite and over the best way to ensure that such loathsome creatures stayed away from school children. Now sodomy is taught as a lifestyle option in the schools, along with every other perversion that used to be proscribed by law in societies held together by Christian leaven. Can you debate with those who advance an agenda of sexual perversion? No, you cannot.

I shouldn't have to go on. You can supply a hundred more examples. The point is that you cannot affect positive change within the confines of a democratic government unless there is a common consensus among the people about what is right and what is wrong. For thousands of years the common consensus of the European people about what was right and wrong came from Christianity. That has been changed. The common consensus among the ruling elites of the European nations is that everything Christian is wrong and everything liberal, which translates to satanic, is right. And what about the people? They fall into Yeats's paradigm: "they lack all conviction." The Breitbarbers, the Drudges, and the conservative coalition-type organizations can pump out all the information they like that shows the evil that liberals do. And they can point out the non-democratic nature of the liberals' tyrannical regime, but they are as sounding brass and tinkling cymbals because they are proceeding according to the business-as-usual formula: "Bring evil policies to the forefront of the public, and the people will put pressure on the government to change those policies." That is no longer possible without a Christian leaven sustaining society. There are virtually no Christians left to put pressure on the government officials, and there are absolutely no government officials willing to respond to any appeal from a white person who is even tangentially connected to Christianity.

I have a vivid memory, from some 25 years ago, of a protest launched in my area by a group of white housewives in a white enclave of the city. They had come out of their homes to protest the projected building of federally funded high rise apartments in the middle of their neighborhood. Of course the women knew what the building of the apartments meant. It meant the end of their neighborhood and quite possibly, if they didn't have the money to move out, it meant the death of some or all of the members of their families. But the high rise apartments were built, and the black marauders that came with the high rise apartments did what black marauders do everywhere: they destroyed a peaceful white neighborhood and the people who lived there. During the futile protest the newsmen caught one woman on camera, a woman with two children in a baby stroller. She hurled one desperate, angry plea at the cameras, which represented the cold, heartless face of modern Satandom: "Everyone has rights in this stinkin' country but white people." Ah, there's the rub. That woman deserved damnation, she was a racist! And so are all white people who try to hold on to any remnant of white Christian Europe. She was a white mother with white children, and everything white must perish, "so it is written, so it shall be." That is the unholy decree of the liberals.

The democratic process has been a very convenient tool of the mad-dog liberals, but they never believed in it like the liberal-conservatives. This last Presidential election was further proof of the lack of regard that liberals have for the democratic process. Trump won, but everything is proceeding as if he lost. And that is perfectly in keeping with the liberals' ethos. They have one goal and one goal only – the destruction of the white race. They will use the democratic process if it facilitates the destruction of the white race, and they will disregard it when it doesn't facilitate the destruction of the white race. In contrast, the conservatives have one main goal. They want to show the world that they are the true followers of the democratic way. They tell atrocity stories and point out the non-democratic nature of liberals so that white people will vote white. But there are no white candidates who want to destroy liberalism running for any political office in any European nation. And if there was one, he wouldn't be elected because the Christian Europeans have been absorbed into the belly of the liberal leviathan.

The democracy-loving conservatives have made a god of the democratic process just as the organizational Christians have made a god of "the church." It is time, in fact it is long past time, to step away from the chains of democracy which have bound the white man to the same rock the cruel gods of Greece bound Prometheus. We are not conceding the field to the liberals if we break away from democracy, we are finally, after years of ignoble surrender, beginning to fight back. When will whites fight instead of submitting to the democratic slaughter of the white race? Possibly never. It all depends on the Christian leaven. Without Christ the white race shall perish, because Christ is our lodestar, and men without a lodestar cannot be men.

Now that the liberals are proceeding to build a brave new world without any Christian heaven, we are constantly supping on the horrors of the liberals' machinations. Recently I read a news report of a Scottish cleric's proposal to ship boatloads of Moslems to the Isle of Skye. That was a particularly bitter pill to swallow, because I spent some time on the Isle of Skye when I was in my early twenties. The island, peopled with kind, generous white men and women, seemed to be as close as a man could get to heaven on the earthly side of the divide. Shortly after I read that news item, I had a dream that I was on the Isle of Skye. At the top of what I would describe as a monstrous hill or a small mountain was an enormous half-breed man, half Scottish, half-black, wearing a kilt. Before him were all the inhabitants of Skye. The giant black screamed that he was the new Scotland and the new Europe, and everyone, except me, screamed with joy. Then the black giant bid the multitude kneel and do homage to him. I refused. I will shorten the rest of the narrative – what then ensued was a struggle to the death. I ran up the hill to strike the giant, but he just picked me up with ease and threw me down the hill. All through the night I charged up the hill and was thrown back down the hill. But the black giant weakened at each assault, and I gained strength. At the break of day I was standing at the top of the hill and the giant black was lying in a heap at the bottom of the hill. I shouted that I stood for the old Scotland and the old Europe, and the people cheered.

Now, I do not believe in prophetic dreams, because the age of prophesy is dead. Nor can I take any credit for being the hero of my own dream. Aren't we always the hero of our dreams? But I relate that dream because it is a slightly more dramatic version of my waking dream. I want a white Christian Europe, and I want to do my part to make that dream a reality. I often wonder if any other white men dream about a white Christian Europe. It doesn't seem to me that they do. Their dreams seem to be democratic dreams. The mad dog liberals dream of a black paradise devoid of white people, and the liberal conservatives' dream of a multi-racial conservative state controlled by their managerial brains. The dream is father to the act. If we do not dream of a white, Christian Europe we will never forsake the democratic night of Europe and seek the glorious light of His eternal Europe.

In the 1950's Denmark and Sweden seemed to be the perfect white nations. They had achieved a remarkable balance between socialism and free enterprise. They rejected the excesses of Russian communism and American capitalism, which enabled them to avoid the social unrest that plagued other European nations. But the seemingly happy state of those Scandinavian nations was the result of the Christian heaven left over from their Christian past. When there was no more Christian heaven, Denmark and Sweden succumbed to racial and sexual Babylon. Now those model white nations are hell holes. But still the liberals and the liberal conservatives bid us plow ahead in order to make all European nations into model democracies, despite the failures of the utopian democratic nations of Sweden and Denmark. All of Europe shall fall unless we walk away from democracy and take up arms in defense of a non-democratic, white Christian Europe. But that will not happen until the European people have a passionate desire to become part of the Christ story once again. +

---

### **This Will Ever Be Our Story - February 10, 2018**

And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. –Revelations 21: 4

---

Liberals within the organizational structures of the anti-Christian Christian churches, individuals such as Francis the blasphemer, view Christ as a revolutionary. From the perspective of that type of Christian atheist all things liberal are Christian. This allows the organizational Christian to keep Christ the liberal as one of his gods in a pantheon of heathen gods. Of course all gods in the liberals' pantheon are subordinate to the sacred negro, just as all gods in the Greek pantheon were subordinate to Zeus.

The neo-pagan, whose prototype is Edward Gibbon, also sees Christ as a revolutionary. And because he sees Christ as a revolutionary he attacks Christianity for destroying what he views as the heart and soul of the European civilization – their pagan Greco-Roman heritage. Is Christ a revolutionary? If He is not the Son of God, then of course He is a revolutionary. He was the great destroyer of the ancient Jews' civilization, the Icelandic-Celtic civilizations, and the Greco-Roman civilizations. But what if He was the Son of God? Then the narrative changes. He was not the destroyer of the ancient Jews' religion, He was the fulfillment of it. He was not the great destroyer of what was good in the pagan religions, He was the embodiment of all that was humane and noble in the pagan gods. What He destroyed was all that was ignoble and inhuman.

Christ restored our humanity on the cross; He reconciled us to our Father, from whom the devil separated us when he enticed Adam and Eve to join him in his revolt against God. So how can Christ, who fought and still fights against the king of liberals, be called a revolutionary? He can't.

The only way you can make Christ into a revolutionary is to rewrite the European story. You must make the claim that the Europeans got it wrong – "Christ never said he was the son of God," or, "The Christ story is a fairy story." You must spread

those narratives and others like them if you are going to make war on the European people and their culture in the name of Christianity. If the European people's witness is true, if the European Christ, who is the Christ of the Gospels, is the one true God, then the culture of the antique Europeans must be defended, preserved, and passed on to every succeeding generation of Europeans. But are there any liberals or liberal conservatives, in church or out of church, who are trying to pass on the faith of the Christian Europeans? No, there are not. There are a variety of fusionist faiths – the Judeo-Christian-and-negro faith, the Islamic-Christian-and-negro faith, and the technocratic-liberal-and-negro faith, but there is no Christian European faith that is being passed on. How can there be any sustainable resistance to liberalism when there is no Christian, European opposition to liberalism? There can't be. You cannot bring up white women to shun motherhood and hate the white European male and expect a good outcome, just because you manage to elect a white, moderate liberal to office.

The cultural revolution has been completed. The European nations have gone from Christendom to Liberaldom. A democratic band aid will not stop the white Europeans from hemorrhaging. Look at Trump's election in this country. It was enjoyable to see the liberals squirm a bit, but has Trump really been able to put a stop to the liberals' ongoing persecution of the white race? Of course he hasn't. And Trump is the very best man you'll ever get within the confines of Jacobin democracy. I know a few decent individuals, all plus 70 years, hiding out in the corners of Liberaldom. These individuals frequently ask, "How did all this happen?" What can I say to them that is simple enough to be understood without doing a disservice to the truth? I tell them that the European people took the cross of Christ into their hearts. And with that cross they took the hope of His resurrection from the dead into their hearts as well. Without that hope in the resurrection, the cross becomes an unbearable pain at the center of the European's heart. When the rationalism from within the church joined forces with the science from outside the church, the European people lost their faith. All that was left to them was the pain of the crucifixion without the hope of the resurrection. Liberalism represents the attempt by the white Europeans to eliminate the pain that is in their hearts. They hate all things white and Christian with a passionate hatred of incredible intensity, because they associate all things white and Christian with pain and suffering. All of the white man's ties to his kith and kin must be destroyed, because such ties belong to the Christian era of the European people. And everything from that era belongs, from the liberals' point of view, to pain and suffering: "Better to look to science for the relief of pain and suffering, and to the negro in order to fulfill our need to worship."

Look to our universities. There we see the unadulterated evil that is our future, where the words 'fatherhood' and 'motherhood' are being banned. Soon, if we go by what is preached from the university pulpits, heterosexual marriage will be banned unless it is a biracial marriage. White women will be allowed an infinity of abortions, but they will not be allowed to give birth to white babies. It's all part of the flight from the crucifixion without the hope in the resurrection.

Where do the colored races come into the Europeans' narrative? They never took the cross of Christ or the hope of His resurrection from the dead into their hearts, so they have never suffered through the pain that accompanies a loss of faith. Their hatred of the white race lacks the spiritual intensity of the liberals, but they are quite willing to utilize the liberals' hatred to serve the ends of their more moderate hatred of all things white and Christian. The great mistake of conservatives such as John Tyndall and Samuel Francis was their assumption that white liberals could be induced to vote white by reasoning with them. You can't reason with a liberal any more than you can reason with a rattlesnake. You must either kill it or run from it. A hate based on a flight from the cross can only be defeated by faith in the God who died on the cross in order that we might live.

This maniacal, frenzied desire of the liberals to blend with the black race stems from their attempt to ease the pain of white men, which is the pain of the cross. Can they ever remove the pain? No, they cannot. But they can pass on a purer paganism, unpolluted by the cross of Christ, to their biracial children. That is what the race war is all about – the worship of the negro has become the liberals' hope for salvation. But is it salvation? It is meant to alleviate pain and suffering in this world by providing liberals with an escape from the cross, but will it really alleviate their suffering? I don't see that happening. If it weren't for all the pain and suffering the liberals inflict on other people, we would have to pity them because their negro gods are failing to make them happy. And what about the next world? Can the liberals' disbelief in the next world change the reality of the next world? Negro worship betrays the white man in this world and the next.

The change from a culture in which the people held the crucifixion of Christ and the resurrection of Christ in their hearts, to a culture in which the people do not believe in the resurrection and seek to purge the cross of Christ from their hearts, took place gradually during the 20th century. Now that the change is complete, we are witnessing something the world has never seen before. We see before our eyes thoroughly demonic un-men, the white liberals, who have allied themselves with the colored heathens in order to hunt down and destroy the last remnants of white, Christian humanity. We now live in a world where charity and mercy, the true Christian charity and mercy, have been eliminated from the face of the earth. To say that we live in a cold, unforgiving world devoid of humanity is a gross understatement. Absolutely nothing remains of the human conduits to the God whose love passeth all understanding.



Burke, in his *Reflections on the French Revolution*, said that we were spending “the unbought grace of life.” And Herbert Butterfield wrote, in 1950, that the European people were existing on the fumes of Christianity. Now that the unbought grace of life is spent and the fumes have faded, what is left to us? Do we try to compromise with liberalism? Do we become Christian Jews, neo-pagans, or Roman Catholic Moslems? From whence cometh our strength to endure life without the cross, which leads to the sure and certain hope of the resurrection from the dead?

The answer to “from whence cometh our strength?” is the cross of Christ. There is no hope without the cross. It is vital that we look at our modern European culture with the visionary eye of a Christian heart, the heart of an antique European, because we must see how spiritually desolate and hopeless we are without the cross that leads to the resurrection. The tears shed by the Christian with a longing for Christ will not be spent in vain. St. John wept when he was shown the spiritual desolation of a world in which no one was worthy to open the book sealed with seven seals.

And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

Of what practical value was the book of seven seals which the Lamb of God opened? It seemed to comfort John, but wasn't he deranged? I link St. John on the Isle of Patmos to Daniel. Neither man understood the vision vouchsafed to him in a way that could be explained by reference to philosophy or theology, but in their hearts they understood. They saw life feelingly, and consequently they knew about the mystery of the cross and Christ's incredible love for His people. That intuitive, visionary, heartfelt understanding of the Christ story became the European people's story. They cannot write themselves out of that story without writing themselves out of existence. Weep for the death of Christian Europe as our Lord wept at the death of Lazarus and as St. John wept before the closed book of the seven seals. If we weep for that which is lost, He will dry our tears and show us that which is lost has not been lost; it lives in Him and through Him. Christ the revolutionary? No, a thousand times no, He is the great preserver and we, His people, will defend the vision of His undying love for us against the modern world of blaspheming liberals who bid us abandon the cross and our hope for the resurrection of the dead. To maintain the vision is all in all. That is what it means to be a European. +

---

### **Protecting All That We Hold Dear - February 3, 2018**

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that [[171]] obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. –Burke in *Letters on a Regicide Peace*

---

“Wouldn't it be dreadful if some day in our own world, at home, men started going wild inside, like the animals here, and still looked like men, so that you'd never know which were which?” –Lucy in *Prince Caspian*

---

I saw the May 2017 *National Geographic* magazine cover of the naked white woman and the naked black male, with its accompanying articles celebrating the replacement of the white race by the black race, on a Canadian nationalist site. The picture is unadulterated bestiality, but as disgusting as the picture was, it was not as obscene as the articles celebrating the death of white people and the triumph of black people. Can there be any doubt that this ‘glorious’ destruction of the white race that the liberals celebrate is a celebration of the death of God? If His image in man is destroyed, can there be faith on earth? The liberals cannot actually kill God, but they can remove Him as a force for good in this world if they destroy His image in man by destroying the Christ-bearing race. And ‘this world only’ is all the liberals care about. They will have the negro as their god, because the negro represents the antithesis of the white. When the negro is deified, the image of God in man is replaced by the image of man the beast. The superiority of the biracial man, which the liberals celebrate, is the superiority of all things bestial and perverted over all things human and all values stemming from a connection to the humane God.

This attack on God via the negro has been and continues to be a multipronged attack. First is the vilification campaign. Every evil under the sun is ascribed to the white male acting in history. Then there is economic disenfranchisement. White males are last in line for employment behind white females and males of the colored races, thus giving added inducement for white females who want children to find colored males as the fathers of their children. And the third phase of the attack is the outright murder of whites. This takes place in all nations where blacks are in the majority (Rhodesia and South Africa) and to a somewhat lesser degree in nations where blacks have not yet become a majority (the Western European nations and their offshoots, the U.S., Canada, Australia, New Zealand, etc.). But even in those nations, black-on-white violence is given a semi-official sanction by the liberals' indifference to black-on-white violence.

It's too late in the United States and most of the nations of Western Europe to prevent the destruction of the white race by closing off the borders. There are too many non-Europeans in these nations already. If whites in those nations want to survive, they must drive out the non-Europeans who have invaded their nations. They must also make sure that no liberal ever has a place in the government of a white nation again. That is what must happen if whites in the United States and the Western European countries are going to survive. Voting for white candidates such as Trump and voting to leave the European Union is like putting band aids on cancer. Such measures are not going to stop the ongoing extermination of the white race. Are the European people willing to drive the colored heathens from their lands and put the liberals in prison? Of course they aren't. But no whites have ever survived, let alone thrived, as a people, in black-dominated countries. That is the nature of the beast, which the *National Geographic* liberals celebrate. (1) The negro knows only bloodlust and cruelty; he does not know charity and mercy. Is this the promised end? "Yes, it is," the liberals tell us. Our end is to be either blended with the black race or, if we refuse to be blended, to be slaughtered by the black race with the aid of the Christ-hating, white-hating liberals.

The situation in the Eastern European nations, vis-à-vis the barbarians of color and the white race, differs only in degree, not in kind, from the U.S. and the nations of Western Europe. The Eastern European nations can stop their own destruction if they close off their borders to the barbarians of color, but they have shown no moral awareness of the necessity of preserving their race. Unlike the white Europeans in Western Europe, they have shown some willingness to place restrictions on the Moslem invaders, but they all declare they are not racist; they say they welcome the people of color, providing that they abide by their laws and respect their culture. But that is sheer fantasy and madness. When have the colored heathens ever respected white culture? It's only a matter of time before those nations succumb to black messianism unless they realize what every European prior to the 20th century knew – a man's race is part of his soul. And the white man's soul was consecrated to Christ. If he sacrifices his racial identity to the heathen gods of color, he has sacrificed his soul.

Race mixing is the devil's attempt to imitate the incarnation of Christ. In point of fact, everything the devil does – he is not an original fellow – is a mock imitation of God. We are told, in Genesis 6: 1-5, that Satan sent his angels into the world and they went "unto the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually." Doesn't that describe the spirit of our own times? Aren't the imaginations of the liberals who dream of a paradise of black barbarism full of wickedness and depravity? Of course they are. And it appears that the liberals are running things. But they have never faced any opposition. They constantly claim that there are white supremacists like Trump and the newsman Tucker Carlson who are trying to impose, horror of horrors, an all-white nation upon them, but that is a lie. Trump and Carlson have simply called for whites to be included in Liberaldom. They have never talked about destroying Liberaldom and rebuilding white, Christian Europe. And such men never will. They are stuck in moderate-liberal land, unable to grasp the fact that the essence of liberalism is ever onward and onward until mankind has reached the deepest pit of hell, which the liberals insist is a black paradise.

The term 'white supremacist' is used for any white who is not categorically in favor of the destruction of the white race. But in reality all whites should be white supremacists if white supremacy means that no black or any person of color should ever have any power or rights of citizenship in a white nation. That type of white supremacism is the only Christian response to the liberals' ongoing war against the white race. How could a genuine Christian, a European, consent to the destruction of his people and to the incarnation of Satan by allowing black barbarism, fused with liberalism, into the heart of what was once Christian Europe? He can't, which is why the survival of the white race is eternally linked to the survival of the Christian faith. Men who have truly taken Christ into their hearts do not permit the rule of liberals or the triumph of black barbarism.

We shall never see the old Christian Europe, which encompassed a large geographical land mass, again. But wherever there are white people who have taken Christ into their hearts and refused to bend their knees to the colored gods of Liberaldom we shall see Christian Europe. The numbers will not be large; maybe as in Noah's time there will only be one faithful family left. But we are supposed to stay faithful until our Lord returns. It seems like our present generation of apostate Europeans has surpassed every evil civilization that was destroyed in the Bible. But we know neither the day nor the hour of the Son of Man's return. Until that time we are all like unto Hamlet:

Not a whit; we defy augury. There's a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes? Let be.

The foolishness of God, which the apostle Paul tells us is wiser than the wisdom of men, was once a part of the European's soul. That foolishness told him, not by way of the syllogism, but by way of an instinct bred in the bone, that all human endeavor that is consecrated to Christ is not in vain. If we defy the augury of the liberals, who command us to worship the

negro, and stay faithful to our white, Christian hearth fire, we will have done what we were born to do: To hold the banner of Christ crucified, Christ risen aloft in defiance of the Satanic principalities and powers of this world only.

The spiritual destruction of Europe, which has been brought on by the liberals' apostasy from the Christian faith and the subsequent repopulation of Europe with colored heathens, is a spectacle that should make us weep. But should we despair? It's often difficult not to despair. However, we should note that the European peoples, even when Europe was strong and Christian, were still a minority vis-à-vis the world. Granted, if you count the liberals as non-Europeans, the Europeans are now a minority in their own nations. But still, if you are fighting against an enemy that outnumbers you one hundred thousand to one or an enemy that outnumbers you one million to one, isn't the struggle the same? The European Christian has always believed that the internal battle within his own soul is all in all. If we win that battle, our external enemies will also fall. That bit of foolishness is not my invention – it constitutes the wisdom of St. Paul and the wisdom of our people when they were a people.

The race question comes down to this – Are we going to stand by while the liberals and the colored barbarians destroy all our human relationships that connect us to the living God? Our race is our brothers and our sisters, our fathers and our mothers, and our wives and our children. Can we sacrifice those closest to us on the altars of the black gods of Liberaldom and still retain one shred of human dignity? We most certainly cannot. But the liberals tell us that there are no human beings; there are only beasts born of nature and destined to return to nature. The European, even if he is the last European, will hold to a different reality. He will stay with the living God who reigns in the hearts of all Europeans who believe in the Christ of the European hearth fire. +

---

(1) Some cookie-cutter conservatives have lamented the change in the formerly 'family oriented' National Geographic magazine. That is nonsense. The good, solid, family magazine always celebrated the purely biological, evolutionary view of mankind. It was inevitable that such a magazine would finally place the biological man, the noble black savage, on the throne of their biological dung heap.

---

### **They Do But Sleep - January 27, 2018**

I am the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?

—John 11: 25-26

---

Let me again make reference to the battle cry of the German left-wing rioters – “We bring you hell!” That has always been the goal of the liberals: to bring us hell on earth. But this is the first time since the days of the French Revolution that the liberals have taken off their masks and explicitly told the world they hate all things white and Christian and love everything white Christians once called demonic. The post-Robespierre French Jacobins had to cloak their Jacobinism with democratic slogans because they discovered that the world was not quite ready for pure, unadulterated hell. Will the new Jacobins of the left pull in their fangs because the world is still not ready for hell on earth? I don't think they will. The European people have lost their hearts; they no longer have the ability to see evil and be sickened by it. Hence, they have no desire to fight evil. The left commits one outrage after another, and the European people accept the outrages with a vague hope that they can find a safe haven somewhere in the country or suburbia. But like the Red Death in Poe's story, the liberals' hell will envelop all of Europe. The Red Death of liberalism can enter anywhere.

The liberals have taken off their masks because they no longer fear any opposition. In the 1950's through the 1960's, the liberals exercised some caution. Negro worship was cloaked in civil rights rhetoric, and legalized abortion, legalized sodomy, and feminism were presented as compassion issues. And the great lie that presented the triumph of evil over good as a triumph of progressive, compassionate thinking over reactionary, mean-spirited thinking was accepted by the European people. It was accepted because the European leaders in the European schools, governments, universities, and churches were liberals.

The people, in the main, will follow their leaders. If their leaders are determined to create hell on earth, the grazers will try to maneuver within the perimeters of hell on earth to make the best deal for themselves economically, but they will not try to break away from the liberals' world, and they most certainly will not try to destroy the liberals' world. How can they? Once they have accepted the liberals' lie that all that is good lies within the confines of Liberaldom and all that is evil lies outside of Liberaldom, they are trapped. The train bound for glory in the old song does not take any “high tone women” or “midnight rambles,” etc. The liberals tell us that their train is bound for glory, but in reality it is bound for hell. Their train won't take any pro-apartheid men, no Christian women, no segregationists, no pro-lifers, etc. And the grazers must conform, because they believe that liberalism is light, and everything outside of liberalism belongs to the night, where

inhuman creatures prowl about the world, in imitation of the devil, seeking the destruction of integrated societies, reproductive freedom, and every other hard-won “freedom” of modern man.

I frequently hear, when I talk of the need for white Christian leadership, that there can be no leaders if the people will not follow. That is not how leadership, at least Christian leadership, works. The true leader acts according to that which is within. His heart responds to Christ’s heart. If no one follows, the Christian knight does not falter. Leonidas declared that Sparta would fight whether others fought or not. The Christian European should surpass the courage of the pagan warrior.

When public figures such as Trump, Putin, and Viktor Orbán say and do things that are supportive of the European people, we should support them. But ultimately it is not to democratically elected officials that we should look to save the European people. Moderate liberals such as Trump, Putin and Orbán are still trapped within the confines of liberalism. And the essence of liberalism is the destruction of the white, Christ-bearing race. We must return to white Christian Europe; nothing else will save the European people and nothing else will fulfill our mission as the Christ-bearing race.

Pope Francis the blasphemer recently went to the Amazon rain forest in order to tell the indigenous peoples of the Amazon, as distinct from the evil, non-indigenous white people, that they represented the “heart of the Church.” Oh really? I thought Christ was the heart of the Church. The great blasphemer went on to scold white people for trying to destroy the culture of the good, indigenous people of the Amazon. What a colossal, self-serving, hypocritical, back-sliding, gutter snipe. Why are the European people not allowed to defend their culture against the assault of colored barbarians who are not indigenous to Europe? The answer is simple – the liberals have decreed that whites are evil and the noble savages of color are good. And Pope Francis the blasphemer is a liberal.

All nations that have ever existed are formed and molded by the religious beliefs of their people. If the people are headhunters, the institutions of their society will support headhunting. If they are devotees of voodoo, Hinduism, or some other heathen faith, they will structure their societies accordingly. The European people were no different from the heathens; they structured their societies based on their faith. But the Europeans were different from all other people in one crucial regard, and that one thing is everything: The European people abandoned heathenism for Christ. And as a result of their new-found faith, they changed the structures of their societies. Christianity was institutionalized. Every leader of those European societies was judged according to Christian standards. Most leaders fell woefully short of the standard; there were very few like Alfred the Great. But there was a definite code of ethics the European people looked for in a leader. The leader was respected and followed according to how well he lived up to the European code of honor, which was rooted in the European people’s faith in Christ.

The American Revolution, the French Revolution, and the various democratic revolutions throughout the European nations in the mid-1800’s were the initial attempts of the liberals to impose a new religion on the European people. Prior to those revolutions, heathenism was a hole-in-corner religion in Europe. The gypsies described by Walter Scott in *Quentin Durward*, a people with no determinate race or religion, were an example of the anti-Christian element in Christian Europe. It was the liberals’ goal to make Europe a safe haven for people of the non-white races and for people who were opposed to the Christian faith. For centuries after the democratic revolutions, the new religion (which was the old heathenism blended with Christianity) contained Christian elements, because the liberals had learned, from Robespierre, that the people could not be completely weaned from Christianity in one stunning revolutionary moment; there had to be more of a gradual transformation from Christianity to liberal-heathenism. That gradual transformation is now complete. The new religion of the European people is the old heathenism with the added dynamic of post-Christian demonism.

In Rembrandt’s spiritual journey from a painter of religious themes, which his mind perceived to be good subjects for a painting, to a man who took the word of God into his heart and sought to put that vision on canvas, we see the path the Christian European must take. We must stop making church structures and church organizations our gods. Instead we must cling to the living God whom Rembrandt found when he searched the Holy Scriptures with his heart. When the Church writ large replaces Christ we end up in the Amazon rain forest, worshipping the noble savages of color. We should never forget that Rousseau considered himself a Christian. He affirmed an intellectual belief in Christianity as an organized religion while giving his heart to the noble savage. The fusionist Christian and the secular liberal are united in their apostasy from the living God. And they are both united in their hatred of the Christ-bearing race. The fusionist is the more dangerous of the two because he is the wolf in sheep’s clothing. The secular liberals and the fusionist Christians are manically focused on race, yet they dogmatically proclaim that Christianity has nothing to do with race. What is going on? What is behind the doublespeak? The devil is behind the liberal-fusionist shell game. He knows that Christ comes to us through His divine humanity. It is only the human heart, the humble, loving heart that can “receive Him still.” If you kill European pietas, which can only be nurtured at our racial hearth fire, you will have blocked Christ’s entry into human lives.

The devil always makes his overtures to mankind through the mind. He appeals to what Chateaubriand called “the pride of science.” So we can see why the secular liberals and the fusionist Christians, who hate the living God who took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans, want to destroy the European people. They fear them because they hate Christ and they do not want the sleeping Europeans to awaken and place Him back on the throne of Europe. It doesn’t seem like the liberal-fusionist Satanists have anything to worry about, but they want to make sure the white race is dead, so they can be truly happy with their new spouse, the noble savage. And maybe they are right to be worried. The Princess in the Sleeping Beauty tale slept for one hundred years before a King’s Son, who was willing to hew his way through the Forest of Thorns, awakened her with his kiss. (1) Isn’t that the path the Christian European leader must follow? He must love his sleeping people enough to fight his way to their side and awaken them. He must, through his fidelity to the King of Kings, show them the true vision of Christ, shorn of intellectual sophistry and loathsome couplings with the heathen faiths. Is such a mission likely to succeed in this our modern age? Who cares about what is likely; we only care about what is Christian. The European leader believes in fairy tales, especially in the one true fairy tale of the Christ who enters human hearts. +

---

(1) And down she falls in death-like sleep: they lay her on her bed,  
And all around her sink to rest—a palace of the dead!  
A hundred years pass—still they sleep, and all around the place  
A wood of thorns has risen up—no path a man can trace.  
At last, a King’s son, in the hunt, asked how long it had stood,  
And what old towers were those he saw above the ancient wood.

An aged peasant told of an enchanted palace, where  
A sleeping King and Court lay hid, and sleeping Princess fair.  
Through the thick wood, that gave him way, and past the thorns that drew  
Their sharpest points another way, the King’s son presses through.  
He reached the guard, the court, the hall,—and there, where’er he slept,  
He saw the sentinels, and grooms, and courtiers as they slept.

Ladies in act to smile, and pages in attendance wait;  
The horses slept within their stalls, the dogs about the gate.  
The King’s son presses on, into an inner chamber fair,  
And sees, laid on a silken bed, a lovely lady there;  
So sweet a face, so fair—was never beauty such as this;  
He stands—he stoops to gaze—he kneels—he wakes her with a kiss.

He leads her forth: the magic sleep of all the Court is o’er,—  
They wake, they move, they talk, they laugh, just as they did of yore  
A hundred years ago. The King and Queen awake, and tell  
How all has happed, rejoicing much that all has ended well.  
They hold the wedding that same day, with mirth and feasting good—  
The wedding of the Prince and Sleeping Beauty in the Wood.

—*The Sleeping Beauty Picture Book* by Walter Crane

---

## **The Horror - January 20, 2018**

I find a preacher of the gospel profaning the beautiful and prophetic ejaculation, commonly called “nunc dimittis,” made on the first presentation of our Saviour in the Temple, and applying it, with an inhuman and unnatural rapture, to the most horrid, atrocious, and afflicting spectacle that perhaps ever was exhibited to the pity and indignation of mankind. This “leading in triumph,” a thing in its best form unmanly and irreligious, which fills our preacher with such unhallowed transports, must shock, I believe, the moral taste of every well-born mind. Several English were the stupefied and indignant spectators of that triumph. It was (unless we have been strangely deceived) a spectacle more resembling a procession of American savages entering into Onondaga after some of their murders called victories, and leading into hovels hung round with scalps their captives overpowered with the scoffs and buffets of women as ferocious as themselves, much more than it resembled the triumphal pomp of a civilized martial nation;—if a civilized nation, or any men who had a sense of generosity, were capable of a personal triumph over the fallen and afflicted.

This, my dear Sir, was not the triumph of France. I must believe, that, as a nation, it overwhelmed you with shame and horror. I must believe that the National Assembly find themselves in a state of the greatest humiliation in not being able to punish the authors of this triumph or the actors in it, and that they are in a situation in which any inquiry they may make upon the subject must be destitute even of the appearance of liberty or impartiality. The apology of that assembly is found in their situation; but when we approve what they must bear, it is in us the degenerate choice of a vitiated mind...

But the age of chivalry is gone. That of sophisters, economists, and calculators has succeeded; and the glory of Europe is extinguished forever. Never, never more, shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank and sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience, that subordination of the heart, which kept alive, even in servitude itself, the spirit of an exalted freedom! The unbought grace of life, the

cheap defence of nations, the nurse of manly sentiment and heroic enterprise, is gone! It is gone, that sensibility of principle, that charity of honor, which felt a stain like a wound, which inspired courage whilst it mitigated ferocity, which ennobled whatever it touched, and under which vice itself lost half its evil by losing all its grossness! – Edmund Burke

---

History affords us many examples of a historical events that produce widely divergent reactions according to the different faiths of those who view and/or participate in the event. The French Revolution was a classic case in point. Burke, the Christian European, reacted in horror to the French Revolution. And he maintained his abhorrence of “the horror, the horror” after the death of Robespierre. The mad-dog liberals in France, Britain, and the rest of Europe greeted the French Revolution with rapture; they looked on the execution of the King and Queen of France and the French aristocrats as a new dawning for mankind. The average European, the men and women in the pews, viewed Robespierre’s French Revolution with horror. It was the ‘regular’ Englishmen who burned down Priestly’s house, but the ‘regular’ Europeans did not maintain their abhorrence for Jacobinism after the death of Robespierre. They were easily lulled, by the European intelligentsia, into a sleepy acceptance of a more moderate Jacobinism, the type of Jacobinism embodied in the American experiment in democracy. And that same moderate Jacobinism has become the credo of the modern conservatives. This is something that we need to come to grips with. The democratic battles between conservatives and liberals are not battles between ideological opposites, they are battles within the confines of liberalism. Such battles can become quite bloody, just as the War of the Roses became quite bloody, but the battles are internecine.

The moderate liberals, in contrast to the mad-dog liberals, might praise Burke for his criticisms of the French Revolution in his *Reflections*, but they part company with him when he condemns the post-Robespierre Directory and the democratic spirit of the age in his greatest work – *Letters on a Regicide Peace*. Just as the cheese stands alone in the children’s song called “The Farmer Takes a Wife,” so did Edmund Burke stand alone in his repudiation of liberalism in all its guises, whether it was moderate conservatism or mad-dog Jacobinism. In order to take such a stand, Burke had to love his people enough to be rejected by them for his “extremism.” He had to follow the Man of Sorrows who was “despised and rejected of men.”

There are no political parties in the European world that represent white Christian Europeans. That is because the essence of Western democracy is a repudiation of European Christianity. In the U.S.A., the first of utopian nations, Trump is hated by the mad-dog liberals because he is not liberal enough. And he is often criticized by the moderate liberals for not adhering to their brand of moderate liberalism. But Trump is the very best the moderate liberals will ever get. Every republican candidate after Trump will be closer to the mad-dog liberals than Trump. The “conservatives” do not (because they are liberals themselves) understand that liberalism is from the devil. You can’t sup with the devil without eating poison. And if you play the democracy game, you are supping with the devil. Was the extermination of the white race ever put to a vote? And yet the white race is being exterminated. Was the legalization of abortion ever put to a vote? And yet millions of babies are being murdered every year. And was the enshrinement of the negro as the new Messiah of the Western world ever put to a vote? And yet the negro has become the state-sanctioned Messiah of the Western world. All this has come about because the people of Europe have traded their Christian heritage for a democratic bowl of poisonous lentils. Our precious freedoms of speech and worship are not freedoms if we are not free to speak of the one true God, the Christ of Europe, and if we are not free to worship that same God and denounce the heathen gods of the liberals.

The liberalism of the conservatives and the liberals was on full display this past Monday on the Martin Luther King Jr. holiday. The conservatives couldn’t praise him enough, and the mad-dog liberals used the occasion to call Trump, despite his fulsome praise of King, a racist for calling Haiti a sh– hole. But of course it doesn’t matter what Trump does; the mad-dog liberals will always hate him, because he has refused to advance from moderate liberalism to mad-dog liberalism. Incidentally, I would not call Haiti a sh– hole, I would call it a hellhole. It is a nation that has been consecrated to Satan ever since the time of the French Revolution. But then so is our nation, and the other European nations, consecrated to Satan; we dedicated our nations to the evil one when we refused to repudiate liberalism by defending European Christianity against the multi-racial, multi-religious Christianity of the liberals.

If we go through a work such as Russell Kirk’s *The Conservative Mind* or Henry Regnery’s autobiography in which he tells us of his life as a conservative publisher, we come away from those works with a rather disturbing view of 20th century conservatism. There is nothing in the works of the so-called conservatives about defending the European people from the colored heathen or about defending European Christianity. There is a lot written about the defense of democracy and the defense of intellectual Christianity (“our Greco-Roman, Christian tradition”), but there is no defense of the people who heard the word of God and took His word into their hearts. Conservatism cannot be grounded in the airy nothingness of ideas without a local habitation in the hearts of men. We can’t love universal ideas of family, home, and God. We must love flesh and blood people and a flesh and blood God.

Edward Gibbon, the author of *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, is often cited by the conservatives as one of their own. But what did Gibbon want to conserve? It certainly wasn’t European Christianity and the European people. He

hated both with a passionate intensity. Gibbon's grudge against Christianity was that it had replaced the pagan Greeks and Romans, whom Gibbon thought represented the pinnacle of human achievement. Gibbon's views represent the views of many of the modern conservatives. They love the external organizations of the Greeks and the Romans, which they hope to imitate in order to impose some kind of order on a world that Christ and His followers made too complex.

But what if the human heart is more of a mystery than the Greco-Romans could possibly conceive of? (1) What if man is more than man, what if he is created in the image of God? The Grand Inquisitor tells Christ that He thought too much of men; He should not have given them the freedom to choose God or the devil. They will always, the Grand Inquisitor maintained, go with an organized system that allows them to circumvent the cross. All of our lives here on earth are defined by how we view the cross of Christ. The men on the Titanic who went to their deaths singing "Nearer My God to Thee," are my people. The rest, be they Gibbon conservatives or mad-dog liberals, are not my people; they belong to 'this world only,' a world without hope and without light.

Liberalism is grounded in a flight from the cross of Christ. Burke reacted with horror to the French Revolution because he saw the cross of Christ as the penultimate of beauty and truth. How could a man with a Christian heart not react with horror to the massacre of Christ's people? But once the heart has turned from Christ, the destruction of Christ's image in man becomes a source of glee to the Priestly's and Price's of Liberalism. And the moderate Jacobins, the conservatives who love the pagan Greeks and Romans, will calmly ignore the massacre of Christ's people. To his dying day, the great Roman Catholic conservative, Hilaire Belloc, defended the French Revolution.

The development of modern science helped the intellectual elites in church and state to spread their 'flight from the cross' theology to the masses. "Perhaps life is not a crucifixion if we turn to the new trinity of the abstracted intellect, the negro, and modern science." That was the devilish temptation that ensnared the modern Europeans. Western democracy is a celebration of that new faith, a faith without the crucifixion of Christ. But without the crucifixion can there be a resurrection? What a falling off for the European people! If we don't die with Christ we cannot live with Him in this world or the next – "It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with Him, we shall also live with him: If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: if we deny Him, He also will deny us." (2 Timothy 2: 11-12)

Kurtz, in Conrad's *Heart of Darkness*, looks at the evil in his heart and judges it – "The Horror, the Horror." Marlowe, without approving of Kurtz, does say it is something to have judged, to declare evil to be evil. Without becoming evil, we, the European people, are required to judge evil. In the name of the Christ who dwells in human hearts, we must identify the horror, and we must combat the horror. The most striking thing about the European resistance to liberalism is that there is no real resistance to liberalism. A Christian European would look at negro worship, legalized abortion, feminism, and the Islamification of Europe, and he would cry, "The horror, the horror!" Then he would take up arms against the perpetrators of the horror. But if our faith in Christ is not the "bred in the bone" faith of our European ancestors we do not have anything in our hearts that makes us respond to the evils of liberalism with a passionate "to the death" intensity. When the Moslems rape, mutilate, and murder the women of the West in order to uphold the honor of Islam, when the liberals order us to bow down to the sacred negro in order to do all honor and homage to their gods, and when the feminists command us to honor the femininity of Lady Macbeth, why do we not respond with our own code of honor? Have we forgotten what that code of honor consists of? Burke, echoing St. Paul, called the Christian European's honor code "that charity of honor." Only the antique Europeans, the condemned and despised, incorporated charity into their honor code instead of blood lust, vanity, and cruelty. If their honor code no longer has a place in human hearts, there will be no place for the Son of Man to lay His head.

This brave new world of the liberals is a very old world; it is the same world of darkness and death that the Son of God entered in order to give us light and life. Is there anything that the liberals can give us to make us reject His world of light and love for their world, which is devoid of His light and love? They, the liberals, take it as a given that their new world is paradise, compared to Christian Europe. And the church men have gone along with them. But some of us, we few, must stay with Christian Europe even if it means we shall be "despised and rejected of men." There must be some who stand until they are relieved by their Lord and Master. +

(1) It is truly amazing, and not in a good way, how many scholars and writers of the Christian era continued to hold up the pagan Greeks and Romans as the pinnacle of artistic and human excellence. Ben Jonson challenged that assumption in his tribute "To The Memory of My Beloved The Author, Mr. William Shakespeare":

And though thou hadst small Latine and less Greeke,  
From thence to honour thee, I would not seeke  
For names; but call forth thund'ring Aeschilus,  
Euripides and Sophocles to us;  
Paccuius, Accius, him of Cordoua dead,  
To life again, to heare thy Buskin tread,  
And shake a Stage; or, when thy Sockes were on,

Leave thee alone for the comparison  
Of all, that insolent Greece, or haughtie Rome  
sent forth, or since did from their ashes come.  
Triumph, my Britain, thou hast one to showe,  
To whom all Scenes of Europe homage owe.  
He was not of an age but for all time!

The organizational gate of paganism might be wider and easier to work our way through, but the narrow gate, the way of the cross, leads us to Him:

I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter. Some that humble themselves may; but the many will be too chill and tender, and they'll be for the flow'ry way that leads to the broad gate and the great fire.

-Shakespeare's *All's Well that Ends Well*

---

## **The Inner Vision - January 13, 2018**

And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. – Matthew 8: 3-4

---

In 1919 a man named Wilbur Daniel Steele wrote a remarkable short story called “The Man Who Saw Through Heaven.” In the story Steel tells us of a newly married, newly ordained minister who is on his way to Africa to convert the heathen:

In the course of the day I think I had got him fairly well. As concerned his Church he was at once an asset and a liability. He believed its dogma as few still did, with a simplicity, “the old time religion.” He was born that kind. Of the stuff of the fanatic, the reason he was not a fanatic was that, curiously impervious to little questionings, he had never been aware that his faith was anywhere attacked. A self-educated man, he had accepted the necessary smattering facts of science with a serene indulgence, as simply so much further proof of what the Creator could do when He put His hand to it. Nor was he conscious of any conflict between these facts and the fact that there existed a substantial Heaven, geographically up, and a substantial Hot Place, geographically down.

So, for his Church, he was an asset in these days. And so, and for the same reason, he was a liability. The Church must after all keep abreast of the times. For home consumption, with modern congregations, especially urban ones, a certain streak of “healthy” skepticism is no longer amiss in the pulpit, it makes people who read at all more comfortable in their pews. A man like Hubert Diana is more for the cause than a hundred. But what to do with him? Well, such things arrange themselves. There's the Foreign Field. The blacker the heathen the whiter the light they'll want, and the soldier the conception of a God the Father enthroned in a Heaven of which the sky above them is the visible floor.

But before the Reverend Diana reaches Africa, he makes a side trip to visit an observatory where an astronomer shows him a view of the heavens as seen through the eyes of a scientist. Diana is a changed man from that moment on. He leaves his wife behind and embarks on a new mission to convert the Africans to his new cosmic religion. After four years have elapsed, Diana's wife hires a man to help her find her husband. Wherever they go they find traces of Diana's new religion in the form of little mud heathen idols. And finally at the end of their search they find Diana's grave and his last mud sculpture.

“From here, Mrs. Diana, you husband walked out—“

“He had sunk to idolatry. Idolatry!”

“To the bottom, yes. And come up its whole history again. And from here he walked out into the sunshine to kneel and talk with ‘Our Father Which—‘

She got it. She caught it. I wish you could have seen the light going up those long, long cheeks as she got it:

“Our Father which art in Heaven, hallowed be Thy Name!”

We went downhill in the darkness, protected against goblins by a vast rattling of gourds and beating of goat-hide drums.

Daniel read the handwriting on the Babylonians' wall, and so did Wilbur Daniel Steele read the handwriting on the Europeans' wall. We as a people looked at the world through the eyes of the scientist, and we lost our faith. There are many different levels on the mountain of the scientized Europeans, but all the European people, with very few exceptions, are on the scientific slippery slope that leads to hell. You cannot be halfway up the mountain and maintain your position on the mountain. You must go to the top, struggling against the galvanized forces of hell pushing you downward, or else you will continue to descend toward the bottom of the mountain where the slime pits of hell await you.



At the end of Steele's story, the Rev. Diana is on his way back to Christ. But in order to return to Christ he had to go through all the lower stages of religion; he had to hit rock bottom before he could start the arduous ascent back up the mountain. This is the fact of existence that the Europeans must grasp before they can fulfill their destiny as the Christ-bearing people. The pride of science is not an ascent to the heavens, it is a descent to paganism. The battles between the factions within the European nations – Labor vs. Tory; Republican vs. Democrat; conservative vs. liberal; traditionalist Catholic vs. Novus Ordo Catholic; Protestant fundamentalist vs. liberal, evangelical Protestant – are all battles between men who have staked out territory on the 'Pride of Science' mountain. The mad-dog liberals have left the mountain altogether and, unlike Diana, seem quite content to live in the slime pits of hell, but the other factions will continue to slide closer to the mad-dog liberals so long as they try to blend Christianity and science.

The Europeans' ascent to the top of the mountain during the Christian centuries of Europe and their descent into hell in the 20th and 21st centuries has shown us that you can't have just a little bit of liberalism. You can't keep a purely intellectual concept of God around for special occasions and for the hour of death, while making science your lodestar for all the really important decisions of your life. Science is a false messiah; it deals with the natural, biological world, nothing more. To scientize man is an outrage. And to scientize God is blasphemy. The modern European is much more afraid of being labeled stupid for speaking out against science than he is about blaspheming against the living God by making Him an object to be studied and played upon as Rosencrantz and Guildenstern tried to study and play upon Hamlet.

HAMLET. 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages with your finger and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent music. Look you, these are the stops.

GUILDENSTERN. But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony. I have not the skill.

HAMLET. Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me! You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ, yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be played on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.

It is all, this pride of science, from the God-less polemics of Freud, Marx, and Darwin to the scientized theological blasphemies of the intellectual Christians, a devil's brew that poisons our hearts and leaves us at the mercy of enemies who have no mercy – Satan and his liberal minions. I am convinced that the Europeans' descent into negro worship is the result of the scientizing of Christianity. Diana discovered that his cosmic religion needed some human conduit, so he reached out to primitive idols. And that will always be the result of Einsteins' and Teilhards' cosmic, 'higher' religion. Its adherents will reach out to the lowest forms of humanity in their flight from the God of pure intellect, which the 'pure intelligence' men created.

Kill the European's heart and his faith dies. Satan's formula was simple – syllogize, philosophize, and scientize Christianity until there is nothing left of the Christ who enters human hearts. How can we love an end product of a syllogism or a psychological manifestation of the yearning for God that is in all men? We must believe in the Christ story with our whole heart, mind, and soul. If we do not believe, or if we hedge our bets and only partially believe, we will not respond to God's love with loving hearts. We will flee to the heathen gods and bestow our love and devotion upon them. Are there any modern Christian clergymen who love Christ with the passion with which they love the negro?

The God who lives is the Christ that St. Paul encountered on the road to Damascus, and that same God was the inspiration for Western civilization when it was a civilization. It was a passionate love, grounded in His passion, that motivated St. Paul, and that same love motivated the antique Europeans. We can't make the European people believe again by any rational argument. Maybe, like Uncle Silas, they have lost the heart for the love of Christ. But what if the delusion of science was attacked and destroyed? Would the lost European sheep return to the fold? We won't know the answer to that until we attack the liberals' Holy Ghost, which is science.

In my early twenties I had many discussions with a Roman Catholic priest who taught at the University I attended. I sought him out because he was said to be a conservative, but he was only a conservative compared to the other professors, who were mad-dog liberals. The priest taught a course in the Gospels that was a course about the word of God as interpreted by the 'higher' form criticism popular at that time. In short, the love of Christ was put in a golden scientized bowl and His holy word was put in a silver scientized rod. When I asked my friend if such 'study' was harmful to people's faith, he replied, "They think we are afraid of scientific inquiry; we must show them we are not." But why must we "show them we are not afraid"? Are they really open to reason? Do they really care about the truth? No, they, the liberals, do not care about the truth. Why should we honor their attempt to place God and man in a biological dung heap? To leave any momentous religious question to a scientist is no different than going to a highly competent garage mechanic for a heart transplant.

The highly competent garage mechanic, Albert Einstein, summed up the liberals' religion in his essay on "Cosmic Religion":

It is easy to follow in the sacred writings of the Jewish people the development of the religion of fear into the moral religion, which is carried further in the New Testament. The religions of all the civilized peoples, especially those of the Orient, are principally moral religions. An important advance in the life of a people is the transformation of the religion of fear into the moral religion. But one must avoid the prejudice that regards the religions of primitive peoples as pure fear religions and those of the civilized races as pure moral religions. All are mixed forms, though the moral element predominates in the higher levels of social life. Common to all these types is the anthropomorphic character of the idea of God.

Only exceptionally gifted individuals or especially noble communities rise essentially above this level; in these there is found a third level of religious experience, even if it is seldom found in a pure form. I will call it the cosmic religious sense. This is hard to make clear to those who do not experience it, since it does not involve an anthropomorphic idea of God; the individual feels the vanity of human desires and aims, and the nobility and marvelous order which are revealed in nature and in the world of thought. He feels the individual destiny as an imprisonment and seeks to experience the totality of existence as a unity full of significance. Indications of this cosmic religious sense can be found even on earlier levels of development— for example, in the Psalms of David and in the Prophets. The cosmic element is much stronger in Buddhism, as, in particular, Schopenhauer's magnificent essays have shown us.

The religious geniuses of all times have been distinguished by this cosmic religious sense, which recognizes neither dogmas nor God made in man's image. Consequently there cannot be a church whose chief doctrines are based on the cosmic religious experience. It comes about, therefore, that precisely among the heretics of all ages we find men who were inspired by this highest religious experience; often they appeared to their contemporaries as atheists, but sometimes also as saints. Viewed from this angle, men like Democritus, Francis of Assisi, and Spinoza are near to one another.

That is the glorified heathenism of the ruling liberal elite of the Western world. And the European 'Christians' of the 21st century have tried, by incorporating psychology, sociology, anthropology, and the worship of the natural savage into their faith, to prove that Christianity is compatible with the 'intelligence' of the men of science. It's significant that Shaw, the most thoroughly demonic liberal who ever walked the earth, gave his personal endorsement to Einstein and the men of science: "...these eight men of whom I am about to mention were makers of universes and their hands were not stained with the blood of their fellow men. I can count them on the fingers of my two hands. Pythagoras, Ptolemy, Kepler, Copernicus, Aristotle, Galileo, Newton, and Einstein, and I still have two fingers left vacant." What do Shaw's heroes have in common? They are all scientists and scientific philosophers. And one man in particular, Aristotle, was used as the conduit for the entry of intellectual Christianity into the heart of European Christianity.

Is it too late to recover from a scientific dagger to the heart? No, it is not too late, because we are not mere creatures of nature. A dagger to the heart kills the body, but we are more than the physical body, as individuals and as a people, we are of the spirit. We need to look to the top of the mountain and see our Lord and Savior. He is the summit, He is the beginning and the end. The halfway point on the scientized mountain, where the conservatives who want to conserve moderate liberalism tell us to make our stand, is not the place for a European. For us, it is all or nothing; we must achieve the summit or else we will perish in the slime pits of liberalism awaiting us at the bottom of the scientized mountain.

In order to prevent his father from committing suicide (in Shakespeare's *King Lear*), Edgar must convince him that "his life's a miracle." So it is with the European people. When we believed in the miracles of the fiery furnace, the lion's den, the fiery chariot, and the ultimate miracle of Christ's birth, death, and resurrection, we believed that our lives were a miracle of God. We believed in the fairy tale vision of the Bible and the European poets. But when the European people replaced the fairy tale with science, they lost everything. When science becomes the miracle, what happens to man? He becomes a small, insignificant speck of dust staring (if a speck of dust can stare) at the vast, spiritually barren, natural world. His soul is overwhelmed, and he lives in despair, seeking in vain for some refuge in a world without miracles.

Science has left us naked to our enemy, the archangel who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. If we reject the cosmic scientific vision for the vision that is in our hearts, we will see the truth; we will see life from the mountaintop where the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords resides. +

---

## **The Extremism of European Christianity - January 6, 2018**

In that day the Lord with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish Leviathan the piercing serpent, even Leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea.

– Isaiah 27: 1

---

Every Christmas I try to do what Scrooge did every Christmas before his conversion: he tried to shut out the world, because the rest of the world did not view the Christmas season as Scrooge did. But of course I try to shut out the world in order to celebrate Christmas, while Scrooge tried to shut out the world in order to avoid the celebration of our Lord's birth. While the liberals blather on about climate change, we have overlooked the incredible spiritual change that has taken place in Western civilization. The Christian European now finds himself outside the orbit of Western civilization because the civilization that once was synonymous with Christianity has become synonymous with the hatred of Christ and the Christ-bearing race.

The naysayers will dispute my claim that the European Christian has no home in modern Europe by citing the celebration of Christmas in the churches and in many European homes, but the Christmas of the antique Europeans has disappeared, except for a few isolated cases, from the face of the earth. One does not need second sight to see the spiritual desolation of Western civilization — it is all around us. We see the desolation of a land consecrated to Satan in the abortion mills, in the worship of the negro, and in the degradation of all things and people connected to European Christianity. And that is the key — 'all things and people connected to European Christianity.' It is all right to be a Christian as Pope Frances the blasphemer is a Christian. He condemns the antique Europeans while supporting a new fusionist Christianity which was condemned by our Lord in the Book of Revelation. But the Christianity espoused by the men and women with human hearts, the antique Europeans, is not permitted in modern Satandom.

When the Jacobins assumed power in France, there were small cabals of Jacobin supporters in all the European nations. They were not appalled by the bloodletting of Robespierre; on the contrary, they rejoiced in it. The vast majority of Europeans, however, recoiled in horror from Robespierre's purification process. (1) In some cases Jacobin advocates such as Priestly in England were driven into exile. But once the wholesale slaughter halted with Robespierre's death, the other European nations were willing to make peace with Jacobin France, despite the fact that France was still a regicide nation opposed to Christian Europe. This spirit of conciliation with the forces of liberalism spread throughout Europe, because men tend to try to appease and/or befriend an adversary that appears too formidable to defeat. When liberalism took the form of a monstrous leviathan, the Christian churches decided it was best to feed the leviathan the European people in order to save intellectual Christianity. But if Christ comes to us through humanity, how can we jettison the people with human hearts and still retain our Christian faith? It cannot be retained under those circumstances. Ever since liberalism became institutionalized throughout the European nations (and the United States is not excepted), organized Christian Jewry has made the survival of their Christian, Gnostic organizational structures their sole mission. With such a mission their main concern is to show that their branch of the Christian church is compatible with liberalism: "We are the most pro-black, pro-Moslem, pro-Jewish church in Liberaldom." And on it goes, into the dark night of Babylon.

In the past year I have heard both Al Gore and Eleanor Clift, two mad-dog liberals, praise Pope Francis to the skies. How is that possible? It is possible because Pope Francis is an anti-Christian Christian. He hates the Christ who enters human hearts, because that Christ, the European Christ, threatens his vision of utopia, which is a multi-racial, multi-religious world of Jacobin liberals and pure and simple natural savages of color. He, like all his anti-European brethren, is determined to have a Christless Christianity by blending Christianity and liberalism. The liberal leviathan might reward the liberal churchmen by eating them last, but eventually the leviathan will consume them as well. Let us turn from the putrid pigsty of liberalism and face the leviathan, not in the spirit of compromise, but with a spirit of defiance and a determination to fight to the death. The spiritual imperative is not separate from what is practical, because the leviathan will consume the prudent compromiser as well as the uncompromising extremist. When dealing with Satan and his minions, prudence is not practical. Only the extremists, men who love and hate with all their hearts, will have a chance to defeat the liberal leviathan.

The liberals and the colored heathen are not invincible. They only appear invincible to Europeans who no longer believe in the God who lives in human hearts. When I listen to the old Christmas carols of the European people, I hear the voice of a people who genuinely loved and believed in the promise of the Christ Child. How could they believe such a fairy tale? How could they believe that God would make himself dependent on the mercy of men? It is not just the crucifixion of Christ that staggers our imaginations, it is also His willingness to be as vulnerable as a little child. Only love could make someone do what Christ did, and only people with hearts of flesh can understand the moral beauty of His divine condescension.

The liberals' attack on the European people is not as they maintain, an attempt to give the colored races equal rights with white Europeans. It is an attempt to eliminate the white race from the face of the earth so that men can live their lives free from the love of Christ. Why do the liberals seek to banish Christ by destroying the people who took Him into their hearts? For the same reason that Adam and Eve ate the apple. They sought equality with God through a mind enlightened by the devil. That is the real equality which liberals seek. But isn't it more than equality? Can the enlightened mind stand for any rivals?

The faith that endureth to the end is the faith that is grounded in the Word made flesh. If His word has no place in human hearts, it cannot come to fruition. Christ is always the Babe in the manger, dependent on human hearts. He has willed that

dependence because He loves much. If we accept any part of the liberals' agenda, we have rejected His love in order to embrace the enlightened intellect of Satan, the great deceiver, who fills our minds with honest trifles in order to destroy our hearts with the one great lie – there is no Blessed Savior who loves us.

Still, even in this, the first century that began with Satan solidly ensconced on the throne of Europe, there are more grazers who have lost their way than mad-dog liberals who have embraced Satan. But it is the mad-dog liberals who rule in church and state. And they keep the grazers in line by feeding them bits and pieces of intellectual Christianity. “You can attend Christian churches so long as you worship the negro in those churches.” – “You can wave the flag so long as your patriotism consists of a utopian idea of a universal nation rather than a feeling of reverence, which is pietas, toward your kith and kin.” The white grazer needs to go off the intellectual opiates of liberalism, but he cannot see beyond liberalism to the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world and gives His people something much greater and more lasting than the intellectual opiates of liberalism.

If we accept the liberals' scientized view of the world and attempt to put Christ in that world, we will continue to be the slaves of the liberal leviathan. The modern obsession with esoteric knowledge within the ranks of practicing Christians illustrates the gap between intellectual Christianity, which serves the liberals' purpose, and the Christianity set forth in Handel's Messiah. (2) In the Catholic ranks there are all kinds of disputes over which revelation of the blessed mother is the true revelation of the mind of God. Is it Fatima? Is it that seer from New Jersey or some other conduit of God's will as told to us through Mary? And in the Protestant ranks, the Book of Revelation is not seen as the testimony of the apostle John's great love for the Lamb of God, it is viewed as a book which tells us secrets – it tells us the day and the hour. In both cases, the Catholic and the Protestant, the divinely human and the human elements are left out of the picture. The Virgin Mary is worthy of our love and respect because she consented to be the hand maiden of the Lord. She is not the source of hidden secrets and special knowledge like some pagan goddess. To treat her as such demeans her and blasphemes against the Son of God. And if we view the Book of Revelation as a book that enlightens our minds about the end times, we miss the profoundly moving story of Christ's love for us and His love for His servant John. We miss the heart of the story. John weeps when there is no one worthy of opening the book with the seven seals. Then he sees that there is one who is worthy to open the book.

And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals.

And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.

And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

-Revelations 5: 1-5

Why is John vouchsafed this miraculous vision of the Lord? Is it because He is smarter than the rest of mankind? Has he studied Aristotle? Did he put out study guides for the understanding of scripture? No, it was because he placed his head on Christ's sacred heart at the Last Supper.

John is given a vision of the living God because he loved much. He responded to God's heart with his heart. He was an extremist, just as Daniel and St. Paul were extremists. And our people, when they were Christians, were extremists. They didn't know as much about the natural world as we do, but they knew infinitely more about the real world, the world of the spirit, than we know. They knew that all things bright and beautiful come from the Christ of Europe, the same Christ that St. John saw when he was lifted up to heaven on the island of Patmos. We are never far from Christ if we stay by the European hearth fire, because our people were the mystics of the heart. They eschewed the wisdom of the Pharisees, the philosophers, and the academics, and embraced the love of the God who comes to human hearts. Life is a crucifixion, but at the heart of Europe was a faith that the crucifixion led to the resurrection. No intellectual system about God can give us the faith to believe that the grave is not the end of everything. Look to our people, to their moral vision of the Lamb of God. +

---

(1) Now even the 'conservatives' are advocates for the purification (which translates to extermination) of the white race. See *Hillbilly Elegy*.

(2) I think that Handel's Messiah is the proper antidote for all false intellectual versions of Christianity.

---

From God our Heavenly Father  
A blessed angel came,  
And unto certain shepherds  
Brought tidings of the same,  
How that in Bethlehem was born  
The Son of God by name.

---

It's been three years since the forces of Christian Britain established a foothold in Moslem Britain, and it's been three years since the Reverend Christopher Grey last completed a remembrance. He has written many a letter and many a sermon in the past three years, but he has not had time to make more than rough sketches of new remembrances. Nor is he likely, alas, to finish another remembrance. I promised him I'd 'tidy up' some of his correspondence and the remembrances for him if he was unable to get back to them. And who am I? I am Francesco Bontini, formerly a priest in the Roman Catholic Church, now defrocked, formerly a citizen of my beloved Italy, now in exile, and a friend of the Rev. Grey for the past twenty-five years. I am 70 years old, and the Rev. Grey is 101 years old. He is currently awaiting yet another trial for his life, this time in Italy at the Vatican court. There is no doubt that he will be sentenced to death as he was three years ago in London, but I don't want to get ahead of myself, nor do I want to go too far afield from fulfilling the task the Rev. Grey gave me. I am to devote my time to his correspondence and his remembrances.

Let me quote from the Reverend's last completed remembrance to set the stage for what follows:

~~~~~

The fall of Britain did not come by way of an invasion. It came at the invitation of the liberals. The hatred of the white race that was so manifest in the white-hating Jacobins such as Price and Priestly became the religion of the modern university-trained Britons. So this land of dear souls, at least still dear to me, is now "leas'd out" to the Moslems. The liberals called them refugees and hoped to use them to destroy their enemies, which were all white Britons, but they miscalculated. The Moslems were supposed to be grateful to the liberals, and as a token of their gratitude they were supposed to become a part of white-hating Liberalism. Instead, they set up their own Moslem state in which the liberals who weren't executed played only a supporting role.

At first the "refugees" were content to do things democratically. They won a few elections and occupied most of London so that the police were afraid to act against them when they committed felonies such as rape, murder, and armed robbery, but after a few years of nominal control of Britain's larger cities the Moslems decided to take complete control. They did away with democracy and set up a Moslem state. Britain was divided into nine fiefdoms, with a caliph at the head of each. The high Caliph resided in London at Buckingham Palace, the former home of the Kings and Queens of Britain.

The various members of the British parliament voted, before they were dismissed, for the execution of the royal family and anyone who was even remotely connected to the royal line of descent. The Queen, her husband, Prince George, Prince Stephen and Princess Margaret, were all executed on the old chopping block that was the site of so many royal beheadings in the past. Only Prince Arthur survived, but I'll come back to him later. By sacrificing the royal family the members of Parliament had hoped not only to save their lives, they also hoped to obtain some position in the new Moslem government. This was only the case with about 15% of the members of Parliament. That was the approximate number of parliamentary members who did obtain minor posts in one of the Moslem fiefdoms. Having spent a lifetime betraying their own people they made themselves useful to the various caliphs by sniffing out any white resistance to Moslem rule and reporting that resistance to the caliph in their particular fiefdom. But there is only room for so many slimy informants in any administration. Eighty-five percent of the former members of the British Parliament were executed along with their families two weeks after they voted for the execution of the royal family.

There was no resistance to the Moslem takeover within the ranks of the military or the police for the simple reason that there was no official takeover. The liberals voted to dissolve their government and turn the reins of power over to the caliphs. So when the caliphs came in they inherited the liberals' military and the liberals' police. The members of the military and police forces had been trained to support the state so when the state became Moslem, the police and the military, having been raised with no moral instincts, simply continued working for the Moslem state. There were some executions of the higher ranking officials in all the armed forces so that the leadership positions could be occupied by Moslems, but the regular rank and file police officers and the rank and file soldiers were allowed to continue to serve the new Moslem state. The white policemen and the white members of the military were often harder on the native-born white British civilians than the Moslem soldiers and policemen were, because the white policemen and soldiers wanted to prove their loyalty to the new government.

Some of the pagan nationalist parties had welcomed the Moslem invaders in the hope that they would put paid to the Jews' account, but the old saying, "Be careful what you wish for, because you might get more than you bargained for," could be applied to the neo-pagan nationalists just as it could be applied to their liberal enemies and counterparts. The feminists who all wanted to sleep with the refugees and said, "Better rapists than racists," soon discovered that rape was not as pleasant in reality as it was in their fantasies. Nor was being one wife among many as fulfilling as they had hoped.

Nor were the neo-pagans who wanted the Moslems to crack down on the feminists and the Jews delighted to learn that they, just by virtue of being white, were considered to be Christian and outside the ken of Moslem humanity. They were not allowed to become part of Islamic Britain.

And the blacks? They went back to their natural state. The Moslems used them as slaves and henchmen. So long as they got their share of white blood and white women, they seemed quite content to descend from the pedestal that the liberals had put them on.

The brunt of the invasion, which was more of betrayal than an invasion, fell upon the native-born white Britons. They never believed, even as the Moslems and the third world scum poured into their nation, that their government, their own people, would hand them over to the tender mercies of the Moslems. But of course that is exactly what happened. Some families, far too few, saw what was coming and attempted to go rural, but simply going rural delayed the Moslems for a time, it didn't provide any long-term solution to the problem of an Islamic Britain.

The executions were not wholesale, but they were not non-existent either. If any member of a white British family was suspected of any resistance to Sharia law, the whole family was exterminated. My rough estimate is that about 40% of the white Britons were exterminated after the official Moslem takeover. And the rest of the Brits were watched carefully by the traitors who used to sit in Parliament, but now spent their time looking for the enemies of Islam. And when you look for enemies, you usually find them, whether they are real enemies or imaginary ones.

The church men fared better than Parliament and the native-born. The Anglican and Roman Catholic churches simply proclaimed that Allah was God and Jesus Christ was a subordinate prophet to Mohammed. This enabled them to maintain their tax-exempt status and to continue holding church services. The state religion was, of course, Islam. Anyone who openly avowed Christianity or who was discovered to have avowed Christianity in private was immediately executed.

But there were a few — my friend John Chambers was one — who saw what was coming and went underground before the Moslem takeover. John and a few stalwart Britons are at large and they constitute a fighting remnant that I hope will grow into an army that will ultimately, led by Arthur II, drive the Moslems from Britain. But I'm getting ahead of myself. I'm still not ready to talk about Prince Arthur, the young man who was born to be King of Britain.

My own case was a curious one. I had a long record of open hostility to Islam, liberalism, and black barbarism. I had not had a position in the official church for over 25 years, but I was perceived to be the leader of Christian Britain. I never ceased my walks through London even after the Moslem takeover, and I even managed to save some white Britons from being raped and murdered by roving black and Moslem gangs. I didn't know why I was unmolested at the time, but I later learned that it was because I was considered to be a special case that had to be handled in a special way. When I was finally arrested, I was not formally charged or arraigned. I spent three months in prison before I was told the charge against me and what my fate was.

~~~~~

Christopher was sentenced to death after that trial, but he escaped and lived to see Prince Arthur become King Arthur II and reclaim most of Wales, Cornwall, and a small segment of Scotland for Christian Britain. Most of Britain is still in the hands of the Moslems, but white Britons now have a foothold in Britain even if it is a tenuous foothold. The majority of whites that are still living in Britain have sided with the Moslems against their own people. Why have they done so? It's not easy to fathom, but it seems to me that the white grazers, as Christopher calls them, think they have a better chance to survive if they adhere to the Islamic-Liberal state than to the Christian state of King Arthur. And they may be right, from a purely amoral, practical standpoint. But what the white grazers do not realize is that it is King Arthur's presence that has enabled the white grazers to survive. Once there was a place of refuge to flee to, the Caliph thought it wise to loosen up some of the restrictions on the whites living within Moslem Britain. If they lost all their whites, who would run the hospitals and provide the technological services necessary to maintain a nation? Certainly not the negroes. When the whites had no place to flee to, the Moslems' attitude was 'take it or leave it,' knowing full well that there was no place to go. Now, they must be more careful. They still kill the blasphemers, but they are a little more careful about their killing. If a white Briton can help keep Moslem Britain going, he is now in less danger than before King Arthur established Christian Britain.

The standard of living in new Britain – or is it old Britain? – is certainly lower than the British people were used to, but there is life, spiritual life, in this nation. We are certainly on the right path. What will follow? Will we retake all of Britain, or will we ultimately be eradicated from the face of the earth? I don't know, I'm not a prophet. In the meantime my friend and mentor has given me a task to do.

Some years back Peter Delaine came to see Christopher in his study. He gave Christopher a manuscript to read, written by Delaine's great-grandfather, who was also named Peter Delaine. His great-grand sire told about the murder of his father at the hands of Haitian savages and the rescue of his mother, his sister, and himself from those same savages. The man who rescued him was his uncle Brian Delaine. I'll let Peter Delaine describe his uncle:

~~~~~

My uncle was three years younger than my father and came to Saint-Domingue one year after my father did. Like my father he was completely loyal to France and did not see himself as any less of a Frenchman because he chose to seek his fortune in French Saint-Domingue instead of in France. But in every other way, my uncle was different from my father. Father was a man of slender build, very handsome and calm in temperament. I never once heard my father raise his voice in anger. In contrast, my uncle had a much more volatile nature. He often raised his voice in anger and quite often, when angry, seemed on the verge of physical violence, especially during some of his heated arguments with Father Genevesse.

My uncle was several inches shorter than my father, but he actually appeared taller because of his large, almost herculean physique. It was amazing that two brothers with the same bloodlines could look so different. My father looked every inch the French Aristocrat, while my uncle looked more like a French peasant than a French aristocrat.

Despite their differences in personality, or maybe because of those differences, my father and my uncle were very close. It was a great disappointment to my father when my uncle decided not to settle down on an estate next to him. Instead my uncle invested his part of the family fortune in a merchant ship and became a seafaring man. Because of the life he chose, he was frequently away from Saint-Domingue on long voyages of a mercantile nature. I don't think my father quite approved of the seafaring life, but he never reproached my uncle for it, although he would occasionally make a joke about finding a good wife for Uncle Brian who would make him stay on land for more than just one week every other month.

I, of course, was very interested in my uncle's voyages. I always looked forward to his visits to our estate, when he would tell me stories of his travels and the seafaring men who accompanied him on his voyages.

My uncle knew that my father didn't approve of the life he had chosen, so he always prefaced his stories with, "If your father permits, I'll tell you of..." My father always permitted it, because he loved his brother and he loved me. And despite my love for my uncle's sea stories, I never considered any life for myself other than the one my father wanted me to have, that of a French aristocrat tending to his plantation in Saint-Domingue.

It was a good life. Much has been written, since that way of life has disappeared, about lazy, good-for-nothing French aristocrats who lived off the sweat of black slaves. That is a lie, just as the Jacobin story of fat, indolent aristocrats who deserved to be guillotined in the name of liberty, equality, and fraternity is a lie. The truth is that the black man lived off the sweat, ingenuity and vision of the white ruling class. Now that Saint-Domingue is Haiti, what is the lot of the black man? Rape, murder, poverty, and mayhem are normal in the Haiti of the black man. They were vile aberrations in the Saint-Domingue of the French aristocrats.

The climactic events of my life happened when I was 16, two years after the French Revolution. That is how long it took before liberty, equality, and fraternity brought rivers of blood to Saint-Domingue.

I am 95 years old, but I have carried the memory of the events of 79 years ago with me through all these years. Nothing will ever erase the memory of that terrible night and its aftermath.

~~~~~

After the night of sorrows when Peter's father was murdered, he and his family settled in England. But Brian Delaine continued his seafaring life. He became a Scarlet Pimpernel-type figure, going back to Haiti and to France on several occasions:

~~~~~

"Like the Scarlet Pimpernel he kept his identity secret. Unlike the Scarlet Pimpernel he had no songs written about him, but amongst the French émigré population in England he was called the scourge of Jacobinism. He never reconciled with the French government, not under Napoleon nor the Republic. My uncle, a descendant of Brain Delaine, told me that

whenever the topic of reconciliation came up Brian Delaine simply stated, ‘They are all regicides; I will never make peace with them.’ And he never did.”

“He lived the rest of his life in England?”

“Yes, except for his rescue missions to France and two or three trips to Haiti.”

“Why Haiti? What was there left for him to do?”

“My uncle never gave me any details about those trips. All he said was that his great grandfather’s excursions to Haiti were for rescue and punitive purposes. So I can only assume that the family sword was unsheathed again on those missions.”

~~~~~

Before he was taken prisoner by the Vatican Army, Christopher was working on a translation of a segment of Brian Delaine’s diary that his great, great-nephew had in his possession at the time of his death. Much of the diary was illegible, but Christopher was able to understand the essential details of a rescue mission, prior to the rescue mission that was included in his remembrance of Peter Delaine, in Jacobin France during the reign of Robespierre. Brian Delaine had reason to believe that his oldest brother’s daughter, the brother who stayed in France, was still alive. He set out to find her and bring her back to England with him. In order to do that he needed to penetrate one of the Jacobin enclaves in order to come into contact with a Jacobin woman who knew, according to Brian’s informants, the whereabouts of his niece. What follows is Christopher’s translation of Brian Delaine’s diary. As he often does, Christopher put the diary in dramatic form, without altering the essential narrative of Brian Delaine. Christopher explained to me that what would have been impossible for most French aristocrats of that time, to pose as a member of the French lower class, was possible for Brian Delaine because of the sea-faring life he had led. Granted he was a captain, not a seaman, but he had come in contact with all sorts of men from the lower classes. He knew how they talked and he could ape their manners. What follows is Christopher’s translation of Brian Delaine’s first rescue mission to Jacobin France.

~~~~~

Cast of Characters

Butcher

Priest – Father Sieyès

Revolutionary Poet and Man of Paris – Peter Chalièr

Feminist – Rose Lacombe

Petty Thief and Informant

Strongman, Lackey for Madame Lacombe – Gorgo

Brian Delaine, assuming the identity of a common seaman named Charles Delarose

~~~~~

## Act I. Scene I. A room above a butcher shop in Paris

Poet: I don’t see why we have to meet here all the time. There is no need for secrecy anymore, the Revolution has taken care of that.

Butcher: Why shouldn’t we meet here?

Poet: Because the place stinks of rotten meat, that’s why.

Butcher: It doesn’t stink, I use only fresh meat. I don’t keep rotting flesh on the premises.

Father Sieyès: (laughing) Maybe what we smell is the rotting flesh of the headless bodies cast off by Madame Guillotine.

Petty Thief: We still meet here because Madame Lacombe wants us to meet here.



Poet: And we must always do what Madame Lacombe tells us to do.

Butcher: Don't try to act like you're not afraid of her, we are all afraid of her, and you're no exception.

Poet: I am a poet, I fear no man and no woman.

Butcher: Nonsense. I say that you are afraid of her.

Petty Thief: What do you mean when you say you are a poet? Are poets without fear? No one with an ounce of common sense would willingly run afoul of Madame Lacombe. She is a trusted lieutenant of Robespierre himself. One false step, and you'll be facing Madame Guillotine yourself, Monsieur Poet. Your verses won't save you.

Butcher: Or she might have you strangled instead. That imbecilic giant that is always by her side will do whatever she commands.

Father Sieyès: Where did he come from?

Butcher: He used to be a strongman in a circus. He has the strength of ten men but the mind of a child.

Petty Thief: (laughing) A cruel child!

Butcher: He serves his purpose. But (staring at the poet) don't tell me you're not afraid of Madame Lacombe?

Poet: Well, where is she? She is the one who called the meeting.

Butcher: She'll be here.

Petty Thief: (laughing) She probably had to spend time with her aristocratic girls.

Butcher: Don't let her hear you say that.

Poet: Why not? This is the new France — if Madame Lacombe wants to use the young women for her own needs before she turns them over to Madame Guillotine, why should that be any concern to the rest of France?

Butcher: There is no reason at all, but I still don't think she would like to hear people talking about it.

Father Sieyès: There is one man who doesn't appear to be afraid of her.

Poet: And who is that?

Father Sieyès: This new recruit that she has brought among us. I don't like him.

Poet: Because he doesn't seem to fear Madame Lacombe?

Father Sieyès: That's partly it, but it is also because he doesn't seem to love the Revolution. He says the right things, but I don't trust him. He speaks only when spoken to, and then he says very little.

Petty Thief: (looking at the poet) That is very refreshing considering the way some people run at the mouth.

Poet: Shut your face.

Father Sieyès: I hate the old regime and everything connected to it.

Butcher: Even the Son of God?

Father Sieyès: Yes, especially the Son of God. But I've learned to know my enemy. That sailor, or so he says, has the mark of an aristocrat, a Frenchman of the old regime.

Petty Thief: I don't think Madame Lacombe can be so easily fooled as you think.

Father Sieyès: I don't say that she is wrong, I say that she might have been deceived by this man.

Poet: Well, there are ways to test him.

Father Sieyès: Then I suggest we test him.

[Enter Madame Lacombe, Brian Delaine, and the strongman. Delaine's assumed name is Charles Delarose.]

Madame Lacombe: What are you bickering about now, you fools?

Father Sieyès: Nothing.

Madame Lacombe: Then stop bickering about nothing and listen to me. I've just come from a meeting with Citizen Robespierre. He wants every citizens' committee to be watchful for a man named Brian Delaine. It is rumored that he is now in France.

Butcher: Who is Brian Delaine? I can't watch for him if I don't know what he looks like.

Madame Lacombe: We don't know what he looks like. We do know that he is a French aristocrat. He was born and raised in France, but he has spent a good deal of his adult life at sea, as a captain of his own ship. He had one brother who was executed for his crimes against the people while living in Haiti. Brian Delaine, after shedding innocent blood, was able to save his brother's children and wife. His other brother and his parents were executed by Citizen Robespierre for crimes against the people. Only the one female, Brian Delaine's niece from that branch of Delaine's family, remains alive. I have tried to obtain information about Brian Delaine from that niece, but she has stoutly maintained her ignorance of his whereabouts. I now believe that she does not know where her uncle is.

Father Sieyès: Why do you believe her?

Madame Lacombe: Because I don't believe a fourteen-year-old girl can deceive me.

Poet: Maybe she is a very deceptive fourteen-year-old girl. A woman at any age can deceive...

Madame Lacombe: Yes, she can deceive a man, but not another woman. And not a woman like me. Tomorrow I will turn her over to the Tribunal. Then we will see if Brian Delaine surfaces.

Petty Thief: I don't understand all this fuss over one man.

Poet: Then you understand nothing, my dear cutthroat. This man, this Brian Delaine, has made several dramatic rescues in Haiti that has put fear in the hearts of the Haitians. Every time they turn around, they are worried that Brian Delaine will get them. He has become a bogeyman to them.

Petty Thief: But this is France, we are rational men, we don't believe in bogeymen.

Father Sieyès: We are no different than our black brothers. In fact, we are inferior to them — they are the true people of nature, they are...

Poet: Yes, Father, we all, except our petty thief over there, have read Rousseau. But the point is that we dare not let the poetic of this Brian Delaine take hold in France. Not now, not when we have defeated the old regime.

Butcher: I do not understand what you mean when you say the 'poetic of Brian Delaine.'

Poet: I mean what is here (pointing to his heart). The old regime gave the people a king, a God, and the things that go with a king and God. Things such as marriage and the little things that come from married love. And what do we oppose that poetic with? We oppose the Christian monarchy with a government by the people. We oppose the poetic of marriage with the freedom of lust. And we oppose the tyranny of money with the liberty of a commonality of citizens who share their money with each other. Our poetic will win, but we must never allow the old regime's poetic to resurface. There shall be no heroes of old France in our new France.

Father Sieyès: I don't always agree with Peter Chalier, but in this case I heartily agree with him. Our Revolution has been successful because the people's hearts belong to us. We must not allow some hero from Christian France to steal even one heart away from the Revolution.

Butcher: Then we should make sure he does not rescue his niece.

Madame Lacombe: He won't. In fact, I think it is his concern for his niece that will lead him up the steps to Madame Guillotine.

Father Sieyès: You haven't said a word, Charles. What is your opinion of the poetic of the old regime? Is it really as dangerous as Peter Chalier and I think it is?

Brian Delaine: I have no opinion on the subject.

Father Sieyès: Surely, you must have some opinion.

Brian Delaine: I don't.

Madame Lacombe: Let him be. He has been very helpful to the Revolution in his own way. He does not need to talk to you imbeciles.

Poet: Very well, but I hardly think any of us here are imbeciles.

Madame Lacombe: You are when you just talk and never act. Find me Brian Delaine, find me more aristocrats, and then I'll call you something other than imbeciles.

Now, let me bring up a second matter that concerns Citizen Robespierre. I must speak of that loathsome reptile, the Englishman, Edmund Burke. This is what he wrote in a letter, which we intercepted, to one of our citizens. He has publicized similar letters before. I quote:

'You find it perfectly ridiculous, and unfit for me in particular, to take these things as my ingredients of commiseration. Pray why is it absurd in me to think, that the chivalrous spirit which dictated a veneration for women of condition and of beauty, without any consideration whatever of enjoying them, was the great source of those manners which have been the pride and ornament of Europe for so many ages? And am I not to lament that I have lived to see those manners extinguished in so shocking a manner, by means of speculations of finance, and the false science of a sordid and degenerate philosophy? I tell you again, that the recollection of the manner in which I saw the queen of France, in the year 1774, and the contrast between that brilliancy, splendour, and beauty, with the prostrate homage of a nation to her, and the abominable scene of 1789, which I was describing, did draw tears from me and wetted my paper. These tears came again into my eyes, almost as often as I looked at the description; they may again. You do not believe this fact, nor that these are my real feelings; but that the whole is affected, or, as you express it, downright foppery. My friend, I tell you it is truth; and that it is true, and will be truth, when you and I are no more; and will exist as long as men with their natural feelings shall exist. I shall say no more on this foppery of mine. Oh! by the way, you ask me how long I have been an admirer of German ladies? Always the same. Present me the idea of such massacres about any German lady here, and such attempts to assassinate her, and such a triumphant procession from Windsor to the Old Jewry, and I assure you, I shall be quite as full of natural concern and just indignation.'

Butcher: Burke is just a scribbler, he does us no harm.

Poet: I disagree, Burke has the...

Father Sieyès: The poetic?

Poet: Yes.

Petty Thief: But he lives in England. What can we do about him?

Madame Lacombe: You? Probably nothing. But he (pointing to the poet) and he (pointing to the priest) might be able to combat him in their writings.

Poet. That is impossible.

Father Sieyès: Why?

Poet: Because neither you nor I possess Burke's poetical gifts. He writes with an eloquence that is second only to Shakespeare.

Father Sieyès: Then you are an aristocrat?

Poet: No, I am not. I am the son of the gutter, who knew neither father nor mother.

Petty Thief: But you were raised by aristocrats.

Poet: I was adopted when I was five years old by an aristocratic family. They took me from a convent orphanage. They loved me and educated me. And in return I betrayed them when Robespierre came into power.

Father Sieyès: Why, if they loved you and treated you well did you betray them?

Poet: Because I hated them. I hated their superiority, which is what they called 'charity.' I am not fooled by such posturing. At the heart of their charity was a desire to lord it over me, to treat me as inferior because I needed kindness. So I rejected their kindness. And it was my testimony that sent them and my brothers and sisters by adoption to the guillotine. So don't tell me I'm an aristocrat. I am of the people. But I believe in knowing your enemy. So I tell you, no living man can match Burke's eloquence.

Father Sieyès: Then what should be done about Burke?

Poet: There are two ways to destroy him. The first is to bring up sordid details of his amours.

Father Sieyès: He had no amours. His personal life is quite free of clandestine affairs.

Poet: Then you must deal with him by the second way.

Father Sieyès: Which is?

Poet: Kill him. There are plenty of English Jacobins who would be quite willing to kill him.

Butcher: For the cause?

Poet: Or for money?

Madame Lacombe: Such decisions will be made by Citizen Robespierre. The people of this cell should focus on Delaine and the other French aristocrats. Do your job and France will remain a free republic. We can't rest. The king is dead, the queen will be next. And then all of Europe will follow us.

Father Sieyès: Amen to that.

[They all look at him disapprovingly.]

I meant that metaphorically.

Madame Lacombe: (glaring at him) The meeting is over.

[As they leave, Peter Chalier speaks privately with Father Sieyès.]

Poet: If you have doubts about this Delarose let me sift him. I'll find out if he is truly with us.

Father Sieyès: Yes, do that. And let me know as soon as possible. Her judgment is not infallible. I do not trust that man.

Poet: Leave it to me.

~~~~~

Act I. Scene II. A street of Paris

[Peter Chalier, the Poet, comes abreast of Brian Delaine and tries to engage him in conversation.]

Poet: Father Sieyès distrusts you because he doesn't know where you come from and you never speak at the meetings.

Delaine: I have nothing to say. Madame Lacombe finds me useful. When she no longer finds me useful, I will find other employment.

Poet: When Madame Lacombe no longer finds you useful, you most probably will not be able to find other employment. It's difficult to work when your head has been separated from your body.

Delaine: I suppose it is.

Poet: Doesn't that scare you?

Delaine: Does it scare you?

Poet: I suppose it does. I do not have a martyr complex as so many of those Christians used to have. I want to live.

Delaine: Why?

Poet: Ah, there you have me. I suppose I want to live so I can indulge my appetites a little longer. When I'm no longer able to indulge my appetites, I probably won't fear death as much as I do now. But this isn't right, you must do some of the talking.

Delaine: Why?

Poet: So I can tell Father Sieyès that you are not a traitor.

Delaine: I don't give a damn what you tell Father Sieyès.

Poet: So, I must report that I have failed to prove you guilty and I have failed to prove you innocent?

Delaine: You can report what you like. I am going that way and I don't want you to follow. Goodbye.

Poet: (to himself) Well, round one to you, Citizen Delarose, but I will find you out yet. Just give me time.

~~~~~

From Brian Delaine's Journal

What kind of country is it when these Neros of the gutter, these Jacobins, can kill thousands and thousands of innocent men, women, and children simply because they wear lace collars or say the Lord's Prayer? France the nation no longer exists. What I see before me is a portal to hell. My niece has been turned over to the Jacobin Tribunal for trial. There is no doubt about her sentence. If she dies it will mean I have perished. If I live she will live. We shall see.

~~~~~

Act II. Scene I. The Trial

[There were over 200 "enemies of the people" tried that day. Juliet Delaine's trial was number 51. She received a lengthier trial, about 10 minutes), than the others because she was the niece of Brian Delaine.]

Judge Trinchard: Juliet Delaine, you are accused of crimes against the people of France, how do you plead?

Juliet: I'm not guilty. It is this Tribunal that is guilty, it is you, and Robespierre, and every member of your council who have murdered my family and my fellow countrymen. I can understand why a poor man might steal bread for his family, but I cannot understand how men like you, who are not starving nor poor, can kill other human beings with no pangs of conscience, without the slightest thought for the God of Mercy. I don't want to die before I've lived, but I will gladly place my head on the chopping block and go to my God than live one more day in your France, which you have made a hell on earth. I am a Christian, I am a Delaine, and I am French. I spit on you and Robespierre and all the Jacobin pigs in this courtroom.

Trinchard: She is condemned from her own mouth.

[The prosecutor whispers to Trinchard.]

And yet the court might be lenient. We might change your death sentence to imprisonment. You are only 14 years old, you might be reformed. If you would tell us the whereabouts of your uncle, you needn't die on the guillotine.

Juliet: The last words I shall speak in this court are the words of my Savior: "Into thy hands I commend my spirit."

Trinchard: You shall die the death. Send me prisoner 52.

[Prisoner 52 steps forward.]

Trinchard: Guilty, now send me prisoner 53...

~~~~~

Act II. Scene II. Robespierre's chambers.

[Robespierre is seated behind his desk. The poet of the gutter, Peter Chalier, is standing before him.]

Robespierre: Citizenness Lacombe tells me that you can deliver Brian Delaine into my hands.

Chalier: Yes, I think I can.

Robespierre: I don't deal in what you think you can do. Can you or can you not deliver Brian Delaine into my hands?

Chalier: I can if you allow me access to his niece.

Robespierre: She is in prison – she has been sentenced to death. What is to be gained by talking to her? Do you think she will tell you something that she would not tell the Tribunal under threat of death? What can you do that the Tribunal can't?

Chalier: I can win her confidence. I can give her a friend to speak to in her last days. Make her one of the last of this group sentenced to die. Give me five days in prison with her. I was raised by aristocrats, I can pass for one. Place me in the cell with the others, and I will talk with her as a brother, as one who has also been condemned to die. And she will tell me something, I'm sure, that will lead to the capture of her uncle.

Robespierre: How can you be sure that her uncle is even in Paris?

Chalier: Because I know him.

Robespierre: You have met him?

Chalier: No, but I know him. For he too is a poet. I don't mean that he writes verse, but he is a poet in spirit. He will not let his niece die without making an effort to save her. No matter what the odds, he will try to save her.

Robespierre: You seem to admire him.

Chalier: No, I hate him. I hate him as Satan hates Christ, his poetic genius rebukes mine. I mean to triumph over him.

Robespierre: Bah, I hate all poets. I spit on you. There is only one thing necessary: That the republic should be cleansed of everyone who opposes the will of the people. The people – my will is their will and my will is stronger than poetry, than God, and every other obstacle in my path. They thought I was weak, those royalists, those aristocrats, but it was they who were weak. I have killed the King, and soon the Queen will walk the same path to the guillotine. Brian Delaine will die, if you can bring him to me, you shall be rewarded. But I don't need you; remember that you need me. It is my will which sustains France.

~~~~~

Act II. Scene III.

[The fourth day of Juliet's imprisonment. Juliet is one of twenty aristocrats of all ages and sexes confined within a large cell while they await Madame Guillotine. The poet Chaliier is one of the prisoners. He has, as he boasted, been able to make a confidante of Juliet Delaine.]

Chaliier: (to Juliet) You cried out in your sleep on three different occasions last night.

Juliet: You stayed near me then?

Chaliier: Yes, I shall stay near you to the end.

Juliet: You remind me of my older brother. He always took care of me. They killed him – it has all been one nightmare after another. What have we done to deserve this?

Chaliier: Nothing. They are men possessed by the devil, there is no other explanation. But you mustn't lose your faith in Christ. Did not our Lord tell us that the world would hate us? We go to a better place.

Juliet: I want to die well, as my father, mother, and brother did. But I am so afraid. (she cries)

Chaliier: (gently stroking her hair) There, there. Death is only terrible in the anticipation of it. When it happens, it is over quickly and then we enter the next world, a better world I'm sure.

Juliet: You've been such a comfort to me these last days, I feel so close to you.

Chaliier: I feel close to you. I never had a sister. But you have become, at the end of my life, my sister and my whole family. They have killed my father and mother as they killed yours. And even my uncle, to whom I was quite close, was sent to the guillotine. I have no blood relations left alive. Like you, I am an orphan.

Juliet: I have an uncle, two cousins, and an aunt that are still alive.

Chaliier: Indeed! Who are they?

Juliet: My uncle (in a whisper) – is Brian Delaine.

Chaliier: I never knew that was your last name. This Brian Delaine is a famous man. The Jacobins hate him.

Juliet: I know, they offered me my freedom if I would tell them where he is.

Chaliier: But you wouldn't tell them?

Juliet: Never!

Chaliier: Is he in Paris?

Juliet: Truly, I don't know.

Chaliier: What is he like, this man called Brian Delaine?

Juliet: He is the youngest of the three sons of Edmund Delaine. My other uncle was killed in Haiti by the black Jacobins, but my Uncle managed to save my cousins and my aunt. He is a sea captain.

Chaliier: I think I might have met him once on the docks. He is a tall, thin man with an aristocratic bearing, is he not?

Juliet: No, that was not my uncle you met. My uncle is of medium height and incredibly strong and well built. But he was always very kind to me and my brother. Whenever he visited he brought us presents and told us stories.

Chaliier: You say your uncle saved your aunt and your cousins from the black savages of Haiti?

Juliet: Yes.

Chaliier: How?

Juliet: By killing the savages that killed his brother and were trying to kill his brother's family.

Chalier: Was he wounded in the fight?

Juliet: I don't know. He was wounded at some time in his life because he has a deep scar along his right cheekbone.

Chalier: (carefully masking his excitement) No doubt a man such as your uncle could have gotten that scar in one of many fights.

Juliet: Yes.

Chalier: Do me one favor?

Juliet: Anything.

Chalier: Let me kiss your hand before I go. I didn't want to alarm you, but I am the next to go to the guillotine. Do not cry again, my little one. Think of me when it is your turn and remember that it all passes in a moment.

[Juliet, in the midst of her tears, gives Chalier her hand and he kisses it. Chalier goes to the door and gives a significant nod to the jailer who then comes and takes him away.]

~~~~~

Act II. Scene IV. Room above the butcher shop

Priest: Did you tell Madame Lacombe about Delaine?

Poet: No, I just told her that she was to bring him with her by order of Robespierre.

Priest: Did she ask any questions.

Poet: She tried to but...

Priest: Yes, now you have the upper hand.

Poet: That's right. Delaine was able to deceive her and now she just might go to the guillotine with him.

Priest: Are the soldiers posted?

Poet: Yes, don't worry about that. As soon as Delaine walks through that door, there will be twenty muskets pointed at him.

Priest: Don't forget that I was suspicious of him from the start.

Poet: You were right. But don't you forget that I was the one who found out who he was.

Priest: Has the girl been executed yet?

Poet: Not yet, she is going to be executed with her uncle.

Priest: Her execution does not upset you?

Poet: No, why should it?

Priest: It shouldn't, a true revolutionary dedicates himself to the revolution. But I thought that you might have some remnant of sentiment in you. So many of you literary people do.

Poet: I don't. And why do you question my dedication to the revolution? I could just as easily question your dedication. After all many of your co-religionists have been executed. And do you not profess to serve Christ who is the one rallying point of the aristocrats?



Priest: Whomever Christ may have been, he is not my master. I serve the church of man. And man can only be man when he throws off all the superstitions from the past.

Poet: That's where you are wrong, my good father. Maybe you or I don't need superstition, but the people do. They must have gods.

Priest: Robespierre is going to give them some.

Poet: Just like that? No, Father, harvest gods and other such deities will not ultimately satisfy the people. They are happy now as they watch the aristocrats losing their heads, but once that stops they'll start looking for something else. And what will you give them?

Priest: Their freedom.

Poet: Ah, but they don't want freedom. They want to worship a god, and having once worshipped a human God they can't go back to the impersonal gods of paganism.

Priest: What do you suggest?

Poet: Give them the natural savage, give them the negro.

Priest: That will come, but first we must kill all the aristocrats.

Poet: We shall. And in one half-hour we will have a most dangerous aristocrat in our hands.

Priest: That could lead to something more for you. You might be put in charge of Burke's assassination.

Poet: I would like that. He has already done great damage to the cause in England. But his death will still be a great good. I hope I will be given that assignment. But I must come back to something you said.

Priest: What was that?

Poet: You said "whomever Christ might have been." I take it that you do not believe that he was the son of God?

Priest: Not any more than I am a son of God.

Poet: That's curious, because I do believe He was the son of God.

Priest: Surely, as an educated man you can't believe in fairy tales?

Poet: But I do. I believe in the son of God because I hate him. My hate is such a part of me that if I was to deny its reality, I would have to deny myself. I live for that hate; there is nothing for me without it. My entire life, in the streets, in the orphanage, and then in the house of the aristocrats who adopted me, was one long admonishment to love sweet and gentle Jesus, because he loved me. Bah, did I ever ask for his love? No, I did not, and I never shall. Satan will take me as his equal and I prefer equality with the devil to a subservience to Christ.

Priest: I don't see how a man, an educated man such as yourself, can become so obsessed with myths.

Poet: Ah, my friend, they are not myths. In fact...

Priest: Quiet, I hear someone coming.

[The butcher enters the room, completely out of breath and in a panic.]

Butcher: He killed them both.

Priest: Calm down. Who was killed and by whom?

Butcher: (glancing at the poet) I know you said to tell no one why I was to bring Delarose, I mean Delaine, here, but she got it out of me.

Poet: You fool! What did she do when she found out?

Butcher: We were in her shop. She told Gorgo to kill him. But... oh, it was horrible. They wrestled. You won't believe it, but I saw it with my own eyes. That Delaine, that fiend, he killed Gorgo, he broke his neck. Then, as Gorgo sank to the floor, Madame Lacombe pulled that pistol she carries. But Delaine leaped across the room and knocked her hand just as she fired. The bullet struck her in the heart. I stood there petrified. I thought he was going to kill me as well. But he didn't. He said, 'My niece lives. I exchanged places with the jailer for one hour. Tell your friend Chalier that we will meet again someday. And that day will be his last day on earth.'

~~~~~

Act III. Scene 1. Burke's house in London

[During the Reign of Terror, Burke often took French aristocrats, who had managed to escape from France, into his home until they could find a place to live in Britain. At this particular time, the Count Le Blanc, his wife, his two sons, aged ten and twelve, and his two daughters, aged fourteen and eight, are all staying with Burke. Le Blanc and Burke are speaking in Burke's study.]

Le Blanc: Even though I knew it was coming, I still can't believe it happened.

Burke: I can't get those lines of Shakespeare out of my head: "Humanity must perforce prey on itself, Like monsters of the deep." It is truly a monstrous act. I never dreamed since I last saw Her Majesty some sixteen years ago – she was the Dauphiness then – at the Palace of Versailles, that she would be humiliated, tortured, and then beheaded by a band – there is no other word for it – of devils.

Le Blanc: I was privileged to call her and her husband my friends. I haven't told my wife and children the news yet. I don't trust myself to tell them without breaking down.

Burke: You'll find a way. I've lost a wife and a son. All we can do in the face of death is cling to our common hope. And He is the one the Jacobins hate. They attack Him through His people.

Le Blanc: Yes, have we ever seen hell on earth in all its hideousness before these Jacobins took power?

Burke: Never. Not in Nero's Rome nor in Islamic Spain was it quite so blatant.

Le Blanc: And it is my nation that has led the way, at least what used to be my nation.

Burke: The Jacobin illness is spreading though. Here in Britain there are many Jacobin organizations.

Le Blanc: Yes, but Britain has something that France did not have.

Burke: What?

Le Blanc: Britain has Edmund Burke. Surely there can be no Jacobinism where Burke lives.

Burke: I have one voice and my sword is a pen. I don't think that will be enough to stop the Jacobin plague from spreading to Britain. But then I am not a prophet.

Le Blanc: You've been rejected by your own party, haven't you?

Burke: Yes, I'll make my farewell speech tomorrow.

Le Blanc: The whole lot of them – Fox, Priestly, Price, Shelburne and the rest should be boiled in oil.

Burke: I lived and worked with them for many years, but it seemed I never really knew them nor they me. It's unthinkable that any man would support the Jacobins, but to find that men you thought were your friends could support them is terrible.

Le Blanc: I have no explanation for what is happening.

Burke: I fear there is only one explanation – the Jacobins are of the devil. I see, in all this turmoil, the sneering face of the devil. It's best we put on, as St. Paul enjoins us, the whole armour of Christ.

Le Blanc: Yes. And in the meantime, you should not go anywhere unarmed.

Burke: Why? Soon they'll be rid of me; I won't have a seat in Parliament, so why should they kill me?

Le Blanc: Because in Parliament or out of Parliament, you are still Edmund Burke, a man with a heart opposed to their vile Jacobinism and a pen that throws their lies back in their faces.

Burke: I'm not a duelist. I will walk these streets as I have always walked them, but I thank you for your concern.

~~~~~

Act III. Scene II. An upper room in a London dwelling

[Chalier, Priestly, and Price are there.]

Priestly: You understand that there must be no connecting link between Dr. Price, myself, or any of the English Jacobins and you and your people?

Chalier: I understand. I have four French assassins with me. They will do their work very efficiently without asking any questions.

Dr. Price: And afterwards?

Chalier: We will disappear completely. We will be back in Paris the next day. I have made all the arrangements.

Priestly: I suppose you wonder why we are taking the trouble to have Burke killed since he is resigning from the party tomorrow.

Chalier: On the contrary, I approve of what you are doing. Burke is a great danger in or out of Parliament.

Price: I'm glad you can see that. We are not having him killed because we are bloodthirsty or out of any kind of personal animosity. It is because we love humanity, at least what humanity can become one day. And Burke could set humanity back hundreds of years.

Chalier: I suppose men become Jacobins for different reasons. I don't care for humanity at all. I want humanity to be destroyed. And the Jacobins are great destroyers. As for Burke, I hate him. When I kill him, it will be for hate's sake and not for humanity's sake. And frankly, gentlemen, you make me sick with all your talk of humanity. You hate Burke because he makes you feel foolish every time he speaks out against Jacobinism.

Priestly: I don't understand you. Are you on our side or not?

Chalier: I am on Satan's side. Yes, I believe in the devil. Does that surprise you? It surprised Father Sieyès as well. Am I on your side then if I side with Satan? Yes, I am. Although you might not acknowledge it, you are on Satan's side as well.

Price: Nonsense, I am on God's side.

Chalier: What God?

Price: Nature, the greatest god of them all.

Chalier: Fine, but we have talked enough. I will kill Burke tonight. He will never deliver a farewell salvo against your exalted selves. And you shall never see me again. Goodbye.

~~~~~

From Brian Delaine's Diary

Chalier had four accomplices stationed along the street where Burke took his walks. Two were waiting on Gerrard Street and two were waiting on Lisle Street. Should they fail, Chalier had rented an apartment that overlooked Lisle Street from which he had a clear shot at Burke.

I followed Chalier to England because I suspected that he had been sent there to kill Burke. But I didn't know where or how he would strike until that evening. Once I knew his plan I struck first. I killed all four assassins without much trouble. They were intent on surprising Burke, which left them open to my surprise attack.

After killing Chalier's henchmen, I caught up with Burke and stopped him from walking within range of Chalier's musket. Then I killed Chalier. He had his chance, my knife against his musket. I won't pretend that I felt any sorrow for him. He was a cold-blooded, reptilian monster, well deserving of the title — Jacobin.

Why did the Jacobins want to kill Burke? For the same reason they killed the King and Queen of France. Burke stood for old Europe, for Christ's Europe. And the Jacobins hated him for that. St. John tells us that when Christ cured the lame and sick on the Sabbath day, the Jews asked Him why He worked on the Sabbath. Christ replied, "My Father worketh hitherto, and I work." Then, St. John tells us, "Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill Him..." Anyone, if he follows in Christ's footsteps by defending Christian Europe, will be hated by the Jacobins. They will not meet such individuals in fair and open debate. They will kill such individuals with less remorse than Christian Europeans would kill a fly.

And who is the greatest defender of Christian Europe? It is Burke. That is why their hatred of him has no bounds. I long for a reckoning with them all. But I am one man. We shall see if other Europeans will rise up against the Jacobin leviathan or whether they will be consumed by it. Burke and I went back to his home after the attack.

~~~~~

### Act III. Scene III.

Burke: They killed their own King and Queen, so it doesn't surprise me that they wanted to kill me for my defense of the King and Queen, but I am surprised that they were able to come to Britain undetected in order to kill me.

Delaine: They had to have help from the British Jacobins.

Burke: Yes, I think you're right. And I don't think it is an accident that the attack occurred right before I was to address the Assembly for the last time. I hate to think that it has gone this far, but my heart tells me that it has. The men I once called my friends are possessed by the devil and they hate me with the satanic hatred of the devil. But I needn't tell you about the Jacobin devils. Your family has suffered so much at their hands. How is your niece doing?

Delaine: She's doing well. She has met her cousins and her aunt for the first time, and she seems ready to live in the remembrance of her family and her family's God.

Burke: Everything comes back to our common hope. They hate us, because of Him.

Delaine: Yes, they do, and He told us it would be like this.

Burke: Please, my friend, stay tonight, and if your schedule permits you can hear my resignation speech tomorrow.

Delaine: I wouldn't miss it for the world.

~~~~~

From Brian Delaine's Journal

I don't remember the entire speech and I didn't have a scrivener by my side, but some of the highlights stand out. Amidst sneers and jeers, Burke defended Christian Europe against the Jacobins, both foreign and domestic, cutting directly to the demonic heart of their system:

"They who have made but superficial studies in the Natural History of the human mind, have been taught to look on religious opinions as the only cause of enthusiastick zeal, and sectarian propagation. But there is no doctrine whatever, on which men can warm, that is not capable of the very same effect. The social nature of man impels him to propagate his principles, as much as physical impulses urge him to propagate his kind. The passions give zeal and vehemence. The understanding bestows design and system. The whole man moves under the discipline of his opinions. Religion is among

the most powerful causes of enthusiasm. When any thing concerning it becomes an object of much meditation, it cannot be indifferent to the mind. They who do not love religion, hate it. The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him “with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength.” He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man. Let no one judge of them by what he has conceived of them, when they were not incorporated, and had no lead. They were then only passengers in a common vehicle. They were then carried along with the general motion of religion in the community, and without being aware of it, partook of it’s influence. In that situation, at worst, their nature was left free to counterwork their principles. They despaired of giving any very general currency to their opinions. They considered them as a reserved privilege for the chosen few. But when the possibility of dominion, lead, and propagation presented themselves, and that the ambition, which before had so often made them hypocrites, might rather gain than lose by a daring avowal of their sentiments, then the nature of this infernal spirit, which has “evil for it’s good,” appeared in it’s full perfection. Nothing, indeed, but the possession of some power, can with any certainty discover what at the bottom is the true character of any man. Without reading the speeches of Vergniaux, François of Nantz, Isnard, and some others of that sort, it would not be easy to conceive the passion, rancour, and malice of their tongues and hearts. They worked themselves up to a perfect phrenzy against religion and all it’s professors. They tore the reputation of the Clergy to pieces by their infuriated declamations and invectives, before they lacerated their bodies by their massacres. This fanatical atheism left out, we omit the principal feature in the French Revolution, and a principal consideration with regard to the effects to be expected from a peace with it.’

And how vividly I remember his final words to all the assembled Pharisees, back sliders, and hypocrites:

‘I should agree with you about the vileness of the controversy with such miscreants as the “Revolution Society,” and the “National Assembly”; and I know very well that they, as well as their allies, the Indian delinquents, will darken the air with their arrows. But I do not yet think they have the advowson of reputation. I shall try that point. My dear sir, you think of nothing but controversies; “I challenge into the field of battle and retire defeated, &c.” If their having the last word be a defeat, they most assuredly will defeat me. But I intend no controversy with Dr. Price, or Lord Shelburne, or any other of their set. I mean to set in full view the danger from their wicked principles and their black hearts. I intend to state the true principles of our constitution in church and state, upon grounds opposite to theirs. If any one be the better for the example made of them, and for this exposition, well and good. I mean to do my best to expose them to the hatred, ridicule, and contempt of the whole world; as I always shall expose such calumniators, hypocrites, sowers of sedition, and approvers of murder and all its triumphs. When I have done that, they may have the field to themselves; and I care very little how they triumph over me, since I hope they will not be able to draw me at their heels, and carry my head in triumph on their poles...

The Whigs of this day have before them, in this Appeal, their constitutional ancestors: They have the doctors of the modern school. They will choose for themselves. The author of the Reflections has chosen for himself. If a new order is coming on, and all the political opinions must pass away as dreams, which our ancestors have worshipped as revelations, I say for him, that he would rather be the last (as certainly he is the least) of that race of men, than the first and greatest of those who have coined to themselves Whig principles from a French die, unknown to the impress of our fathers in the constitution.’

~~~~~

I must break off from Delaine’s diary to deal with some recent events. But let me just say that I see in Delaine’s diary and Burke’s writings the exact portrait of our modern dilemma. The liberals want to attack God by striking His people, and by doing so they hope to destroy the image of God in man. Have they succeeded? To a large degree they have succeeded. There is no image of God in man in a liberal, a Moslem, or a colored heathen, but there is a resistance movement. There is the Reverend Grey and there are men such as Vogel, the leader of the resistance movement in Germany, and there are hundreds of ordinary Europeans who have cast their lot in with Christ despite the threat of dungeon, fire, and sword. The European people will not go gently into the dark night of liberalism.

Now to the recent events. The reader, if there are any readers left, might wonder why there had to be a second trial of Reverend Grey. Wasn’t he tried, convicted, and sentenced to death by the Moslem-British high court? Yes, he was, but after his escape, due to the heroic intervention of Chambers and his men, the Anglican and Moslem officials put out their own false story line. They said, in order to save face and to make themselves look honorable, that the Reverend Grey had been pardoned under the condition that he not take up arms against the Moslem-British people. Then, according to the official Islamic-British government, he did take up arms against Islamic Britain. Therefore, when he was recaptured during the Battle of Cornwall (captured because he refused to leave one of our wounded and dying soldiers) the Moslem-liberal forces decided, at the request of the Vatican, to have him tried for treason, treason against the Moslem-Christian

faith. How can there be a Moslem-Christian faith? Obviously there can't be such a blending. Our Lord is the beginning and the end, the first and the last. But in Pope Francis II's religion there can be a blending of Islam, Christianity, and all of the pagan faiths. Pope Francis II has placed Christ in a subordinate position to Muhammed and the nature gods of the colored heathens. Such a god is not proscribed by Islam. So Pope Francis II is permitted to perform his syncretistic mass at the Vatican and the bulk of the 'faithful' have gone along with Pope Francis and the Moslems. There has been some resistance, but as of now the resistance has been a few scattered guerrilla movements. Hopefully greater resistance will follow, but communication between white, Christian resistance movements is very difficult.

Rev. Grey then was sent to prison in Rome to be tried and sentenced to death. No one had any doubt about the upcoming death sentence. But the trial never came about. Rome was struck by an earthquake and Christopher's cell was found to be empty on the day after the earthquake. Whether he was buried in the rubble of the Vatican (he was housed in the Vatican dungeon) or whether he escaped was not known at the time. Then, two weeks after the earthquake, a man from my native Italy came to me with a letter. My countryman gave me his bona fides by telling me some things that only Christopher Grey could have known. He had a letter in his possession that was from Christopher. I felt like Horatio must have felt when he received Hamlet's letter:

I'm writing this in haste, but I just had to let you know that I am alive and no longer a captive. Please keep this secret for now. I have my reasons. It won't be long; soon I'll be in Britain again. Till then –

In Christ, God keep you.

Christopher

It wasn't long. One week after I received the letter was the third battle of Cornwall. In the first battle, some two years previous, we established the first Christian foothold in Moslem Britain. In the second battle some three months ago, we repulsed a Moslem assault on Cornwall. In that battle Christopher was taken captive. But although we repulsed the attack, the Moslem forces were not completely routed. They still were in the area surrounding Cornwall, waiting to strike. And then on December 23rd they did strike. King Arthur II was now battle tested and so was Chambers and our British soldiers, but the Moslems had the greater numbers and they had many British officers from the old British army aiding their side. It looked as if the Moslem army would triumph. Then (I received this account from Chambers) a man on a white horse appeared. I'll let Chambers tell the rest.

"It seemed completely out of place, like something from a bygone era. With a cross on his chest, a huge sword in his hand, he bid us charge the enemy. I thought of that vision of St. John, 'And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.' No, it was not the Lord. But it was his faithful apostle. It was my liege lord and kinsman, the Christ-bearer, Christopher Grey. Our men would have followed him anywhere. At that moment we became an army of Davids. We advanced behind Christopher, and we routed the Moslem forces. Cornwall is no longer in danger. I shall never, in this world, feel so connected to my people and my God as I did during that crucial moment when I followed the man on the white horse into battle for King, country, and Christ."

The next day I met with Christopher in his newly acquired dwelling at Tintagel.

~~~~~

Act IV. Scene I.

Bontini: Don't you think that a man past 100 years of age should live a more sedentary life?

Grey: That would be nice, but you young fellows of seventy will not allow me to retire. You keep finding work for me to do.

Bontini: I find work for you? I don't think so. I advised you not to go near the battlefield to tend to the wounded. And I certainly knew nothing about your plan to lead a charge in the last battle.

Grey: No, I don't suppose you did. So what you are saying is that I have no one to blame but myself if I have no peaceful hours.

Bontini: (smiling) Yes, that is exactly what I am saying.

Grey: I saw a marvelous American movie some years back, called *Harvey*. That wonderful American actor Jimmy Stewart was the star. He played a man whose best friend was a 6' 3 1/2" white rabbit. Nobody else could see the rabbit, just Jimmy Stewart, or, as he was called in the movie, Elwood P. Dowd.

Dowd has quite a wonderful relationship with the rabbit, but his relatives (Dowd's relatives, not the rabbit's) try to put Dowd in a mental institution. They finally desist in their efforts because they decide that despite what they perceive to be Dowd's insanity, he has a very pleasant personality that might be ruined should he be 'cured' of his white rabbit 'delusion.'

But as it turns out, there really is a white rabbit called Harvey. And the psychiatrist treating Dowd comes to see the rabbit just as clearly as Dowd does. In quite a humorous fashion the movie turns the tables on the 'sane' people and gives the nod to the 'insane' poets of the spirit. In *Harvey* it is the pure in heart that see another world, a better world. Now I grant you that Harvey does not give us the name of the Author of that other world – it is after all an artwork from the 20th century – but it does, with humor and grace, bid us look to a fairy tale apprehension of existence rather than a purely material apprehension of existence. I think if we follow the fairy tale, the European fairy tale, we will end up in His Kingdom Come, which, I firmly believe, is very close to us right here on earth, because He told us that the Kingdom of God was within.

Bontini: What is your heaven?

Grey: To be with my wife, my parents, and my friends right here in Britain in the presence of my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

Bontini: That might seem like a very pedestrian heaven to a lot of people.

Grey: It's all I want.

Bontini: Like Ratty and his river?

Grey: Precisely.

Bontini: It will come. Is there anything you want to tell me about your... what shall I call it? Your visit to Rome?

Grey: (laughing) It was a very strange visit.

Bontini: Because of the earthquake?

Grey: No, that was rather startling, but the strangeness of the visit was the result of my audience with Pope Francis II.

Bontini: Where did he hold the audience?

Grey: In his Papal chambers, which are now part of the Vatican ruins.

Bontini: Was it a private audience?

Grey: Yes. I was brought to his chambers in chains, and I was chained to the wall during the audience. But to the best of my knowledge, when the jailers left his chambers, we were alone.

Bontini: What was his purpose in having you brought there?

Grey: I'm not exactly sure. Let me tell you what he said and then you be the judge.

~~~~~

Pope Francis II: I hope the chains are not too uncomfortable, but they are unfortunately necessary. You have escaped before.

Grey: These chains will hold me. Say what you have to say.

Pope Francis II: I testified against you at your last trial, and I will testify against you at your trial tomorrow. But I wanted to give you one last chance.

Grey: So did the Archbishop of Canterbury. But then he only came to my cell, you've invited me to your quarters.

Pope: I believe that a man can change, even a man like you.

Grey: What do I need to change?

Pope: You need to change inside. You need to see the true essence of the world.

Grey: What is the essence of the world?

Pope: That won't do. You are not open to what I'm saying. Please, this is your last chance, your very last chance. You must really listen to me.

Let me start with that great Catholic, Pierre Teilhard de Chardin. His thought might seem commonplace now, but his thought was the beginning of the Church's realization that nature, not some anthropomorphic God, was the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end. When you truly understand that concept, the whole universe is opened up for you. You become one with the natural world and the psychic world.

Grey: May I ask a few questions?

Pope: If they are genuine questions. I have no time or patience for your usual irreverence.

Grey: You find me irreverent?

Pope: Yes, I do. What would you call a man who criticizes the Church and the existing government?

Grey: I see your point. But let me ask you – where does Christ figure in this religion of yours?

Pope: It is not my religion, I did not invent it – it is the religion of mankind. As for Christ, we have dealt with Him. We have reframed his image so that He can no longer do damage to mankind.

Grey: Then He is not the Savior, the Son of the living God?

Pope: I believe I covered that topic at your last trial. And if you took the trouble to read my encyclicals you would know that the Church regards Jesus Christ as a son of God; we do not regard Jesus Christ as the Son of God. Such a concept is contrary to nature and therefore blasphemous. And that belief made mankind very unhappy. We are striving to make men happy by eliminating the concept of an anthropomorphic God, what you call the living God.

Grey: Life imitates art.

Pope: What do you mean?

Grey: You sound like the Grand Inquisitor in Dostoyevsky's novel *The Brothers Karamazov*.

Pope: I have not read that book, nor have I read any of Dostoyevsky's works. They are all on the Index.

Grey: And you are a good Catholic, you don't read proscribed literature?

Pope: Of course I don't. We have gone beyond all the old concepts of freedom of conscience and thought. We have fed our children the truths that can make them happy.

Grey: And those truths – what exactly are they?

Pope: That man is one with nature. That all men come from nature and all men return to nature. Personal immortality does not exist, except in its natural state. We return to nature, so we still are part of existence; we become even more natural.

Grey: Now you sound like the heretical gypsy in Scott's *Quentin Durward*, but then I suppose his works are also on the Index.

Pope: Yes, they are.



Grey: "For I know that my Redeemer liveth, And that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: And though worms destroy this body, Yet in my flesh shall I see God." I don't expect you to believe that, but it is true. The natural world you speak of is only a semblance of another reality. The reality of the kingdom of God that is within.

Pope: I've heard all that before.

Grey: Where did you hear it?

Pope: I've read some history. But let us come to the point. In order to avoid execution you must take the blinders off your eyes.

Grey: Let me come to the point, the same point that I made at my last trial and the same point that I shall make to my last dying gasp. Jesus Christ is the Son of the living God, He and He alone is the resurrection and the life. Surely His words must touch your heart? "I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die; Believest thou this?" Do you believe that? If you don't, if you truly believe in the abhorrent faith you have described to me, then you are to be pitied as a man and opposed as a religious leader.

Pope: You dare say all that to me?

Grey: Yes, what else can I say?

Pope: You fiend! (he strikes Grey across the face again and again, until Grey's face bleeds and Pope Francis's hands bleed)  
Guards!

[Four Vatican guards appear]

Take him away and send me a doctor.

~~~~~

Act IV. Scene II.

Bontini: Was the doctor for you?

Grey: No, it was for him. He broke his hand on one of the blows to my face.

Bontini: Your face still shows some of the marks. I thought it was from the earthquake.

Grey: No, the marks are from the Pope. They don't amount to much. As for the earthquake, it didn't touch me at all. Everything around my cell was crashing down, and I heard the screams of the dying and the cries of people trying to get to solid ground, but I was untouched.

My cell door was completely torn off its hinges. I was chained, so I thought that eventually the rubble would cover me, and I would cheat the executioners. But apparently the Lord wants me to tarry a little longer on this earth. A man came to my cell. He touched my chains and they fell off me. Then he led me up and out of the dungeon and out of Italy. He left me right before the Battle of Cornwall, but he left me armed and he left me with rather explicit instructions. His advice sounded rather unsound, from a military standpoint, but as it turned out, it was the perfect military strategy.

Bontini: Did he tell you his name?

Grey: He was an angel of the Lord, that is all I know.

Bontini: It's only 1 pm. Will you be performing *The Christmas Carol* this Christmas Eve?

Grey: Yes.

Bontini: I don't see how you can remember every line like you do.

Grey: It's part of my soul. All of sacred Europe is part of my soul. On January 1st, we'll be putting on the first production of King Lear in the new-old Britain. King Arthur and the Queen will be in attendance.

Bontini: It continues.

Grey: Yes.

~~~~~

#### Final Act – December 24th

Grey: (concludes his one-man performance of *The Christmas Carol*) “Scrooge was better than his word. He did it all, and infinitely more; and to Tiny Tim, who did not die, he was a second father. He became as good a friend, as good a master, and as good a man, as the good old city knew, or any other good old city, town, or borough, in the good old world. Some people laughed to see the alteration in him, but he let them laugh, and little heeded them; for he was wise enough to know that nothing ever happened on this globe, for good, at which some people did not have their fill of laughter in the outset; and knowing that such as these would be blind anyway, he thought it quite as well that they should wrinkle up their eyes in grins, as have the malady in less attractive forms. His own heart laughed: and that was quite enough for him.

“He had no further intercourse with Spirits, but lived upon the Total Abstinence Principle, ever afterwards; and it was always said of him, that he knew how to keep Christmas well, if any man alive possessed the knowledge. May that be truly said of us, and all of us! And so, as Tiny Tim observed, God bless Us, Every One!”

[and then –]

Grey: Please, stay with me for one last prayer for Christmas Eve, for Christmas Day, and for always.

[Grey and his people sing “Abide With Me”]

Abide with me; fast falls the eventide;  
The darkness deepens; Lord with me abide.  
When other helpers fail and comforts flee,  
Help of the helpless, O abide with me.

Swift to its close ebbs out life's little day;  
Earth's joys grow dim; its glories pass away;  
Change and decay in all around I see;  
O Thou who changest not, abide with me.

I need Thy presence every passing hour.  
What but Thy grace can foil the tempter's power?  
Who, like Thyself, my guide and stay can be?  
Through cloud and sunshine, Lord, abide with me.

I fear no foe, with Thee at hand to bless;  
Ills have no weight, and tears no bitterness.  
Where is death's sting? Where, grave, thy victory?  
I triumph still, if Thou abide with me.

Hold Thou Thy cross before my closing eyes;  
Shine through the gloom and point me to the skies.  
Heaven's morning breaks, and earth's vain shadows flee;  
In life, in death, O Lord, abide with me. +

---

#### Merry Christmas! - December 16, 2017

Of all the old festivals, however, that of Christmas awakens the strongest and most heartfelt associations. There is a tone of solemn and sacred feeling that blends with our conviviality, and lifts the spirit to a state of hallowed and elevated enjoyment. The services of the church about this season are extremely tender and inspiring. They dwell on the beautiful story of the origin of our faith, and the pastoral scenes that accompanied its announcement. They gradually increase in fervour and pathos during the season of Advent, until they break forth in full jubilee on the morning that brought peace and good-will to men. I do not know a grander effect of music on the moral feelings than to hear the full choir and the pealing organ performing a Christmas anthem in a cathedral, and filling every part of the vast pile with triumphant harmony.

It is a beautiful arrangement, also derived from days of yore, that this festival, which commemorates the announcement of the religion of peace and love, has been made the season for gathering together of family connections, and drawing closer again those bands of kindred hearts which the cares and pleasures and sorrows of the world are continually operating to cast loose; of calling back the children of a family who have launched forth in life, and wandered widely asunder, once more to assemble about the paternal hearth, that rallying-place of the affections, there to grow young and loving again among the endearing mementoes of childhood. – *Old Christmas* by Washington Irving

---

Dark and dull night, flie hence away,  
And give the honour to this day  
That Sees December turn'd to May.

\* \* \* \* \*

Why does the chilling winter's morne  
Smile like a field beset with corn?  
Or smell like to a meade new-shorne,  
Thus on the sudden?—Come and see  
The cause why things thus fragrant be.

—Herrick

---

I do not claim that there have never been Christians among the colored races, but I do claim what to me seems obvious: The celebration of Christmas is largely a European celebration because faith in Jesus Christ, our Lord and Savior, has been largely a European faith. As the Europeans' faith in the Babe in the manger has declined, so have they declined as a people. The Europeans will be forever linked to Christianity. If they choose to continue to live in the slime pits of liberalism, they will cease to exist as a people. If they regain their vision of the Star of Bethlehem they will be the light of the world and they will strive as a people.

Obviously, we can't become Christians for utilitarian reasons, but we can open up our hearts to Christ the Lord and become men and women of faith. I don't say that faith is easy – it is not. But what of our ancestors, whom the liberals demonize and tell us to dismiss? They believed, because they loved much – they loved the Christ who enters human hearts.

It is the time of year to join our hearts to our kith and kin, alive and dead, to celebrate our Savior's birth. The older I get, the more loved ones I have who have gone to the Lord. But I believe that they celebrate Christmas with me. If you have just lost a loved one during this Christmas season, you cannot celebrate as you were wont to. But if we believe in the promise of Christmas, if we believe that the Babe in the manger is Christ the Lord, then the memory, over time, of our loved one's death is transformed into a hope for their resurrection from the dead. What are the words of the old Christmas carol? "The hopes and fears of all the years are met in thee tonight."

The shadow of the cross hangs over all our Christmases, just as it hung over His birth in a manger.

He was bruised for our iniquities.  
The chastisement of our peace was upon him;  
And with his stripes we are healed.

I believe the Babe in the manger is the Son of God, and I hope that there will always be at least seven thousand who remain on earth to follow the Star of Bethlehem. God bless you, and Merry Christmas! +

---

A note to my readers: For my December 23rd and December 30th posts, the usual short story will appear instead. The regular blog will resume on January 6th.

---

### **The Vacant Hearth - December 9, 2017**

Proper deformity seems not in the fiend  
So horrid as in woman.

—*King Lear*

---

Men can be great when great occasions call:

In little duties women find their spheres,  
The narrow cares that cluster round the hearth.

-R. H. Stoddard

---

This feeding frenzy over sexual harassment is like unto the feeding frenzy of the French Jacobins. They not only executed the French aristocrats, they also turned on each other. No one was pure enough. But the new age Jacobins are less inclusive than the original Jacobins. In revolutionary France the white proletariat was still 'the people'; now all white males are aristocrats who can be executed any time the liberals choose. When will white male liberals 'wake up' and realize that they must stop the feminist Robespierres before they fall under the axe? The answer is never, unless the white male liberals have an internal conversion and see the world with the eyes of a Christian European. So long as their moral vision is distorted by liberalism, they will continue to try to pin the 'racist' and 'sexist' label on their opponents while holding onto the delusion that they will escape the axe themselves.

The 'conservatives' display their liberalism when they join in the attack on the lefties who fall under the sexual harassment axe. Don't they see that these sexual harassment charges are liberal ploys, just as charges of racism are liberal ploys, to destroy the enemy, which is all white males?

No liberal of the female sex has a right to scream 'sexual harassment.' By embracing feminism she has left her humanity and her rights as a woman behind. Why should I or any male be concerned about the alleged sexual harassment of feminist harpies who welcome Moslem and black rapists into our nations while screaming about the sexual harassment of the pornographic actresses in Hollywood? The Victorian maiden and mother has a right to be protected from sexual harassment in word or deed. The modern feminists have no such rights. If we accord them any rights or sympathy we are supporting the continual reign of terror of our modern legions of Lady Macbeths.

Come, you spirits  
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here  
And fill me from the crown to the toe top-full  
Of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood,  
Stop up the access and passage to remorse,  
That no compunctious visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose nor keep peace between  
The effect and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
And take my milk for gall, your murd'ring ministers,  
Wherever in your sightless substances  
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick night,  
And pall thee in the dunest smoke of hell  
That my keen knife see not the wound it makes  
Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the dark  
To cry, "Hold, hold!"

The feminists, who rule in state and church, do not express themselves as poetically as Lady Macbeth, but her doctrine is their doctrine. I ask you – can a people who teach their young women the ethos of Lady Macbeth survive as a people? Of course they can't. And that is what the devil wants. He does not want the white Christ-bearing race to survive.

Madeline Albright, with Gloria Steinem and Hillary Clinton at her side, told an audience of women that any woman who voted for Trump deserved a "special place in hell." Leaving aside the hypocrisy of a woman who doesn't believe in the resurrection of the dead invoking an eternal hell for sinners, let's look at the meaning of Albright's statement. Whatever you might think of Trump, he has become, in the sick, distorted minds of the liberals, the symbol of the white Christian resistance to liberalism. So it follows that any woman who is still woman enough to support a white Christian male is damned. It's ironic that feminists invoke the devil in order to condemn women who support what the feminists perceive to be a white Christian counterattack, because it is the feminists, not the white Christians, who are in lock-step with the devil. The devil got to Adam through Eve. And Adam, instead of accepting his guilt for acquiescing to Eve's desire to be equal to God, tried to blame God for his sin – "The woman that thou gavest me..." Adam's sin was not that he loved his wife but that he loved her outside the orbit of God's love, and such a love is not love, it is sin. Macbeth "loves" his wife outside of God's grace, and he ends up completely indifferent to her death:

...The Queen, my lord, is dead.

MACBETH. She should have died hereafter;  
There would have been a time for such a word.  
Tomorrow, and tomorrow, and tomorrow

Creeps in this petty pace from day to day  
To the last syllable of recorded time;  
And all our yesterdays have lighted fools  
The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!  
Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player  
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage  
And then is heard no more. It is a tale  
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,  
Signifying nothing.

Yes, how could a man who has sold his “eternal jewel” to the devil in order to please the satanic will of the woman whom God gave him come to any other conclusion about life: “It is a tale told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, signifying nothing.”

It is not masculinity that the feminists hate, it is Christian masculinity that they hate. Lady Macbeth loves her husband when he is willing to fight for her reign as Queen of the kingdom of hell on earth. It is only when Macbeth balks of the idea of killing Duncan that she threatens to withdraw her love from him:

LADY MACBETH. What beast wast then  
That made you break this enterprise to me?  
When you durst do it, then you were a man,  
And, to be more than what you were, you would  
Be so much more the man. Nor time nor place  
Did then adhere, and yet you would make both.  
They have made themselves, and that their fitness now  
Does unmake you. I have given suck and know  
How tender 'tis to love the babe that milks me-  
I would, while it was smiling in my face,  
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless gums  
And dash'd the brains out had I so sworn as you  
Have done to this.

We see in Lady Macbeth's relationship with Macbeth the relationship the feminists have formed with the technological white male and the black male. The technological male is tolerated if he helps support the feminists' reign of terror. So long as he provides the abortion services and the other modern scientific advances that aid the new, satanic woman, the technological male will be allowed access to the womb, not the womb of life and love, which produces white babies, but the womb of lust, which leads a man to hell. And the males of color? They are the natural companions of the feminist who yearns for the destruction of all things white and Christian. So it is natural, natural as defined by the feminists, that the mademoiselles of feminism should welcome colored rapists and murderers into their nations and their bodies in order to hasten the destruction of the white race.

When I was growing up, all my favorite writers, with the exception of Shakespeare, were from the late 1700's through the 1800's. The liberals' attack was fiercer in those years than in previous centuries, but the resistance was also very fierce. I love the authors, such as Scott, Stevenson, Le Fanu, and Dickens, who fought back against the liberal leviathan. But there was always one thing that troubled me about the works of the late 18th and 19th century authors. I was troubled by what I called the 'creatures of light.' I loved little Dorrit, Maud Ruthyn, and Jeanie Deans, but I thought Scott, Dickens, and Le Fanu were projecting their male fantasies of the perfect woman into their works. I didn't believe they were writing realistically about women when they wrote about the creatures of light. I was wrong. Since I did not see any creatures of light in the modern world, I assumed that there were none. But I have watched my youngest daughter, who was raised by a good Christian mother to revere Our Savior and the civilization that was consecrated to our Savior, grow up and become like unto the heroines in the novels of the Christian authors of the 19th century. What a revelation! Our people, the antique Europeans, were right. When the love of Christ, as distinct from a rational affirmation of the existence of God, lies at the heart of a civilization, that civilization will produce the type of heroines and heroes that the novelists of the ancient times celebrated. We must not only remember the past, we must recreate the spiritual climate of the past. We currently live in a world woefully lacking in Christian women, because there are very few Christian men willing to put them in their place. That place is an exalted place, it is by a Christian hearth fire in a Christian home, but a man does have to face the forces of hell in order to champion the Christian hearth fire. But what are our lives without the warmth of that hearth fire? Liberated women that have forsaken the Christian hearth fire still seek to be warmed by the sparks from that fire, no matter how liberated they claim to be. They try to use the sparks to create a new hearth fire in the midst of Liberalism, but they always fail and become more bitter and hate-filled. I once saw a diamondback rattlesnake rear up and strike. Every time I see a feminist, I am reminded of that rattlesnake. The un-women, the feminists, are truly creatures from hell.

We must not take the liberals' statements of policy at face value, because they are the spawns of Satan, and Satan always lies. When they say they are for 'civil rights,' what they mean is that they are in favor of the destruction of the white Christ-bearing race. And when the feminists say they are against the sexual harassment of women they mean they are against the God-given role of woman as the life-bearers and life-nurturers. When the people who believed in the empty tomb were replaced by the people of the empty womb Europe ceased to be Europe, it became Satandom and it shall remain Satandom until feminism and its ideological kissing cousin, negro worship, are eradicated from the face of the earth.

The reason that modern 'Christians'; are so easily fooled by Satanic liberals who pontificate about sexual harassment and civil rights is because they have forsaken their racial hearth fire for a propositional faith in a propositional God. The unconditional support of Israel by Robert Jeffress and other intellectual Christians runs counter to the European Christianity which is the common heritage of the European people. (1) The Word took flesh in the hearts of the antique Europeans. It is that Gospel we should embrace, not the doctrines of propositional Christians who pull new doctrines from the muddled minds of religious enthusiasts. Look to your people, Jeffress, who were and are the men and women of the European hearth fire. Then you will be able to attack the feminists and the negro worshippers who have made the hatred of Christ and the white race their *raison d'être*. +

---

(1) Every form of organized Christianity runs counter to the Gospel of Christ because it is not grounded in the human heart. Without that solid ground, Christianity lacks a local habitation. I don't care about recognizing Jerusalem as the capital of Israel as a geopolitical strategy. It may be tactically wise or tactically foolish, that is more than I know. But I am horrified by and disgusted with the religious deification of the secularized Jew in the name of the Christian God. How did we come to this state of affairs? An alleged Christian Pope kisses the Koran and a large segment of the Protestant Evangelical community bows down to the Jews who are opposed to our Lord and Savior. Prince Hal, when he becomes King Henry V, advises Falstaff to leave gormandizing and fall to his prayers. It would be a great blessing if the Evangelicals would leave their intellectual speculations and return to the Christian faith of the antique Europeans.

---

### **Of Europe, the Seven Thousand, and Elijah - December 2, 2017**

And it came to pass, when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me. And he said, Thou hast asked a hard thing: nevertheless, if thou see me when I am taken from thee, it shall be so unto thee; but if not, it shall not be so. And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven. And Elisha saw it, and he cried, My father, my father, the chariot of Israel, and the horsemen thereof. And he saw him no more: and he took hold of his own clothes, and rent them in two pieces. He took up also the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and went back, and stood by the bank of Jordan; – II Kings 2: 9-13

---

This Thanksgiving, as we do every Thanksgiving, my family and I saw the 1947 movie *A Miracle on 34th Street*. In that movie a vicious, self-serving psychologist tries to have a man named Kris Kringle committed to a lunatic asylum because Mr. Kringle says he is Santa Claus. Of course we know the outcome. An atypical lawyer who believes that Kris Kringle is a harmless old man with a delusion for good manages to win an acquittal for Kris. Then, lo and behold, the lawyer discovers that the kindly old man he was defending actually is the one and only Santa Claus. And because he actually is Santa Claus, he is more concerned with the conversion of a feminist and her young daughter than he is with his own acquittal. Since the movie is a romance as Shakespeare's *The Tempest* is a romance both the feminist and her daughter are converted at the end of the movie.

*Miracle on 34th St*, like all the great European fairy tales, allows us, the European people, to take a moral holiday. We see evil punished and the good rewarded. But in order to take pleasure in a movie such as *A Miracle on 34th St*, one must have a moral vision of life that is in line with the moral vision of the European people of ancient times who believed the hope of the world was born in a stable in Bethlehem.

Everything was in place in the citadels of power in 1947—church, state, academia, and press – to bring down the curtain on white Christian Europe, but the average white person at that time had more in common with the Europe of 1117 than the Europe of 2017. There was still a strong Christian ethos then, but now there is none. The ethos of Babylon has been institutionalized, and the ethos of Christian Europe has been destroyed. The new *Miracle on 34th St* would include a noble black savage, a horde of Moslem rapists, and a feminist harpy who would abort her child on Christmas day. That is the liberal romance – blasphemy wedded to the slaughter of the innocents.

There are weaknesses in *A Miracle on 34th St* movie. Kris Kringle only condemns quack psychologists; he does not condemn the practice of psychiatry. And we would like to hear something like unto Ebenezer Scrooge's nephew's speech from Kris Kringle:

“There are many things from which I might have derived good, by which I have not profited, I dare say,” returned the nephew. “Christmas among the rest. But I am sure I have always thought of Christmas time, when it has come round—apart from the veneration due to its sacred name and origin, if anything belonging to it can be apart from that—as a good time; a kind, forgiving, charitable, pleasant time; the only time I know of, in the long calendar of the year, when men and women seem by one consent to open their shut-up hearts freely, and to think of people below them as if they really were fellow-passengers to the grave, and not another race of creatures bound on other journeys. And therefore, uncle, though it has never put a scrap of gold or silver in my pocket, I believe that it has done me good, and will do me good; and I say, God bless it!” – *A Christmas Carol*

But taken for all in all *A Miracle on 34th St* and such movies as *I Know Where I'm Going* and *A Canterbury Tale* place us in a very different world than the one we live in today. Is the old world the better world? In my view there is no doubt which is the better world. But there also is no doubt in the liberals' mind that their world is the better world. Why has the liberals' romance conquered the old romance of Christian Europe? The obvious answer — that the liberals worship Satan and hate the Light with passionate intensity while the grazers are confused and full of doubts about Christ's promise to be with them always — is the correct answer. But Satan did not gain ascendancy over the liberals' souls by a direct attack. He came at the liberals through stealth and cunning. He always presented himself to Europeans in some kind of disguise. Whether he came to them as a kindly theologian, a pure and noble Jacobin, a devoted Marxist, or a benevolent psychiatrist, his objective was always the same — to separate the European people from the God who enters human hearts. Every attack on the Europeans' racial hearth fire in the name of 'noble' causes such as liberty, fraternity, and equality, was an attack on Christ and His people. J. S. LeFanu describes this stealth warfare of the devil in his masterpiece, *Uncle Silas*:

Of my wretched uncle's religion what am I to say? Was it utter hypocrisy, or had it at any time a vein of sincerity in it? I cannot say. I don't believe that he had any heart left for religion, which is the highest form of affection, to take hold of. Perhaps he was a sceptic with misgivings about the future, but past the time for finding anything reliable in it. The devil approached the citadel of his heart by stealth, with many zigzags and parallels.

Satan did not have to approach the colored heathen by stealth, they belonged to him without such measures. The Arab chieftain in Scot's novel, *The Talisman*, brags of his descent from the devil. And so it has been, and continues to be, with the heathens of color. The ethos of the devil is something they can understand; it is an ethos of blood, sex, and power. It is a vision of this world only, a world devoid of charity and mercy, that the devil presents to the colored heathen. And the colored heathens love that world.

The Europeans rejected the devil's world for another world. This world was a shadow of another world, the real world of grace, beauty, and life everlasting in a kingdom presided over by the Prince of peace, mercy, and love. That belief penetrated into the heart and soul of the European people. To root such a belief out of their hearts, to make white men return to paganism, was the devil's task. He approached them by way of the “zigzags and parallels” that destroyed Uncle Silas. The devil covered the seven deadly sins with the pride of virtue in order to create the most hideous creatures on the face of the earth — they are called liberals. Robespierre was the prototypical liberal. He didn't see himself as a mass murderer, he saw himself as a virtuous man who was purging the world of evil. What was the evil that needed purging? All things and persons that had any connection to Christ the Lord, because the virtuous liberal cannot abide Christ the Lord. He can abide Christ the social worker, Christ the Marxist, Christ the capitalist, Christ the civil rights worker, but he cannot abide Christ, the Son of the Living God. The apostles on the road to Emmaus asked Christ to abide with them because it was “toward evening and the day is far spent.” The antique Europeans made the same request, and the Lord honored their request. But the liberals? They have commanded Christ to leave them and never return. As a result, we live in a world of eternal night, where the ‘virtue’ of Uncle Silas-liberalism has been blended with the savage paganism of the colored heathens. We will never defeat the barbarians of color by appealing to the liberals for help, because the extermination of the white race is not a result of a misunderstanding any more than legalized abortion is the result of a misunderstanding. In both cases the liberals know what they are doing. They are attacking God by destroying his image in man, the white Christ-bearing race, and they are usurping the role of God by seeking to control the act of procreation.

The age of prophecy is dead, because Christ, of whom the prophets spoke, has come. But what happened to the prophets' connection to the living God once Christ came in fulfillment of the prophecies? I liken the new relationship between God and man after the fulfillment of the prophecies to the relationship of a man and woman who have been corresponding for years by mail. Then the time arrives for them to meet in the flesh. Will one or both recoil in horror because their correspondent was not what they expected, or will their relationship take on a new intensity? The Jews, in the main, went over to heathenism when they encountered the living God. It was the Europeans who took up the mantle of the prophets and formed a connection to the living God. But that marriage was a tumultuous marriage just as the prophets' relationship with God was a tumultuous relationship. First there were the bad counselors who thought they could improve the marriage with their great intellects. These men were the Grand Inquisitors of organized Christian Jewry who sought to return the Europeans to the letter-writing stage of their relationship with God. That cannot be done without severing the relationship. Christ is the God of human hearts, He is not the God of philosophical theory or dry parchments. If the word of God does not reach the human heart, how can there be faith on earth? Once the connection to the living God is severed, faith becomes an intellectual proposition that can be completely rejected or turned into a lukewarm bath that the Europeans occasionally go to in order to wash off some of the liberal slime from their bodies.

The greatest of the prophets, the man whom God took unto Himself by way of the fiery chariot, was Elijah. He opposed Ahab, but it was not the weak, vacillating Ahab who really ruled, it was Ahab's wife, Jezebel, the most satanic woman that ever lived, who ruled the kingdom. When Elijah rebuked the 450 prophets of Baal that ate at Jezebel's table, he was rebuking Jezebel, who was the mistress of Satan, in the name of the living God:

And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between two opinions? If the Lord be God, follow him: but if Baal, then follow him. And the people answered him not a word. Then said Elijah unto the people, I, even I only, remain a prophet of the Lord; but Baal's prophets are four hundred and fifty men.

Four hundred and fifty to one, but it was Elijah who was victorious, because he served the living God:

And it came to pass at the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice, that Elijah the prophet came near, and said, Lord God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, let it be known this day that thou art God in Israel, and that I am thy servant, and that I have done all these things at thy word. Hear me, O Lord, hear me, that this people may know that thou art the Lord God, and that thou hast turned their heart back again. Then the fire of the Lord fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench. And when all the people saw it, they fell on their faces: and they said, The Lord, he is the God; the Lord, he is the God. And Elijah said unto them, Take the prophets of Baal; let not one of them escape. And they took them: and Elijah brought them down to the brook Kishon, and slew them there. – I Kings 18

It was not all clear sailing for Elijah after he slew the 450 prophets of Baal. Now, like the Prince in Disney's *Sleeping Beauty* who had to deal with Maleficent and all the powers of hell, Elijah had to deal with Jezebel and all the powers of hell. He flees to the mountains and is close to despair. But the Lord takes care of him; He sends an angel to minister unto him and tells him he is not alone: "Yet I have left me seven thousand in Israel, all the knees which have not bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which hath not kissed him." Then comes the incredibly moving moment when Elijah casts his mantle upon Elisha who is the man chosen to follow in Elijah's footsteps. We all know the rest. Once the new prophet has been chosen, Elijah is taken up to heaven:

And it came to pass, when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me. And he said, Thou hast asked a hard thing: nevertheless, if thou see me when I am taken from thee, it shall be so unto thee; but if not, it shall not be so. And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven. And Elisha saw it, and he cried, My father, my father, the chariot of Israel, and the horsemen thereof. And he saw him no more: and he took hold of his own clothes, and rent them in two pieces. He took up also the mantle of Elijah that fell from him, and went back, and stood by the bank of Jordan;" – 2 Kings 2: 9-13

Do I wander too far from Europe when I talk about Elijah's prophecies and his battle with Jezebel and her minions? No, I do not. Christ was the fulfillment of all the prophecies, and His heart contained all of the prophetic fire of the prophets. When the European people took Christ into their hearts they became one with the prophets and Christ. When the liberals broke their covenant with Christ by banishing Him from their racial hearth fire in order to worship Baal in the form of the colored heathens, they became like unto Jezebel. And the white grazers became like unto the lukewarm children of Israel who were rebuked by Elijah: "And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between two opinions? If the Lord be God, follow him: but if Baal, then follow him. And the people answered him not a word."

We stand before Christ just as the grazers of Israel stood before Elijah. How long will we be between two opinions? Will we worship the liberals' unholy trinity, or will we stand with Christ the Lord? The Jezebels of Liberalism are frightening creatures. But Jezebel did not prevail. If we stand with the antique Europeans, who were like unto the "seven thousand in Israel," we too will prevail against the liberals who are like unto Jezebel.

There is only one great miracle, whether it happens on 34th St or in ancient Israel, it is the miracle of grace, the miracle of the living God touching a human heart. That is our miracle, our common faith, which we celebrate this coming Christmas and every day of our lives until we see our Lord face to face. Please, God, protect me and my family in the day of battle against the modern Jezebels and their prophets of Baal, and protect and defend the loyal seven thousand Europeans in their battle (the final battle?) against the same foes. In Christ's name, Amen. +

---

## **When We Remember Europe - November 25, 2017**

By the rivers of Babylon, there we sat down,  
Yea, we wept,  
When we remembered Zion.

–Psalms 137: 1



---

During the Babylon captivity the Psalmist asked, “How shall we sing the Lord’s song, In a strange land?” How indeed, when the Lord’s song is an anathema to the ruling principalities and powers of Babylon, can a man who believes in the living God still sing the Lord’s song? Possibly he can sing it quietly, under his breath, or maybe he can find a cave or a wooded area where he and a few friends can sing the Lord’s song. But the Lord’s song must be sung or else the memory of the living God will die out.

The modern Europeans are currently suffering through their own Babylonian captivity. But there is a crucial difference between the ancient Jews’ Babylonian captivity and the Europeans’ Babylonian captivity. The ancient Jews knew they were a captive people while the modern Europeans do not know they are a captive people. The Europeans’ ignorance of their captivity indicates a far greater spiritual decline than that of the ancient Jews. If a man knows he is held captive by an enemy who hates his people and his God he can steel himself, internally, to resist his enemy. But if he doesn’t know he is a captive? Then he will be weak inside, he will offer no resistance to an enemy that hates his people and his God.

How can a whole race of people be held captive, estranged from their God and themselves, without even knowing it? It wasn’t easy, but the devil knew what he wanted. He wanted the European people, the Christ-bearing people, to see existence through the eyes of a scientist. Where is God in the natural world? Where is the scientific evidence that skin pigmentation is anything but skin pigmentation? Who dares say that white skin connotes a distinct people with spiritual attributes different from people without white skins? Once the Europeans’ God became a propositional God, the European people became a propositional people. Faith in an intellectual concept of God is not the same as a faith in the living God nor is a universal love for humanity the same as a love for one’s own people, one’s kith and kin.

How can we hear the word of God and take His word into our hearts if we can’t accept His word unless it comes to us as a propositional faith purified by the scientific mind? The Bible, from Genesis through the Book of Revelation, is the story of God’s relationship with the sons of earth. We are invited into God’s fairy tale in which our Lord and kinsman, Jesus Christ, defeats the forces of evil and death and brings His people safely home. You can’t scientize that fairy tale without losing something essential – your faith in the living God. You can still retain a propositional faith in a mind-forged God whose existence can be proved by reason, but you can’t maintain a faith in the living God who can only be known through the human heart. If such talk is sentimental mush, as the intellectual Christians tell us, then we must dismiss St. Paul, who tells us that we need to circumcise our hearts if we want to know Christ. And Christ Himself tells us in the parable of the sower: “But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.” Luke 8: 5-18

Christ tells the apostles that the seed of the sower is the word of God. And those “by the way side are they that hear, then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.” Therein lies the tragedy of the European people. Their hearts were the good ground where the word of God was sown, but the devil came, first in the guise of an intellectual Christian, and then later, when the European people had lost their abhorrence of intellectual pride, he came to them in the guise of a well-meaning, secularized, scientized liberal. But throughout the whole long process the devil knew what had to be done – kill the European heart, and faith on earth perishes.

The Babylon captivity of the European people will go on in perpetuity so long as they remain separated from their hearts. The churchmen and the secular liberals are united in their hatred of the good seed, which was planted in the hearts of the good and faithful Europeans. If the antique Europeans were not the good ground, if their hearts were evil and their fruits poisonous, where do we go and to whom do we turn to hear the word of God? To the Thomists? To the Biblical exegetes? There is no sustaining faith in intellectual Christianity. The word of God can only be received by human hearts. Which always brings us back to this modern devil word called ‘racism.’ If white racism is the greatest sin, and white piety has been labeled racism, then how can the faith flourish and how can the European people ever be released from their Babylonian captivity?

It is only the European hearts which are condemned. The black hearts of the people of color, who are the bad ground, are deified – those hearts are pure and undefiled. But who is defining what is pure and undefiled? It is the devil who informs the minds and guides the rulers and pundits of Liberalism. Who guided Rousseau and Teilhard de Chardin? And who guides Pope Francis when he attacks the European people? It is always Satan, who seems to be unconquerable. But he only seems to be unconquerable because the European people have allowed Satan to despoil their hearts while they cling to the great lie that goes all the way back to the Garden of Eden: The human intellect does not need the living God. However, our great hearts, the white ‘racists,’ have always seen through that lie:

We employ the term Benevolence to express our outward affections, sympathies, tastes, and feelings, but it is inadequate to express our meaning; it is not the opposite of selfishness, and unselfishness would be too negative for our purpose. Philosophy has been so busy with the worst feature of human nature that it has not even found a name for this, its better feature. We must fall back on Christianity,

which embraces man's whole nature, and though not a code of philosophy, it is something better; for it proposes to lead us through the trials and intricacies of life, not by the mere cool calculations of the head, but by the unerring instincts of a pure and regenerate heart. The problem of the Moral World is too vast and complex for the human mind to comprehend; yet the pure heart will, safely and quietly, feel its way through the mazes that confound the head.

– *Cannibals All! Or Slaves without Masters* by George Fitzhugh

Fitzhugh got it right. In order to confound the European people, Satan distorted their vision. He got them to look at existence through the mind of the philosophical speculators instead of through the hearts of Europeans of faith. How we see determines our faith. Caiaphas saw and heard Christ, just as the apostles did, but he saw something completely different from the apostles. Many saw Christ raise Lazarus from the dead and “believed on Him,” but others, “went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.” Pilate looked the living God in the face and asked, “What is truth?” All the great Christian dramatists bear witness to the tragedy of spiritual blindness, a blindness that stems from a heart hardened by an intellectual pride that sees only the superficial surface of life while remaining in ignorance of the depths of existence, which can only be known through the human heart. Lear has been with Goneril, Regan, and Cordelia their entire lives, but he doesn't know the depths of Goneril and Regan's evil or the depths of Cordelia's goodness, because he has given first place to his pride of intellect and left no room for a loving heart. It is only when he repents that he learns how to see:

...O, I have ta'en  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel,  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them  
And show the heavens more just.

–*King Lear*

We, the European people, have ‘ta'en too little care of the heart of our civilization. It is not overwhelming numbers that have made the European people unable to resist the Moslem invasion, nor is it the innate beauty of the natural black savage that makes the Europeans worship him, it is the Europeans' inability to see with their heart that makes them unable to resist the heathen and makes them see beauty in black barbarism.

The Psalmist wept by the rivers of Babylon because he remembered Zion. Why don't the European people weep when they remember Europe? It is because they don't remember Europe. The moral beauty of the antique Europeans is crystal clear to all those who look at them through the heart, but the modern Europeans will not look at them through their hearts. They believe the liberals, who have anathematized the antique Europeans by proclaiming them racist, and they have moved on to what they hope will be a glorious future in the liberals' brave new multi-religious, multi-racial world. That world shall never become a reality. We shall see either a colored-heathen world of eternal night or we shall see a resurgent world of the Christ-bearing people, who at the last trump remembered Christian Europe and rose up and cast off the liberals and the colored heathen.

In the 19th century the accumulated wisdom of the scientists made it possible for the pride of science to flourish amongst the European people, but there was still great resistance to the scientizers. I have often made reference to that resistance (see “Our Sacred Heritage”). There were genuine conservatives in the 19th century, men of heart who opposed the scientizing of God and His people and wanted to preserve the word of God, not as a mere parchment but as a living reality that dwelt in the hearts of the European people. The conservatives of the 20th century were no longer conservatives. They didn't want to preserve the good ground, which was their own people, they only wanted to preserve the outer intellectual husks of a propositional Christianity. Christ wept at the death of Lazarus, and His sacred tears restored Lazarus to life. If we unite our tears with His tears, if we weep for His Europe, we will see a European miracle in the midst of Babylon. +

---

## **The Moral Vision - November 18, 2017**

When men once turn to brutes, the trifle of men's wit that remains in them adds tenfold to their brutality.

– *Tanglewood Tales* by Nathaniel Hawthorne

---

The mad-dog liberals have given themselves over to Satan. They are the academics, the Antifaers, the members of the Democratic Party, the Labour Party, and the various leftist-Marxist parties throughout Europe. They represent a large minority of white people, but they still do not, in my judgement, make up the majority of white people. The majority of white people throughout the world are what I call grazers. They graze in the mad-dog liberals' pastures and dutifully follow the mad-dog liberals' orders, but they do not share the mad-dog liberals' hatred for all things white and Christian.

Nor do they realize that they are being fattened up for execution in the liberals' slaughterhouse. Why do the white grazers believe that there is a place for them in Liberaldom? They believe there is a place for them in Liberaldom for the same reason the narrator in Melville's short story "Benito Cereno" believed that blood-thirsty negro savages were kindly natives who meant the white captain on the ship no harm.

The grazers cannot see evil clearly, because they have no vision of the good. If the grazers believed in the European Christ, as distinct from the cosmic Christ of the churchmen who is all things to all people, they would not continue to graze in the pastures of Liberaldom without fighting back against the liberals. They would know that when they, the liberals, do these things and say these things they are not the friends of white people. When they institutionalize race-mixing, abortion, sodomy, and negro worship, they are evil men and women who must be opposed, just as Charles Martel opposed the Moslems. You can only deal democratically with people with whom you share a common set of values. You can't have any peaceful dealings with people who want your heart's blood. But of course the grazer does not believe that the liberals want his heart's blood. "That's so silly, why would a liberal want our blood? It doesn't make any sense." But the liberals' agenda does make sense, it makes perfect sense in the spiritual realm, which is the realm that governs all of our lives whether we acknowledge its existence or not. What could be more logical, from Satan's perspective, than the destruction of the Christ-bearing race? In a war, you destroy the breeding ground of the enemy. And Christ's breeding ground was and is the hearts of the European people. The liberals are coldly, maniacally doing the will of Satan by destroying all things white.

When Edgar sees his blinded father poorly led and determined to fling himself over a precipice, he must think of some way to give his father a will to live. We know the stratagem he uses, and that stratagem works:

Hadst thou been aught but gossamer, feathers, air,  
So many fathom down precipitating,  
Thou 'dst shiver'd like an egg: but thou dost breathe;  
Hast heavy substances; bleed'st not; speak'st; art sound.  
Ten masts at each make not the altitude  
Which thou hast perpendicularly fell.  
Thy life's a miracle. Speak yet again.

The white people of modern Europe must believe that the civilization of old Europe was a miracle before they will take up arms against the liberals. If they make that realization, they will know the good and be prepared to fight evil, and they will survive as a people. But so long as they believe that Christian Europe was evil, and that modern, multi-racial, multi-cultural, democratic Europe is good, they will continue to be a hopeless, helpless, captive people.

Recently a group of scientists got together to tell us how we could save the planet from destruction. Did the scientists recommend we fall onto our knees and invite Christ into our hearts while expelling all liberals and colored barbarians from our nations? No, they did not. They listed a whole series of problems to be addressed, none of which was the problem of Liberalism. Instead, the number one problem, according to the scientists, was overpopulation. Let me translate the liberal double-speak. When scientists of the West tell 'mankind' that we have a population problem, they are really telling the world that we must eliminate white people, because there is no overpopulation problem in the Western nations unless you mean the Moslem and colored barbarians who are overrunning Europe and the United States. That is an overpopulation problem the West should deal with, but the learned men of science were not referring to the colored heathen, they were talking to the people of the West. They want the people of the West, the white Europeans, to self-destruct. And the white Europeans will do what they are told, unless they believe that Christian Europe was a miracle that has to be maintained and perpetuated. As it stands now, the liberals are hell-bent on destroying the white race, and the intellectual Christians think that a good Christian must hasten the end of the white race by repudiating the European Christians' vision of Christ and supporting the enthronement of the negro as the savior of the West.

Every Sunday throughout the Western world we see the tragedy of intellectual Christianity. Churches with many of the art works and iconic images from old Europe lining their Church walls feature modern clergymen who preach about the evils of old racist Europe and the wonders of the new multi-racial, multi-cultural Europe. What has the new church of the cosmic Christ produced? It has produced the aforementioned evils of race-mixing, abortion, sodomy and negro worship. But somehow by a strange metamorphosis the culture that has spawned all those evils, our modern liberal culture, is supposed to be good while the culture that produced Christian men and women who opposed all of the modern evils, the culture of the antique Europeans, is now supposed to be the most evil culture that has ever existed on the face of the earth. And no one will defend that culture or the people who created that culture in response to God's grace. Churchmen who owe their position in the church to their Christian forefathers will not say one good word for their spiritual fathers. "Faith of our Fathers, Living Still," has become, "Let our Racist Fathers Rot in the Grave While We Look to the Negro Who is Living Now." Is their abhorrence of the antique Europeans' 'racism' really the reason the secular liberals and their kissing cousins in the churches have demonized the whites who lived during the Christian era in Europe? No, it is not. The race card is a stratagem that works. The great haters of humanity, the liberals, do not really care about the black man or any

other human being. They are incapable of love, all they can do is hate. And the generic black man is a convenient weapon which they use to subdue the white Christ-bearing race. The liberals will use that weapon so long as it is effective.

It's difficult to envision a 21st century nation of whites who do not fear the racist label. We can look to the past and see whites who were not afraid to love their own people and maintain a white, provincial culture set apart from the colored heathens, but it doesn't seem like whites will ever again become like unto those men and women of old Europe. It will take a miracle, but we once were the people who believed in the one great Miracle that began in a manger in Bethlehem.

At the center of Satan's kingdom on earth in every European nation are the universities. It is in Academia that we see pure evil undiluted by anything good. And if we recall to mind that the universities were originally spawned by the various churches we see a great tragedy. How could something so evil come from something so well-intended? Was it really well-intended, or was it the second fall of man? Was it an attempt to replace God's word with man's will? Perhaps in the beginning there were well-intentioned men who exaggerated the capacity of the human intellect and devalued the capacity of the human heart. But once that tragic error was made, Satan was able to use man's pride of intellect, what Chateaubriand called the pride of science, to place a barrier between God and man. That barrier must be taken down. So long as it remains, the world will be in the hands of intellectualized beasts of prey, who, in the fullness of their intellectual pride, slavishly serve Satan.

For good or evil the white race determines the history of the world. The liberals, who are the intellectual beasts of prey, have determined that the white race must be destroyed. They will preside over the extermination process, and they, in their own minds, will be spared to preside over a colored paradise, which in reality will be a kingdom of eternal night. But the pure intellect has nothing to do with reality. The intellectual man follows a cosmic star of unreality, which begins in the heavens, just as Satan began, and ends up plunging into hell, just as Satan did.

What would happen if the Europeans once again looked to the Star of Bethlehem instead of the liberals' cosmic star? Miracles would occur in Europe once again. Nothing is impossible if the European people renew their covenant with God. I am frequently told that things are not as bad as I paint them. "Democracy works, and there are still good Christians in the churches." My response is that democracy has never worked. And, as regards the 'good Christians' in the churches – I'm sure there are good Christians in the rank and file of some of the break-away fringe churches. But they are good Christians in spite of, not because of, the church system that they belong to. The spirit cannot be scientized; when the church of God becomes a man-made system rather than a covenant between the living God and His people, the people with hearts of flesh, the church becomes part of Liberaldom.

The Lord God gave us hearts of flesh, so we could know Him in this world and love Him in the next world. The miracle of Europe was a reflection of God's labor of love which was embodied in the person of Jesus Christ. The farther we slide away from incarnate Europe, the harder it gets to believe in God's labor of love. And then the ethos of the bestial intellects of prey becomes our reality; we no longer see the light. So much now rests on so few. Our European lives are indeed a miracle, but only those who still see the European miracle clearly will endure to the end. +

---

### **In the Heart Dwelleth the Soul - November 11, 2017**

And my ending is despair,  
Unless I be reliev'd by prayer...

-Prospero in *The Tempest*

---

St. John tells us that, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God," and later he tells us that, "the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us..." It has been my contention — and it remains my contention — that the Word of God, which is the Gospel of Christ crucified, Christ risen, sank deep into the hearts of the European people, so deeply that it became part of their blood. They could only be divested of that faith by a long, painful process that drains the lifeblood from a man. That process is called liberalism. It starts with an intellectual premise that the real man, the advanced man, is pure intellect. From that premise the deblooding process begins.

The first deblooder was the devil. He appealed to Adam and Eve's intellects to convince them that their filial relationship with God the Father was unnecessary. Smart people do not need a filial relationship with God, they only need a vague intellectual attachment to God. That has always been the story of man's rebellion against God — "We are too smart to submit to God." It has been the task of the Europeans, the men of blood, to tell the great intellects, who want to return to paganism through intellectual Christianity or through one or more of the pagan philosophies, that they are not that smart. For once a man ceases to think with his heart he becomes a tool of Satan.

Throughout the Christian centuries there were always the deblooders in church and society at large who wanted to make all of existence an intellectual proposition. But it was not until the American Revolution that the deblooding process became institutionalized. America was a propositional nation from its inception. The French Revolution took the implication of the U.S. Revolution to its logical conclusion – Man is God. The same deblooding process that animated Jefferson, Madison, and Franklin also animated the French revolutionists. The evils of the American experiment in democracy are often overlooked because the Americans, unlike the French, did not expressly denounce God when they framed the U. S. Constitution. But they did make God an intellectual construct, which is back-door-atheism, which incidentally is what the French Jacobins ultimately adopted as well. They found out that men needed some kind of God. So both the French and the Americans focused on an intellectual concept of the noble black savage.

The deblooding process became institutionalized throughout the European nations in the 20th century, and it has been held over, like a long-running theatrical success, for the 21st century. But why has the new-old Gnostic faith replaced Christianity? What makes it so appealing to the modern Europeans? Its success has to do with the cumulative nature of scientific knowledge. With each passing century the European scientists gained in knowledge of the natural world. That gave them, and the men and women who partook of that knowledge, a feeling of power. Was the Holy Ghost of the Christian Trinity really necessary when there was more power and knowledge to be gleaned from science than from a mystical entity that could not be seen? The problem a Christian faces when he stands before the almighty holy ghost of science is that his knowledge is not cumulative, he must start at the beginning, in his infancy of faith, and try to counter the magnificence of science with his puny faith. Unless, and this ‘unless’ is everything, he unites with his honored dead in spirit, blood, and faith; then he is not starting anew nor is he alone. He stands with his people, a long line of heroes, against the new Gnostics with their unholy trinity. But he must stand with his honored dead or he will succumb to the abstracted intellect, the negro, and science. For this reason the liberal plays the race card over and over again. If racism is blasphemy, then the antique Europeans were evil. The modern Europeans are cut off from their past, because they fear the racist label. If they want to be Christians, they must be intellectual Christians who have made their peace with the negro, who is the liberals’ savior, and they must make their peace with the liberals’ holy ghost, which is science. And the European people have made their peace with the liberals’ trinity, because once they cut their ties to their ‘racist’ ancestors they were alone against an implacable foe. They were like Lilliputians fighting giants. If they leave the slime pits of negro worship and stand with their European ancestors, they will not be alone in the day of battle against the liberals and the colored barbarians. As it stands now the Europeans are defenseless, because they are afraid of the racist label attached to their ancestors, just as if the racist label is a plague that they dare not catch. But you will not only be without all human aid if you run from your Christian past, you will also be without divine aid, because the living God does not reside in the abstracted minds of the wizards of modernity, He lives with His people, the men and women with hearts of flesh. They were called Europeans.

In the aftermath of the Texas shooting, there was the usual nonsense about gun control. But there were two other things that do not bode well for white people. The liberals were glad that it was white people who were killed, and they also mocked the victims, because they were praying, and they mocked those who said they would pray for the victims and their families. The liberals’ lack of concern for the death of white people should not shock us. They want all white people to perish. Nor should we be shocked by the liberals’ blasphemy – is not the essence of liberalism blasphemy? But it is significant that the liberals no longer feel the need to hide their hatred of whites nor their hatred of the Christian God.

The unanswered prayer does pose a problem for the professed Christian. It’s quite similar to the ‘why is there suffering?’ problem. But throughout all the Christian centuries of Europe, the European people were able to pray to their Lord and Savior with all sincerity even though there were many prayers that were not answered. What has changed? That filial relationship with God has changed. Adam and Eve did not trust their Father, so they turned to pure intelligence as a refuge. When the European people went over to scientism, they ceased to know God through their hearts, hearts which told them that their prayers mattered, even when it seemed they were of no effect. In the absence of a belief that a loving God does respond to our prayers, what is left? There is the trinity of the liberals.

But can the abstracted intellect serve as a substitute for God the father? Can the negro be our messiah? And can science replace the Holy Ghost? It seems to me that all three divisions of the liberals’ trinity show us honest trifles only to betray us in deepest consequence. When facing our own deaths, our loved ones’ death, or the death of our civilization, we cannot find any consolation or hope in the liberals’ trinity. So why do we cling to that trinity and reject the Christian Trinity of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost?

Christ tells us that it will not be forgiven us if we blaspheme against the Holy Ghost. Is not that what the liberals enjoin us to do? They bid us look to the new holy ghost, the scientific holy ghost who proceeds from the abstracted intellect and the sacred negro, and with the abstracted intellect of man and the sacred negro, science is worshipped and glorified. Look at academia, look at organized Christian Jewry – are they not citadels of blasphemy? You can’t reach God through prayer in those citadels, because they reject the Holy Ghost who leads us to our Savior. We won’t come out of the liberals’ maze until

we reconnect with our past, and we can't reconnect with our past if we continue to reject the Holy Ghost who resides in hearts that love much.

It is now taken as a given by the mad-dog liberals that the white race must be exterminated for the sin of racism. The conservatives, who are the classical liberals, agree with the mad-dog liberals about white racism: it is the unforgiveable sin. But the conservatives think their sin can be expunged by their repudiation of the antique Europeans and their willingness to worship the negro. "It's not enough," the liberals declare, "You must face the executioners' block." And even in death the white man will not be cleansed, because the triune god of the liberals has no merciful savior, and the white man's sin consists of his whiteness — that is a sin that can never be expunged.

Throughout the Old Testament as we follow the people of God, we are struck by all the backsliding and apostasy from the one true God that takes place. Time and time again the people whom God spoke to through His prophets ignore the prophets and return to Baal or its equivalent. That backsliding and apostasy became codified law when the bulk of the Jewish people rejected the Messiah, who was the fulfillment of the prophecies. And now the wheel has come full circle. The European people who believed in the prophecies and in Him who was the fulfillment of the prophecies have returned to Baal. "We shall bring you hell," the liberals tell us. Yes, they have brought us hell. The same God who rose from the dead on the third day can raise us up from this hell on earth. But we can't conjure up the living God by the brilliance of our intellects or the magic of our systems. We can learn to love Him in and through the European people from the racist era of European history. That was an era, like every era of European history, of wars, adulteries, lust, and every other evil under the sun. But there were hearts of faith in that era of European history — there were people struggling to the light, in contrast to the liberals of our modern era who have banished the light in order to worship darkness.

It's not possible to live in the darkness of Liberalism without faith in His Europe. If the antique Europeans were incorrect, if their vision of Christ was false, then to whom can we turn for the words of eternal life? The liberals tell us that we can turn to their triune god. The intellectual Christians tell us that we can place our hope in a new fusionist Christianity, free from the racism of time-bound European Christianity. But the new Christianity is simply another form of atheism. Without a local habitation the antique Europeans' hearth-fire Christ becomes a lesser god in a pantheon of nature gods who are subordinate to the negro. Is this the final apostasy of the European people? Will they all perish from the face of the earth without any record that they ever existed at all? That certainly seems likely, seeing that all the European schools and universities are divesting themselves of all things white — no white male authors, no white male musicians or artists — everything white must perish. But there is the rub, which gives the liberal nightmares. You can eradicate the culture of the people who believed in the God-Man. And you can eradicate the people who still profess a belief in the European Christ. But, if Christ is indeed the son of God, how can you eradicate God? Why, if we believe that Christ is the Son of God, should we ever cave in to the liberals? Despite what seems, it is the liberals, not those who stand with the Christ of old Europe, who are playing a losing hand. They are playing a losing hand because our Redeemer liveth. Christ rose from the dead on the third day, and that shall always be the source of our faith and the reason we shall stay with eternal Europe against all the world. +

---

### **The Institutionalized Tragedy of Liberalism - November 4, 2017**

Lear. And my poor fool is hang'd! No, no, no life!  
Why should a dog, a horse, a rat, have life,  
And thou no breath at all? Thou'lt come no more,  
Never, never, never, never!  
Pray you, undo this button. Thank you sir.  
Do you see this? Look on her, look, her lips,  
Look there, look there!  
—*King Lear*

---

Thou art the grave where buried love doth live... — Wm. Shakespeare

The fool, who is no fool, in *King Lear* bravely tries to keep Lear in good spirits despite the fact that misfortune has fallen upon Lear. But there is a limit. After Lear is cast out by his two daughters and left bereft of everything, including his wits, the fool has nothing left to say.

Lear. Make no noise, make no noise; draw the curtains; so, so, so. We'll go to supper i' th' morning.

Fool. And I'll go to bed at noon.

Those are the last words of Lear's fool. And he, like Cordelia, is eventually executed.

If we segue to Tennyson's *Idylls of the King* we meet another fool. Remember the last tournament? Arthur watches his Christian knights defeat the heathen knights, but in defeating them they break every rule of chivalry. Arthur returns to his chamber:

So all the ways were safe from shore to shore,  
But in the heart of Arthur pain was lord.

And when Arthur returns to his chamber, he hears a voice at his feet:

A voice clung sobbing till he question'd it,  
'What art thou?' and the voice about his feet  
Sent up an answer, sobbing, 'I am thy fool,  
And I shall never make thee smile again.'

It was the fool's purpose in the royal courts of olden times to help the king to keep his perspective. When the king was sad, the fool tried to make him merry, and when the king was too enthusiastically happy when he should have been more tempered, it was the fool's function to dampen, with humor, the king's enthusiasm. It was no easy job as Viola, the heroine of Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*, observes:

This fellow is wise enough to play the fool,  
And to do that well craves a kind of wit.  
He must observe their mood on whom he jests,  
The quality of persons, and the time,  
And, like the haggard, check at every feather  
That comes before his eye. This is a practice  
As full of labour as a wise man's art;  
For folly that he wisely shows is fit.  
But wise men, folly-fall'n, quite taint their wit.

Feste, the fool in *Twelfth Night*, continues to play the fool throughout the length of the play. He is even given the last word. That is because *Twelfth Night* is a comedy, and in comedy, the proper order of existence often teeters on the brink of destruction, but things are set right by the end. In such societies the fool's place is secure. But when the proper order of things has been overthrown, when "all is cheerless, dark and deadly," the fool cannot function. In Lear's kingdom and Arthur's kingdom the evil one's presence is too pervasive to permit the type of restorative humor that a good court jester can provide. The type of court jesters who bid us laugh at our foibles and put things in perspective depend on a society that has the proper perspective. In a society that has institutionalized Satanism there can be only jeering mockery of all things decent and honorable – and when all things decent and honorable are mocked, tragedy becomes institutionalized. Public ceremonies are tragic because they celebrate Satanism, and all of the daily activities of life plunge a man into the maelstrom of a society pulling him toward hell. The high comedy of court jesters such as Wodehouse and Feste comes to an end, and foul, loathsome, sneering, mocking 'comedians' such as the Monty Python group comes to the forefront.

Every regime, even a satanic regime, has its jesters. But a satanic regime uses jesters to ensure that there is no high humor, humor that elevates the soul. There must only be mocking, jeering humor that is supportive of the almighty satanic state. One must either face the fact that one lives in a kingdom of tragedy where "humanity must perforce prey on itself like monsters from the deep," or else a man must take the opiates of modernity and proclaim that he loves the modern negroid states of Europe and is a very happy man. If we face the reality of modernity, we will not be dancing in the streets, we will have no kindly fools to ease the pain of existence, because institutionalized liberalism is institutionalized tragedy that kills the good fools; but we will still have souls. If we take the path of spiritual anesthesia, we might be superficially happier than the non-anesthetized, but we will lose our souls.

I don't meet many non-anesthetized whites. Most of the grazers are on some type of opiate – whether it is 'American Legion' patriotism, sports, or clerical-sponsored intellectual Christianity. The reason for the high preponderance of anesthetized whites is simple. In order to survive economically in our society, a man must adjust to the customs, manners, and rhythms of our society. You will suffer economically and may be in peril of your life if you don't adjust to society. But should we try to adjust to Satandom? "Of course we shouldn't," is the grazer's reply, "but we do not live in Satandom." Then the grazer tells you why we do not live in Satandom. His answer usually centers on the fact that we live in a democracy and/or we have a lot of churches. But why is the reign of Satan a good thing so long as he reigns in the name of the democratic process in church and state?

There has never been a more successful totalitarian society than the United Negro States of America. And the various European states are not far behind the United States. It appears that countries like Britain, France, and Germany are heading to oblivion at a faster rate than the United States, but that is because the United States' geographical mass has slowed down the process of destruction. But it will come, because the United States is the ideological leader of the new Satandom.

If the liberals were not religious zealots they would see that they have won the war. They have institutionalized all the dystopian dreams of their liberal Jacobin forefathers. The noble savage is worshipped, the slaughter of the innocents is a sacred right, and sodomy has been normalized. All those perversions and more have become part of the fabric of our culture. But still the liberal heathens rage. They act as if they are a disenfranchised minority fighting against some omnipotent fascist enemy. The Antifa forces declared this Saturday, November 4th, as their day of reckoning. Who are they challenging? Their values are the state's values. Who is resisting them?

The liberals will never be satisfied because Satan is never satisfied, and they are driven by the same hatred that drives Satan. Burke identified the liberals' one overriding passion in his *Letters on a Regicide Peace*:

The rebels to God perfectly abhor the Author of their being. They hate him with all their heart, with all their mind, with all their soul, and with all their strength. He never presents himself to their thoughts but to menace and alarm them. They cannot strike the Sun out of Heaven, but they are able to raise a smouldering smoke that obscures him from their own eyes. Not being able to revenge themselves on God, they have a delight in vicariously defacing, degrading, torturing, and tearing in pieces his image in man.

The liberals can never cease their fight so long as white people exist, because it was white people who created an 'image of God' culture. A grazer who supports the liberals' wars, who supports the liberals' police force, and pays proper homage to the sacred negro might survive for a little longer than a white who does not pay homage to the liberal state, but in the end, the white grazer will be taken from his pasture and executed in the great liberal slaughter house. All of white humanity must perish because all of white humanity was once connected to eternal Europe, which, through a glass darkly, reflected the divine image of Christ the Lord.

Let us look at Shakespeare's complete works as a chronicle of existence as seen through the eyes of a Christian European. The comedies give us an image of our Lord's house of many mansions, the tragedies bid us face the reality of suffering, and the romances turn us toward Him who is "the grave where buried love doth live." The liberals, because they hate the risen Lord, have created a world without comedy, without the catharsis of Christian tragedies, and without the sure and certain hope in the resurrection of the dead. We have nothing to hang onto if we accept the reign of the liberals. Must we submit? It might seem like the practical thing to do. But if there is a spiritual realm above this vale of tears, then we cannot order our lives as if we are mere by-products of nature. Just as the sheer moral ugliness of the liberals and the colored heathen must have a supernaturally demonic source, so must the moral beauty of the antique Europeans have a divine source.

Our ancestors believed that the divine source was Christ. His kingdom-come is not compatible with liberalism, so we have no choice. We must acknowledge that we are a captive people and refuse to accept that captivity as permanent. Everything we do should be done with the intention of undermining Liberalism and rebuilding His reign of charity. There is only one season in Liberalism, it is always a time to kill; to kill God by killing His people. For the love of Him who died on the cross and for the love of our kith and kin, we must be like unto Thomas Nelson Page's Goth. We must love and hate with European hearts of flesh. Then, in the darkness of Satandom, there will still be light, there will still be hope. +

---

### **This Will Ever Be the European Story - October 28, 2017**

A brilliant morning shines on the old city. Its antiquities and ruins are surpassingly beautiful, with the lusty ivy gleaming in the sun, and the rich trees waving in the balmy air. Changes of glorious light from moving boughs, songs of birds, scents from gardens, woods, and fields—or, rather, from the one great garden of the whole cultivated island in its yielding time—penetrate into the Cathedral, subdue its earthy odour, and preach the Resurrection and the Life. The cold stone tombs of centuries ago grow warm; and flecks of brightness dart into the sternest marble corners of the building, fluttering there like wings. —*The Mystery of Edwin Drood* by Charles Dickens

---

A friend once asked me upon what five books, if I were limited to five, would I build my library. When he gave me permission to list complete works as one book, I gave him my answer:

1. King James Version of the Bible
2. Shakespeare – the complete works
3. Sir Walter Scott – the complete works
4. Dickens – the complete works
5. The Brothers Grimm – the complete works



Of course there is no reason to confine yourself to just five books unless you have a friend who likes to play the ‘five books game’. Actually my friend was generous – it’s usually just two books that you’re allowed on the desert island.

It is to the fifth book that I want to turn right now, because there is a story in Grimm’s *Fairy Tales* about a Young Drummer who climbs a glass mountain, a glass mountain that was supposed to be impossible to climb, in order to rescue a fair maiden. I have not talked to the Young Drummer for eight years, giving rise to a rumor that the Young Drummer has left us. He has not; I have just been negligent. Perhaps I have let the spiritual rot of modernity beat me down, rendering me incapable of speaking with a truly integral man from the heart of sacred, fairytale Europe. Let me try to rectify my negligence.

---

CWNY: It’s been a few years since I’ve spoken to you.

Young Drummer: It’s been more than a few.

CWNY: I apologize.

YD: There’s no need to apologize. Friends don’t always have to speak to each other. We are eternally bound to each other through our love for eternal Europe, and through that bond we are eternally bound to Him.

CWNY: The liberals don’t want us to be connected to His Europe.

YD: No, they don’t. Once a man, a European man, feels connected to the antique Europeans in spirit, blood, and faith, he will become the most feared and hated man in Liberaldom; he will become an integral man, a Christian European.

CWNY: But it hasn’t happened. The European people have cut themselves off from their Christian ancestors.

YD: Yes, they have. We are in the end times — there is no use lying to ourselves about that.

CWNY: Although we know neither the day nor the hour.

YD: Of course not. The end times could last hundreds of years, but we must judge our times by the Scriptures. When all the heresies, blasphemies, and perversions that have ever plagued the human race are synthesized into one organized system, and when the powers that be in church and state support that system, then we can say unequivocally that we are in the end times.

CWNY: Let’s be clear about the ‘system.’

YD: All right, the system is called liberalism. No one ever defines that system as a system. There are people who criticize certain aspects of liberalism, but there are no Europeans who criticize the whole liberal system. Europeans have become addicted to the dialectic approach to existence, which has left them doomed to wallow in the superficialities of life without ever reaching the rhetorical center of existence.

CWNY: By the rhetorical center, you mean the human heart?

YD: Yes. In the beginning was the Word. If Christ’s words do not take flesh in the human heart, they become grist for the ‘smart ones’ – the philosophers, theologians, sociologists, psychiatrists, and scientists. What they do with the words of our Lord cries out to heaven for vengeance. Their blasphemies make a man want to rise and ride against Liberaldom.

CWNY: Yes, they do. But at the risk of appearing like a prisoner of the dialectic I must say something about the romance of going into battle against the liberal leviathans. You are a kind of Melchizedek figure — “Without father, without mother, without beginning of days, nor end of life.” Can a mere mortal like myself really rise and ride against the liberals?

YD: Yes, you can and you must. Taking up arms against the liberals and their minions does not exclude the military option, but it also consists of something more. You might never get the opportunity to meet the enemy on the battlefield, but you should see yourself as permanently at war with the liberals and their colored gods. Even if the whole world worships at the altars of the liberals’ heathen gods you must not do so. The refusal to worship the liberals’ gods is the white Christian’s first duty. From that refusal everything else of consequence follows. You will protect your children from the liberals’ ideology, and you will attack the liberals through whatever means are at your disposal. There is an unrelenting war going on with Satan, the liberals, and the colored heathens on one side, and the white Europeans on the

other side. It is only the white Christian Europeans who are fighting, but Satan is attacking the entire white race. He doesn't spare the white grazers, because he is always afraid that something might arouse them. It's better to simply kill them off to make sure.

CWNY: There is a certain logic to that strategy, a satanic logic without a doubt, but it is logical, if you hate humanity, to exterminate the one race that became fully human through their faith in the divine humanity of Jesus Christ.

YD: Yes, and there is only one way to know the Savior – through the charity that begins at home, where the mysterious human relationships we develop with the people of our racial hearth fire come to fruition, unless stamped out by the liberals in church and state. Kill that flesh and blood conduit to God and you have isolated man from God.

CWNY: Yes, and that is what has happened to the European people. They have left their racial hearth fire to go whoring after the liberals' heathen gods.

I like Kipling, but I must disagree with the third and fourth lines of the last stanza of the poem "If":

If neither foes nor loving friends can hurt you,  
If all men count with you, but none too much:

If we followed that advice we wouldn't have hearts of flesh. Of course my loving friends can hurt me. The only way to avoid such hurt is to form no deep attachments as the Buddhists and the Thomists recommend. And of course some men do count with me more than mere rationalism deems acceptable.

YD: Kipling's "If" does not represent the pinnacle of his work.

CWNY: No, it doesn't. His magnificent story, "The Gardener," captures the heart of the man.

YD: Yes. Kipling was a man of heart. When taken for all and all he was one of us, he belongs to eternal Europe, because he championed the little things, such as the love of kith and kin, that lead us to God.

Very few people ask my advice any more, but if they did I would advise them to eschew the big theories of life and stay with the little things that come from a devotion to the European hearth fire.

CWNY: Like Ratty and his River?

YD: Yes, that's it. The great destroyers, the intellectual Christians and their secular counterparts, all act like they have discovered a very great secret that is so completely and utterly magnificent and profound that it will make all mankind happy beyond measure if they would just follow the liberals. But when we look closely at the liberals' great secret we see that the emperor has no clothes. This utterly new and magnificent secret is a very old thing, it is paganism. The worship of the noble black savage is not new, it is just another variation of the worship of Baal. Christ asks: "When the Son of Man returns, will He find faith on earth?" He will not find faith on earth if the Europeans do not reject liberalism in its entirety. You can't have just a little bit of liberalism. At the heart and center of liberalism is negro worship. If you kill that heart, all the tentacles that are strangling the European people will cease to strangle them. But if you fail to strike at the heart of the liberal leviathan, everything you do will be useless. Unless the blood of our ancestors — for I too am a European — once again becomes part of the Europeans' soul, their sickness will be a sickness unto death. It must be all or nothing. Either the fairy tale of our Lord and Savior is true or it is not. If it is not true, then we are of all men most to be pitied and scorned. But I say it is true, so why should any man, a European man, stand on the wrong side of the Christian-liberal divide? I've said enough.

---

The mad-dog liberals hate the antique Europeans. They will not cease from mental fight until they have eradicated every last vestige of their glorious culture and killed every white European who is even remotely connected to those people from long ago. The conservatives tell us not to bother about the antique Europeans; they bid us look to their brains and their systems. 'After all,' they tell us, in imitation of Claudius's reproach of Hamlet, 'it is wrong to obsess on the dead.' But 'the dead' are not dead to me. They represent all that is truly alive. When I go through the works of Shakespeare, Scott, or Dickens, I feel that I know those authors intimately, and I am drawn to their Europe peopled with men and women who live in the shadow of the cross. Some reject the blessed Savior, and some turn to Him, but they all know who founded Europe. Isn't that more than Gibbon or any of the other classical liberal 'thinkers,' living or dead, ever comprehended? We are not born of pagan Greece or pagan Rome, we are born of Christian Europe. It's not possible for a European to abandon His Europe and still retain his humanity. A European who decides to reside, body and soul, in Liberaldom becomes an Unman who has sold his eternal jewel for the false paradise promised him by the weird sisters of Liberaldom.

The modern European man stood upon the heath and accepted the devil's bargain. We few, the least and the last of the European faithful, have returned to that tempest-tossed heath in order to hurl our defiance at the weird sisters: "We refuse to be part of Liberaldom. Return to hell and tell your master that the people of our house shall serve the Savior, who is Christ the Lord. This shall ever be our story – we are characters in the great European fairy tale that concludes with the resurrection of the dead and the life everlasting. There is no other story like the Europeans' story. Why should we look for another story or another author?" +

---

### **The Day Is Far Spent - October 21, 2017**

And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures? –Luke 24: 30-32

---

If white Americans were taking a knee in defiance of the United Negro States of America, I would be all for it. But since taking a knee has become a protest against 'racism' I am against those who take a knee – although I do hope they keep it up because it has actually stirred up some life in a small minority of white grazers. What about the German sport team (10 out of 11 were white) who took a knee in solidarity with the American blacks? If I had a 'hard-guy' blog I would insult the Germans' manhood, but not having a hard-guy blog, I will simply make a confession. Like Wilson Micawber who was "hourly" expecting something to "turn up" I have always held out hope that the Germans, the most maligned of the much maligned race of Europeans, would be the first white nation to fight back against liberalism. And when I say 'fight back' I mean real fighting – I do not refer to voting. I based my hope on the Germans' past history. They defied Roman universalism twice. In both instances they opposed the synthesis of Christianity and paganism in the name of Christ, who is not a God that can be synthesized with any other gods. But in their third defiance, the Third Reich, they did not defy the world in the name of Christ. There was no noble declaration of "Here I stand, God help me." There was only the ignoble machinations of a cabal of techno-barbarians led by a pathetic neo-pagan vastly inferior to the real Roman pagans. Maybe that is why the German people cannot oppose liberalism now. In their recent past they have only Hitler to inspire them, and he is very uninspiring, which brings us to the central point: If Christ is not the lodestar of Europe, who or what shall be the lodestar? The German people are in the same sinking boat as the rest of the European people. It was foolish of me to expect them to be the ones to take up arms against liberalism.

In Eugene O'Neill's play *Hughie* he depicts a night clerk who simply waits. Waits for what? He doesn't know. Becket picks up the same theme in *Waiting for Godot*. Has the expectation of Christ's imminent return that we see in the early Christian church become a bitter, desperate, existential cry of despair in modern Europe? Certainly it has. We now have life without hope and without charity, because we have lost faith in Christ. It seems to us that He broke his word; He did not return to set things right. Despair can spread like wildfire. We, the European people, have fled to nature and nature's god, the noble savage, to ease our pain. We are sick unto death from waiting for Christ's return.

Every Christian who has come to believe in the risen Lord must feel as the apostles felt who encountered Christ on the road to Emmaus: "Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent." He does stay with them at the inn, but eventually He must leave them, but not before He opens up their hearts to the truth. He set their hearts on fire. Is not that our comfort in this world? Where does the Holy Ghost, our comforter, reside if not in the human heart? Our European ancestors did not turn from Christ in despair and embrace science as the new Holy Ghost, because they had hearts of flesh. Once the cord binding the human heart to His divinely human heart is severed there can be no faith. We are forced back upon our intellects, which are reeds for every ill wind that blows.

The Nicolaitanes that Christ condemns in the Book of Revelations were professed Christians. But they thought that their adherence to an intellectual system absolved them from sin. When only the intellect is involved in our relationship with Christ we lose the intimacy that St. Paul spoke of – "Christ in man and man in Christ." Men and women striving for such an intimacy do not, because they are mortal, achieve perfection, but they do create societies that sustain faith, hope, and charity, in contrast to the Nicolaitane societies in which men and women follow the logic of 'man's intellect is God' pushed to its logical conclusion.

The classical liberals do not believe that the mad-dog liberals will actually act upon their belief in the goodness and purity of the sacred negro. "Rational people will not destroy every last remnant of European culture and kill every last white person – that simply defies belief." But it is happening. Picture a large forest of trees that you think no rational man would want to destroy. When a group of people come along and tell you that for hate's sake they are going to destroy the forest, you refuse to believe them. But then one tree after another is cut down, and still you refuse to believe in the evil intentions of the Jacobin tree cutters. The destruction of the first set of trees is easily explained. "Those trees were rotten (racist) –

they had to be cut down,” is the classical liberal’s reaction. And when more trees are cut down? Again, the classical liberal finds a reason to excuse the great destroyers of the forest. “Those trees also were rotten – we were better off without them.” Eventually the entire forest will be destroyed as the classical liberals blather on into the night about the goodness of the destroyers and the evil of the European forest.

What will be left of Europe if the liberals are allowed to follow the logic of their faith in nature and nature’s god? Nothing will be left. No art work from old Europe will survive. No language stemming from old Europe will survive – the inhabitants of the new Europe will speak Arabic, Swahili, and Pig Latin or some other primitive mumbo jumbo, but they will not speak any of the European languages. Why should they? Why should the pure and innocent children of nature speak the language of the evil ones? The final solution is coming: Why should the evil ones exist at all?

All that is anti-European – be it Islam, feminism, or communism – comes to us through the worship of the negro. The negro is the savior in the Satanic religion of the Nicolaitanes of Liberaldom. Their holy father is their own intellect, and they bid us reject the comforter who dwells in the human heart for their new comforter, which is science. We have left the road to Emmaus where the risen Lord walked with us and followed the negro back to the darkness of Babylon. Whenever a classical liberal opposes one of the –isms of modernity, he does so in the name of the negro. “I oppose the Islamic invasion of my nation, but I am not a racist, I have many friends who are black...” That type of opposition to liberalism is not an opposition. You must reject the liberals’ savior and embrace the true Savior if you are ever going to make any headway against the principalities and powers of this world only.

Miss Havisham in Dickens’ novel *Great Expectations* feels that she has been wronged by humanity in general and the male sex in particular. So she adopts a little girl and by controlling every aspect of her existence teaches her to hate humanity in general and the male sex in particular. The liberals, under the influence of Satan, took the part of Miss Havisham. They made Satan’s hatred of God their own and began to fashion a world based on that hatred. “Why is there suffering?” and “Why, if He is the Christ, hasn’t He returned?” All these questions and more, Satan whispered into the liberals’ ears. And they listened. “Take my hand,” says Satan, and they do. Can’t the liberals feel the reptilian coldness of that hand? No, they can’t, because they have been morally anesthetized. They believe in the kingdom they have created, a kingdom without love, faith, hope, honor, or charity. All is dark and deadly in Liberaldom; it is a kingdom of everlasting night. The conservative seeks to make a place for himself within that kingdom. Never! Nothing human can survive in a world consecrated to the devil through the negro.

How can the light shine when all the channels of God’s grace have been blocked? The liberals have not only killed their own hearts, they have also banished from their hell on earth all genuine sentiments springing from the human heart. All our “mysterious human relationships” that enable us to know the Savior are proscribed in Liberaldom. The unbought grace of life that Edmund Burke spoke of has been destroyed by the liberals. Of what did that grace consist? It was not something esoteric, it was not an intellectual thing, it was the simple humanity that came from the hearth fires of white people who took Christ into their hearts and their homes. We have lost the strength and fire that comes from charity, because we have broken the human links to God. Johanna Spyri writes about those human links in her magnificent novel *Heidi*:

Heidi ran out and brought back the old hymn book. Then she found one beautiful song after another, for she knew them well now, and enjoyed them herself, and it was many days since she had heard all the verses she was so fond of.

The grandmother lay with folded hands and on her face, which at first had looked so troubled, now rested a happy smile, as if a great good fortune had come to her.

Suddenly Heidi stopped.

“Grandmother, are you well again already?”

“I’m feeling much better, Heidi. What you have read to me has done me good. Finish it, will you?”

The child read the hymn to the end, and when she came to the last words,–

“When mine eyes grow dimmer, sadder,  
Pour thy light into my heart,  
That I may pass over gladder  
Than men to their homes depart,” –

The grandmother repeated them over and over, and an expression of very joyful expectation came over her face. Heidi felt so happy to see it. All the sunny day of her journey home rose before her, and she exclaimed with delight: –

“Grandmother, I know already how it seems to be on the way home.”

The grandmother did not answer, but she had heard the words perfectly, and the expression which had pleased Heidi remained on her face.

After a while the child said;—

“It is growing dark now, grandmother; I must go back; but I am so glad that you are happy again.”

The grandmother took the child’s hand in hers and held it fast; then she said:—

“Yes, I am so happy again; if I must stay lying here, I am content. You see, nobody who has not been through it knows what it is to have to lie for days and days all alone, and not hear a word from another human being, and not be able to see—not see even a single sunbeam. Then such gloomy thoughts come to one that it often seems as if it never could be bright again and one could not bear it any longer. But when I hear the words which you have read to me, it is as if a light arose in my heart, and that makes me happy again.”

I know that *Heidi* is deemed a sentimental relic of a racist, sexist era by our learned liberal pundits, but there is genuine sentiment, as distinct from sentimentality, in Heidi. We are not told to cry over the alleged sins of the white man and the sufferings of the noble black savage in Heidi. Instead we are told to love our own in and through our Savior. The blind grandmother in Heidi sees more than we see. She sees, through Heidi, the living God, while we lie in the darkness of Liberalism. The drunken, half-crazed Welshman, Dylan Thomas, got the rage right, but his rage was without hope. We also shall rage against the dying of the light, but not without the hope that is within us – Please God, in the darkness of Liberalism, “Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent.” +

---

### The Bitter Fruits of Diversity - October 14, 2017

And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death. — Revelations 6:8

---

And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. – Revelations 22: 12-13

---

Dr. Seuss wrote a large number of great children’s books from the 1930’s through the 1950’s. By the 1960’s he had become radicalized and ceased to write great children’s books, but the New Age liberals hate their own just as Robespierre hated all his fellow Jacobins. “No one is pure enough except me,” is the credo of our modern Jacobins. Which is why a mural from Seuss’s book *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street* was recently removed from Amazing World of Dr. Seuss Museum in Springfield, Massachusetts for perpetuating racial stereotypes (there is a Chinese boy in the book running with chopsticks). The demonizing of the white race is right and proper, but the stereotyping of the colored races is evil. Thus *The Song of the South* is banned in the United States because it depicts a good darkie who respects his white masters. The Belgian author of the wonderful *Tintin* books of the 1920’s and 1930’s later repudiated his book *Tintin in the Congo* because he was sorry that it perpetuated the true stereotype of ignorant, superstitious and bloodthirsty black men. His book is also banned in the United States and Europe. The list goes on and on. Nor have I mentioned all the appropriations of white culture by black barbarians. Most of Shakespeare’s plays, when they are performed in the United States (which is not very often), feature black actors and actresses. Dickens’ *Christmas Carol* features a black Ebenezer Scrooge, and the new musical group *Black Violin* celebrates the fact that there are black violinists. But wait – aren’t whites supposed to be totally evil? Why then do blacks want to appropriate their culture? I’ll tell you why. Because nothing of any value has ever come from the colored cultures and nothing of any value has ever come from our modern liberal culture. And that is why Satan is a modernist: he supports the synthesis of colored barbarism and modern liberalism, because the two entities, when joined together, constitute hell on earth.

White people should tell the blacks that if they hate us so much — and we must conclude that they do judging by their words and actions — then they should stay away from whites and have nothing to do with them. Let us live out our lives deprived of diversity. Let us have cities that are white and hospitable, parks that are safe to walk and recreate in, concerts, plays, and movies that are negro-free, and let us have it immediately. It will be a great hardship, but we will try to suffer through life without the negro.

But of course we cannot have life without the negro. And why is that? The white man was certainly better off when he lived apart from negroes, and the negro was better off when he was segregated from the white man. Then the white man could sustain his own civilization and materially and spiritually aid the black man. It’s ironic — only the so-called racist societies such as segregated South Africa and the pre-Civil War South ever aided the black man. And they aided him by maintaining their own race and civilization and making their aid to the black man conditional — he had to adhere, at least outwardly, to the ethos of white civilization.

Do the Atticus Finch liberals, who have made the black man a god, really care about the black man? Of course they don't. They need a god, a suffering servant, that they can sacrifice for and to. And they have chosen the black, noble savage. They will cling to their savage gods with all their heart and soul, but will they die for them? They hope it will not come to that. They want the racist whites, thee and me, to die for the black gods. After all, someone besides the liberals, who have gone beyond whiteness, must die in atonement for the original sin, which is the sin of whiteness.

We have now reached a new level of white-hating. The conservatives, who are the classical liberals, were tried and convicted of racism decades ago. But now the Jacobins are preying on each other. Liberals are condemning other liberals. Isn't that terrible? Maybe the liberals will kill each other off in one big Antifa rally. 'Tis a consummation devoutly to be wished, but I don't think we will be rid of the liberals that easily.

I do not follow current events that closely, because I know, like Melville's *Bartleby*, where I am. I live in the kingdom of hell on earth. I live where what is good and decent is spit on and what is evil and vile is lauded and applauded. And all that is good and decent stems from the people, the antique Europeans, who are constantly being denounced, by conservatives and liberals, as the most evil people that ever walked the face of the earth. So why should I listen to them, the liberals and the conservatives, spew their venom on my honored dead who are not alive to defend themselves? And they are never defended by anyone in public life. Conservatives will defend themselves against charges of racism by denouncing the antique Europeans. "Conservatism is about ideas, it has nothing to do with race." Oh really? From whence comes our "idea" of God incarnate? Does it come from a particular people with hearts of flesh who gave Christ a place by their racial hearth fire, or from the airy nothingness of the cosmos where all ideas dwell in limbo without a local habitation in the human heart? The conservatives' religion is called Gnosticism, and their liberal brethren have gotten the better of them by adding the negro into the mix, in order to give their Gnosticism an earthly home.

I play a game with my cat in which we simulate the reality of the jungle. I throw a rolled up sock around the living room and he "attacks" the sock. But he doesn't actually catch the sock. He runs by it and gives it a wave with his paw. But he thinks he has won. In his cat's mind he has beaten the evil sock. Of course I perpetuate his fantasy by telling him he is a good boy for conquering the bad sock. The conservatives play a similar game with the liberals. But the conservatives are not as cute as my cat nor do I have an urge to applaud them at the conclusion of the game, because the conservatives play a deadly game with the liberals, a game that leaves white people naked to the enemy.

The game goes like this – picture the generic talk show format. There is a conservative commentator and a liberal guest. The conservative very politely points out the error of the liberals' position. Pick whatever issue you want, it doesn't matter because the liberals' response will always be the same: "You are a racist." Now the debate shifts to the "conservative's" defense. He outlines all the reasons why he is not racist – he is not against immigration, he is just against uncontrolled immigration. He totally abhors segregation in any form. He condemns the racism of the white race prior to the 1960's, he condemns the South African whites, and on, and on, he goes. Like my cat, he thinks he has won the game even though he has actually achieved nothing. He has not made a dent in the liberal's armor. The liberal just sits there with a smug look on his face while Mr. Conservative goes through his litany of why he is not a racist. At the conclusion of the litany, the liberal repeats his charge of racism. The conservative thinks he has won, but in reality the liberal has won – the charge of racism has won the day for the liberal. No white man can win a debate with a liberal when he accepts the liberals' terms of engagement, because the liberals have already predetermined the results of every debate. The white man is racist, and white racism (not black racism) is the unpardonable sin.

Some years back I mentioned to a Roman Catholic priest of my acquaintance that I was taking a few days off to visit my parents who had retired to a little house by the sea. The priest immediately asked me if there were any blacks residing in that town by the sea. When I told him that there were not, he acted like he had won some kind of contest. I went away from the priest with the distinct impression that he thought my parents were in a state of mortal sin for choosing to retire to a town that was not – Horror of Horrors! – racially diverse. And of course I was in mortal sin as well for wanting to visit my parents in that non-diverse town by the sea.

The conservatives' rhetoric is just empty rhetoric because the conservatives accept the liberals' theology – white racism is evil. But what is white racism? White racism is white pietas, it is loving one's own kith and kin in and through the God-Man, Jesus Christ. It does not consist of the hatred of individual human beings, especially one's own kind, under the auspices of a universalist, Gnostic love of an aggregate herd of colored heathens. So long as the conservatives see existence through the eyes of the mad-dog liberals, who see the negro as the Alpha and Omega of existence, there will be no white counter-attack against the liberal leviathan.

The United States is not a city built on a hill pointing upward to heaven. It is a city built in the midst of the valley of the shadow of death. Negro worship is the worship of Satan. And from that worship stems every other evil under the sun – sexual Babylon, feminism, legalized abortion, and legalized sodomy are the result of the European people's shift from the

worship of Christ to the worship of Satan through the medium of the noble black savage. “Our father who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name...” has been replaced by, “Our sacred negroes, who art the gods of Liberaldom, hallowed be thy name, thy kingdom come, thy will be done in this our kingdom of mother earth.” There now is no heavenly Father, there is the negro, who presides over hell on earth. Is this civilization what we want to conserve? Does it matter one jot who gets elected in a nation consecrated to the sacred negro?

The Christ-bearing people must break the mind-forged chains of negro worship or they will be consumed by the enemy of mankind, who never gives quarter to his enemies. “Diversity, diversity!” the liberals cry – “You must become diverse!” But what is diversity? It is the blending of the white Christ-bearing race with Satan. And that blending has resulted in an equality of sorts. We have come to an equality of Satanism:

African fitness in the realms of the Gruesome and the Grisly is however very well testified. The witchcraft practiced by Lord Graham’s ancestors was nothing compared with the witchcraft practised by Savanhu’s contemporaries. Even the witches of Macbeth were literally pallid amateurs compared with average twentieth-century African witches. A casual little news item informed us, for instance, that in the Gwaai Reserve a female witchdoctor cut the body of a still-born infant in half, cooked the top half and, together with her sister, ate it. It transpired that the mother of the infant had been severely and repeatedly beaten by her husband, and had gone to the witchdoctor asking for a love potion. To obtain the ingredients for the potion, the mother, who was pregnant, was given something to cause an abortion. And the witchdoctor and her sister made a meal of what was left. –*White Man, Think Again!* by A. Jacob

Hasn’t the white man duplicated that African demonism with legalized abortion? We can’t live as a diverse people, because we cannot live in hell, we can only surfeit and die there. St. John warned us in the Book of Revelation of the dangers of blending Christ with the principalities and powers of this world only. That blending is called hell. Everything good and noble comes from non-diverse Europe. If we do not hold on to that essential truth and make it our all in all, we will lose our hope for heaven in the next world, and we will live in the hell of Liberaldom in this world. +

---

### **Armed with Cruel Hate - October 7, 2017**

This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. –2 Timothy 3: 1-7

---

After the Antifa threat and the subsequent Antifa massacre in Las Vegas, a woman of my acquaintance, a white grazer, asked me what I thought of the Antifaers. When I told her they were possessed by the devil and were hell-bent (pun intended) on destroying the white Christ-bearing race, she was very disturbed. I hadn’t told her what she wanted to hear. It is very unsettling to think that one has an enemy who cannot be appeased by anything less than your heart’s blood. But what is the use of lying to ourselves? Isn’t it crystal clear now? It wasn’t crystal clear to that woman, and it isn’t crystal clear to the rest of the white grazers.

Satan had to morally anesthetize the white race before he could work his will upon them. And he has done that quite well. Whenever the colored heathens or the Jacobins, which is what the Antifaers are, commit atrocities, the white grazers instinctively (such instincts have now been bred in their bones) look for the white provocation of the violence: “We have not gotten the blacks jobs,” or, “Trump is too confrontational.” It is always something the white man has done that causes violence, because, as church, state, and academia tell us, the white man is evil. And although this makes the white grazer somewhat uncomfortable, he accepts the theology of the white man’s responsibility for the evil that men do. He accepts it, because he respects the moral authority of his leaders in church and state, and he accepts it because he would rather think that the bloodletting can be halted by appeasement than face the fact that he has an enemy that cannot be appeased, because that enemy is driven by a satanic hatred for the white race.

In the old Christian hymn, “A Mighty Fortress Is Our God,” we are told that our enemy is “armed with cruel hate.” It’s curious, now that Satan has become so visible through the works of his minions, that modern Europeans thoroughly reject the notion that Satan prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. But then again maybe it is not so curious. Since Christ has become less visible in the works of His people, wasn’t it inevitable that men would redefine and rehabilitate the devil? Christ has been demythologized, and so has the devil.

I doubt there is a single mad-dog liberal (they call themselves Antifa) who believes in the devil. But the devil does not want their belief. If they truly believed in his existence they might come to believe in Christ. What the devil wants is the liberals’ compliance with his will. And he has that. What is the devil’s will? To attack God by destroying His people. His great frustration is that he must work through humanity to strike at God. The great hater of mankind, the archangel who spits

on the God-man and the image of God in man, must work through human beings in order to obtain his will. So must our Lord work through human beings, but the divine condescension was not abhorrent to our Lord and Savior — He took flesh and dwelt among us. 'Tis not so with the devil. He does not move men's hearts with his sacrifice, he moves men's minds with his appeals to their pride and self-will. What will the Antifaers gain by the destruction of the white Christ-bearing race? What did Satan ultimately gain by his rejection of God? He gained hell and lost heaven. And that is what the Antifaers want. They want hell on earth. And when do they want it? They want it now. The liberals are like unto Lady Macbeth — the new generation no longer tries to disguise it: "Fill me from the crown to the toe top full of direst cruelty! Make thick my blood; stop up th' access and passage to remorse, that no compunctious visitings of nature, Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between th' Effect and it!"

The devil does not necessarily want the Antifaers to be so blatant. He can inspire them, he can fill them from crown to the toe top with direst cruelty, but he cannot personally take charge of their war against whites. Did he want the German Jacobins to say we'll bring you hell? Did he want the American Antifaers to say they were going to disrupt the nation by whatever means necessary? And did he want that Las Vegas shooter to kill all those white people? I don't know. If the white grazers are aroused by such bloodletting then the liberals have miscalculated. But it doesn't seem the grazers will be aroused. "It was the work of a mentally deranged person," the Satanists tell the white grazers. If the grazers accept that, and there is every indication that they have accepted that explanation, then the Antifaers have not made a blunder and Satan will step up the bloodletting. (1)

The Las Vegas massacre represents a change in the liberals' conduct of the war. Hitherto the liberals have been content to kill by proxy, letting the colored heathen do their killing for them. But now they have stepped forward, and we should take note of the shift in tactics, because the white techno-barbarian brings a technological mind to his killing. He can kill with a much greater efficiency than the colored heathen. But why is the liberal so impatient? After all, the extermination of the white race was proceeding at a nice steady pace. The liberal can't wait because of his intense hatred. His hatred knows no bounds; the mere thought that there are white people still living and breathing the same air as their exalted liberal selves and the colored heathens fills the liberals with rage. They crave their bond, which is the blood of the white man.

The great advantage the Antifa liberals have over the white grazers is their passionate hatred. The grazers cannot defend themselves because they have been morally neutered; they are incapable of responding to the liberals' hatred with a passionate hatred of their own. But isn't it wrong to hate? No, it is not. We hate the devil and his minions, because we love Christ and His people. We must separate the hate that stems from love from the hatred that comes from vanity, envy, and pride. The man who doesn't hate those who attack his people and blaspheme against his God is no man at all. The liberals' hatred of the white race is grounded in their hatred of Christ. If we loved much we would hate the devil's minions and fight them with a passionate intensity greater than the liberals' passionate hatred. As it stands now, the white European has been enslaved by liberalism. His passivity before the enemy denotes a moral decline of epic proportions and serves as a tragic example of what happens to a man without a faith.

This New Year's Eve will mark the second anniversary of the rape of the women of Cologne. In the aftermath of those Moslem outrages I read the commentary of a female Danish reporter who deplored the lack of manhood among the German males who stood by and did nothing to stop the outrages. She wanted to see some chivalry in the German males, but she went on to say that she did not want to return to the repressive, sexist days of yore. She just wanted to see some manhood when Moslems attacked the liberated women of the 21st century. You can't have it both ways. Chivalry stems from a blood faith, a faith in Jesus Christ as true God and true man. It is not a faucet that can be turned off and on according to the whims of supermarket, intellectual Christians who want to pick and choose the Christian virtues that best serve their needs. That charity of honor which stems from a man's faith in Jesus Christ was bred in the bone of our European ancestors. You cannot systematically remove that faith and replace it with a bloodless faith in a synthesis of rationalism, paganism, and Christianity and expect to see the same type of men and women who once existed in old Europe. European women no longer behave in a manner that inspires European men to be chivalrous, and European men no longer have that within which makes a man respond to the rage of the heathens with a passionate rage in defense of the innocent.

In Charles Dickens' novel *Little Dorrit*, Arthur Clemens runs afoul of the Circumlocution Office when he attempts to aid Little Dorrit and her family. The Circumlocution Office is a vast bureaucratic network that tells the British people how not to do things.

Because the Circumlocution Office went on mechanically, every day, keeping this wonderful, all-sufficient wheel of statesmanship, How not to do it, in motion. Because the Circumlocution Office was down upon any ill-advised public servant who was going to do it, or who appeared to be by any surprising accident in remote danger of doing it, with a minute, and a memorandum, and a letter of instructions that extinguished him. It was this spirit of national efficiency in the Circumlocution Office that had gradually led to its having something to do with everything. Mechanics, natural philosophers, soldiers, sailors, petitioners, memorialists, people with grievances, people who wanted to prevent grievances, people who wanted to redress grievances, jobbing people, jobbed people, people who couldn't get



rewarded for merit, and people who couldn't get punished for demerit, were all indiscriminately tucked up under the foolscap paper of the Circumlocution Office.

Numbers of people were lost in the Circumlocution Office. Unfortunates with wrongs, or with projects for the general welfare (and they had better have had wrongs at first, than have taken that bitter English recipe for certainly getting them), who in slow lapse of time and agony had passed safely through other public departments; who, according to rule, had been bullied in this, over-reached by that, and evaded by the other; got referred at last to the Circumlocution Office, and never reappeared in the light of day. Boards sat upon them, secretaries minuted upon them, commissioners gabbled about them, clerks registered, entered, checked, and ticked them off, and they melted away. In short, all the business of the country went through the Circumlocution Office, except the business that never came out of it; and its name was Legion.

The classical liberals are one big circumlocution network set up to tell whites how not to respond to the liberals' and colored barbarians' hatred of the white race. They must be cautious in their rhetoric, lest they inflame the mad-dog liberal (as if a mad-dog liberal is not already inflamed), and they must never insult, accuse, or act against any barbarian of color. In short the white man must learn how not to do anything about his own destruction. He must let be.

Do pagans love their own? Yes, to a certain degree they love their own. But did the pagans love their own with the passionate intensity of the Christian Europeans? No, they did not. The mark of the European during Europe's Christian centuries was the intensity of his love, which passed the understanding of the colored heathens. And now? The mark of the mad-dog liberal European is his hatred of his own, and the mark of the modern European everyman is his complete indifference to the rape, torture, and murder of his own people. It is intellectual Christianity that has brought Europeans to this pass. Edward Gibbon, the author of the epic historical work, *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, was a convert to Roman Catholicism in his youth and then a convert to Calvinism. In both cases, his conversions were intellectual conversions. He looked at Christ with his mind's eye, not through the eyes of his heart. And when he came to write his history of Rome, he wrote with poetical fire about the pagan faiths, but when he wrote about Christianity he sounded like an accountant reading his ledger to his employer. The Rev. H. H. Milman responded to Gibbon's back-door assault on the Christian Europeans and their Lord and Savior.

Christianity alone receives no embellishment from the magic of Gibbon's language; his imagination is dead to its moral dignity; it is kept down by a general tone of jealous disparagement, or neutralised by a painfully elaborate exposition of its darker and degenerate periods. There are occasions, indeed, when its manifestly beneficial influence, can compel even him, as it were, to fairness and kindle his unguarded eloquence to its usual fervor; but in general he soon relapses in to a frigid apathy; affects an ostentatiously severe impartiality; notes all the faults of Christians in every age with bitter and almost malignant sarcasm; reluctantly and with exception and reservation, admits their claim to admiration. This inextricable bias appears even to influence his manner of composition. While all the other assailants of the Roman empire, whether warlike or religious, the Goth, the Hun, the Arab, the Tartar, Alaric and Attila, Mohammed, and Zingis, and Tamerlane, are each introduced upon the scene almost with dramatic animation—their progress related in a full, complete, and unbroken narrative—the triumph of Christianity alone takes that form of a cold and critical disquisition. The successes of barbarous energy and brute force call forth all the consummate skill of composition, while the moral triumphs of Christian benevolence, the tranquil heroism of endurance, the blameless purity, the contempt of guilty fame and of honours destructive to the human race, which, had they assumed the proud name of philosophy, would have been blazoned in his brightest words, because they own religion as their principle, sink into narrow asceticism. The glories of Christianity, in short, touch on no chord in the heart of the writer; his imagination remains unkindled; his words, though they maintain their stately and measured march, have become cool, argumentative, and inanimate.

Is not Gibbon's cynicism the essence of the liberals' attack on Christ and the Christ-bearing race? Let me extend Rev. Milman's defense – It is Christ and Christ alone who can cure our moral blindness, the moral blindness that makes us indifferent to the suffering of our own people – “For judgement I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.” What is the blindness of which Christ speaks? It is the blindness of those who do not see the moral beauty of Christ's birth, crucifixion, and resurrection from the dead. The European hearth fires of yore honored the Christ story, not as an intellectual construct, but as a living reality which animated their hearts. Classical liberalism has no answer to those who hate the white race with a passion fueled by Satan. But St. Paul does have an answer. The European men and women who circumcise their hearts will love their people in and through the Savior. That breed of Europeans, if there are any left, and that breed alone, will be able to defeat the liberals and the colored heathen. +

---

(1) It matters little whether the Vegas shooter was a convert to Islam or whether he considered himself part of the Antifa movement. His inspiration was the same in either case. His heart was poisoned against the white race, because he was one of Satan's minions. The Satanic, anti-white poison has entered the bloodstream of the anti-white liberals. Such creatures can only be conquered by white men who have hearts of flesh consecrated to our Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

---

**Mere Virtue Is Not Enough - September 30, 2017**

Edgar. Draw thy sword,  
That, if my speech offend a noble heart,  
Thy arm may do thee justice. Here is mine.  
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,  
My oath, and my profession. I protest-  
Maugre thy strength, youth, place, and eminence,  
Despite thy victor sword and fire-new fortune,  
Thy valour and thy heart- thou art a traitor;  
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;  
Conspirant 'gainst this high illustrious prince;  
And from th' extremest upward of thy head  
To the descent and dust beneath thy foot,  
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou 'no,'  
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits are bent  
To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak,  
Thou liest.

—*King Lear*

---

There are two reasons why an opponent of the Islamification of Europe and/or the negroization of America might have recourse to the language of the psychiatrist. The first reason might be that he believes in the validity of psychology. The second reason might be that he thinks if he uses the language of the enemy he will be able to convince the enemy that he is right and the enemy is wrong. In both cases the opponents of the hard left, the conservatives and the neo-pagans, are deceived in deepest consequence. If they truly believe in the devil's science, which goes by the name of psychology, they will never defeat the devil's minions, because at heart they are in league with them. And if they think the liberals can be won over by rational arguments derived from psychology, they are deluding themselves. Men are not moved by reason, they use reason to advance their emotional agendas, not to repudiate those agendas.

The 'death wish' gambit of the neos and the conservatives is a perfect example of the secularized, psychology-laden mindset of the right wing. The Germans are inviting the Moslems into their nation; therefore, they have a death wish. The Americans are allowing Mexicans and Moslems into their country, and they have turned their cities over to negro barbarians; therefore, they have a death wish. No, that is not the case. Let us try to free ourselves of the bastardized mumbo-jumbo of psychology and return to the more basic language and more profound wisdom of our nonscientific European forefathers – the liberals welcome and encourage the invasion of the European nations by the colored heathens because they hate everything connected to Christian Europe. And who is more connected to Christian Europe than white people? Even if every single white repudiates Christianity, the white race will still be hated by the liberals. They will hate the Christ-bearing race from now till the ending of the world. Nothing will change that. Will not the liberals perish as well if they continue to advocate the destruction of the white race? Of course they will. But the liberals do not believe that they shall perish. That is why we cannot simply say 'death wish' and think we've solved the problem of liberal treachery. The liberals think they will live to be worshipped and adored by the colored heathen. Look at their fictional hero, Atticus Finch: "Stand up, your father is passing." That is the liberal's fantasy. Just as the Christian keeps Christ's image before his eyes, the liberal keeps the image of himself as Atticus Finch, esteemed and respected for his sacrifice and support of the crucified black gods, before his eyes. The liberals never stop to ask themselves why the blacks hate the novel *To Kill A Mockingbird*. They just go on supporting their black gods and anathematizing the white 'devils.' Death wish? Not quite, there is something more than psychology at work. The liberals want me and thee to die for our racism, but they have no death wish. They have a life wish. They yearn for a paradisiacal life here on earth built on the blood of white racists and the dead bodies of infants tortured and murdered in their mothers' wombs.

Why shouldn't we use the weapons of psychology to fight the liberals? We dare not, because if we treat liberalism as a mental disorder that can be straightened out by reasoning with them and showing them the error of their ways, we will not get to the heart of the matter – we will not be able to stop the European people's descent into hell. Liberalism is not a mental illness, it is a spiritual disease. Are not the two things the same? No, they are not. Christ did not reason with the demons in the Gospel, He bid them leave the possessed man, and they fled into the swine and went hurtling over a cliff. We must rebuke the liberals, in the name of Christ. We cannot reason with them with the intention of converting them with our brilliance. Men and women who are possessed by the devil are not open to reason. They use their reason to advance their satanic cause, not to learn about the error of their ways. The illuminati are incapable of error – in their mind's eye they have seen a great vision, they have seen the kingdom of Satan on earth, and they will cling to that vision while fighting with all their heart and soul to destroy that other vision, the vision of a people who made Christ their lodestar.

When you play the psychological game, you are trying to place your opponent in a rational box in order to make him easier to deal with. St. Thomas Aquinas attempted to do the same thing with God. Hamlet rejected that assault in his defiance of

Rosencrantz and Guildenstern, and so did Dostoyevsky's Underground Man. Man is not a reed instrument to be played upon, nor is he a piano key. Because they treat liberalism as a psychological problem, the conservatives and the neos have failed to see the true nature of liberalism. The liberals use psychology as a forgiveness tool for themselves and their colored heathen. There is no sexual sin in psychology, so the liberals need not worry about their varied perversions. And no black man is ever responsible for his crimes; it is the racism around him that causes him to do what he does. But psychology is thrown out the window when the liberals deal with whites. Suddenly, the liberals become religious fanatics. There is no tolerance for the white racist. Liberals do not look to psychology to find a reason to excuse the white racist. Oh no! The white racist is damned. He is summoned before the liberals' Inquisition and the verdict is always the same – guilty. In the great liberal tribunal the white man is always guilty. He cannot reason his way out of the liberals' death sentence by pointing out, from a psychological viewpoint, the error of the liberals' ways. 'Guilty as charged,' will be the response of the liberals.

If the liberals have put on the full armor of Satan, how can we defend ourselves against their onslaught? St. Paul gives us the answer: when he advises us – no, that is too tepid – he passionately urges us to put on the full armor of Christ in our war against the devil. This is a religious war we are engaged in. It is not a friendly debate. The liberals have thrown off their masks of civility and compassion and revealed themselves in all their satanic fury, just as Maleficent threw off her outward façade of a woman in order to become a dragon, but still the conservatives and the neos debate and discuss, looking for the one magic formula that will make the liberals see reason. Never, never, never will the liberals see reason. The liberals will use reason to support what they do see – they see paradise before their eyes, a paradise diametrically opposed to Christ's divine charity, a paradise of colored heathens and sexual perverts in which human beings become an inhuman aggregate herd presided over by the archangel Satan. Have we already reached that 'paradise'? Not quite, but we are close to it. "It will come, humanity must perforce prey on itself like monsters from the deep!"

Let us go back some 200 years to a small town in the Southern United States. And let us say that there are two speakers scheduled to debate at the town hall. They are debating whether the town should build a new building for orphans or to simply allocate enough money for repairs to the old building. The two speakers can debate that subject, because they are meeting to debate within a moral consensus of a Christian people – orphans must be provided for. In the absence of a moral consensus there can be no debate. If one speaker comes to that debate with a predetermined belief that all orphans should be killed in order to rid society of the cost of caring for them, he would be outside the moral parameters of Christendom. A Christian could not debate with him.

When I was a young man, I had a subscription to *National Review*. I cancelled that subscription when *National Review* put out a headline that read, "Abortion: A Spirited Debate." I sent an angry letter when I cancelled the subscription, asking the editors what they were conserving if it was not Christian civilization. And what could be more basic and fundamental to a Christian civilization than the protection of life in the womb? The reply of the editors was that I shouldn't get upset over minor issues. Enough said.

When a Tucker Carlson-type of conservative debates a feminist, a 'black lives matter' advocate, or a radical Moslem, he always wins the debate. He wins the debate if debates are won by who makes the best argument, but when there is no moral consensus between the debaters, the victor is always the amoral debater who understands that debates are only subterfuges for his satanic agenda. A Christian cannot debate a man or woman who wants to destroy every white Christian on the face of the earth. That is ludicrous. The classical liberals, the conservatives, are still debating – and a protest is a form of debate – with the mad-dog liberals, because they do not worship God in spirit and truth. They, unlike the mad-dog liberals, still respect the old ethos of Christian civilization. They believe in civility, compassion, and fair-mindedness, but they do not see the whole Christian vision. If they did, they would not treat Satanists as their friendly debating partners; they would see the mad-dog liberals for what they are – moral pariahs who can only be dealt with on the battlefield.

When our Lord told us to be as wise as serpents and as gentle as doves, I think he was referring to our relationships with the possessed – the liberals. They use debates and protests as subterfuges to disguise their real agenda, which is an outright war against the white, Christ-bearing race. Not so with the classical liberals. They sincerely believe that debates and protest movements are an end in and of themselves.

Edgar is at the mercy of his demonic brother when he is "so far from doing harms that he suspects none." But when suffering deepens his vision of existence, he comes to realize that mere goodness is not enough. One must passionately hate evil and be prepared to fight evil to the death. And that is what he does, and so shall we when we see existence with the heart of the antique Europeans rather than the mind of the classical liberals. And if we don't see with their heart? Then we will debate with the liberals until they stop all debates, and we will die without ever having spent one moment in the light.+

## The Liberals' Holy Ghost - September 23, 2017

But 'tis strange;  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths,  
Win us with honest trifles to betray's  
In deepest consequence.

-Banquo in *Macbeth*

---

Melville's statement about the works of Shakespeare – “All that we seek and shun is there, man's final lore” – was on the mark. If we shun his harsh truths we will never get to the core of his one, great, beautiful truth: Christ is “the grave where buried love doth live.” The rejection of that truth is the reason the European people are on the brink of extinction. They have allowed the devil to fool them with “honest trifles” while betraying them “in deepest consequence.” That we inhabit bodies and our bodies are subject to certain natural laws is the honest trifle the devil has used to make us discard what is of deepest consequence. We have discarded our faith in the resurrection of Jesus Christ because the resurrection from the dead is unscientific, it is against the laws of nature. And we are all part of nature, are we not? I had a secularized Jew for a teacher in one of my college literature classes. He was quite fond of attacking the notion of a loving God by pointing to all the suffering in the world. His case against God was Ivan Karamazov's case against God. There is no rational argument against that type of attack. But there is a response, there is Alyosha's response to Ivan. He bid his brother look to the cross of Christ.

Let's look closer at modern atheism. Is it suffering that has turned modern man against God? If it is, then why didn't the Europeans prior to the 20th and 21st centuries turn against God? Were not their lives just as full of suffering as the lives of the modern Europeans? And if we can believe the medical establishment, human suffering has lessened in the 20th and 21st centuries. Then we must conclude that the pain of existence is not the reason modern man has ceased to believe in the “grave where buried love doth live.” There must be another reason. The atheist, George Bernard Shaw, told us the reason in the preface of his play called *Back to Methuselah* – Science has triumphed over Christ. (1) The scientific world view was the sword that the liberals used to destroy the European people's will to survive as a people. If science says that Christ be not risen, then to whom do we turn? The Europeans have returned to nature and nature's God, the noble black savage. Rousseau was not an outright atheist, he combined his faith in Christ with his faith in the Noble Savage, but where your treasure lies so lies your heart. Rousseau's successors kept to the heart of his new faith, which was the worship of the negro, and discarded the dross, which was Christ the Lord.

Science and truth have become synonymous in the modern era. Psychiatry is supposed to tell us more about mankind than the bards of Europe did, because psychiatry is scientific. Sociology and anthropology tell us great truths because they too are scientific disciplines, in contrast to the Gospel of Christ which stems from a primitive people who believed in myths rather than science. Science has been the bridge – the Holy Ghost – that links the Europeans to the gods of nature. The liberal taking his walk through the woods is not communing with the Christian God of his forefathers, he is communing with the gods of nature, the colored heathen, even though those ‘natural’ gods want nothing to do with nature.

In my mid-twenties I was very naïve about the Christian clergy. I thought Christian clergymen, of all denominations, believed in Jesus Christ. I vividly remember walking away, stunned, from a conversation with a Roman Catholic priest who told me that the essence of Christianity was a belief in the truths of all religions. When I asked the priest if he meant that all religions had some elements of truth, but Christianity was the one true faith, I was told that he did not mean that at all. He meant that Christianity was not true in the literal sense. And by literal sense, he meant that Christ had not risen from the dead. No man could believe something so unnatural. Now, you might say that priest was an extreme case, but I have found, over the years, that he was just a little more frank than his contemporaries. Most of the clergy have wrapped Christ in ‘this world only’ mysticism. He is a civil rights worker, He is a Marxist, He is a prophet like Mohammed, or He is the son of God just as we are all sons of God. But is He the Son of God, who rose from the dead on the third day? If He is not, then let us proceed to eat, drink, and be merry, for tomorrow we die. And isn't that the promise of liberalism? That we can be happy in this world if we shun the unscientific Christianity of reactionaries such as St. Paul and the pre-20th century Europeans and cling to the Christ-hating, white-hating civilization of the 21st century? But can we really be happy, to the extent that anyone can be happy, in this world without our faith in the risen Lord? I'm at the age when many of my friends and relatives are suffering from terminal illnesses. For some reason, the fact that Europe is moving toward Islamification and the sacred negro has been made the lodestar of the United States does not give them any comfort in the face of death. And science? There are pain killers for the physical pain, but can science help the man or woman who has spent his or her life within the confines of the scientific worldview? No, it cannot. Such a man or woman has been deceived in deepest consequence. They are now facing death naked to the great enemy of mankind, the arch angel Satan. “Die in despair,” he tells the devotees of science on their death beds. My prayer for all my dying friends and relatives is my prayer for myself as well: “Help of the helpless, Lord, abide with me,” – and abide with them.

The fight for European culture, which cannot be divorced from the fight to preserve the European people, is the fight for our common hope. The liberals tell us we can only have hope if we abandon Christ and the European people and replace them with a Christless, colored paradise sustained by science. Our European ancestors speak to us from the grave where buried love doth live and tell us to cling to the God who sustained them in the day of battle and stood by them at their dying hour. Is it His “kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven” that we should seek, or is it the scientized, ‘natural’ hell of the liberals that we should seek?

The essentials of liberalism – that Christ be not risen, and the Europeans, who foisted the belief in Christ on the world, had to be replaced by the heathens of color, were the guiding principles of all the liberals from the second half of the 20th century to the present. But in my lifetime I have witnessed a great shift in the liberals’ tactics. When there were still a sizeable portion of European grazers who had lost the faith of their European ancestors but retained much of the ethos of that ancient faith, the liberals debated things such as abortion and race-mixing, defending such evils in the name of compassion and charity, which were virtues stemming from the faith the liberals renounced. But in recent years, now that the grazers have lost the ethos of their immediate ancestors, the 1950’s grazers, the liberals have done away with discussions. They have obtained absolute power, and they are using their power to suppress all opinions contrary to liberalism and to kill all whites who oppose liberalism. It is a brave new world we live in. It is a crueler world, a more hopeless, darker world than mankind has ever known before. In this new world we see the forces of scientized liberal atheism joining forces with the Moslems and the colored heathens to eliminate faith, hope, and charity from the face of the earth. If that military maneuver is to be successful, the European people must be eliminated. The devil understands that Christ works in human hearts. If you destroy the European people’s hearts of flesh, you have very effectively destroyed their connection to the living God.

Jacob Marley tells Scrooge of the chains he forged for himself, link by link. The European people have forged similar chains for themselves. They are chained to a pagan wheel of fire because they believe that science is truth and truth is science. And ironically the ‘facts’ of science are just as irrational as the belief in the resurrection from the dead, for it is just as impossible for a human being, mere vegetable matter according to the liberals, to become a human personality as it is for that same human personality to perish and rot in the grave. “Behold I show you a mystery.” Once we enter into the spiritual realm, and we have to if we are to explain the existence of human beings, then truth, the truth beyond reason, seems to point to the faith of our European ancestors – “though worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God... for now is Christ risen from the dead, the first fruits of them that sleep.”

Trump’s election has saved some white lives and allowed some whites to hold onto their jobs that might otherwise (had Hillary been elected) have lost them, so his election was not a complete waste. But no election within the confines of liberalism will accomplish that which is needful. The Europeans live in chains forged by the men of reason – the academics in church and state. Until those chains are broken, they will not see the one great truth that once animated the European people – the empty tomb.

I suppose I should have saved such meditations for Easter, but as the darkness of liberalism engulfs every nook and corner of what was once Christendom, the spirit reacts, in self-defense, by holding the three great events ever before his eyes – Christ’s birth in the manger, His death on the cross, and His resurrection from the dead. When the eleventh hour has passed, when the great god democracy has failed, we must look to the Help of the helpless, who broke the chains of death and rose from the tomb on the third day. +

---

(1) It’s worth noting that the neo-pagans and the liberals do not diverge on the third person of the liberals’ trinity. They too believe in the holy ghost of science. Nor do they diverge from their liberal cousins on the issue of the first person of the liberal trinity. They too believe in the father, which is the abstracted intellect. It is on the issue of the second person of the liberal trinity that the neo-pagans part company with the hard left. They do not believe in the liberals’ savior, the noble black savage. Can the neo-pagans compete with the hard left without a Savior? No, they cannot. But you can’t just invent a savior for practical purposes. You must see something more than nature in existence before you can do battle against an enemy who sees only the natural world presided over by the natural black savage. Christ is that ‘something more than nature.’

---

## **The Word of Their Testimony - September 16, 2017**

And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. –Revelation 12: 10-12

---

Our Lord told us to read the signs of the times. If we do that, if we view our times with a Christian heart, we cannot help but feel that these are the end times our Lord told us of in the Book of Revelation. But our Lord also told us that no one knows either the day or the hour. God's timetable is not our timetable. He could end it all tomorrow, or He could extend the end times for hundreds of years. It's difficult to imagine that modern Liberalism, which is a synthesis of all the blasphemies known to man, will be permitted to stand much longer. But we don't know.

If we did know the day and the hour, would that change our lives? I would stop writing articles, but other than that I don't think I'd change much. I'd do the daily readings with my family and wait for the end. But of course one has to believe in our incarnate Lord in order to believe in the end of time. The liberals will continue on with their lives and die proclaiming the eternal greatness of fraternity, liberty, and equality. Why bother with such speculation since we cannot know the day nor the hour? I bother about such things because, although it is quite useless, even harmful, to speculate about the day and the hour – witness the Evangelical Christian Jews who try to bring about the end of the world through their support of Israel – it is essential that we read the signs of the times from a Christian perspective. If we don't do this we will be absorbed by the times, which is to say we will become part of Satan's kingdom of hell on earth.

One becomes absorbed by the principalities and powers of the modern world by making the external forms of Christian worship and Christian civilization the whole Christian faith, even though the inner core of the outward forms are rotten. John Donne put it quite well:

And if we distinguish not between Articles of faith & jurisdiction, but account all those super-edifications and furnitures, and ornaments which God hath afforded to his church, for the exterior government, to be equally the Foundation itself, there can be no church; as there could be no body of a man, if it were all eye.

Church, school, and state were all good things during the Christian era of Europe, but they are not good things now that Satan has entered in. A European of depth, a man who has kept his heart, who has stayed with the Christ of the European hearth fire, will not be deceived by eternals. He will not abandon his people because church, school, and state tell him that he must worship the negro. Nor will he blend the living God with negro worship and the other heathen faiths simply because church, school, and state tell him he must. But to oppose the forces of hell that have joined together in what were formally citadels of Christian civilization, the European Christian must have some touchstone of reality other than a blind support for Christian facades that are now the habitations of the devil. Hamlet had that within which passeth show. If something within us does not burn with hatred when we come in contact with the blasphemies of our churchmen, the perversions of our academics, and the anti-white and anti-Christian tactics of our government, then we have become one with Satan. And conversely if our hearts do not burn within us, as the apostles hearts' burned within them when they encountered Christ on the road to Emmaus, when we come into contact with the Christ of old Europe, through His people, it is a sure sign that we have become "as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal."

A man without the poetic of old Europe in his soul is "fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils." And is that not what has led to the demise of the European people? Our intelligentsia is divided between the far left liberals who hate the poetic of old Europe and the classical liberals (the conservatives) who have betrayed the poetic of old Europe for intellectual systems. A system does not need a people with a local habitation and a name, nor does a system need a personal God with a local habitation and a name. So the European people, the Christ-bearers, became part of a universal aggregate called 'the people,' and Christ became part of an intellectual system, an important part, but not as important as the system.

Systems men who worship externals without substance and have no poetic cannot defeat the men of the hard left, who have a poetic. The lefties hate the light in the name of their dark gods. The conservatives are, like Sisyphus, forever pushing the rock uphill to no avail, appealing to the hard left for justice, for a calm, rational discussion of the rightness of their cause, whether that cause is the right to life for the baby in the womb or the right to life for the white man as well as the black man. But always their assumption is that church, school, and state are full of good, rational people who are interested in compassion and justice for all. Why won't the conservatives look to the discarded poetic of Europe? Look to the European poets during the Christian era, look to the Gospels, look to St. Paul, and look to the Book of Revelation. When they, the liberals, do such things, evils that cannot be explained by our philosophies, we must stop trying to reason with them – we must embrace the poetic of Christian Europe, which enjoins us to see evil and fight evil. And if you don't see the evil of a society that has out-done Sodom and Gomorrah in perversion, surpassed Babel in blasphemy, and out-Heroded Herod in the slaughter of the innocents, you are either one of the hellhounds of Liberalism, or you are a morally anesthetized conservative who sees with the exterior eye of reason while forsaking the inner eye of the heart.

From 1940 through 1953 MGM Studios sent a man named James A. Fitzpatrick around the world to film a series of short vignettes of a wide variety of countries. The short films, which are now available on DVD, were then shown in movie theaters before the main feature. I've only seen the ones that deal with the European nations, having no interest in the non-European countries. I should warn you that Fitzpatrick mispronounces almost all of the names of the non-English

cities and towns, and he is a hopeless shill for the democratic way, but still the films make for a very fascinating view of what we have lost. The films are like (although not as well done) H. V. Morton's *In Search of...* books. But there is something to be said for an actual visual depiction of the lost worlds of Europe. The intellectual rot had already set in at the universities of the various European nations (which includes all the racially European nations such as Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, Canada, and the United States), but the lives of the people as depicted in the travelogues were much the same as the lives of their ancestors, hundreds of years before them. One particular vignette stands out in my mind of a small town in Holland in the early 1950's. To think that many of the children of that town, in which the men and women wore wooden shoes and worked and worshipped as their Christian ancestors had, would still be alive today in modern Holland, is something that makes one wonder. Did any of those children stay with the vision and the way of life of their ancestors? Or did they all follow church, school, and state down the wide road to hell? It seems from a distance that the Hollanders, like the rest of the European people, followed their leaders in church, school, and state. I would like to think that there are some seventy and eighty year olds who were children at the time of that film who have stubbornly clung, in their hearts, to the old European culture of faith, hope, and charity. But is that likely? If the powers that be are rotten, will the people defy the powers that be? The poisoned Laertes cried, "The King, the King's to blame!" I cry, "The churches, the churches are to blame!" When they peddled a Christian system that was always evolving and virtually identical to the liberalism of the ever-evolving intelligentsia, instead of preaching the never-evolving truth of Christ crucified and Christ risen, they took away the one touchstone of reality that could have given, and still can give, the European people the spiritual backbone to resist the evolution from Christian Europe to the Babylonian kingdom of Satan on earth.

All of the European travelogues give us a vivid picture of what has been lost, but I must mention two more that were particularly poignant reminders of a sacred heritage that has been replaced by the liberal techno-barbarians. In the town square of old Prague there is an astronomical clock that was constructed in 1408. Every hour on the hour lifelike models of the 12 apostles walk by as the clock strikes. On a side panel is the figure of Death. When Death's sickle goes down, personified models of various sins, such as Greed and Avarice, fall down. It is a marvelous piece of artwork to behold — it speaks of a people whose lives, imperfect as they themselves might have been, were consecrated to our common hope.

The other vignette that I must mention is the one called "The Ugly Duckling." In that brief film we see the birthplace of Hans Christian Andersen, and then follow him through the various cities and towns of Denmark where he lived and wrote his Christian fairy tales. The way of life of the people in those towns seems to be much the same as when Hans Christian Andersen lived there and wrote his fairy tales. What a sad, sad contrast with modern Denmark. And so it is with all the cities and towns that we see in those travelogues from the 1940s and 1950s. The intellectual attack had begun in earnest at that time, but it was not yet visible in the daily lives of the European people. It's good to look at such films, even though they are incredibly sad, for the same reason that Puddleglum had to defy the evil queen who said there never was a Narnia. The liberals are constantly telling us that there never was a beautiful land called Christian Europe. They tell us there was only racism sexism, and homophobia in that terrible incorporate union called Christian Europe. Look and compare. Who is lying — is it the man such as myself, who sees moral beauty in old non-diverse Europe, or is it the liberals, who see nothing but evil in old Europe while telling us that the new diversified Europe is heaven on earth?

There is something very telling in St. John 12: 10-11:

"But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death; Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus."

The Jews not only wanted to put Jesus to death, they also wanted to put Lazarus to death, because he stood as a sign of contradiction to the Jews who maintained that Christ was a false prophet. So it is with the Christian Europeans. The forces of liberalism want to destroy the European people because the Christ-bearing people are a sign of contradiction to liberalism. In order to avoid the persecution of the world the Europeans have discarded Christ. But they can't escape their destiny. They will be forever seen as the Christ-bearing people because of their past, nothing can change that. Satan won't forgive or forget, he will always center his attack on the 'image of God' people, the Europeans. St. John also tells us that "among the chief rulers many believed on Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess Him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:" Why should the European people, who once rejected the wisdom of the Pharisees for the foolishness of God, want to return to the modern synagogue of Satan? Is the approval of the Pharisees of Liberalism really so wonderful? No, it is not. We ask only the benediction of our incarnate Lord whose divine love created and sustained our European civilization of long ago.+

---

## In the Beginning - September 9, 2017

And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man

It should be no surprise to any white man that Google is putting a stop to all dissenting voices. It is absolutely consistent with the nature of the beast called liberalism. Robespierre was an outspoken opponent of capital punishment before taking office, and he remained an outspoken opponent of capital punishment when he became head of the French Jacobin state. How did he justify the seeming contradiction between his bloodletting and his opposition to capital punishment? Was he a hypocrite? No, he was not. He was against capital punishment for human beings. The nonhuman (the aristocrats) needed to be killed so that the republic could be humanized. Once France was purged of the nonhuman element, then there would be no need for capital punishment. By the same mental process used by Robespierre, liberals, such as the Google gurus, shut off all dissenting voices while claiming to be great believers in free speech. And they are – they believe in free speech for human beings. White supremacists, which are now defined as all white people except Atticus Finch-liberals, are not human; therefore, they have no right to free speech. And it goes further than that – the nonhumans, the ‘white supremacists,’ who run the gamut from the 80 year-old lady who likes John Wayne movies to the young white man who admires Robert E. Lee, have no right to life. They must be eliminated. And they are being systematically eliminated throughout the European nations.

Throughout the Christian centuries, European religious sects such as the Puritans and the Jansenists have been suspicious of the humanity of Christ. They somehow got the notion that the majesty of God was lessened if He was presented to mankind as a humane God, but is not Christ’s divine humanity at the heart of our faith? We love Him because of His humanity, because of His death on the cross. Rationalists with Christian sympathies treat Christ’s crucifixion as one of the many possible options God could have used to reveal Himself to mankind. In fact, they suggest, at least implicitly, that the crucifixion was rather unnecessary. Was it? What is the answer to Ivan Karamazov’s tale of the little girl crying in the outhouse? There is no rational answer; there is only the cross of Christ.

There are no nonwhite liberals. The barbarians of color often vote the same as the liberals, but they do so for different reasons, and they might, when they get jobs in Liberalism, spout liberal double-speak, but they are not liberals – they are colored heathens. The liberal is always white, because liberalism stems from Christianity, and it was only the European people who made Christianity the center of their culture and made Christ their morning star. The liberals have rejected Christ, but they have retained a perverted Christian eschatology. Humanism came from the European’s belief in Christ – to be humane was to be like unto the humane God, Jesus Christ. Now, to be truly humane a white man must be inhumane; he must hate all that was thought to be virtuous in old racist Europe. He must hate the faith, hope, and charity of the Christian Europeans, while replacing their faith, hope, and charity with a new faith, hope, and charity. Thus the liberals’ faith is in the new unholy trinity of the abstracted intellect (the father), the negro (the son), and science (the holy ghost). His hope is in utopia, the utopia of a future blessed state on earth where no white people exist. And his charity consists of the elimination of the evil ones, the white nonhumans who stand in the way of utopia. We see the liberals’ satanic version of charity in every aspect of their lives. They must ‘diversify’ everything; they must support black barbarism and the Moslem invasion of Europe, because they must be charitable; they must fight the nonhumans, the whites, and support the innocent and pure, the nonwhites. With an unholy, satanic zeal the liberals are proceeding toward a brave new world, nurtured and sustained by the sacrificial blood of white people. There was never, in pagan or Christian Europe, a white culture based on cannibalism (the Donner party was not a culture). There was not such a culture until the French Revolution, when many Jacobin women actually drank the blood of the butchered aristocrats. And now our modern Jacobins are doing likewise. They are cannibalizing the white race by proxy through the sacrificial bloodlettings of whites by their colored heathen allies.

All that was good in old Europe and the small remnant of good left in modern Europe is the result of our European ancestors’ faith in Jesus Christ. Old Europe was not the result of intellectual Christianity, it was not created by Augustine, Aquinas, or Calvin, it was created and sustained by men and women with hearts of flesh who saw life feelingly. They saw beauty on the cross, and that vision became their faith. But the devil did not see beauty on the cross. The cross of Christ, the divine condescension, filled him with loathing. So Satan prowled about the world seeking to make the European people feel the same loathing for the divine condescension as he did. The liberals are his success story. But what has he won? And what, ultimately, do liberals gain by their rejection of Christ? No man achieves a state of perpetual bliss in this world even if he is a Christian. But do the liberals seem even moderately content with their liberalism? No, they don’t. And the most radical branch of liberalism, the feminist branch (when women go to the devil they always go further than their male counterparts), seems to be composed of the most unhappy, miserable creatures that have ever walked the earth. “Unsex me here,” they cry, and as a result they all go hurtling toward the same cliff that the swine went tumbling over.

The classical liberals’ (the intellectual Christians’) response to satanic, Jacobin liberalism has been tepid. They are not comfortable with extremism, but if they were really serious about combating liberalism they would have to go to extremes; they would have to be willing to place their passionate love of Christ up against the liberals’ passionate hatred of Christ.



Ah, there's the rub. The intellectual Christians, the conservatives, have no passion because they have abandoned their racial hearth fire in order to appease the hard left liberals – "See, I am not racist, so you must let me play and work within the confines of liberalism." But if you are not racist, if you don't love your own, you cannot love Christ. Christ comes to us through His divine humanity, and we come to Him through our humanity. We do not become inhumane by loving our own, we become humane enough to understand the mystery and the beauty of His death on the cross.

The summation of our failure, as a people, to respond to liberalism is this – a lack of depth and a lack of passion. We lack those two essentials because of our refusal to love our racial hearth fire. No man cometh to the Father except through Christ, and no man comes to Christ except through the channel of grace, the love of our kith and kin that He has provided for us.

It's not a little thing that Google is shutting down the white sites. It will further isolate white people from each other. Nor is it a little thing that whites are being deprived of their livelihoods for the slightest opposition to the liberal leviathan. I for one do not welcome life as a survivalist who has to "skin his own deer and run a trout line." But it is not over for white people because of all the totalitarian clampdowns that are taking place. It is not over if we make the gospel of Christ something more than an intellectual construct. Intellectual Christianity belongs to the false messiahs of organized Judeo-Paganism; they are the connecting links to Satan's kingdom of hell on hearth. Our salvation is in the blood, soil, and hearth fires of Europeans of depth, Europeans who were connected to Him. If we keep that connection we will not perish. If Google bans whites, the hearth-fire whites will find a way to subvert and or destroy Google. When the government cuts off the food supplies of whites, the hearth-fire whites will find ways to combat the government. There is always hope for the white man who takes His word into his heart. Such a man will love and hate with all his heart. And such a man will achieve what the rational Christian says is impossible.

It seems that as our European nations become more and more openly anti-white and anti-Christian, the conservatives have become more conciliatory toward the liberals, just as Mrs. Joe in Dicken's *Great Expectations* became more conciliatory toward Orlick after Orlick assaulted her. The liberals will not be mollified. If you are white, you will ultimately be found guilty of whiteness, just as Robespierre found his closest associates guilty of aristocratic sympathies. And then he in turn faced the guillotine for his sins against the people. All whites have sinned, because they are white. It is no consolation to us to know that eventually all white liberals will die in the anti-white sacrificial fire that they started.

St. John tells us that, "In the beginning was the Word... And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth." The European people made that miracle of the Word their miracle. His grace and truth was at the heart of their culture. Yes, the liberals will take down all the monuments, and they will destroy all the art works of Christian Europe. But can they destroy the Word? They will try, but it is not possible to eradicate the Word. Bibles will still be passed around and many books stemming from the Gospel will be circulated in the Underground. In *Fahrenheit 451* it was a right-wing dictatorship that burned the books. In reality, that type of totalitarianism always comes from the left. We will be in the situation of the hero of *Fahrenheit 451* vis-à-vis the world. We will be trying to reconnect with our past, our Christian past, through the bards of Europe – men like Shakespeare, Dickens, and Scott.

St. Paul says, "For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord." So am I persuaded that neither Satan nor the principalities of this world, principalities such as Google, will be able to separate us from the love of Christ, whom we love through the people of our racial hearth fire. It was not for vain glory or filthy lucre that our ancestors built Christian Europe. It was for the love of our common hope. Surely, if we love much, He will not forsake us – "Men must endure their going hence even as they are coming hither..." +

---

## For Hearth, for Faith, for the Light of the World - September 2, 2017

Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. – 2 Timothy 3: 7

---

A Scottish minister recently proposed that 100,000 Islamic 'refugees' should be placed on the Isle of Skye, an island that only has an estimated population of 10,000 native-born Scots. In better times, say 50 years ago, the Scottish minister would have been sent to a madhouse and that would be the end of it. But nowadays such proposals are commonplace, and they usually become a reality. A man who was not tainted with the disease of liberalism might ask the Scottish minister a few questions, such as:

- 1) Why would a professed Christian allow 100,000 Moslems to invade his homeland? The answer would be that the Scottish minister is a 'new' Christian, a Judeo-pagan Christian, which means that he believes Christianity is a fusion of Judaism and all the pagan faiths. Thus, he is being true to his faith by inviting the Moslems into his nation
- 2) Where, Reverend Blasphemer, are you going to put the Moslems? The answer – We shall put them where the white Scots live.
- 3) Where will you put the Scottish people? Answer: We will dispose of the Scottish people.
- 4) How will the 'new' Scots sustain themselves? Answer: The rest of Britain will sustain them with their tax money.
- 5) What happens when there are no white Britons left to pay taxes to support Islamic refugees? Answer: I'm a cleric, a great thinker, I don't bother myself with such mundane things.

And please don't tell me, if you are not a Presbyterian, that your church is exempt from such blasphemies. This demonic madness has taken hold of all the churches in organized Christendom, which has become Satandom. The devil entered our churches in the guise of a rationalist. He seemed like a nice fellow because he was well dressed and very articulate. As time went by he seemed a bit unusual – his horns were showing. But still, he was very rational, and reason, we all knew, was next to Godliness. So the clerics got used to having the devil around them. And then they began to take his advice on everything. They wondered how they ever got along without him. Now, in the 21st century, the first of the non-Christian centuries in Europe, the devil rules.

Let us segue from the Scottish minister to the flood in Houston, Texas. White people are behaving nobly. They are giving aid and comfort to the victims of one of the worst natural disasters in this nation's history. How can this be? Are not white people the evil ones, the people who must give way to the colored heathens? White people are allowed to be heroic during such natural disasters because the liberals have not yet discovered a way to ensure that natural disasters happen only to white people. If that were the case, all relief efforts for victims of natural disasters would be banned. They'd be banned because the defense and or the aid and succor of white people is racist and therefore damnable. The whites are only allowed to serve Liberaldom, which is committed to the destruction of the white race, so whites can only aid whites when whites are suffering through the same natural disasters as the colored heathen. When there are no whites left, the colored heathens will perish, because they are incapable of charitable outreach to their own people or any other people.

Whites will continue to serve Liberaldom, because they have no leadership willing to contradict the ruling liberal ethos, which states: "The good man is pure intellect. He is the psychiatrist, the theologian, the doctor of medicine, the doctor of philosophy, and the man of science." But if man is pure intellect, then who is his master? It is the Archangel Satan, that great intellectual giant. Who is more intelligent than Satan? The end result of reason unfettered from the human heart is the worship of Satan. The Scottish preacher is an apostle of Satan. And so are they all – the men in authority in church and state throughout Europe. St. Paul warned us about such men:

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works. – 2 Corinthians 11: 13-15

Doesn't that describe our modern day clergymen who have joined with their secular liberal counterparts to make war on the living God in the name of their demon gods? The flood in Texas should be combatted, but that natural disaster pales in contrast to the man-made disaster of liberalism. Who will combat the negroization and Islamization of the European nations? It isn't just the people of Skye who are in danger of being exterminated, it is the entire white race. And they are being exterminated by "ministers of righteousness," the righteousness of Satan. Everything is reversed in the new church – right is wrong and wrong is right.

In the plays of Shakespeare, the works of Scott, the works of Dickens, and the European fairy tales there is a reoccurring theme – the theme of a man on the periphery of great events because he is thought to be too inconsequential to have any significant influence. In other words, he is considered a simpleton. But the simpleton steps out of the shadows at a crucial point in the drama and turns the tide for the forces of good. In Shakespeare's *Much Ado About Nothing*, it is the bumbling constable, Dogberry, who brings the villains to the bar of justice, causing one of the villains to remark, "I have deceived even your very eyes. What your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light..." And in *King Lear* it is Kent and Edgar in disguise and seemingly only minor figures who do the villains and villainesses in. Likewise in Scott's *Quentin Durward* and his *The Heart of Midlothian*. Jeannie Deans and Quentin Durward are like unto the third dumb brothers in the fairy tales. Seemingly of no consequence, even foolish, they step forth and win the day. And Dickens? The third dumb brothers walk through his novels in a glorious quixotic parade, but none are more exemplary than Wilkins Micawber, the king of the third dumb brothers. When Uriah Heep, that evil minister of Satanic righteousness, seems like

he is about to destroy Mr. Wickfield, Wilkins Micawber steps forth and produces the evidence that can convict Heep and save Mr. Wickfield. He concludes his damning indictment of Heep with the following immortal words:

I ask no more. Let it be, in justice, merely said of me, as of a gallant and eminent naval Hero, with whom I have no pretensions to cope, that what I have done, I did, in despite of mercenary and selfish objects, For England, home, and Beauty. “Remaining always, &c. &c., WILKINS MICAWBER.”

That brief montage of third dumb brothers in our literature seems like a mere bagatelle of no consequence. But that is precisely the point. Shakespeare’s plays, the novels of Scott and Dickens, and the European fairy tales are mere fairy dust in the eyes of the world. But of what does our world consist? Shakespeare, Dickens, and Scott were third dumb brothers themselves. They saw a spiritual realm inhabited by men and women with immortal souls. That made their story, the story of the European people, a story worth telling. If we have souls, if we are not just vegetable matter, what we do in this vale of tears is of eternal moment. And what we fail to do is also of eternal moment.

The Bible is shunned by some of the organized churches because they fear that it will weaken the clerics’ power over the laity. And in other organized churches the Bible has been demythologized and made into a handy dandy guide book for ‘this world only.’ But if a man goes through the Bible as if he is reading a novel or a historical work he will find something of infinite value, something that the intelligent men have yet to discover, because they have hardened their hearts against it. That something is a Man. He is the third dumb brother who breathed life into the European people. He is the heart of our hearts and the summit of all our aspirations and hopes. The new Europe, which has been forged in hell, the Europe of Satanic clergymen and fiendish hell hounds in high places, is opposed to that Man of Sorrows who was the promethean fire of the European people when they were a people.

In de la Motte Fouque’s story, *Undine*, he tells how the Undine acquires a soul. She acquires a soul when her heart is pierced with love and compassion for a human being. The European people have reversed the process of the Undine: they have divested themselves of their souls by denying their humanity. If this sounds too dark, or too extreme, just look at the negroization and Islamization of the European nations. People with souls, people with hearts of flesh, do not allow that to happen. When we accept the intellectual Christians’ faith in pure intellect and deny the truth that was bred in the bone of our Christian ancestors – that our racial identity is an essential part of our soul – we lose our souls and become Undines.

The Light of the World is dependent — He has willed that dependence — on His people to make his Light shine. He works through us. Satan has willed, through his people, who are the liberals and the colored heathens, the destruction of the light shining in darkness. That is what the race war is all about. Will the ancient ‘image of God in man’ culture of the antique Europeans be eradicated from the face of the earth? Or will the people who saw a great light rise up and become Europeans, the people of God, once again? It seems ludicrous to even suggest that the Europeans will not be completely destroyed when you look at the naked horror of Liberalism. Everything stemming from old Europe is proscribed. And what used to be the unspoken, underlying passion behind all the liberal clergymen’s and academics’ sermons and lectures, the destruction of the white race, is openly preached in the pulpits, taught in the classrooms and shouted from the rooftops of Liberalism. What can be done in the face of such a monolith of evil? The European people should become like unto the third dumb brothers of European fairyland. With absolutely nothing but our faith in the Man of Sorrows we should step out of the shadows and fight for our racial hearth fire. Are we likely to succeed? No, we are not. But whether we win or lose in the temporal realm, we will have achieved a great victory, we will have reclaimed our souls. God’s people will once again be able to say that they have seen a great light. How can we be Europeans, how can we be men, without the light that shineth in darkness? +

---

### **The Devils of Liberalism - August 26, 2017**

And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. Matthew 8: 28-32

---

Trump is hated by the hard left because he is not proceeding according to the ‘Some are more equal’ doctrine of the Jacobin-Marxist left. And he is ‘disappointing’ classical liberals such as Ann Coulter and Ann Corcoran because he is not doing what they think is necessary to ‘restore’ our American republic. But the classical liberals do not understand what is going on. What they call the democratic process is an invention of the devil. Our nation was conceived by men determined to destroy the image of God in man, and was allowed to spread its Satanism through the world by classical liberals (now called conservatives) who thought that men only needed an abstract God that could be pulled out of a God-box on holidays

and other special occasions, and then put back in the box during regular working days, because the classical liberals hold that it is self-evident that rational men can work things out for themselves without reference to a fairy-tale God.

Trump will never set the American republic right within the confines of democracy, because democracy is from the devil. But Trump has done much – he has slowed down the liberal juggernaut. Who else could have done that? Certainly not Romney, Bush, or Ann Coulter and Co.? And he has made it possible, by bringing all the liberals out of their lairs to spew their venom at him, for all those who have not been morally anesthetized to see the liberals for what they are – the spawns of Satan. Now, most Europeans have been morally anesthetized so they cannot see the liberals for what they are, but is that Trump's fault?

The Christian Europeans have been completely routed by the liberals. They are fleeing the battlefield in disarray with a relentless enemy on their trail. Trump has volunteered to offer his services as a rear guard to cut down on the casualties. It ill behooves us to criticize anything he does, because whatever he does it is more than anybody else has offered to do for the European people. If we had a non-satanic government, if liberals were not spawns of Satan, we could write editorials and books in which we disagreed with Trump and told him he should do this rather than that. But this is war. Stop treating the rear guard as a failed general and commend him for his efforts. There can be no victory in rearguard actions, but we can take advantage of them to go home, lick our wounds, and prepare for another assault on the enemy. Actually, in the case of the modern Europeans, we have to say, 'Prepare for a first assault,' because they have not yet begun to fight.

Trump's inauguration speech in which he said that we have one heart, one home, and one glorious destiny set him apart from the antique Europeans such as myself. But it placed him well within the confines of classical liberalism. Why then do the classical liberals dislike Trump more than I do? It is because the conservative-liberals think politics, like religion, is an abstract theory. They do not believe that there is anything in politics or religion that cannot be explained by a rational process. So whenever anyone, regardless of the fact that he is one of their own, goes against their abstract theories they attack him. From my standpoint, Trump belongs with Andrew Jackson and Teddy Roosevelt. They were men with a terribly flawed universalist ideal, but they had a remnant of white pietas. Which is not good enough to win a war, but it deserves to be acknowledged and respected when all the other classical liberals are completely devoid of white pietas. Of what does that remnant of pietas consist? On one issue, that of economic nationalism, Jackson, T. Roosevelt, and Trump broke ranks with the classical liberals. Jackson attacked the national bank, and T. Roosevelt broke the trusts. And now Trump is challenging North Korea and China, which makes the corporate socialists hysterical. Trump has infuriated the hard left for not honoring the 'more equal' doctrine, and he has infuriated the conservatives for not honoring the one world, one economy doctrine of classical liberalism. And if Trump is hated for opposing only one aspect of liberalism, then what must their hatred be for a Christian European who opposes them in everything?

And this brings us to the real issue. The Trump-Brexit battles are skirmishes within Liberalism. The real war is between those who adhere to Christian Europe and those who have chosen to align themselves with Liberalism. On the one side, the liberal side, is the hard left, the classical liberals (conservatives), the alternative right, and organized Christian Jewry. On the right is – is there a Christian European right wing? Not at present. Most Europeans were once Christian and they were right wing – they wanted to preserve their people and the institutions that stemmed from their faith in Jesus Christ. But classical liberalism, which was created by Satan, allowed the European people to slide into liberalism. Hawthorne's Mr. Smooth-it-away (see "Hell on Earth") is the classical liberal. Without directly challenging Jesus Christ, classical liberalism subverts Him by making Him subordinate to a rational process of their own devising. The process varies, which is why there are so many contending factions within Liberalism, but it is always the process that men must adhere to; it is not the living God.

If faith consists of an adherence to an intellectual formula and not to a God who enters human hearts, then you can defend the Faith by defending an intellectual process while abandoning the people who took God into their hearts. 'He isn't there,' the great intellectual Christians tell us, 'He exists in our minds. If you trust us, we will bring you safely home.' Of course the home that the classical liberals are taking us to is the same home that the hard left liberals are going to – it is called hell.

Burke pointed out that the French clergy, who were more concerned about their process than a man's faith in Christ, helped pave the way for the French Revolution. Dostoyevsky made the same point 100 years later when his Grand Inquisitor accuses Christ of thinking too much of man. Man, the Grand Inquisitor insists, does not want to struggle toward the light by following the way of the cross, he wants to exchange the cross for earthly guarantees of bread and security. Will this always be the case with the European people? Will they always prefer the faith of the clerical Grand Inquisitors to faith in Christ? It seems so. But it was not always thus. The early European Christians did not shun the cross of Christ, they were like unto Thomas Nelson Page's depiction of the heroic Goth:

On the instant stood revealed, as though he had blown down the ages, a pure Goth, unchanged in any essential since his fathers had left their forests and through all obstacles, even through ranks of Roman legionaries, sword in hand had hewn their way straight to the goal

of their desires. He was a Goth in all his appetites and habits, a Goth unchanged, unfettered. True to his instincts, true to his traditions, fearing nothing, loving only his own, loving and hating with all his heart—a Goth.

-Thomas Nelson Page in *Under the Crust*

What happened to us? A hard stone can become a smooth pebble over time if a steady stream of water runs over it. For years our clergymen poured rationalist pap over the faithful until their souls were smoothed away. They are now reasonable human beings incapable of loving or hating with all their heart, but quite capable of following the injunctions of the clerical wise men who enjoin them, in the name of a rationalist God, to go beyond love and hate to...? To what? Paradise? Or is it to hell?

The hard left is incapable of love, but they can still hate, which is why they always defeat the classical liberals. Kipling wrote, wistfully, of the time when “The English begin to hate.” Would that were true of the white, Christian Europeans: To hate the devil and all his works. Are not the liberals and the colored heathen the work of the devil? Of course they are, but the classical liberal does not believe in the devil. He believes in reason. But our Lord did believe in the devil, and He enjoined us to fight the devil. When did rational men decide that Christ was a bad theologian?

I constantly hear classical liberals asking, when they look at what the radical left is doing, ‘What is going on — how can they do these things?’ If wishes were horses, then beggars would ride. I wish that the conservative-liberals would take the story of the demon-possessed swine seriously. It’s a curious thing: the best of our poets have a very immoderate, extreme view of life that is in line with the Gospels while the literary critics and theologians always seek to modify or condemn such ‘extremism.’ Thus, Burke is seen as ‘obsessive’ for saying that the French Revolution was from the devil. And poets such as Shakespeare, Scott, and Dostoyevsky are considered extreme and or fantastical when they take the devil seriously. But whose vision fits the reality of the world we see before us? Do we live in the classical liberals’ world of reasonable men working out their problems within some mind-forged, man-made process? Or are the Christian poets’ right — do we live in a world in which men and women, inspired by Satan, seek to strike God by destroying his image in man? The Satanism of modern Liberalism and the insufficiency of reason to deal with that Satanism was brought home to me in my early twenties when I was involved in what was called the ‘pro-life’ movement. While passing out literature at malls and doing sidewalk protests out the abortion clinics, I came to realize the terrible insufficiency of the ‘Give them the information about the unborn children’ approach. That was not the issue; the women getting abortions knew what they were doing. They were acting according to the will of a spirit who was opposed to Christ’s reign of charity; they were acting according to the dictates of the evil one, who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls.

Christian Europe was not lacking in heroic men and women who dedicated their lives to the resistance of the evil one and the support of His reign of charity. Today we have no heroes willing to oppose Satan and support Christ. Why? Once Christendom became Satandom through the mediation of the ‘smooth it away’ rationalists in the church, the men and women of Europe had no star to guide them. Human beings respond to their leaders. When the European leadership bent their knees to Christ so did the European people. Heroism became commonplace, because the European everyman did not have to have exceptional vision; his vision was bred in the bone — it was part and parcel of his everyday life. But once the Christian leadership of a society is replaced by Satan’s minions, Christian heroism becomes very rare. There are still brave men and women, but lacking a moral vision they put themselves at the service of Satan. Nothing is more pathetic than the ‘support our troops’ occasions which take place on a regular basis. Support our troops? To do what? Are they going to place a Christian king on the throne? And shouldn’t we support our local police? Again, I must ask — why should we support our police? If I shoot an abortionist, will the police come to my aid? If I organize a vigilante committee to take care of the marauding bands of colored heathens, will the police come to my aid or will they come to the aid of the colored heathens? People, in the main, will reserve their heroism for respectable, state-approved heroism. When a nation state has a satanic government, your “heroes” will be heroes of Satandom.

What has been lost? A culture in which even the worst of sinners knew who was the cornerstone of their world. And the best of that culture were heroes who fought the heathens and supported His reign of charity. Once lost, can such a world be regained? Not from within Satandom. If we are true to our origins, if we don’t look to classical liberalism as an antidote to Jacobin liberalism, we will find the strength and the will to endure to the end in spite of the liberal armies that are arrayed against us. That is the promise of Europe’s morning star:

Men’s hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh. — Luke 21: 26-28 +

---

## **The End of Classical Liberalism - August 19, 2017**

Humanity must perforce prey on itself,

Like monsters of the deep.

—*King Lear*

---

Let us begin with Burke:

Men are rarely without some sympathy in the sufferings of others; but in the immense and diversified mass of human misery, which may be pitied, but cannot be relieved, in the gross, the mind must make a choice. Our sympathy is always more forcibly attracted towards the misfortunes of certain persons, and in certain descriptions: and this sympathetic attraction discovers, beyond a possibility of mistake, our mental affinities, and elective affections. —*Letters on a Regicide Peace*

My sympathy is with the young man who was attacked by the left-wing Satanists. Whether his counterattack was in self-defense – the Marxists were throwing bricks – or whether the young man was launching a punitive strike against the liberals – they have been killing whites through their colored henchmen for over fifty years – the attack was completely justified. It is regrettable that he only killed one of the liberal protestors. And it is tragic that he will be prosecuted for murder, when he should be awarded a medal for courage under fire. As for the police officers? It is regrettable that they chose to serve the Satanic government of the United States of America instead of their own people. They are to blame for their own deaths, not the white nationalist protestors.

What do we make of the white “Christian” clergymen who vehemently denounced the white nationalist protestors? We should call them what they are – they are Judases, one and all. What are they defending? They are defending the incarnation of Satan within the heart of what was formerly Christian Europe. There are no words harsh enough to describe them. No atrocities committed against whites are ever condemned; they treat the perpetrators of the atrocities with “loving forgiveness.” But there cannot be and there must not be any mercy extended to the whites who try to defend themselves against the liberal/colored barbarian onslaught. “Your children, your wives, and your people all must be sacrificed to the great gods of color.” So say our Judeo-Pagan clergymen. Do such creatures really speak for Christ? No, they do not. They speak for Satan.

When the alternative right first emerged on the Internet, I read a number of their writings and was saddened by the content. I was saddened because they were not attacking Liberalism in the name of Christ, they were attacking Liberalism in the name of paganism, which placed them solidly within the confines of liberalism. They opposed the new-age liberals as Hitler opposed communism – they were the nationalist lefties vs. the universalist lefties. Their movement must turn toward Christ if it is to have any hope of surviving and thriving. There is no sustaining faith in a mere reaction to the insolent, hate-filled system of the liberals. We need to see the Cross of Christ over Europe once again, not the various banners of the white pagans.

I once followed a young man who had all sorts of Nazi and neo-pagan bumper stickers on his truck. When he pulled into the super-market parking lot, I got out of my car and approached him. In a non-confrontational manner I asked him about his beliefs. Not surprisingly he had no beliefs that dove-tailed with the antique Europeans. He hated liberals, he hated Jews, and he hated Christians. I endeavored to point out to him that Christianity was not compatible with liberalism or Judaism, but he was not to be ‘taken in.’ I felt like I was talking to the dwarfs from C.S. Lewis’s *The Last Battle*:

“That’s right,” said the other Dwarfs. “We’re on our own now. No more Aslan, no more Kings, no more silly stories about other worlds. The Dwarfs are for the Dwarfs.”

There you have it. When will this terrible separation between the neo-pagan and his Christian ancestors end? Never? Or will the alternative right convert at the last trump (no pun intended)? They, the alternative right, have some good instincts: they hate the mad-dog liberal branch of Liberalism, but they also hate our people, the men and women of Christian Europe. Maybe if we, the European Christians, stay faithful to our Lord and our people, some members of the alternative right might find their true home with the Christ of old Europe.

We have already, off this stage, established that there are no European conservatives; there are no Burkean conservatives who want to conserve the European people and their Christian civilization. The new conservatives are liberals. And their far-left cousins are the hard left, or if you prefer, the Marxists. The hard left have a tried and true battle plan that always defeats the milk-toast conservatives. Whenever they kill whites, they immediately blame the whites for bringing their own deaths upon themselves. “They were racist, therefore they deserved to die,” is the constant refrain of the hard left. Whenever, which is very seldom, the whites fight back and kill a colored heathen or a member of the Jacobin hard left, the Jacobins demand the heads of the white defenders, apologies from every “conservative” white, and more draconian laws designed to speed up the destruction of the white race. They always get what they demand, because the conservative whites are not conservative; they believe in the same liberal gods as the hard left. Their differences with the hard left are procedural, not religious.

If the conservatives were not of Liberaldom, if they were Christians opposed to the reign of Satan, they would not apologize to the liberals when a white man rises up against the liberal leviathan; they would tell the Jacobins that more violence was on the way and then act on their threat. That is what it will take for white people to halt the extermination process. The liberals preach, “By whatever means necessary.” The whites’ response must be, “By whatever means necessary, within the boundaries of Christian chivalry. And the defense of one’s kith and kin is within those boundaries.” (1)

The recent protests in Charlottesville highlighted the futility of white protest. When you protest, you must ask yourself to whom you are protesting. Are the powers that be likely to be receptive to your protest or are they going to use the protest to identify their enemies and take action against them? You know, or at least you should know by now, that liberal governments view any protest against their Jacobin governments as opportunities to crush their enemies. They videotape the protests and then either jail the protestors or find means to deprive them of their livelihood. (2) Does this mean that whites should give up? No, it means whites should change tactics. They should eschew public non-violent protests in preference for quiet, secretive, punitive raids. Peaceful protests are part of the democratic process. When the democratic process has become a totalitarian process, you can’t accomplish anything by protests. Witness the failure of the pro-life movement.

Whites will not meet the Jacobin’s violence with a violence of their own, because they have allowed the hard left to set the terms of engagement. These are the terms: “You, the white man, must never preach or practice violence against the Jacobin elite, because we are the true liberals, we are the arbiters of what is right and what is wrong.” And even when the conservatives accept those terms — actually it is because the conservatives accept those terms — the hard left continues to destroy them by any means necessary.

What we are witnessing in this assault, which well may be the final assault of the hard left against the white race, is the death of classical liberalism. The Tucker Carlsons and the Paul Joseph Watsons completely refute the hard left’s stances on every issue under the sun. But that does not make any difference to the lefties. They are not moved by reason. What will move them? Nothing. The young man with the truck is on the right track. The Jacobins will not be swayed by appeals to reason or appeals to charity. It should be done unto them as they are doing unto the white race.

Dostoyevsky’s *Underground Man* knew the deficiency of classical liberalism. ‘Suppose you build your perfect world in a glass palace and I come along and smash it just because I want to smash it?’ Classical liberalism presupposes that we are all reasonable people who can sit around and reason out our problems. The classical liberal gives a nod to Christianity as a religion, but he downplays the ‘irrational’ message at the heart of Christianity. He, like the medieval scholastic who spawned rationalism, does not think reason is tainted with original sin. How could it be, when it can do such wonderful things? We need to turn to the Gospels, to St. Paul, Shakespeare, Dostoyevsky, and the European fairy tales as an antidote to classical liberalism. It is there that we find depth. We find God, the devil, and “unaccommodated man” struggling against all the forces of hell, armed only with his vision of the Man of Sorrows to sustain him.

In most of the 20th century dystopian novels (Kipling’s story and Orwell’s novels excepted), the authors depict right-wing totalitarian governments that enslave mankind. But it was Kipling and Orwell who got it right. There has never, in the history of European man, been a crueller, all-encompassing, totalitarian control of mankind than the Jacobin’s control of the European people. Through the use of vast technological communication networks such as Google, the left has built a monopoly on thought. They exercise a mind-control more powerful than anything conceived by the fiction writers. With machine-like precision, the mills of Jacobin liberalism grind human souls into nothingness, and there seems to be no force on earth that can stop the great liberal machine.

Rapunzel’s tears restored her lover’s sight. Christ’s divine charity restored the sight of fallen man. It is in humanity, in the charity that is contained in the blood of our Savior and the compassionate tears of our loved ones, that we will find the strength to destroy the great liberal machine that bestrides the world like a mechanical Colossus of Rhodes. There is indeed providence in the fall of a sparrow. We don’t know how such things can be, but we know, through the faith that stems from love, that the great liberal world, the world of the Google monster, feminist harpies, colored heathens, and Jacobin diabolists will fall. It will fall when we believe what St. Paul believed — that “the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of men.”

What is the foolishness of God? Those men on the Titanic who went to their deaths singing “Nearer My God to Thee” knew what the foolishness of God was. It was and is the Cross of Christ. It is only possible to believeth all things and hopeth all things if you possess the charity of honor that our European ancestors believed to be the all-in-all of existence. Burke wielded the sword of charity against the French Jacobins, and we should wield that same sword against the modern Jacobins. The moral beauty of Jesus Christ’s quixotic death on the cross inspired our European ancestors to love and hate with all their heart. They loved Christ and hated the devil. When we do likewise, forsaking the tepid waters of classical

liberalism for the tempest-tossed waters of passion, a passion connected to His passion, we will not be borne down by the tidal wave of liberalism. We will rise again as a people, just as Christ rose again on the third day. +

---

(1) The liberals have a great advantage over the Christian Europeans in that their master, who is Satan, proscribes no boundaries. He has no honor, and he encourages his subjects to spit on all honor codes that stem from Christian Europe. Thus the liberal will fight without honor and extend no mercy to his white victims. The Christian European must fight with that charity of honor, which is a practical disadvantage. But that disadvantage is offset by the passionate intensity that is gained by an adherence to His code of honor.

(2) Many men have lost their jobs as a result of their participation in the Charlottesville protests. No protestor from the left lost his or her job. Only the white protestors lost their jobs. This is the same thing that happens in France, Germany, Britain, and every other European nation when whites try to seek redemption from the devil.

---

### **The European Heart Renewed - August 12, 2017**

O here, where late our little city stood,  
And now this desolation darkens us,  
Friends, with a rapid hand and heart renewed,  
Building, once more uprear we root and tower,  
And make ourselves a realm.

-George Francis Savage-Armstrong

---

The essential thing that Burke wanted his countrymen and all of Europe to understand about the French Revolution was that it was something entirely different than a European palace revolution. It was not a replacement of one Christian king for another Christian king, it was the enthronement of a new religion, a satanic religion, in what had once been a Christian nation. The forces of irreligion were always present in every European nation, but they were not embodied in an organized government until the French Revolution. Robespierre's death did not halt the Jacobin revolution; it spread throughout Europe, and eventually every nation of Europe adopted the anti-Christian system of government of the French Jacobins. Until we do what the Europeans of Burke's day failed to do – kill the Jacobin dragon – we will continue to live in the hell of religious and racial diversity.

Jacobinism is paganism writ large. Through the use of our natural reason we come to a belief in nature and nature's god. The Israelites were Jacobins before the Jacobins when they returned to Baal while Moses went up to the mountain to speak with God. Every revolt against the living God is a return to paganism. Does man have a stronger inclination to rebel against God than to seek God? It certainly seems so. But we shouldn't go with the Puritans who claimed that a sinful defiance of God is the all in all of man. There is the Europeans' struggle as a people. Even if we must concede that their history is largely like the history of the Hebrew people, a history of a flight from God, we must, if we are seeking the truth, see that there was a genuine yearning for the living God, for Jesus Christ, in the hearts of the European people. We cannot sit in our study with our scholarly tomes and say there can never be such a thing as a Christian people while we have proof to the contrary staring us in the face when we look at the European people and take them for all in all.

Ironically it was the missionary efforts toward the non-white people of the world that ushered in the demise of Christian Europe. The European missionaries set out to Christianize the colored races, but the colored races ended up paganizing the white race. The negroization and the Islamization of the un-United States of America and Europe is the result of the implantation of the natural, rational religion of the Jacobins through the medium of the natural colored races. When the missionaries came to evangelize the coloreds, they found that the colored people had gods, they were not atheists. So they sought to emphasize the similarities between Christianity and the heathen faiths, thus blurring distinction between the religion of Jesus Christ and the religion of Satan. God did not say, "Do not be an atheist," He said, "Thou shall have no other gods before me." Solomon didn't ruin the Israelites because he denounced God, he ruined the Israelites because he built temples to the heathen gods as well as the one true God. So it was with the European missionaries. They became the European conduits to paganism, because they failed to keep the distinctiveness of the religion that made the Suffering Servant its cornerstone before their eyes. They lost the vision of Christ in the mire of the natural religions. Today we have been entirely engulfed by the heathen faiths, and no one from the ranks of the Christian clergy will speak out against them, because to do so would indicate that the anti-heathen was a racist and therefore damned. "For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." Once the "Christian" clergy made racial diversity their top priority, they were consumed by the liberal leviathan. If your message is a mere echo of liberalism, why do you need to exist at all? The churches are now just an 'Amen chorus' for the rulers of Liberaldom. "Diversity is Godly, the colored masses are the people," the liberals proclaim. "Amen," respond the church men.



The liberals have a symbiotic relationship with the colored heathens. They, the liberals, need the colored heathens in order to return to paganism. Why can't they make that transition on their own? They must have conduits to paganism because when a European rejects Christ, he has placed himself into a state of non-being. He has forsaken his God, and now he is alone in the universe. Twentieth century art, when it is not a paean to the gods of color, is an ode to nothingness. That is the key. An apostate European must cling to some God to keep him from the void, so he goes whoring after the heathen gods of color. Do those gods sustain him? The drug and alcohol-related deaths and the increasing suicide rate among white people indicates that the gods of diversity cannot sustain the European people. But still, they must have gods, so they will cling to them to the last gasp.

Do the colored heathens need white liberals? They might say they do not need white people, but they do need them. They need them as a predatory animal needs his prey. If there were no white people, upon whom would the colored heathen prey? Each other? Certainly, but there is not much to prey upon in the black and brown civilizations. Once the whites have done their jobs, once they have self-destructed, what will become of the colored heathens? They will have no worshipful whites to sustain them, and they will prey upon each other until they all perish.

The conservatives in church and state have not been able to conserve Christian Europe, because they failed to take into account the human factor. Which is truly astonishing and unforgivable considering that they claimed, at least intellectually, to believe in a God who became man. But if you view man as intellect alone, you will not know man nor will you know the God-Man. Man is deeper than his intellect. He has a heart that is capable, when it is stirred, of seeing more than mere reason can comprehend. T. S. Eliot, in his book on Christian culture makes a rational case for the necessity of a religiously based culture. But his rational case is worthless without that which must precede reason – faith in Jesus Christ. And how does one obtain faith? St. Paul tells us that “faith worketh by love.” And that brings us back to our mysterious human relationships, to our ties to our kith and kin. It is now a given in Churchianity that blood ties are antithetical to faith. That is a lie, a lie that is used to cover up the Europeans' flight from God. Chateaubriand is right: man is much more tainted with the sins of the intellect than with sins stemming from the heart. The intellectual man seeks to avoid the passionate God of love, because passion is painful. And the way to avoid the passionate God is to avoid all things human – to avoid all ties to your family and your race. Thus white pietas, which leads to the love of the European Christ, is regarded as sinful, and the worship of the colored heathen and the hatred of the white race becomes the creed of the new fusionist Christian of the 21st century.

In the best of his mystery novels, *The House of the Arrow*, A. E. W. Mason's protagonist, the detective Hanaud, asks who will speak for the woman who has been murdered. Who cares enough about her to hunt down the murderer? The answer is that he, Hanaud, cares, and he will hunt down the murderer:

“But—you will pardon me—I am not thinking of you”—and there was so much quietude and gravity in the detective's voice that his words, harsh though they were, carried with them no offense. “No, I am thinking of a woman more than double the age of either of you, whose unhappy life came to an end here on the night of the 27th of April. I am remembering two photographs which you, Mademoiselle Harlowe, showed me this morning—I am moved by them. Yes, that is the truth.”

He closed his eyes as if he saw those two portraits with their dreadful contrast impressed upon his eyelids. “I am her advocate,” he cried aloud in a stirring voice. “The tragic woman, I stand for her! If she was done to death, I mean to know and I mean to punish!”

Our people have been murdered and no one cares about avenging their murder, because church and state have decreed that they were not murdered, they were legally executed for crimes against the religion of nature. They were racists, sexists, and non-intellectual Christians, which meant that they were against the fusionist Christianity of the intellectual Christians. But no matter what the powers of this world say against them, I do not see criminals when I look at the antique Europeans. I see men and women to whom I owe a debt that can never be repaid. They loved much, and as a result they were bound to Him in faith. “Bear but a touch of my hand, there,” pointing to his heart, says the Ghost of Christmas Past. And then Scrooge is able to see the past in a new light, in the light of Christ. When we touch their hearts, we touch, through them, the heart of the living God. We should never leave them, we should never seek to make peace with their murderers. Who will stand for them? I will. If you stand with the antique Europeans against the principalities and powers of Liberalism, you will be condemned as they were condemned. In that condemnation we hear the same voices that condemned our Lord. Can't we, through our fidelity to Christian Europe, say, “Yes, I know that Man!” +

---

## **The Horror and Blasphemy of Liberalism - August 5, 2017**

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. – Luke 13: 34-35

---

Recently a friend asked me what I thought of the Adamite theory, which, according to my friend, is the theory that it is only white people who are direct descendants of Adam. The rest of mankind are non-Adamites, who are... I'm not quite clear who they are. And the reason I'm not clear on that point is because I never could plow my way through the various books on the subject. But I bring up the Adamite subject to come to the main point of conflict between a European Christian and the modern liberals, both secular and clerical: To me, as a European Christian, it seems obvious that there has only been one Christian people and that is the European people. There is such a difference between the people of old Europe and the people of the non-white cultures that it lends credence to the Adamite theorists. But it is not necessary to accept that theory in order to acknowledge that the living God was at the center of non-diverse, white Europe, and He was not at the center of colored heathendom nor is He at the center of modern Liberalism.

Our Lord says, in St. John, chapter 15, verse 26, "But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the father, even the spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me." Why are the intellectual Christians who worship the negro not interested in the truth? Have they rejected the Comforter? It seems that they have. And without the Holy Ghost how can we know Christ? We must not rely on our abstract reason to guide us through life rather than the Holy Ghost. Our reason will always lead us away from the truth and toward the father of all lies. Look what has happened to European people once they made abstract reason their father, science their Holy Ghost, and the negro their Son of God. What then was my response to the question about the Adamites? I told my friend that all I know is that I see the face of Jesus Christ in old Europe. I do not see His face in modern Europe nor in the people of color at any time in their histories.

There is no mercy, no charity, no love, and no honor in the modern world, because the European intelligentsia in church and state persist in deifying the heathens of color while demonizing the antique Europeans. I don't need to believe that the European people are the only descendants of Adam or the true Hebrews to know that they are the Christ-bearing people. I know they are the Christ-bearing people, because of the moral beauty of the culture they created in the name of Christ the Lord. Neither historical research, church documents, nor the Bible itself will convince the willfully blind, those who reject the spirit of truth, that the European Christ is the living God. Maybe that is why our Lord said that blasphemy against the Holy Ghost would not be forgiven. If we forsake the comforter we have forsaken Christ.

The creation of Christian Europe was something that St. Augustine said could never happen. There was the city of God, which was the organized church, and there was the city of man, which was the European people. In St. Augustine's mind, the people, those who believed in Christ, could never be the true church. But he was wrong. The organization, the system, what Augustine called the City of God, can never be the true Church. Tennyson got it right:

Our little systems have their day;  
They have their day and cease to be;  
They are but broken lights of thee,  
And thou, O Lord, art more than they.

Is He more than they? Is He more than the organized Christian Jewry of the Roman Catholic Church and its auxiliary Protestant branches? Yes, He is more than they. The Christian churches have gone over to the pagan faiths – they have made Islam and negro worship part of the Christian faith. And by doing so they have made it clear that they have sided with the enemy of mankind against Christ's church, which consists of all those who have circumcised their hearts so that they can "receive Him still." The 20th century existentialists such as Camus, Sartre, and Beckett proclaimed that, "God is dead." But it was not the living God who died, it was a man-made system that died. The computer print-out God who was the product of the computations of great minds – that god died. But the Son of God? He still lives and He shall still be living after the new church of Islam and the negro has had its day. It only remains to be seen whether there will be any hearts of flesh left on earth, hearts that still adhere to His word. "When the Son of Man returns will He find faith on earth?"

It doesn't appear that Christ will find faith on earth when He returns, but the age of prophecy is over; we do not know with any certainty that the European people will remain adamantly opposed to the Light of the World. We do know that the modern Europeans have left Christian Europe behind. The liberals show their hatred of Christ by their hatred of all things stemming from old Europe, and the grazers show their indifference to Christ by their complete indifference to incarnate Europe. The Europeans' descent into hell has been a terrible thing to witness. And they seem determined to continue their descent until they reach the bottom-most level where they will embrace the devil in all his satanic glory. Will they feel any revulsion? No, I don't think a feminist or a mad-dog liberal who takes such pleasure in our modern hell on earth can feel uncomfortable with the devil. Such individuals will have gotten what they set out to find, a world of darkness, devoid of light. And the grazers? Will their spiritually dead nerve endings suddenly revive at the sight of the devil? Will they cry out to the God of Mercy whom they ignored during their lives? I don't know, but I do know that He will extend mercy to anyone who calls on Him by name. But can a man call on Him by name if He has rejected the Holy Ghost?

It is unfortunate that Christian mysticism has become a specialized study of Gnosticized Europeans who bid us look to a seven-point plan that we use to reach a higher level of mystical contemplation. Christian mysticism should not imitate the contemplative systems of the Asians. True Christian mysticism is unique, it is the better way that St. Paul describes in 1 Corinthians 13. It is charity, the charity that is at the center of old Europe, which inspired our greatest poets, artists, and musicians, and it is what our people saw, even if they only saw it through a glass darkly, as the mystical heart of existence. The European people rejected the esoteric systems of the pagans for the divine charity of Jesus Christ. His charity was greater than the magic of paganism.

I believe it was Blake who said that if mankind did not have the religion of Jesus Christ, they would have the religion of the devil. The modern European people are not unbelievers; they believe in the gods of Liberalism. And belief in those gods precludes a belief in the God whose divine charity redeemed the world. We can't get to Him by way of any system conceived by man. In point of fact, all our systems, which have their day, take us to hell. But we can get to Him through charity, the charity that is born and nurtured at our racial hearth fire.

Diversity is spiritual death, it destroys the image of God in man. The push toward diversity, which means the destruction of the white race, is the liberals' religion. They must join, body and soul, with the colored races in order to eradicate the living God from the face of the earth. The mask is off. If the European people had not been morally anesthetized, they would not be able to look on modern Europe without a horror too deep for words. Conrad's Kurtz said, "The Horror, the Horror." What Kurtz saw was nothing compared to the Horror of modern Liberalism, for modern liberalism is the continual reenactment of the crucifixion of Christ. (1) Everything stemming from Christian Europe is demonized, and every white European, even if they denounce Christ and most particularly if they do not denounce Christ, is crucified. That is a horror beyond horror, because it is the incarnation of Satan over the ruins of Christian Europe.

What is to be done then? Our Lord tells us to, "seek and ye shall find." But what should we seek? Should we seek the wisdom that comes from special revelations of the blessed mother? Should we seek knowledge of the end times by parsing the Book of Revelation and merging Christianity with Judaism? Or should we seek the wisdom of liberalism and blend Christ with Islam and the negro? Almighty God, forbid it! There is a magic talisman, but it is not esoteric wisdom. It is to be found in charity. The men with hearts of flesh will find the one true God at their racial hearth fire where that charity of honor is born and nurtured. All other ways to God end in ruin. Look at the 'conservative' Joe Scarborough, who started his political career as an intellectual conservative, a man who wanted to conserve systems rather than his people. He ended up a mad-dog liberal who divorced his lawful wife in order to marry a feminist from hell. And then there is Francis Schaeffer. He was a great intellectual Christian, but he refused to defend the Christ of the European hearth fire, thus opening the way for a diverse God who gave his blessing to modernity. Schaeffer's son Franky went from intellectual Christianity to mad-dog liberalism. And from that Olympian height he apologized to the feminist Rachel Maddow for the sins of his father. Every denial of the essential truth that was at the center of old Europe – that Christ entered into the heart and soul of the European people – is an assault on His reign of charity in the name of the evil one. So long as we are too worldly wise and too fearful of the racist label to ask Christ, the Christ of old Europe, to abide with us by our racial hearth fire, we will continue to be ruled by liberals and colored heathens who have no mercy. The former have renounced the God of mercy and the latter never knew Him. +

---

(1) Kurtz looked into his soul and saw the evil that he, as a man, was capable of. But Marlow, Conrad's alter ego, said that it was something to have judged. Kurtz was a moral pariah, but he could still see the evil within his soul and call it evil. The liberal looks into his satanic soul and sees sanctity. He is incapable of recognizing evil as evil. And that is a descent into the deepest pit of hell. The liberals have done it! They have become like unto Satan himself. The horror, the horror.

---

## **The Hatred of the World - July 29, 2017**

If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning. – John 15: 18-27

---

There was nothing unusual about the recent incident in Florida where a group of black youths stood by laughing as a black man drowned, screaming for help. Those black youths were not aberrations, some hideous offshoot of the sacred black race. No, indeed, those blacks were a microcosm of the entire black race. The decent black, the Uncle Remus black, is the aberration. The black youths' cruelty is indicative of the cruelty of all the colored races. They are devoid of mercy. And those people, the people devoid of mercy, are the people that the liberals bid us worship and pay homage to by handing our nations over to them. The colored problem and the Moslem problem are from the same root. Islam, Hinduism, and the other pagan unfaiths are merely organized, merciless, colored heathenism. When liberals join their hearts with the colored heathens and put their science, their police, their military, their government, their doctors, and their educational institutions at the service of the colored heathen, they join the people who have no mercy. And they have joined the people who have not mercy because they hate Jesus Christ. Let us keep that fact always before our eyes. While there are many varied groups within Liberalism, many of which are opposed to each other, the one unifying passion of all the contending groups is their hatred of Jesus Christ. If you fail to understand that, you will be forever at the mercy of the liberals who manage to survive and thrive because of the spiritual blindness of the white grazers.

Our Lord said that we would be hated by the world and bid us take comfort in the fact that the world "hated me before it hated you." What kind of comfort is that? Who wants to be hated by the world? Our European ancestors were not afraid to be hated by the world. If you tell me that it was easy for them to be Christians because they were in the majority I would disagree. Whites have always been a minority vis-à-vis the world. And even within European nations the white Christians were in the minority at first. They, the whites who bent their knees to Christ, held the pagan world at bay because they loved Christ and hated the devil. Our modern intellectual Christians tell us that we must not antagonize the liberals by defending the indefensible, which is the antique Europeans. But why are they indefensible? Because they were racist and sexist? Yes, that is what it usually comes down to. A people who loved their own and protected their own, while evangelizing the lesser breeds who never knew charity or mercy nor never knew that women were anything more than chattel until they came into contact with white Europeans, were condemned for being racist and sexist.

Secular liberals and intellectual, utopian Christians all spoke with one voice against the European people because of their racism and sexism. The secular liberals attack the antique Europeans because they hate Christ, and the intellectual Christians permit and often join in the attacks because they fear the censure of the world. But what good is a faith if it is not a fighting faith? If you claim you stand with Christ and against liberalism how can you stand by and do nothing while the liberals use the negro and the liberated woman as battering rams to destroy His reign of charity?

Every criticism of liberalism by Christians and conservatives is always prefaced with the obligatory worship of the black race: "I'm against abortion because it hurts blacks," "I'm against Moslem terrorism, but I am not racist." Well, if you are not racist, if you do not have white pietas, you are either a liberal or a coward who wants the comforts of the Christian faith without the cross. We are told by our Savior that we must love Him with all our heart, mind, and soul. How can we love Him if we flee from the channels of grace that connect us to Him? He comes to us through His divine humanity, hence we can only know Him through our humanity. A religion based on the hatred of Christ and His people, which is the religion of the liberals and the colored heathens, and a religion based on a denial of the natural ties to Him through our kith and kin, which is the religion of the intellectual Christians, are both cold, merciless faiths emanating from the cold, malevolent intellect of the devil.

Let me place Arnold Lunn, the author of *Flight from Reason*, and Francis Schaeffer, the author of *The God Who Is There*, against St. Paul, Shakespeare, and Dostoyevsky in order to understand the white man's failure to fight back against negro-worshipping Liberalism. Lunn, in his book *Flight from Reason*, laments the fact that Christians allowed the secular liberals to claim that they were the rationalists. Lunn asserts that it is the Christians who are the true rationalists, and then he makes the rational case for Christianity based on St. Thomas Aquinas's writings. Schaeffer makes a similar point in his book *The God Who Is There*. He doesn't base his rational apologetics on St. Thomas Aquinas, but he does make the case for the rationality of Christianity over the irrationality of the secular philosophers. Schaeffer places Kierkegaard with the secular existentialists, because Kierkegaard asserts the irrationality of Christianity, but then makes his famous leap of faith into the hands of the Christian God. While granting that Kierkegaard's leap exaggerates the gap between faith and reason, I still would assert that Lunn and Schaeffer have missed something. Where they go wrong, in my opinion, is that they equate analytical reason with thought. Is thought just in the mind or does it come from the visionary organ of the heart? Schaeffer claims to believe in the inerrancy of scripture, yet he fails to take into account St. Paul's insistence that it is through the heart that we come to know God. And if we look at the history of the European people, we see that St. Paul was right. When we merely comprehend God through the mind's eye instead of seeing Him in and through the heart's eye, we lose God and gain a heresy. The Lunn and Schaeffer apologetics cut the Europeans off from their racial hearth fire and as a result the Christian God becomes an airy nothing, who has to make way for the natural savage, the negro. (1)

Shakespeare's Theseus in *A Midsummer Night's Dream* is unsettled by the lovers' midsummer night vision, which lies somewhere between reason and unreason:

I never may believe  
These antique fables, nor these fairy toys.  
Lovers and madmen have such seething brains,  
Such shaping fantasies, that apprehend  
More than cool reason ever comprehends.  
The lunatic, the lover, and the poet  
Are of imagination all compact:  
One sees more devils than vast hell can hold;  
That is the madman: the lover, all as frantic,  
Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt:  
The poet's eye, in a fine frenzy rolling,  
Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven;  
And as imagination bodies forth  
The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen  
Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing  
A local habitation and a name.  
Such tricks hath strong imagination,  
That, if it would but apprehend some joy,  
It comprehends some bringer of that joy;  
Or in the night, imagining some fear,  
How easy is a bush supposed a bear?

But Hippolyta observes that the lovers have seen something profound in their midsummer night's vision:

But all the story of the night told over,  
And all their minds transfigur'd so together,  
More witnesseth than fancy's images,  
And grows to something of great constancy;  
But, howsoever, strange and admirable.

And then Dostoyevsky tells us in his novel *The Possessed* that Stavrogin was rational to the end:

The citizen of the canton of Uri was hanging there behind the door. On the table lay a piece of paper with the words in pencil: "No one is to blame, I did it myself." Beside it on the table lay a hammer, a piece of soap, and a large nail—obviously an extra one in case of need. The strong silk cord upon which Nikolay Vsyevolodovitch had hanged himself had evidently been chosen and prepared beforehand and was thickly smeared with soap. Everything proved that there had been premeditation and consciousness up to the last moment.

At the inquest our doctors absolutely and emphatically rejected all idea of insanity.

And later in *The Brothers Karamazov*, Dostoyevsky tells us how his hero, Alyosha, the third dumb brother, rejects the rationalism of Stavrogin and Ivan. He rejects it because his heart is circumcised as St. Paul's heart was circumcised:

All this made Alyosha's heart bleed and obviously, as I mentioned before, what hurt him most was that the one he had loved more than anybody in the world now stood "dishonored" and "disgraced." Even if this rebellion on the part of this young man was callow and unreasonable, I repeat for the third time (and I admit that I, too, am perhaps being unreasonable) that I am very pleased to find that the young man did not turn out to be too reasonable at this juncture, for everyone, unless he is very stupid, acquires sufficient reason in time, but if a young heart shows a lack of love at such a critical moment, when will it know love?

Leaving aside the question of the liberals' missing link, which they have never found and never will find, what is the missing link between Kierkegaard's leap of faith and the Lunn-Schaeffer Christian rationalism? St. Paul, the man with the circumcised heart, provides the missing link in Corinthians 1: 13. Without charity, which is beyond reason, we are lost. One could place more credence in Schaeffer's rational Christianity if the end result of his philosophizing wasn't the denial of the European hearth fire. If we don't have a racial home, how will we learn to give and receive the charity which begins at home and perishes without one?

The Europeans won't fight for their survival as a people, because they have been left homeless by their Christian leaders. You can't march against the liberals and the colored heathens under the banner of intellectual Christianity. You can't 'Socratic dialogue' the devil and his minions to death, unless you plan on boring them to death. But even then you won't have any followers to take advantage of the drowsiness of your enemies, because they will all be sleeping the sleep of the walking dead – "He did not die, but nothing of life remained."

Lunn and Schaeffer believed themselves to be fighting against the liberals by criticizing the irrationality of the liberals, but isn't that a trick of the devil? By entering into the world of the Socratic dialogue, haven't you chosen to defeat the devil with the devil's own weapon – detached, analytical reason? So much of Kierkegaard's work is inaccessible to me; I don't understand what he is saying. If he means, when he says that we must make a leap of faith, that there is a better way to

know God than through abstract reason, I would agree with him. But if he means we cannot know God at all, because of the limitations of reason, then I disagree with him. We can know God. We do make a leap of faith, but that leap of faith is grounded in His promise that He will not allow us to fall. Schaeffer and the rational Christians fail to allow a place for the human heart in their equations. Philosophy, even if it is called Christian theology, will always leave us in the dark and homeless. Why is Lear left homeless? Because he banishes the daughter closest to his heart when she cannot “heave her heart” into an abstract expression of filial devotion that will please Lear, who sees with his abstract mind and not with his heart. The tragic events that result from Lear’s philosophic abstraction of his heart from his head mirrors the tragedy of Christian Europe. In the name of a mind-forged abstract God, the European intelligentsia issued divorce papers to the living God and His people. And the result of that divorce is all around us. Moslems rule Europe, the negroes rule America through their liberal devotees; and feminist harpies, the most completely demonic creatures on the face of the earth, hover over the corpse of Christian Europe like vultures.

The Socratic dialogue of the Christian theologians is the bridge between Christian Europe and hell. So long as the Europeans clung to their God in and through the people of their own racial hearth fire, they held their own against the hatred of the world. But as soon as that bridge went up, as soon as the great minds of Christendom dialogued with the devil instead of combating the devil, what was once Christian Europe became the devil’s Europe, and the people of God, the Christ-bearing people, became, in the case of the liberals, one with Satan, and in the case of the grazers, they became helpless in the face of the liberal and colored barbarian onslaught. The end of all this is that the liberals and the non-white races hate the white race with all their heart, mind, and soul. And the white man has no defense against the malevolent hatred of the liberals and the lesser breeds that have no mercy, because he has lost that intimacy with God that gives a man the faith and fortitude to face the terror by night and the arrow that flieth by day. How could it be otherwise when we have abandoned our racial hearth fire, our connecting link to the Man of Sorrows? Like a coward on the battlefield the modern Europeans have fled from God and man. Everyone wants the casual friend who will go to dinner and sporting events with them and give them financial support. But who seeks a friend who is ‘the heart of my heart?’ That type of intimacy only comes to those who live within His reign of charity. Depth speaks to depth, but if the Europeans accept the liberals’ reign of superficiality, they will never find intimacy with God or with any of their own people. That is a tragedy that surpasses Oedipus’s tragic blight – To live in the superficial slime of hell without any knowledge of His world, a world in which the one true God loves His own with a love that passeth the understanding of reason, and a world in which the God-Man inspires His people to love with a passion and a depth that passeth the understanding of reason. The world will continue to hate the European people whether they believe in Christ or not. They can’t escape their destiny as the Christ-bearing people. But is it really so terrible to be hated for His name’s sake? Those who love and hate with all their hearts will endure to the end and be saved. The rest will wallow in the slime of liberalism until they are consumed by it. +

---

(1) Every time I see a T.V. evangelist doing ‘good works’ he is ‘helping’ black children in Africa. Every time I see a preacher on television the cameras focus on the blacks in the congregation. And every organized church competes with the other organized churches to make their congregations more ‘diverse.’ The end result of intellectual Christianity, which lacks the poetic depth of European Christianity, is the paganization of the Christian faith. That paganization leads to the worship of the natural black savage, which is the religion of the modern, faithless, homeless Europeans.

---

### **While Memory Holds a Seat - July 22, 2017**

Seems, madam! Nay, it is; I know not “seems.”  
‘Tis not alone my inky cloak, good mother,  
Nor customary suits of solemn black,  
Nor windy suspiration of forc’d breath,  
No, nor the fruitful river in the eye,  
Nor the dejected ‘havior of the visage,  
Together with all forms, moods, shows of grief,  
That can denote me truly. These, indeed, seem,  
For they are actions that a man might play;  
But I have that within which passeth show,  
These but the trappings and the suits of woe.

-Hamlet the Dane

---

I got an unpleasant jolt from the past recently when I heard the song “Woodstock” by Joni Mitchell blaring throughout the supermarket where I was shopping. The song was included in my college poetry anthology right next to Andrew Marvell and Robert Frost, and you couldn’t go down the halls of the dormitory without hearing someone playing the song. Musically the song works. Joni Mitchell had a nice voice and her music does not jar your senses like so many of the rock

songs. But nevertheless the song is offensive, because the song is so openly anti-Christian. Through the medium of Miss Mitchell's melodious voice, we are invited into the brave new world of liberalism, a world without the Christ of Europe. If you never heard Mitchell's anthem, you are lucky, but it is sometimes necessary to know the poetic of the enemy –

I came upon a child of God  
He was walking along the road  
And I asked him, where are you going  
And this he told me  
I'm going on down to Yasgur's farm  
I'm going to join in a rock 'n' roll band  
I'm going to camp out on the land  
I'm try an' get my soul free  
We are stardust  
We are golden  
And we've got to get ourselves  
Back to the garden

Then can I walk beside you  
I have come here to lose the smog  
And I feel to be a cog in something turning  
Well maybe it is just the time of year  
Or maybe it's the time of man  
I don't know who I am  
But life is for learning  
We are stardust  
We are golden  
And we've got to get ourselves  
Back to the garden

By the time we got to Woodstock  
We were half a million strong  
And everywhere there was song and celebration  
And I dreamed I saw the bombers  
Riding shotgun in the sky  
And they were turning into butterflies  
Above our nation  
We are stardust  
We are golden  
And we've got to get ourselves  
Back to the garden

Mitchell, like so many of the sixties radicals, thought of herself as a rebel from the mainstream culture of war mongering, sexually repressed, unnatural, middle class whites. But she and her ilk were not rebels. They differed in style, not in substance, from their liberal parents. They, like their parents, had a different view of nature than the Europeans of pre-20th century Europe. Mitchell's nature is a closed system; it is not the mirror of another transcendent world, it is the whole world. No matter that the free love, back-to-nature hippies denounced science, they still were and are part of the new scientific world in which nature is just biological nature. That new-old view of nature returned the European people to paganism. The 'garden' that Mitchell wants to go back to is a natural world, free from the redemptive grace of Jesus Christ. Why do children of nature need redemption? Are they not without sin? Of course, as the scientific worldview replaced the Christian worldview, the new morality was developed, and what was implicit, that whites were unnatural and therefore damned, became explicit. The conservatives, even social conservatives such as Weaver and Kirk, were unable to offer their people the leadership they needed to fight liberalism, because they were unwillingly (1) to link conservatism to the defense of the European people, and (2) to invoke the second person of the Christian trinity, Jesus Christ, in the war against the new natural religion of the liberals.

Why were men such as Burke and Thomas Hughes able to invoke Christ and defend their own race while the 20th century conservatives were not? I think it is the 'pride of intellect' temptation. Very intelligent men often become moral idiots; they betray themselves and others in deepest consequence, because they think they can storm heaven with reason alone. While making a theological affirmation of God, they proceed to quote Aristotle and Plato ad nauseam in order to defend what they vaguely call the Western tradition. This will not do. We are not Greeks – and by Greeks, I mean philosophers, not the Greek people – we are Hebrews. If we blend the living God with the universal mind of the great philosophers, we are heathens, even if we are very smart heathens. The smartest of the Christian heathens, St. Thomas Aquinas, was unable to figure out when ensoulment took place, thus paving the way for the theological justification for early abortions. The Bible makes it clear that ensoulment takes place at conception, but of course such an obvious conclusion is not acceptable to the philosophically trained mind. The ratiocinations of the philosophical conservatives always fail, because, as Hamlet

tells Horatio, “There are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in our philosophy.” There is an appalling lack of passion and depth of soul in the 20th century rational conservatives. We can’t rely on them, we can’t go to battle with their philosophies; we need a spiritual armor and a flaming sword that mere philosophical conservatism cannot provide.

We need to ask ourselves why after thousands of years there have been no philosophers that can rival Plato and Aristotle in intellectual acumen, while there have been thousands of poets who have surpassed, in depth of soul, the Greek poets. It is because man cannot know God through the mind alone. The philosophers of the Christian era did not think with their hearts, hence they could not say anything that Plato and Aristotle had not said already. But the poets whose hearts were united to a people that had hearts connected to His sacred heart revealed to us the divine element of the human soul.

This is why the race war is a religious war. The church men have made Christianity an intellectual system that can be passed on from one universal mind to another universal mind. And what do universal minds need with hearts? Why do minds need a local habitation, a people, to dwell in? They don’t. But is the mind-forged world of the 20th and 21st century philosophers the real world? I say it is not. The old natural world, the world in which our human nature was a reflection (imperfect certainly, but still a reflection) of God was the correct view of nature. The repentant Katherine in Shakespeare’s *Taming of the Shrew* eloquently defends the Christian view of nature when she links what is natural to the transcendent virtues of the human heart placed there by our Lord –

Why are our bodies soft and weak and smooth,  
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world,  
But that our soft conditions and our hearts  
Should well agree with our external parts?

The real human nature has been buried in biological nature in the modern world. The mad-dog liberals have presided over the burial while the philosophical minded conservatives have acquiesced to the burial. They made, as did Caiaphas, a practical decision. “Let the European people and their connection to the heart of Christ die so that the universal mind can live.” Because of that decision, we have “conservative” authors such as Peter Kreeft recommending (in *Ecumenical Jihad*) the blending of Judaism, Islam, and Christianity. Because of that decision, there are no leaders in the Western world who will defend the European people against the colored barbarians and the Moslem infidels. Universal minds do not need a people, nor do they need anything more than a generic God. The God of St. Paul, the Christ celebrated in Handel’s *Messiah*, has disappeared from the face of the earth because of the satanic hatred of the Jacobin liberals and the Thomistic Buddhism of the conservative liberals.

The conservatives in church and state did not veer from the truth because they defended the old forms and rituals against the new forms and rituals. They went astray because they saw the forms and rituals as ends in themselves. They lost the heart of their forms and rituals. The liberals have replaced the old forms and rituals, which were merely outer crusts without a center, with their own forms and rituals. At the heart of the new throne and altar system of the liberals is the negro and the auxiliary gods of color, because Satan knows that mankind must have gods. As the Israelites returned to Baal when Moses went up to the mountain, so have the European Hebrews returned to nature and nature’s God, the natural black savage.

The liberals possess a poetic; they are of the devil, so they use the colored races as shock troops against the white, Christ-bearing race. The philosophical-minded conservatives do not possess a poetic. And without a poetic they are unable to combat the wickedness and snares of the devil. You cannot dialog with the demonically possessed. And the conservatives must dialogue, because they believe that reason is their salvation. So the conservatives remain in the first circle of hell endlessly discussing how to formulate a rational argument against their liberal brethren. The “conservative” pundit William Buckley had a show called *Firing Line* in which he would debate liberals. From my perspective his guests were from the devil, but Buckley considered many of them his friends and entertained them at his house. Is that the proper response to the devil and his minions? Was Christ merely being whimsical when he said that the tares, the bad seeds, were the “children of the wicked one”? Is the Socratic dialogue the essence of the West, or is Burke’s charity of honor the essence of the West? Men who believe in the charity of honor do not dialogue with the children of the wicked one.

In his poem, “The Second Coming” (1920), William Butler Yeats says that

Surely some revelation is at hand;  
Surely the Second Coming is at hand.

But Yeats is not looking to the Second Coming of Christ, he is looking for a new god –

The darkness drops again; but now I know  
That twenty centuries of stony sleep



Were vexed to nightmare by a rocking cradle,  
And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,  
Slouches towards Bethlehem to be born?

Who is the rough beast that was within the womb of Europe? He is the natural savage, the end product of the new scientific view of nature, which is nothing more than the old paganism in a different form.

Yeats compared Zeus' seduction of Leda and the subsequent birth of Helen of Troy as the annunciation that founded Greece (see "A Vision" and "Leda and the Swan"). He found no poetry in Christianity, so he sought to return to the pagan Greeks. But the European people rejected Yeats' poetic for their own blend of pagan, scientized nature worship. Is our ancient faith really so uninspiring? Does Zeus and his pantheon of lecherous rapists and promiscuous goddesses touch our souls? Does the modern pantheon of colored gods and feminist harpies inspire us as the Man of Sorrows once inspired the antique Europeans? There is a seemingly impregnable, rational, natural wall that separates the modern European from the real world, the natural world of the antique Europeans. Only a passion that knows not seems can conquer that wall. A passion linked to His passion and His Sacred Heart. +

---

## **Hell on Earth - July 15, 2017**

Lear. My wits begin to turn.  
Come on, my boy. How dost, my boy? Art cold?  
I am cold myself. Where is this straw, my fellow?  
The art of our necessities is strange,  
That can make vile things precious. Come, your hovel.  
Poor fool and knave, I have one part in my heart  
That's sorry yet for thee.

---

It's worth noting that the hard-left rioters in Germany proclaimed "Welcome to hell." That is the essence of liberalism. It starts out as a utopian movement to build heaven on earth, but the utopian heaven of the liberals is a world of negro worship, legalized abortion, legalized sodomy and the glorification of every abomination under the sun. It is pure hell. And when there is no visible resistance, the final generation of liberals removes the mask and makes explicit what was always implicit — at the heart of Liberaldom is hell.

In Hawthorne's short story "The Celestial Railroad," an intellectual Christian decides to take a trip to the Celestial City on a celestial railroad built by "Mr. Smooth-it-away":

... who, though he had never actually visited the Celestial City, yet seemed as well acquainted with its laws, customs, policy, and statistics, as with those of the City of Destruction, of which he was a native townsman. Being, moreover, a director of the railroad corporation and one of its largest stockholders, he had it in his power to give me all desirable information respecting that praiseworthy enterprise.

Yes, that's it precisely. With the sanction of intellectual Christians, Christians who have not circumscribed their hearts, the devil's minions build hell in the name of heaven.

The intellectual Christian Everyman travels along on the Celestial Railroad while avoiding the pitfalls – at least according to Mr. Smooth-it-away, of an excessive passion – the love of God and the hatred of Satan:

"Where is Mr. Greatheart?" inquired I. "Beyond a doubt the directors have engaged that famous old champion to be the chief conductor on the railroad?"

"Why, no," said Mr. Smooth-it-away, with a dry cough. "He was offered the situation of brakeman; but, to tell you the truth, our friend Greatheart has grown preposterously stiff and narrow in his old age. He has so often guided pilgrims over the road on foot that he considers it a sin to travel in any other fashion. Besides, the old fellow had entered so heartily into the ancient feud with Prince Beelzebub that he would have been perpetually at blows or ill language with some of the prince's subjects, and thus have embroiled us anew. So, on the whole, we were not sorry when honest Greatheart went off to the Celestial City in a huff and left us at liberty to choose a more suitable and accommodating man."

Need I go on? The "more suitable" man is, "Apollyon, Christian's old enemy." And the new Christian Everyman, the Christian without a heart, thinks that is wonderful –

“Bravo, bravo!” exclaimed I, with irrepressible enthusiasm; “this shows the liberality of the age; this proves, if anything can, that all musty prejudices are in a fair way to be obliterated. And how will Christian rejoice to hear of this happy transformation of his old antagonist! I promise myself great pleasure in informing him of it when we reach the Celestial City.”

And what happens when the train reaches the Celestial City?

And then did my excellent friend Mr. Smooth-it-away laugh outright, in the midst of which cachinnation a smoke-wreath issued from his mouth and nostrils, while a twinkle of lurid flame darted out of either eye, proving indubitably that his heart was all of a red blaze. The impudent fiend! To deny the existence of Tophet, when he felt its fiery tortures raging within his breast. I rushed to the side of the boat, intending to fling myself on shore; but the wheels, as they began their revolutions, threw a dash of spray over me so cold—so deadly cold, with the chill that will never leave those waters until Death be drowned in his own river—

Hawthorne’s traveler awakes to discover it was all a dream. But we, the European people, have made that dream a reality. We have turned Christian Europe into the citadel of Satan. The construction process started with the clerical liaison men, the Mr. Smooth-it-away men, who built the bridge linking Christian Europe and Satan’s Europe. And thus the terrible fusionist movement began, in which we were enjoined to divest ourselves of “prejudices” of every kind – our prejudices against race mixing, against sodomy, against Islam, against Jewry, and against sexual Babylon. But while we were enjoined to get rid of our “musty prejudices,” we were told to cling to new prejudices, we were to hate all things stemming from old Europe, namely the white race and the Christian faith, the Christian faith of the European people as distinct from philosophical Christianity and fusionist Christianity.

From a rational, philosophical standpoint, it seems like the liberals are supporting causes that are diametrically opposed to liberalism. They support Moslem and colored barbarians against the white Europeans even though the Moslems and the colored barbarians believe in the rape and abuse of women, which the liberals claim they are against.

In point of fact, the liberals and the colored heathens are at odds on every issue save one – the issue of the Christ-bearing race. The liberals hate that race and so do the colored barbarians. That is the essence of liberalism: “Welcome to hell.” They have already brought hell upon us. It is not a perfect hell – that will come in the hereafter – but our modern, liberal-forged world is a very close approximation to the eternal hell of the damned. If a man adheres to their world, if he gives internal assent to the principalities and powers of this modern world, he will go with Mr. Smooth-it-away to the kingdom of eternal night without feeling that he has passed from one world to another. And that is tragedy, that a man created in the image of God can be completely comfortable in the realm of Satan.

The devilish propaganda campaign of the liberals has had its effect. “You are not created in the image of God. You, the white man, are the waste product of nature, you are an unnatural aberration, a cancer in the bowels of the children of nature. You must self-destruct, but if you refuse to self-destruct, we will destroy you.” Divested of their faith in Christ, the white grazers wander through the pastures of Liberalism trying to find something to sustain them against an enemy that they refuse to believe is an enemy. They still believe in the benevolence of the liberals who preach negro worship, religious tolerance (except for Christians), non-violence (except when directed against white people), and sexual Babylon for all. The operation has been complete; the white man loves liberalism, and he is more comfortable in hell than in His Kingdom come, on earth, as it is in heaven.

In the world of the colored barbarians, be they black, brown, yellow, or red, there is no great separation between the intelligentsia and the commoners as regards religious faith. They believe as one. So it is with the Moslems, by and large; the intelligentsia believes what the men and women in the ranks believe. This is not the case with the European people. In the 19th century many of the great men of letters (but not the philosophers), such as Tennyson, Dickens, Thomas Hughes, Scott, Austen, La Fanu, Dostoyevsky – the list is endless – believed what the European people believed. There was no great divide between the intelligent man and the common man. This changed in the 20th century. Members of the European intelligentsia who expressed a belief in the Christian God were men who consciously “regressed” to Christianity. A Christian vision was no longer respectable in enlightened Europe. Novelists such as C. S. Lewis were considered fantasy writers and/or children’s authors. A pseudo, rational Christianity was still espoused by churchmen and conservatives, but that type of rationalized faith was not the “as a child” faith of the antique Europeans. The “as a child” faith was gone.

In the first half of the 20th century, the existentialists said, “There is no God, life is unbearable.” By the latter half of the 20th century and into the 21st century, the Western intellectuals were proclaiming that, “There is no Christian God, but we have the negro as our god; isn’t that wonderful!” The great migration of the European people has taken place. The common man has gone, as he always does, with the intellectual elite. As a result, the European people have shifted from Christ to nature and nature’s god. Let joy be the consequence? Only on the surface. The liberals say they have arrived at a better place, this new Europe, but they have created a world that even they, the happy ones, cannot live in. Why is drug use, suicide, and alcoholism increasing in the liberals’ happy new world? Perhaps this flight from Christ is not such a wonderful panacea after all? The liberals must enforce superficiality if they are to maintain the kingdom of hell on earth, because it is only those who live in an abstract, superficial world that can maintain the fantastical delusion that we are

better off without the Man of Sorrows. Our Lord is not welcome at the liberals' wedding feast, because He brings His death on the cross to every feast He attends. Who needs that death? We all do; without His death on the cross, there can be no wedding feast. His death brings us life, it brings us into a world of faith, hope, and charity. Outside of that world there is no reason to celebrate anything.

And yet the liberals do celebrate. They celebrate death, the death of all things European and Christian. Why do they hiss and spew venom any time a man or woman in public life says anything good about old Europe? Why do they cheer and applaud whenever a new right is signed into law for the feminists, the black barbarians, the sodomites, or the Moslems? They celebrate because they are the devil's own. They love what he loves. Do you think for one moment that the liberals and the colored heathens will be democratically persuaded to give up their assault on the white race and the traditional God of the white race? No, they won't. What Antonio said of Shylock can be said of the whole legion of modern liberals:

I pray you, think you question with the Jew.  
You may as well go stand upon the beach  
And bid the main flood bate his usual height;  
You may as well use question with the wolf,  
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb;  
You may as well forbid the mountain pines  
To wag their high tops, and to make no noise,  
When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven;  
You may as well do anything most hard,  
As seek to soften that — than which what's harder?—  
His Jewish heart.

The "Welcome to hell" riots in Germany, the surrender to Islam throughout Europe, and the worship of negroes in America and all the European nations signals the end of the silken glove seduction of the Europeans. The iron fist era has begun, because the liberals do not see any signs of life in the European people. They have no blood faith, because they have been defeated in the intellectual arena. They have accepted the scientific attack on Christ, and that acceptance has left them naked to their enemies. Until they see with their hearts and realize that the liberals' 'smartness' is superficial blather they will remain a bovine race grazing in the fields of modernity until it is their turn to be slaughtered. Revolutions succeed when those in authority start to believe the propaganda of the revolutionaries. The churchmen of Europe thought they could improve the Gospel of Christ to make it more compatible with the mind-forged philosophies of men. They kept retreating before the innovators and the destroyers until there was nothing left of Christianity — the church of Christ was consumed by the liberal leviathan. But was that church, the church that has become the church of organized Jewry, the Church of Christ? St. Paul says that it is not. He believed that the church of Christ was in the hearts of men and women who believed that the foolishness of God was wiser than the wisdom of men. And the antique Europeans believed as St. Paul believed. Shakespeare has Mark Antony ask the Roman commoners, "What cause withholds you now to mourn for him?" For what cause do we refuse to mourn for Him who is greater than Caesar?

Europeans live in exile in their own nations. We owe no allegiance to the liberal-barbarian mix that rules the formerly Christian European nations. After describing the horrors of Jacobinism, Burke asks if a Jacobin nation can be a European's nation:

Would this be the England that you and I, and even strangers, admired, honoured, loved, and cherished? Would not the exiles of England alone be my Government and my fellow-citizens? Would not their places of refuge be my temporary country? Would not all my duties and all my affections be there and there only?

We are not of modern Europe; we belong to Christian Europe. Wherever we find two or three gathered together in the name of the Christ of the European hearth fire, there is our nation.

I have not discussed specific tactical issues about this war that we are not fighting, because I think that individual Europeans in their own nations can come up with the best military strategies for their country. But I do believe that there is now only one option for the exiled Europeans, and that is the military option. What else can you do with a people who bring you hell? The liberals and the colored barbarians are going to kill every white European who shows any sympathy for old Europe, and they will kill a good deal of European grazers even if they don't show any sympathy for old Europe. Why? You know the answer. Because the liberals fear whiteness; they are never quite certain that a passive white grazer might leave his pasture and become a European again. It's not likely, but the liberal wants to make sure.

It would be heartening to know that we could be sure that there were some Europeans ready to fight for old Europe. But we can't be sure; the liberals have not labored in the vineyards of modernity in vain. They have raised up a mutant race of whites who have no loyalty to their true country, which is Christian Europe. The European people have turned their nations over to liberals and colored heathens; they have, in imitation of King Lear: "Let their folly in, And their dear

judgement out!” But unlike King Lear they have not gone to the depths of despair and repented their folly. Instead, they look to the liberals in church and state to save them. But it is only those who shake off the “superflux” of liberalism that can see their way out of liberalism. Lear’s moral awakening in the manger reminds us of another moral awakening in a manger. When we were very young as a people, we saw that event as the one sure and certain hope of our people. Now, once again, the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders, have taken hold of our Lord. They crucify Him anew by crucifying His people. Life is a crucifixion — what do we gain if we throw in with the liberals to avoid the cross of Christ? We gain hell and lose heaven. +

---

### **The Prodigal Europeans - July 8, 2017**

And he said, A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father’s have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. —Luke 15: 11-24

---

The odious, blasphemous Fourth of July holiday has come, but not gone. The fireworks are still going off and will keep going off throughout the month until the moral idiots who bought the fireworks have exhausted their supplies. Some sage once wrote that the United States was the only nation that went from infancy to decadence with no maturity in between. That is because the United States never was a nation; she was always a proposition conceived by moral eunuchs. I know that various conservatives stoutly deny the propositional nature of the American experiment in blasphemy, but such apologists advance an abstract theory of patriotism while ignoring our anti-nation’s actual history. Lincoln’s articulation was correct: “...conceived in liberty and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal.”

Before the infamous U.S. Constitution was written and made into law, every single state on the American continent had laws which made the Christian faith the law of their state. The conglomeration of states were like Europe in that they had separate government bodies and geographical boundaries, but the Christian faith was their lodestar. On his deathbed, the Saxon warrior, saint, and king, Alfred the Great, told his sons to uphold the law. Of course he meant Christian law, the law he had fought to establish over and against pagan law. But Madison, Jefferson, and Franklin had a very different law in mind when they wrote the Constitution. Their law was the law of liberty – liberty from the Christian God. Because American Europeans came to the U.S. as Christians, and Christians filled up the ranks of our government and our judiciary, the great separation of Christianity from American law was not immediately apparent. But the time bomb was planted. The law and Christianity were now something separate. The American Civil War, which was an uncivil war, made the Jacobin origins of our Constitution crystal clear. The American government would always, in the name of equality, fraternity, and liberty, take the side of the non-European against the European and the non-Christian against the Christian. Because of the Northern aggression against the South, the more traditionally European section of the United States, it was the South that produced a few European critics of the American heresy. Men such as George Fitzhugh and Andrew Lytle did not think America had gone wrong; they said that our nation had started out wrong, because our Constitutional forefathers separated themselves from our Lord and kinsman, Jesus Christ, in order to embrace an utopian world conceived in an abstract ideal called liberty.

The American experiment in utopia, which preceded the French experiment, was one side of the utopian coin. The American state was the ‘silken glove’ seduction, while the French, Jacobin state was based on the ‘iron fist.’ The Russian communists adopted the ‘iron fist’ method, and then moved back toward the ‘silken glove’ of democracy. The French, who never repudiated their regicide foundations, shifted to the American, feminine side of the utopian heresy. Now? The European utopian governments are shifting ground; they are becoming iron-fist utopias who are implementing the ‘some are more equal’ absolute of all the utopias that are based on the equality of man. Why is it that the European people are always the unequal who must be eradicated?

The European people must be eradicated (except for the liberal elite who have gone beyond whiteness) because they have a racial history which connects them to the living God whose Kingdom Come is diametrically opposed to the abstract ideals of utopian Europe. The two utopias, the Iron Fist utopianism of the French Jacobins and the Russian communists, and the Silken Glove utopianism of the American founders, can be seen clearly in the break between Freud and Jung over

the question of religious faith. Freud thought religious faith was a mental illness that had to be treated, whereas Jung observed that all men had some religious yearnings, so he asked the question – “Can something so universal be sick?” Without adopting his specific methodology, subsequent psychiatrists and the church men have gone with Jung rather than Freud. So long as you do not claim your religion is true to the exclusion of all other religions, you are not sick. In other words, so long as your religion is an abstraction, something that helps you cope with the angst of existence, you can keep it. But this means that the entire white race prior to the 20th century was sick, because they claimed to believe in a non-abstract, living God. The direct attack of Freud and the indirect attack by Jung both end with the necessity of eradicating the European people, because they believed that the Word was made flesh and dwelt among them.

After all the endless debates over God’s grace and human free will, debates which are the equivalent of the debate about the number of angels dancing on a pin’s head, we know that miracles begin with the grace of God, and we know that no miracle, in this earthly realm, can occur if we do not respond to the grace of God. The antique Europeans responded to the grace of God and gave us a vision of the living God, for it is always through humanity that our Lord shows us His face. When the faith becomes an abstraction, divorced from the people who loved much, God disappears. In that marvelous Christian work from the greatest of Christian centuries, *Heidi* (1880), Johanna Spyri tells us of a blind grandmother who is close to despair until she sees, with the inner eye of the heart, the face of God through charity, the charity that can only come to us through our kith and kin.

At that Grannie’s face lit up, and she pressed Mrs. Sesemann’s hand, quite speechless with gratitude, Heidi hugged her again. “Hasn’t everything turned out finely?” she cried.

“Oh yes, child, I did not know there were such good people in the world. It renews my faith in God to have them bother about a poor old thing like me.”

There is so much in that old Grannie’s statement of faith. We come to God through the channels of grace, the people of our own racial hearth fire, that He provided for us. We don’t come to God by building intellectual towers of Babel. Christ is the grave where buried love doth live; He is the passionate shepherd who has woven us, if we accept His grace, into the story of His divine love. The image of God culture was their culture, the dark, sinister culture of Satan is the culture of the modern Europeans. Everything that is poetic and morally beautiful comes from Christ, everything that is mathematical and morally reprehensible comes from Satan. And what could be more satanic than our modern European Babylon which Americans celebrate every Fourth of July, and Frenchmen celebrate every July 14th?

When we abandon the poetic essence of Europe, which is the Christ that presided over the racial hearth fire of the antique Europeans, we turn ourselves over to the abstractionists in Church and State. And those abstractionists will always purge the blind Swiss grannies who have no statistical significance. Do you recall the Ford Pinto scandal of some years back? The car company discovered that the car’s rear fuel tank caught fire whenever the car was hit from the rear by another car. But the accountants for Ford decided that it was cheaper to pay out money for the lawsuits filed by relatives of those killed in car explosions than it was to fix the cars. It was a bottom line decision, quite practical if you take away the human element. White people are all, in the modern utopian world, blind Swiss grannies that can and must be eliminated by the abstracted accountants of Liberalism. It goes like this – “White people are from another time and place, the ‘image of God’ culture of ancient Europe; therefore, they are not suitable subjects for the new utopia. Let’s exterminate them in the name of utopia.” What are Americans celebrating on the 4th of July and what are Europeans celebrating on their various democratic festivals? They are celebrating their extermination at the hands of the liberals and their colored henchmen.

The European people have left their father’s house, which is Christian Europe, and they have gone to a far country, which is utopian Europe. You might say that right there the comparison with the prodigal son parable breaks down, because the European people are not experiencing famine. But all Christ’s parables are tales about His spiritual realm. The European people are suffering through the greatest spiritual famine of their existence as a people. They have rejected the poetic essence of their civilization, which is Jesus Christ, and replaced Him with the sacred negro and a supporting cast of colored heathens. The Europeans need to see the parable of the prodigal son through to the end. They need to recognize their spiritual blindness and return to their father’s house. But in order to return and be forgiven, the European people need to see that the far country they dwell in is not utopia, it is hell. The religious, racial, and sexual Babylon that the liberals have built cannot sustain the European people any more than the husks the swine ate could sustain the prodigal son.

We always come back to Lincoln’s question. Can a nation conceived in liberty, liberty from God, and dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal, with the negro and colored races being more equal, long survive? Can it long survive? I don’t know, but I do know that such a nation should not survive. Our anti-nation and the European anti-nations that have followed our example, the example of a people who have consecrated their nation to Satan, must perish. Nations of repentant European prodigal sons must take the place of the satanic nations of Europe and the satanic nation called the United States of America. I’m sick of looking at liberal faces who are connecting links to Satan. I want my people to be like

unto Heidi; I want them to be connecting links to His Kingdom Come. If we stop thinking like Ford-Pinto accountants, weighing everything on material scales, we will return home to our European hearth fire and discover that He will forgive us our trespasses and welcome us home. +

---

## **The Return to His Europe - July 1, 2017**

Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. Matthew 23: 36-39

---

The apostle whom Christ loved tells us that, “He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.” That is tragedy of the highest order. But the apostles knew Christ once their hearts were opened. Then there was St. Paul, who encountered Christ on the road to Damascus; he also knew Christ. But neither the first apostles nor St. Paul knew Christ through the intellect; they did not know the day nor the hour of His return. They did not have a blueprint for an organizational structure called the Church, but they did know that which was essential: they knew that God had become Man and dwelt among us and gave us, through an act of divine charity, eternal life. Such was the faith of the apostles and St. Paul.

In the fullness of time, a people emerged who shared the same faith as the apostles and St. Paul. The Europeans knew Him as St. John knew Him and as St. Paul knew Him. And because they knew Him, they were despised by Satan and all those who worshipped Satan and hated the light. Against the world, against the Christ-haters, the Europeans built a civilization based on His divine charity, what Burke called that charity of honor, and they defended it until their faith faltered and the sword of charity fell from their hands. It is my contention that the despised and rejected ones, the antique Europeans, were right: they saw, through a glass darkly, what the apostles and St. Paul saw – the Son of the living God. Nothing good can come out of any civilization, be it white or colored, whose people deny the miracle of Christian Europe. Friends and enemies have told me that I’m obsessed with the European thing and therefore wrong, because to obsess on something shows a disordered mind. I concede that I am obsessed with the “European thing,” but I do not concede that to be obsessed is wrong. Burke was obsessed with the French Revolution; he thought it was of the devil. Shouldn’t a man be obsessive in his opposition to the devil? And shouldn’t a man be obsessive in his support of the one civilization that championed the Son of God in opposition to the devil? That is what the samizdat publication called CWNy is all about. It has been, and always shall be, my contention that to oppose the civilization of the antique Europeans is to oppose Christ. And to support their civilization is to support Christ against the devil and his minions.

The liberals have come from outside Europe into its very center and turned His Kingdom Come into Satan’s kingdom of hell on earth. That kingdom of hell on earth was not built in a day. Before Satan could triumph the Europeans had to be spiritually anesthetized. Through the scientizing of the organized churches the spiritual anesthetization took place. Is there a modern European, be he Christian, secularized liberal, or neo-pagan, who will oppose psychology and all the other modern voodoo sciences that are used to explain human existence? No sane man will oppose liberal voodoo. And by ‘sane’ we are speaking of psychologically sane. But to be psychologically sane one must be one with modernity, which is to be one with Satan. By saying that the modern Europeans are one with Satan, I am not suggesting every European home has altars consecrated to Satan. I am suggesting something far worse. White people who form devil cults do not believe in the devil as the colored heathens do. Such people are merely playing with abstractions; they do not believe in the angelic person called the devil, because in order to believe in the devil one must believe in Christ. The devils knew who Christ was: “And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, thou art the Son of God. And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known.” (Mark 3: 11-12) The liberals neither acknowledge Christ nor the devil; what they have is a passionate hatred for all things connected to Him and a passionate devotion to all things that come from Satan. The liberals follow the passionate hatred that is in their hearts without knowing its source. All they know is that they must respond to that force inside them. They must champion the negroid race against the white race, they must champion Islam over Christianity, and they must advocate the slaughter of the innocents. Why must they do these things? They will give you all kinds of reasons, gleaned from philosophy, psychology, and theology, but the real, unstated reason is that they hate Christ and love Satan; therefore, they must hate all things European, even if the Europeans have abandoned Christ, and they must love all things antithetical to Christianity and the European people. Will the liberals’ hatred for humanity cease with the destruction of the white race? I don’t think so, because Satan does not love any race. When the white race is destroyed, the other races will destroy each other, because Satan, not Christ, rules their hearts.

I’m not a Thomist nor a Buddhist, so I don’t have a rational, happy place where I can go to escape the agony of existence. And agony often comes my way through the visits of my mad-dog liberal sister. If you tell me I shouldn’t let her in my

house, I would concede that you might be right. But not being a Thomist, I would also say that it doesn't feel right. Blood ties entail certain obligations. I feel that if my sister doesn't bring up liberal subjects, I should allow her into my home with the hope that something in my home, or someone in my home, might start her back to His Europe. Not likely? No, it is not likely, which is why the visits from my sister are very depressing. I see a woman, who, like Hamlet's mother, sees nothing yet believes that all that there is she sees. Last Christmas I showed her, without any intention of tweaking her, a fairy tale that my children were particularly fond of when growing up. I hoped she would read it and like it, thus awaking some dormant feelings of pietas. But she held the book as if she were holding a loathsome reptile and then put it down without even turning a page. What is to be done with such people? When they are in power, they should be dealt with as Ganelon was dealt with. When they are out of power they should be placed in segregated areas with the colored barbarians. That is a much kinder fate than they intend for us if they are allowed to continue on their merry, Christ-hating, white-hating way.

My sister, like many of the sixties' liberals who are fast disappearing, has a certain nostalgia for the European hearth fire, which is why she makes her yearly visit to my home at Christmas time. But the new breed of liberals do not even have a touch of nostalgia. They have a bare-fanged hatred for all things Christian and European. I've seen some older liberals swoon over the beauty of a sonnet by Donne, even though they didn't approve of his faith, and I've seen older liberals take delight in a novel by Dickens. No longer. Nothing from the past moves our modern liberals. And sadly, the alternative right belongs to the liberals. They, like their liberal brethren, are not moved by anything or anybody from Christian Europe. They are rootless, seeking a place in Liberaldom in the name of ... In the name of what? In the name of whom? They don't know. They are back with the unknown God of the Greeks. The incarnate God, who is the God of the antique Europeans, has a local habitation and a name. How can a European who denies that God have a European identity? That denial makes a European man an Undine; it makes him the man without a soul of whom the Minstrel in Scott's Lay of the Last Minstrel sings: "Breathes there the man, with soul so dead, Who never to himself hath said, This is my own, my native land!" Our racial hearth fire, presided over by Christ, is our native land.

The romance between the European people and Christ has certainly ended. The Europeans' souls are dead. But souls are not vegetable matter, they can be revived, though I confess I do not know how such a revival can occur when you see the thorns of Liberaldom all around the European people. How can the good seed take root and grow? We are way past the time when we can be saved by politics or theology. We need the type of miracle that occurs when a man dying of thirst in the desert discovers an underground spring of water. That is the great unknown part of the European people's spiritual pilgrimage. Will a spring of love gush from their heart, a love for the Man of Sorrows, right before they perish from a surfeit of the superficiality and soullessness of liberalism? Our Lord only hears prayers from the depths of our heart, which means we can't reach him unless we reclaim our hearts. We must love our people in and through Christ.

Christian Europe is a very lonely place to dwell, in this, the 21st century, the first century in which Satan has gained complete control of Europe. But is it not better to fight alone and hope that other Europeans will join you than to dwell in the devil's Babylonian kingdom of everlasting night forever? "By the rivers of Babylon, where we sat down, yea, we wept, when we remembered Zion." Every tear shed for Christian Europe is a prayer to our Lord who redeemed our souls with His precious blood. He will hear our tearful prayers, because He is the charity that never faileth. When the conservatives in church and state jettisoned the European people in order to conserve a mind-forged system that made God an abstraction, they jettisoned the God who dwells in human hearts. Europeans cannot leave their racial hearth fire without leaving Christ.

Neo-paganism shall fail, abstract conservatism will fail, organized Christian Jewry will fail – all that remains is the divine charity that took flesh and dwelt among the European people. Christ was ever present in old Europe, but He has been banished from the new Europe. Scott tells us that it is the bards who write history. Let me close then with that English bard, Charles Dickens, who knew that only human hearts connected to His divine heart could produce the charity that never faileth.

'O, Mrs Clennam, Mrs Clennam,' said Little Dorrit, 'angry feelings and unforgiving deeds are no comfort and no guide to you and me. My life has been passed in this poor prison, and my teaching has been very defective; but let me implore you to remember later and better days. Be guided only by the healer of the sick, the raiser of the dead, the friend of all who were afflicted and forlorn, the patient Master who shed tears of compassion for our infirmities. We cannot but be right if we put all the rest away, and do everything in remembrance of Him. There is no vengeance and no infliction of suffering in His life, I am sure. There can be no confusion in following Him, and seeking for no other footsteps, I am certain.' +

---

## **The Europe That Shall Not Be Destroyed - June 24, 2017**

Yet as I saw it, I see it again,  
The Kirk and the palace, the ships and the men,  
As long as I live and where'er I may be,  
I'll always remember my town by the sea.

I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him.

And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. –Daniel 7: 13-24

---

European Christians, the men and women that are trying to believe as the antique Europeans believed, have been driven to the catacombs. They don't literally live in caves, but their homes have become like the catacombs. They live secret lives, trying to live amongst liberals without becoming like unto them. Most Europeans have given up; they have either totally embraced secular liberalism or else they have joined a modern cookie-cutter church which blends liberalism and a Christless, irreligious Christianity that is antithetical to European Christianity. You won't have to live in the catacombs if you embrace the Christless Christianity, but will the heart be satisfied? Can Christless Christianity sustain the European people? I think it is painfully obvious that it can't, but the Europeans don't seem capable of getting off the modernist express train to oblivion. Maybe it is just going too fast, but still, the Europeans must get off that hideous, hell-bound train.

The Christian church men, until modern times when all is permitted, used to warn us about sexual passion. The laymen and laywomen were enjoined to use their God-given sexuality in the way prescribed by God, or otherwise bad things would happen. Such admonitions were right and proper. But why was not the same emphasis, or an even greater emphasis since it had to do with the original sin, placed on the improper use of reason? Why weren't we warned and admonished about the misuse of our reasoning powers as we were warned and admonished about the misuse of our carnal appetites? Chateaubriand's comments on that subject are worth quoting again:

Now, if the primitive constitution of man consisted in accordance such as we find established among other beings, nothing more was necessary for the destruction of this order, or any such harmony in general, than to alter the equilibrium of the forces or qualities. In man this precious equilibrium was formed by the faculties of love and thought. Adam was at the same time the most enlightened and the best of men; the most powerful in thought and the most powerful in love. But whatever has been created must necessarily have a progressive course. Instead of waiting for new attainments in knowledge to be derived from the revolution of ages, and to be accompanied by an accession of new feelings, Adam wanted to know every thing at once. Observe, too, what is very important: man had it in his power to destroy the harmony of his being in two ways, either by wanting to love too much, or to know too much. He transgressed in the second way; for we are, in fact, far more deeply tainted with the pride of science than with the pride of love; the latter would have deserved pity rather than punishment, and if Adam had been guilty of desiring to feel rather than to know too much, man himself might, perhaps, have been able to expiate his transgression, and the Son of God would not have been obliged to under take so painful a sacrifice. But the case was different. Adam sought to embrace the universe, not with the sentiments of his heart, but with the power of thought, and, advancing to the tree of knowledge, he admitted into his mind a ray of light that over powered it. The equilibrium was instantaneously destroyed, and confusion took possession of man. Instead of that illumination which he had promised himself, a thick darkness overcast his sight, and his guilt, like a veil, spread out between him and the universe. His whole soul was agitated and in commotion; the passions rose up against the judgment, the judgment strove to annihilate the passions, and in this terrible storm the rock of death witnessed with joy the first of shipwrecks. –*The Genius of Christianity*

The pride of science! That is the original sin, to seek to know what God knows, not through the affections, through our filial devotion to a loving God and our love for His creatures, but through the abstracted intellect, contemplating nature. After the fall, the repentant Adam and Eve must have been very close to God. They had sinned much, but they loved much (see *Adam and His Kin* by Ruth Beechick). But the heirs of Adam and Eve gradually lost their connection to God. They once again became full of the pride of science; they sought God in nature rather than in the human heart. First came the Flood, then came the destruction of the Tower of Babel, and later the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. Every one of those catastrophes were brought on by mankind's estrangement from God. And man becomes estranged from God by seeking to know God through nature rather than through the human heart. I am no prophet, but it seems as if the modern Europeans are now estranged from God as were the people just prior to the Flood, as were the people just prior to the destruction of the Tower of Babel, and as were the people of Sodom and Gomorrah prior to their destruction. The uniqueness of the Europeans was that they, and they alone, saw God through the interior eye of the heart, and they loved Him. They loved the heart of God revealed in Jesus Christ.

When Christendom seemed at its height in the high Middle Ages (its height when viewed from the external eye), Satan entered into the heart of the church. He came in preaching reason. He appealed to men's pride of intellect by telling them they could know God through the rational contemplation of the natural world. What could be wrong with that? Everything was wrong. That neat little formula – God is the end product of a rational process – destroyed the harmony of the European's soul, which had been restored by Christ. Pride of science became the lodestar of Europe instead of Christ. The



sneering intellect replaced the circumcised heart. It didn't happen overnight, but we can see, particularly in the 20th century, the European people moving into Satan's realm and away from the green and pleasant land of Christian Europe. The pride of science has left us defenseless against our ancient foe, who prowls about the world seeking the ruin of souls. And whose souls must he seek? He already has the colored heathens' souls. He wants the Europeans' souls. He wants the Christ-bearing people to choose his pride of intellect over the love of Christ. When the pride of science replaced white pietas, Europe was leased out to the devil.

In the same term in college I had two different English literature teachers. The one was a secularized Jewish male who saw everything from a Freudian standpoint. The other was a secularized Christian who was a devotee of *The Hero with a Thousand Faces* (by a Jungian) and a pantheon of Asian philosophers. It didn't matter what work of literature was studied in either class. Shakespeare always spoke Freudian in the secularized Jew's class, and he spoke Jungian and Asian claptrap in the secularized Christian's class. Both teachers took snipes at the other in their classes, but both teachers, despite their animosity towards each other, were in Satan's camp. They were academics who thought that their abstract intellects could fashion a new world apart from His world. And their intellectual pride, which comes from Satan, has enveloped the Western world – the European people have become academics. The Christian worldview, which can only be seen by European hearts connected to Him through white pietas, has practically disappeared from the face of the earth. Conservatives and liberals, be they church men or secular, are all looking at existence through an exterior eye that is blinded with the pride of science. Likewise the neo-pagans. What unites all the divergent groups is their rejection of the old European way to knowledge, through the more excellent way that St. Paul spoke of in 1 Corinthians 13.

I recently read an article by a conservative 'expert' in which he stated that Marxism was dead because it no longer excited the European intellectuals anymore; they had moved on. It's true that Marxism in the abstract no longer excites the intelligentsia of Liberalism, but Marxism as a cultural force is alive and well; it has metamorphosed into negro worship, just as Jacobinism metamorphosed into egalitarian democracy and Marxism. All those modern ideologies are derivatives of the original sin – pride of intellect – or what Chateaubriand called the pride of science. It might be the end for Europeans; it certainly will be if they stay within the confines of Satandom, quarreling over which form of demonism they want to live under, be it Islam, democratic negro worship, or a Babylonian combination of both. But Noah's faithfulness saved a remnant.

If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come; the readiness is all. Since no man has aught of what he leaves, what is't to leave betimes. Let be.

Hamlet went from a state of abstraction, from a man of intellectual pride, to a Christian prince who saw that he was born to set it, the kingdom, right. And so are we, we Europeans, we were born to set things right, because we saw His blood upon the rose when the heathens saw nothing but a rose.

Prior to the 20th century, when the colored heathens attacked Europe and her subsidiaries, what was a matter of debate was the tactics and the weapons that were to be used against the colored heathens. But it was a given that the Europeans had to fight the colored heathens. Now that liberals have a stranglehold on the governments of Europe, the reverse is the case. It is always a given, when the colored heathens attack, that the European people must not fight back. Why mustn't they fight back? Why is European pacifism in the face of a colored army out to destroy the European people taken as a given? It is a given because the liberals are all Ganelons; they want the European people to be destroyed. They preach nonviolence to the European people while encouraging and countenancing the violence of the colored heathens. This is what passes for a higher level of existence – the worship of the colored heathens who know not charity and the hatred of the European people who once championed the God of mercy. It is clear that malice now bears down truth. The liberals' fangs are out; they no longer make any pretense of wanting an egalitarian society in which people of all colors can come together in a wonderful secular paradise. They want only one thing – they want to destroy every last vestige of the image of God in man. So they must destroy the European people. And we must fight – we have been pushed to the edge of the cliff. We must, like Hamlet and his 20th century counterpart, Ransom, fight the devil and his minions. We can't continue to debate with liberals through the democratic process; that is suicidal. We must fight them and their colored shock troops, because they are the devil's own.

It snapped like a violin string. Not one rag of all this evasion was left. Relentlessly, unmistakably, the Darkness pressed down upon him the knowledge that this picture of the situation was utterly false. His journey to Perelandra was not a moral exercise, nor a sham fight. If the issue lay in Maledil's hands, Ransom and the Lady were those hands. The fate of a world really depended on how they behaved in the next few hours. The thing was irreducibly, nakedly real. They could, if they chose, decline to save the innocence of this new race, and if they declined its innocence would not be saved. It rested with no other creature in all time or all space. This he saw clearly, though as yet he had no inkling of what he could do. – *Perelandra* by C.S. Lewis

If someone took you to Paris to show you the Louvre and then showed you only the trash cans in the basement, what would you think of the Louvre? This is what the liberals have done with Christian Europe. They have shown us only the worst of Christian Europe. They have not shown us the incomparable beauty of Christian Europe because they hate the

cornerstone of Europe, that transcendent vision of Jesus Christ, the crowned King of Europe, and the inspiration for all that is beautiful beyond measure in old Europe. When the thought is father to the deed, when our minds are once again connected to our hearts, we will know what has to be done. We will respond as our European ancestors responded when they were betrayed by the Ganelons of Europe and when they were attacked by the heathens. The Christian heart always, as Fitzhugh asserted, finds a way through the most difficult straits that the philosophical mind finds unnavigable. But we must have hearts; that is all in all. When everything else has failed – the think-tanks, the democratic process, the endless debates with the devil and the devil's own – a tiny remnant of Europeans shall meet and remember the past. And then? Then we will know the "more excellent way" that St. Paul spoke of. And who will stand against us then? Christian Europe is eternal Europe; it shall not die, nor shall we. There can be no blending of the European people and Babylon because there can be no blending of Christ and Satan. Satan is the purveyor of death and destruction, and our Lord brings us life. Our honored dead speak to us still, and they tell us with one voice that it is only our Lord, the cornerstone that the liberals and the colored heathen have rejected, who is "the beginning and the end, the first and the last." Surely they were right, and surely their civilization is worth fighting for. +

---

### **The Eyes of the Heart - June 17, 2017**

Old Man. O, my good lord, I have been your tenant, and your father's tenant, these fourscore years.

Glou. Away, get thee away! Good friend, be gone;  
Thy comforts can do me no good at all;  
Thee they may hurt.

Old Man. You cannot see your way.

Glou. I have no way, and therefore want no eyes;  
I stumbled when I saw. Full oft 'tis seen,  
Our means secure us, and our mere defects  
Prove our commodities. O dear son Edgar,  
The food of thy abused father's wrath!  
Might I but live to see thee in my touch  
I'd say I had eyes again!

*-King Lear*

---

And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

-Acts 9: 4-6

---

I would place an addendum after Whittier's sad lament, "For all sad words of tongue and pen, the saddest are these, It might have been." The addendum would run: 'For all the false words of tongue and pen, the falsest are these, You can't go back to the past.' Let us place the European people in the position of Ebenezer Scrooge. Scrooge can't go back and become twenty-one again, but he most certainly can go back to his spiritual youth and accept the grace of God which he rejected many years before. The European people can't change the fact that they have lived for centuries under the government of the Archangel Satan, who rules them through Jacobin democracy, but they can renounce Jacobin democracy and become like unto their European ancestors who lived their lives in the shadow of the Cross.

Would a return to their Europe mean that we would no longer see sickness, war, and death? Of course not. But we would not suffer "the heartache and the thousand natural shocks the flesh is heir to," in hopeless despair. We would have spiritual comforts to offset the tragedies of life, and we would have hope that the last great enemy, which is death, was not invincible. Black savagery would still exist in our new-old Europe, but it would be controlled. Moslems would still live in the Arab nations, but they would no longer live in European nations. There would still be some babies murdered in the womb, but there would be very few that suffered that fate, because instead of receiving big pay checks for the slaughter of the innocents, abortion doctors would be executed.

We must return to old Europe, because the new utopian Europe that has been imposed on us is not His Europe. Even if the rulers of Liberaldom would let us into their utopian Europe, would we want to abide there? What good is it to gain the world if you lose your soul in doing so? Ah, there's the rub. If we don't have souls, if we are just by-products of nature, then there is nothing but this world only. The liberals have decreed that there is only nature, so they can stop the only force on earth capable of destroying them; that force is the spirit-infused European. Without the faith that animated our ancestors the modern Europeans are left pleading for a place in the liberals' anti-white, anti-Christian utopia. Far better to stop pleading, to stop bowing and scraping before the liberals' colored gods, and to take up arms against the liberals and their colored allies in the name of Christ and our sacred heritage. But of course the post-Christian European does not believe in a sacred heritage that stems from a belief in the Man of Sorrows. He believes in his intellect, in his ability to intellectually manipulate history to serve his own ends. The neo-pagans, the mad-dog liberals, and the new age conservatives in church and state are all united in a Jacobin cabal that seeks the kingdom of God on earth, through the good offices of their god-all-mighty intellects. Lost by the wayside is the crowned King of Europe. He will not come to us unless we call on Him by name. We have to look past His beggar's weeds and see the divinity within. And then? We will ask Him to come and abide with us by our racial hearth fire.

Modern Liberaldom is built on two assumptions. The first is that white men are evil. The second is that all white men, prior to the 20th century, were stupid, because they looked at life from an unscientific, which translates to unnatural, view of the world. The two assumptions are really coordinate, because the liberal views intelligence and morality as one. If you think about life as the materialists such as Darwin, Marx, Freud, and Adam Smith thought about life, you will think naturally and abhor the unnatural white Europeans. (1) From that naturalism stems liberalism, and because of that naturalism the white man is in the process of being eliminated from the face of the earth. "The thing which we have come to regard as history would disappear if students of the past ceased to regard the world of man as a thing apart – ceased to envisage a world of human relations set up against nature and the animal kingdom. In such circumstances the high valuation that has long been set upon human personality would speedily decline." (Herbert Butterfield)

The high valuation we placed on human personality has not just declined, it has disappeared. And it has disappeared because His image in man has disappeared. Without the God who became man, there can be no human personalities. What we now have are aggregate herds of ... of what? What is a human being if human beings are not created in the image of God? The liberals have told us – man is a glorified ape. But some apes are more natural than other apes. The unnatural apes, the white apes, must be exterminated so the natural apes can live as nature intended. They should live with no restraints on their natural appetites, because the natural appetites of the colored apes are good, while the unnatural appetites of the white apes are bad.

The religion of nature, the religion of the glorified colored ape, has its own system of manners, customs, and traditions. And that system has bound the European to the Promethean rock. He only exists to serve the liberal state. If he can prove useful to the state, if he serves the negroes and the heathens, he might be allowed to live some 70 plus years. But his children, if he has any, will not, if the liberals are not destroyed, be allowed to live out their lives. Their whiteness will be dealt with.

Modern Europeans on every side of the political spectrum see life in managerial terms. They think all life's problems can be solved by rational analysis. But European genocide cannot be solved by rational analysis. It can only be prevented by white human beings who have not been anesthetized by over a century of liberal soul washing. 'There is no soul, there is only nature,' has been the constant refrain of the liberals for the past three hundred years. And the liberals have controlled church and state for the past one hundred years. Should it surprise us then that the only resistance to liberalism is a non-resistance? 'Please, liberal sirs and madams, won't you let the clever white monkeys play with the black monkeys?'

There are two 'natural' cultures in the white man's history. There was the culture of what Walter Scott called our natural affections – the love of kith, kin, and God. And now a new natural culture has supplanted the older natural culture. The new natural culture consists of the love of the natural black savage and the earth as a biological entity. All sentiments stemming from the old natural culture have been anathematized by the modern, nature-based liberals. What were called virtues are now vices – the love of kith and kin is racist, chastity and monogamy are unnatural and therefore sinful... Need I go on? A vast organization that encompasses the once Christian churches, which have become like unto organized Jewry, has come into being with the sole purpose of propagating and defending the natural religion of liberalism, which is held together by a psychological mumbo-jumbo that was summed up by Lev Shestov, "Man is an Ape therefore we must love one another." Of course we must not love the unnatural white apes, they won't be allowed into the liberals' natural paradise. Is this fair? The request for fairness comes from the older natural culture, it is rooted in Portia's articulation of the Quality of Mercy. What is right is what concerns the liberals. And what is right is their 'natural' view of existence. Hence the ethics of the jungle, the ethos of the natural black savage, is the ruling ethos of the European people. But are the liberals wrong to assume that the whites cannot become glorified apes? Yes and no. Whites have descended to the level of apes. The naturalization process has worked. But they can never quite achieve negrohood. They still, even in their debased, naturalized state, cannot quite become like unto the negro and the other colored races. It will be the destiny of the not

quite naturalized whites, if the liberals are not defeated, to serve in the tents of the children of Ham. And the most subservient of the white apes will be the rationalized Christians who read the Bible with the exterior eye only, while ignoring the vision of their European ancestors who read the Bible with the interior eye of the heart.

The extraction of the white man's heart from his mind took place in the Christian churches. The church men saw that they were losing the battle with the liberal Jacobins. So to save Christianity they killed it. By making the Christian faith a philosophy, which could be passed to receptive colored minds by men of great intellect, the church men destroyed the Europeans' connection to God. They touched Him through their hearts, through pietas. If white pietas is proscribed, if the mark of a Christian becomes his willingness to renounce his racial hearth fire, the Christian faith is transformed into an ugly witch, it becomes the unchristian faith, and to oppose Christian Jewry is to oppose the devil.

The American Civil War was very close to a one hundred year war. It started in the 1860s and ended in the 1950s when the Southern people finally decided to become fully integrated members of the United Jacobin States of America. The Spanish counter-revolution ended in 1975 when Franco died. The Chilean counter-revolution ended in 1998 when Pinochet left office. And the white South Africans gave up their counter-revolution in 1991 although their will to resist ended with the death of Dr. Verwoerd in 1966. What all the aforementioned counter-revolutions have in common is that their leaders had some official position in the military or in the government. They had an aura of authority. People seem unwilling to follow a leader who has never had any official position in the regime that they want to oppose. All seems hopeless then. The people will not follow a leader who is completely from outside modern Jacobin Europe, and the Jacobins have thoroughly cleansed their system. There are no leaders in church or state that oppose Jacobinism. The blogger CWNy can scream about the evils of Jacobin liberalism till those proverbial cows come home, but he will not be able to start the counter-revolution. What is needed is a road to Damascus experience in the ranks of Europe's nobility. A von Stauffenberg or a St. John of Austria needs to arise. Not likely? No, it is not likely. But even if we are going to have to proceed without a leader, we should still fight back, because the charity of honor demands that we fight even if we face certain defeat.

One final word on the conversion of a member of the European nobility as depicted in *Remembrances VI: Thy People*. My grandparents on my father's side were very conservative Americans of German and Welsh coal-mining stock. My grandfather used 'liberal' as a pejorative term, and he didn't think anyone who did not read the Bible from a fundamentalist perspective was a Christian. My father went to college on the GI Bill and became much more liberal than his parents. Likewise my mother. I was raised to be a liberal as were my siblings who became much more liberal than my parents. That is what educating the young means in a Jacobin state: every generation becomes more radicalized than the previous generation until we come to the Kingdom of Satan on earth. But something happened to me. I regressed and became an enemy of Jacobin liberalism. And I started, when I became a father, an anti-Jacobin counter-revolutionary cell within the Jaws of Liberalism. The ultimate counter-revolutionary will always be a Christian father. (2) We need an anti-Jacobin leader, a man who believes that leadership is akin to fatherhood. Such a leader loves his kith and kin as Christ loves His people. We don't need more rational analysis of white genocide. We need to love much and fight the Jacobin liberals and their Moslem and colored shock troops. If a leader emerges who is a true hearth-fire European, we should follow him. But we cannot figure out history — we only know that our Lord enjoins us to fight. Maybe this time we are not to be vouchsafed a leader. Or maybe it is our Lord Himself who will lead us. +

---

(1) Never eliminate the capitalists from the Jacobin cabal. Witness the radicalization of the 'conservative' magazine National Review. One of their writers recently wrote a book called Hillbilly Elegy in which he argued for the extermination of the white race.

(2) William Tell is our model. His counter-revolutionary instincts stemmed from his instincts as a father. When men like Tell arise in Europe the reign of the Merkels and the other liberal tyrants of Satandom will come to an end.

---

## **We Are Born of Thee - June 10, 2017**

"You would be incorrect if you claimed that the Scarlet Pimpernel only existed in the imagination of Baroness Orczy. He exists in the spirit of every European who refuses to allow colored barbarians to torture and kill other Europeans. Christian chivalry was embodied in Nathan Bedford Forrest, the first Grand Wizard of the Ku Klux Klan; in Henry Havelock, the British avenger of Cawnpore and liberator of Lucknow; and in Andries Pretorius, the hero of Blood River, who led the punitive expedition against the Zulus after they massacred Piet Retief and his followers. The Scarlet Pimpernel is a true myth; he is the embodiment of the antique European's vision of the proper response to bloody tyranny and the murder of the innocents. The response must be non-democratic — no petitions against murder and torture to a people addicted to murder and torture — and it must be violent if violence has been used against one's people."  
— CWNy

---

No man is an Iland, intire of it selfe; every man is a peece of the Continent, a part of the maine; if a Clod bee washed away by the Sea, Europe is the lesse, as well as if a Promontorie were, as well as if a Manor of thy friends or of thine owne were; any mans death

diminishes me, because I am involved in Mankind; And therefore never send to know for whom the bell tolls; It tolls for thee. – John Donne

---

Let me come to the point of the recent terror attack in Britain through a very round-about route. When I went to high school, in ancient times, there was a group of self-styled ‘hard guys’ who wore the traditional black motorcycle jackets, smoked, drank, and tried to raise hell. The hard guys were not physically hard; in fact, they were quite out of shape. Their claim to super masculinity rested on their ability to ride motorcycles and beat up helpless people. One day, in the school restroom I came upon two hard guys trying to stuff a rather diminutive under-classman down the toilet. I was surprised how soft the hard guys were. Both went down as if I were Rocky Marciano, which of course I wasn’t.

Every time there is a terror attack in Britain, I feel like I’m back with those frolicsome, rollicsome hard guys from my high school. The American neo-pagans, often flying the battle flag of the Army of Northern Virginia, thus disgracing that flag which has the cross of St. Andrew on it, typically insult the Britons’ masculinity because they are not fighting back against Moslem terrorism. Excuse me, Mr. Neo-Pagan, have you revived the Nathan Bedford Forrest Ku Klux Klan, the Klan that actually fought? I guess I must have missed that news story. What on earth does an American conservative or an American neo-pagan, be he a Southerner or a Northerner, have to be so smug about? Our Moslem problems are almost as bad as in Europe, and our black problems are worse. So, since the American neo-pagans never tire of their anti-Britain refrain, let me repeat my old refrain – all whites are in the same boat, and we are all tempest-tossed, in imminent danger of being smashed on the treacherous rocks of liberalism. It ill behoves us to invoke that hideous doctrine of American exceptionalism every time a European nation is attacked by Moslem terrorists. The anti-white bell tolls for every white American as well as for every white European.

Let us leave the American neo-pagan bathroom bullies behind and proceed to the heartfelt wisdom of the men of old Europe. Edmund Burke had this to say about the shedding of blood: “The blood of man should never be shed but to redeem the blood of man. It is well shed for our family, for our friends, for our God, for our country, for our kind. The rest is vanity; the rest is crime.” And John Sharp Williams was of the opinion that, “Mere fighting is no virtue, far from it. Indeed, the man who is not great enough and brave enough not to fight when he ought not to is a poor excuse for a man. Speaking for myself, I have no admiration of the professional fighter, whether he be a Texas cowboy, or a West Point graduate.” Yet Burke thought blood should be shed in the war against Jacobinism, and John Sharp Williams thought the Southern people were right to fight against the Jacobin aggression of the North. We, the European people, are facing the same Jacobinism, the Jacobinism that makes use of colored executioners against the white race, which Burke and Williams saw as a force that white men had to war against even if such a war meant the shedding of blood. Burke and Williams were right. There are times when Christian men should fight. And I think it is obvious that now is the time. If not now, when the extermination process has begun in earnest, then when do we fight? Solzhenitsyn asked himself, in the Gulag, why the Russian people had not banded together and fought back when the Communists came for them. Why had they let the authorities isolate them and come for them one by one? David Satter answers that question in his book *Age of Delirium*. Let me quote from a book review I published in April 2008:

The second story that Satter reports is one that has not received as much attention, and it concerns the citizens who remained loyal to the Soviet Union while their friends and family members were sent to the Gulag and psychiatric hospitals. What did they think? Why did they finally cease to believe in the Soviet system? This makes for a very interesting story. Satter went throughout Russia in both the pre-glasnost days and the post-glasnost days. Besides talking to victims of Soviet terrorism, he talked to the average Russian ‘Joos,’ the ones who had never been sent to prison or to psychiatric hospitals.

What Satter reports is, at first reading, unbelievable; but after reflection, it squares with what one knows about history and human nature. What Satter found was that the average Russian Joe supported the Soviet regime; he believed the official lie. Russians were willing to put up with bread lines and cramped housing because their government told them conditions were worse everywhere else. They believed the Afghans had invited the Russians into their country to protect them, and they believed that Lenin was a saintly, heroic man.

It was glasnost that changed everything. Gorbachev had no intention of unleashing the forces that would topple the Soviet Union. He was a typical Communist party hack. He thought he could use glasnost as a policy to defeat his enemies within the party, but when the information flow started, when devoted teachers discovered that everything they had been teaching for years was a lie, when citizens learned that Lenin was not a saint but a man with the blood of millions on his hands, when Soviet citizens actually started to visit Western countries – well, then the sacrifices the citizens had made during the years of communism seemed to be worthless. If they were not building the socialist utopia, what were they doing? Where was their metaphysic? Glasnost destroyed the Soviet Union. And the man who ushered it in for his own political reasons, Gorbachev, went down with it.

The European people have still not had their glasnost moment. They still believe that Moslem terrorism and black terrorism is just part of the democratic process. “These things happen in a free society.” They do not believe that their leaders are using Islamic and black shock troops to destroy them. They do not believe in the liberal elite’s demonism, because they are in that terrible limbo between paganism and Christianity. They are not pagan enough to fight as the

pagan fights, and they are not Christian enough to fight as the antique Europeans fought when they defeated the pagan Moslems and the black barbarians.

The church men, because they feared that a passionate man of blood would revert to paganism, killed the European's heart as Havisham killed Estella's heart:

"I begin to think," said Estella, in a musing way, after another moment of calm wonder, "that I almost understand how this comes about. If you had brought up your adopted daughter wholly in the dark confinement of these rooms, and had never let her know that there was such a thing as the daylight by which she had never once seen your face,—if you had done that, and then, for a purpose had wanted her to understand the daylight and know all about it, you would have been disappointed and angry?"

The Russians' glasnost simply transferred the Russians' alliance from one form of Jacobinism to another. (1) What they and the rest of the European people need is a Christian glasnost. The Europeans need to see with the eye of a Christian heart. What the communist Jacobins did and what the democratic Jacobins are still doing, is a dramatic change in focus. They have wrested control of church and state in order to get the European to see life through the material rather than the spiritual eye. In their brave new world, the European is an unnatural piece of garbage that must be disposed of so that the natural people, the people of color, can live pure and clean. So long as we see life through the eyes of the liberals who belong to Satan, we will be like cattle lined up for the slaughterhouse. The 'natural' religions of Islam, voodoo, and syncretistic, Jacobin liberalism have no room for whites who were once the champions of the 'unnatural' religion, the religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen.

The Rev. Bob Richards of Olympic pole vaulting fame might have overstated, in his book *The Heart of a Champion*, the extent to which the spirit can overcome physical obstacles. If you're built like Don Knotts, you are not going to become a heavyweight champion no matter how great your will to win. Nevertheless, Richards' point is still well taken. The spirit-imbued man can achieve much even in the athletic arena, which seems to be a realm where biological nature rules. But it is in Longfellow's "bivouac of life" that the spirit comes to the forefront. Wars are not won by biologically superior men, they are won by the sustained efforts of spiritually superior men. Faith, not hormones, wins wars. When the European's eye of faith is opened, when he regains his moral vision, he will fight.

The hero of Walker Percy's novel *Love in the Ruins* tries to make a machine that can reconnect the white man's intellect with his soul. He doesn't succeed. The intelligent man, the "cultured" European, remains a man with only an intellectual faith, which is no faith at all. Why can't the European man believe in what his ancestors believed and then act the part of a man as his ancestors did? Let us always go back to our apostle, the apostle of charity. St. Paul tells us that we must circumcise our hearts before we can see the living God. It seems like there is an unlimited supply of synthetic remedies for biological impotence, but what is the remedy for spiritual impotence? Why don't our hearts burn within us in the presence of Christ, who lives at the center of Europe, the Europe the liberals and their colored allies are destroying? Many times, during my tenure as a teacher, I recall tearing up over a passage of literature from one of the European poets. My students looked at me as if I were a creature from Mars. There is a great divide between His Europe and modern Europe. So long as the European people remain on the wrong side of the divide, with minds that are severed from their hearts, they will be at the mercy of the liberals and the colored heathens who have no mercy. We who are about to die demand a miracle, the same miracle that turned the weak and timid apostles on the road to Emmaus into men with hearts that burned within them. +

---

(1) In contrast, the rulers of our American democratic oligarchy do not deny the existence of God. Instead they co-opt Him\*: God exists and he is a democratic, racially egalitarian, universalist god. The seductive logic of that assertion tends to produce hapless jellyfish, who flop around and proclaim their contentment. And in order to assure their government and themselves of their "Christianity," the democratic jellyfish spout racial egalitarian and universalist cant whenever they are asked to speak.

So, we have our own "delirium" in this country. And we need to resist it just as fiercely as the Christian remnant in Russia resisted communism. If we view books such as Satter's merely as cautionary tales about the evils of communism, we miss the point. The moral of the Russian communist story is that man cannot live without God. And the addendum to the American democratic story is that man needs the living God, not a phony, democratic, multi-racial caricature of God.

\*One gets a picture of two devils sent out from hell to try and corrupt the souls of men. One devil is sent to Russia and one to the United States. The Russian devil goes head-on against God and introduces Marxist atheism. He gets C- results. Satan is not very pleased with him. On the other hand, the American devil does not tackle God head-on. He uses the name of God to sell his Satanic agenda – Jacobin democracy and racial universalism. When he reports back to hell, he receives an A+ and is given a promotion.

---

**Our World Is Not Their World - June 3, 2017**

We are in a war of a peculiar nature. It is not with an ordinary community, which is hostile or friendly as passion or as interest may veer about; not with a State which makes war through wantonness, and abandons it through lassitude. We are at war with a system, which, by its essence, is inimical to all other Governments, and which makes peace or war, as peace and war may best contribute to their subversion. It is with an armed doctrine that we are at war. It has, by its essence, a faction of opinion, and of interest, and of enthusiasm, in every country. To us it is a Colossus which bestrides our channel. It has one foot on a foreign shore, the other upon the British soil. Thus advantaged, if it can at all exist, it must finally prevail. Nothing can so completely ruin any of the old Governments, ours in particular, as the acknowledgment, directly or by implication, of any kind of superiority in this new power. This acknowledgment we make, if in a bad or doubtful situation of our affairs, we solicit peace; or if we yield to the modes of new humiliation, in which alone she is content to give us an hearing. By that means the terms cannot be of our choosing; no, not in any part.

– Edmund Burke

---

In Stevenson's *Treasure Island*, the pirates, possessing no particular loyalty to anyone or any country, have a very mercenary relationship with their captain Long John Silver. When they think that he can get them the gold, they support him. But when they think he can't get them the gold, they mutiny. During the course of the book, the pirates bounce back and forth between support for Long John Silver and mutiny. I feel like I am reading *Treasure Island* when I listen to the Ann Coulter-conservatives and the neo-pagans condemn Trump for some policy they don't like and then, one day later, praise him for some policy they do like. The Coulterite conservatives and the neo-pagans are acting under the assumption that people and governments can be run by abstract theories, and the people with the correct abstract theories, namely themselves, should be in charge of the government. But governments are run by people, and people are more complex than abstract theories. We are not governed (more the pity) by a clan leader, a king, or a feudal lord to whom we feel bound by ties of blood and faith. We are unbound, we are loyal to an intellectual process. When an elected leader violates our mind-forged process, we feel we have a right to discard that leader. That is the piratical nature of democracy. So, from the standpoint of the abstractionists, such as Ann Coulter, Trump should be treated like the pirates treated Long John Silver. But the Coulterites do not understand democracy. Trump is not the head of the United States government, he is not a king or the leader of a clan, he is one bureaucrat in a cabal of bureaucrats who run the un-nation called the United States.

The President of the United States has as much power as the bureaucratic cabal allows him to have. Obama had more power than Trump, because Obama did the will of the liberal cabal. Trump's election was an unforeseen glitch in the liberals' governing machinery. They want the sheep called American citizens to think they have some say in their government, so they conduct phony elections, just like the old Soviet Union, in which whomever wins, Republican or Democrat, will advance the liberals' agenda — the destruction of the Christ-bearing race. The liberal oligarchy always prefers the Democrats, because the Democrats are in favor of moving toward the kingdom of Satan on earth at a faster pace than the Republicans, but the Republican candidates are tolerated so long as they follow the straight and narrow path to hell on earth. Trump has been a monkey wrench in the works because he acts according to the liberals' lies of the 1950s. In those days, the liberals did not feel they could openly advocate the extermination of the white race, so they talked about the inclusion of the colored races in a society with whites. Trump still believes that lie, and he is acting on it. He wants to include white people in the liberals' paradise, and this is the reason Trump is an anathema to the liberals. But Trump is not a leader with the power to fix things for Ann Coulter and her ilk. In point of fact, he is not a leader, he is a rear-guard defender. We have no right to condemn him any more than the French people had a right to condemn Marshal Ney. Trump is fighting a heroic rear-guard action, and to expect some kind of restoration of the American republic from a rear-guard action is unrealistic and unfair to a brave man trying to save white lives.

If we look at the way white protestors in France, Britain, and Germany are treated and compare their treatment to that of Moslem protestors in the same countries, we can see the liberals' intent. The white protestors are violently suppressed while the Moslem protestors are allowed free rein to commit acts of violence. And in the United States it is similar to what happens in Europe. The blacks and the professional protestors, funded by George Soros, are given special privileges while white European Americans who protest are arrested and in some cases (for example, the Bundy family and friends) killed. This extermination process has begun in earnest, and there is no way to stop it from within the democratic process.

White people vote for candidates who want to exterminate the white race and for candidates who acquiesce to the extermination of the white race. But would they vote for those candidates if they flatly stated that they wanted to kill every white on the face of the earth? Probably not. But it is clear to all those who are not willfully blind that the liberals do intend to destroy the white race. That is the key: white grazers are willfully blind. They don't want to see the truth staring them in the face. There is only one remedy for white people. St. Paul did not know the day or the hour and he included himself when he said that we "see through a glass darkly," but he was able to see the truth by virtue of his faith in the Man of Sorrows. As the Europeans' vision of Christ, their heartfelt vision, disappeared, they were left with abstract truths, and abstract truths can be manipulated to deceive us in deepest consequence. I saw this first hand in the prolife movement. The pro-aborts have been shown the pictures of the babies in the womb, they know what they have done, but the babies are abstractions to them, and you can kill abstractions with impunity; it doesn't touch you. The liberals always ritualistically invoke the Nazis when they want to demonize someone, but who is more like unto the Nazis than the

liberals? The appalling thing about Hitler's brain trust was that they bureaucratically condemned millions of abstract human beings to death, coldly, efficiently, and without one pang of conscience. Likewise the French Revolutionists and their heirs, the Marxists.

Liberals are hell-bent on destroying the white race, and so long as democracy is a God-word to the European people, the liberals will be successful. The white Europeans — and they are a tiny minority — that have shown any desire to resist their own extermination still believe that democracy is sacred. They march, they protest, they make videos, and they are rewarded by their governments with harassment, imprisonment, and death. Is it any wonder that the white grazer, who has no religion except self-preservation, has decided that he would rather take his chances with a government that permits Moslems and blacks to rape and pillage at will than to offer himself up for martyrdom to the state?

I recently saw a neo-pagan blog post in which the blogger ridiculed whites who thought that the solution to white genocide was a return to "sweet and gentle Jesus." Ignoble words, ignobly written. Let one who does believe that a return to our Lord is the solution to white genocide respond: A Christian who worships Christ in spirit and truth will not worship democracy. And the democratic heresy is the first obstacle that must be overcome before white self-defense can begin. A white Christian will not refuse to fight, in the fullest sense of the word, when such fighting takes him outside the parameters of democracy.

Secondly, a white Christian will not refuse to fight liberals, Moslems, and negroes because the liberals call him a racist. A European Christian knows that this race and his faith are one; he can't refuse to be white and still be a Christian. And finally, a European Christian will not adopt a cautious "they'll kill the other whites, but they won't kill me" attitude toward the liberals and the colored barbarians. A white Christian says, "this shall not go on," because he would rather lose the world than lose his soul. Is this error? Is "sweet and gentle Jesus" not the answer to white genocide? Then tell me, what is the answer, Mr. Neo-Pagan? Tell me how the white South Africans held the world at bay for so many years? Tell me how that tiny nation called Britain ruled the world for over three hundred years? Tell me how Europeans dominated all the non-European lands as well as their own? What did those ancient Europeans have that the modern Europeans do not have? They had the stuff that dreams are made on — they had faith in the Risen Lord.

The divided house of the European resistance to white-hating Jacobinism consists of two groups — the neo-pagans who believe in white chromosomes while hating white people, and the new age Christians who claim to love a new non-European Christ who deplores racism. Both resistance groups are useless, because our faith in Christ and our racial identity must be one before we can proceed to the battle fully armed. Liberalism, as Burke tells us, is an armed doctrine. The liberals own the churches, the schools, the media, and the government, and they will protect their institutions with armed force when they deem it necessary. Without the full armor of Christ, which our ancestors were not too proud and too smart to don, the European people are defenseless against the liberals and the colored barbarians.

Openly satanic political leaders such as Angela Merkel and Macron are being elected to office. That should tell us something about the nature of democracy. The hardcore liberals vote for Satan's surrogates because of their hatred of all things white and Christian. The lukewarm grazers vote for satanic candidates because they are afraid that they will suffer economically under a non-satanic government. Like the witches who promised Macbeth the crown, our modern satanic political leaders promise the grazers that they will continue to receive grazing rights in Liberaldom. As for black and Moslem terrorism? The grazer hopes that it will always be the other guy who is killed. He has no instinctive horror of Islam in and of itself or of black savagery in and of itself. In point of fact, the grazer has no instincts about anything. His soul is tabula rasa — it has been washed clean by the men of reason and science in church and academy.

The grazers won't be won over because men and women without souls will always throw in their lot with the rich and powerful, the people who will get them a share of the gold. And it is the liberals who have the gold and the power that gold brings. But is the liberals' gold and the liberals' world worth our souls? When Christ asked the apostles if they too would leave Him, Peter replied: "Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life." The Word of God became incarnate in Jesus Christ, and Jesus Christ became incarnate in old Europe. Even if they, the liberals and the grazers, have chosen to leave His Europe, we will stay to fight for her and live and die with her, because that is where our Lord dwells — "It's my world, and I don't want any other." +

---

### **What Is't to Leave Betimes? - May 27, 2017**

And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. — Luke 24: 28-29

---



**Macron won and he won handily. That does not bode well for France. The ‘conservatives’ immediately started planning for the next election five years down the road. Are they insane? Do they seriously think France, as a European nation, will still exist five years down the road? The only consolation for Frenchmen and the rest of Europe, because we are all in the same boat as the French, is that the election of Le Pen would not have done much to stop the Islamization of France. After all, Le Pen is a French Revolutionist; she did not campaign for the restoration of the French monarchy and the repudiation of Jacobin democracy. “Of course, she didn’t,” you tell me, “That would be absurd.” But why is it absurd? The European people thrived and flourished when their governments were Christian. They have taken sick, and that sickness is unto death, during the democratic era of multi-cultural, religiously diverse (which means anti-Christian) governments. Nothing good will ever happen to the European people, as a people, so long as they remain under the thrall of Jacobin democracy.**

When Fox heard of the capture of the Bastille, he claimed it was the “the most glorious event, and the happiest for mankind, that has ever taken place since human affairs have been recorded.” Price and Priestley also went into raptures over the French Revolution. And even men of a more pragmatic nature, such as Pitt, failed to see anything wrong with the French Revolution in its initial stages. When the Reign of Terror began, the fanatics such as Fox, Price, and Priestley still supported the Revolution, while the pragmatists abandoned it. But no one in the ruling elites of the European nations, save Edmund Burke, saw the French Revolution for what it was: the enthronement of Satan in the midst of Christian Europe:

Instead of the religion and the law by which they were in a great politick communion with the Christian world, they have constructed their Republick on three bases, all fundamentally opposite to those on which the communities of Europe are built. Its foundation is laid in Regicide; in Jacobinism; and in Atheism; and it has joined to those principles, a body of systematick manners which secures their operation.

If I am asked how I would be understood in the use of these terms, Regicide, Jacobinism, Atheism, and a system of correspondent manners and their establishment, I will tell you.

I call a commonwealth Regicide, which lays it down as a fixed law of nature, and a fundamental right of man, that all government, not being a democracy, is an usurpation; that all Kings, as such, are usurpers, and for being Kings, may and ought to be put to death, with their wives, families, and adherents. The commonwealth which acts uniformly upon those principles; and which after abolishing every festival of religion, chooses the most flagrant act of a murderous Regicide treason for a feast of eternal commemoration, and which forces all her people to observe it—this I call Regicide by establishment. – Edmund Burke

There was a horror of the French Revolution among ordinary Englishmen, but they were too unsophisticated to understand that you must be tolerant and accepting of Jacobinism, atheism, and regicide. It has always been thus. The men of reason – the theologians, the lawyers, and the academics – will sup with the devil because they live by abstractions, which are good or evil according to their whims. But a man who is not divided against himself, a European with a Christian heart, will have an instinctive horror of the devil and his works. The liberals in church and state have made the destruction of the European people’s natural abhorrence of the devil and his works their special mission in life. And they have been very successful. There is no opposition to Jacobin democracy in the European nations. There are European nations that adhere to a post-Robespierre Jacobinism in which they try to reconcile religious toleration with Jacobin ideals, but those countries are merely playing the ‘lose slowly’ game. Modern democracy is Jacobin in origin, and Jacobinism is anti-Christian and anti-white. The English commoners who burned down Priestley’s house and forced him to flee to America acted the way Christian men should act. They saw evil and they struck home. That should be every Christian’s response to Jacobinism. Until we have the same instinctive horror of democratic Jacobinism as those English commoners had for Priestley’s Jacobinism, and until we have that same violent response to Jacobinism, we will continue to live, not in nations or communities, but in collective farms, in which we live, when we are allowed to live, to serve ‘the people,’ who are the colored races of the worlds.

There is no resistance to the liberal, colored, barbarian onslaught, because there are no Christian Europeans of the old stock. The new breed of Christians want to blend Christianity, Jacobinism, and negro worship into one integral system. But such a Christianity is not Christianity. Our Lord tells us where our treasure is, “there will your heart be also.” If Christians such as Jayda Fransen of the Britain First party organize non-violent protests of the Islamic invasion, support a multi-racial Britain, and make the support of the nation state of Israel part of their Christian faith, they are not European Christians, they are new age Jacobin Christians who will always end up serving the liberals and their colored allies.

The conservative liberals have a messianic faith in democracy; for them the democratic process is an end in and of itself. The mad-dog liberals hold their kingdom in order by taking advantage of the conservatives’ delusional faith in the democratic process. They know that they cannot be ousted from power since they know that conservatives will never act outside the parameters of democracy. This gives the liberal a great advantage, because he does not believe that the democratic process is sacred. He will be democratic when it suits him, and he will act outside the democratic process whenever the democratic process does not serve his end. And toward what end is the liberal moving? He is moving toward

the kingdom of Satan on earth, a world without white Europeans, who fouled paradise with the religion of Christ crucified, Christ risen.

Dostoyevsky was correct when he said that there was only one issue to be decided: Could an intelligent man, a European, believe in the divinity of Christ? The intelligentsia of 20th century Europe answered, 'No,' to Dostoyevsky's question. And then they proceeded to intellectualize the European peasantry. By the end of the 20th century, the peasantry was intellectualized, and no member of the intelligentsia in church, state, or academy was willing to support the vision of Christ, which St. Paul saw on the road to Damascus and which the antique Europeans made an integral part of their culture. When the political 'conservatives' of the 20th century made conserving Jacobin democracy their goal, and when the conservatives in the church sought to conserve their abstract systems instead of the faith of the European people, the demise of the European people was inevitable. Without their faith they lost their spiritual backbone and became the bond slaves of the religious Jacobins and their colored allies.

In my early twenties I was the student representative in what was supposed to be a roundtable discussion on the subject of faith. The discussion was sponsored by the university's religion department. I found it striking then, and I still find it striking, that the various 'Christian' academics, an assortment of practicing ministers and priests combined with an assortment of ex-priests and ex-ministers, were all of the opinion that Christianity had to be either rationalized or abandoned. It could not be the faith of any modern man in its pre-20th century form. But the Moslem professor on the panel believed in eternal Islam; he saw no need to rationalize Islam. Nor did the Oriental on the panel see any need to rationalize Buddhism.

Why is it that only the Christian faith of the European people could not withstand the rationalist onslaught? Is Islam and the other black voodoo faiths that are like unto Islam easier to defend than the Christian faith? It's easy to see why the various Oriental faiths survive – they have never claimed to be transcendent faiths, they are 'this world only' faiths of a rationalist-mystic nature. But why do the dark faiths such as Islam survive? They survive because their adherents, who are predominantly dark-skinned, are incapable of adhering to a religion of charity. They need a sex and blood faith. They are not intimidated by any rationalist criticism of their faith, because they do not acknowledge the validity of reason. They only believe in sex and blood.

The liberals do not believe in Islam, nor do they believe – even though they often try to adhere to them – in the Orientals' naturalistic, mystic faiths. What then do the European liberals believe in? They believe in the hatred of all the European people and their God. Reason is the sword the liberals have used to attack Christianity, but the irrationality of Christianity has not caused the liberals' rejection of Christianity. The real cause is their hatred for Christ. As Ivan Karamazov hated Christ, so do the liberals hate Christ. The European Everyman, who does not hate Christ, has allowed the liberals to destroy his faith by falling for the rationalist gambit: 'Do you want to be stupid?' Some Europeans, such as Yeats, have tried to take refuge in the mists of pagan Europe. But that, as off this stage we have shown, is not possible. The European is naked to his enemies because he cannot believe in the divinity of Christ and he cannot become a complete heathen. "What should such fellows as I do crawling between earth and heaven?"

Such souls should break the chains of rationalism and see the liberal Jacobins for what they are – the enemies of Christ and His people. They will never cease their satanic onslaught on the Christ-bearing race, because they hate much. When we look at what the liberals have already wrought and what they intend to do in the future, we weep. But is that all that is left to us? Can we only weep as the colored barbarians, be they Moslems, negroes, or some other variation, sweep every last vestige of Christian Europe and every last European into the dustbin of history? Yes, that is all that is left to us. But tears, if they come from hearts filled with that charity of honor, do have redemptive and restorative powers. Didn't Rapunzel's lover regain his sight when her tears of charity fell on his eyes? If we truly weep for Europe and her people, because we love much, then we will fight for Europe and her people in defiance of democracy, rationalism, and Satan's colored legions. We are a dispossessed people in danger of extinction because we are afraid to be Europeans. Christ is in us and we are in Him. If we believe that and go deep once again, then it won't be 'last post' for the European people. No matter how mathematically certain our demise seems to be, there is always the mysterious Stranger, that Man of Sorrows, who is capable of calling us back to our roots, to our people, and to our God, the God of the European hearth fire.

It is not just France, or Britain, or Sweden, or the United States that is perishing. It is all of Europe. It seems that I am always facing the great 'if' – "If wishes were horses, then beggars would ride." If the European people could... If they could see, once again, with their hearts. "Did not our hearts burn within us, while He talked with us by the way, and while He opened to us the scriptures?" Is it impossible for the European people to respond with a simple 'yes' to Dostoyevsky's great question? We once loved Him, and it was not without cause. In the European fairy tales, beggars, with hearts that burn within them with that charity of honor, become princes and they do ride. But such miracles only happen in His Europe, they do not occur in multi-racial, multi-cultural Europe. Contra Tony Blair and the satanic anti-European legions, we must not be multi-racial, we must not be multi-cultural. We must be provincial and racist, loving our own and hating everyone

and everything that threatens our people and our God. +

---